c.4021.B1

Chronicle of a Border Town

HISTORY OF RYE

218
460

WESTCHESTER COUNTY, NEW YORK

1660–1870

INCLUDING HARRISON AND THE WHITE PLAINS TILL 1788

BY

CHARLES W. BAIRD

ILLUSTRATED BY ABRAM HOSIER

NEW YORK
ANSON D. F. RANDOLPH AND COMPANY
No. 770 Broadway
1871

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1871, by
CHARLES W. BAIRD,
in the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

-129
R98B1

RIVERSIDE, CAMBRIDGE:
PRINTED BY H. O. HOUGHTON AND COMPANY.

PREFACE.

THIS book has grown out of a discourse prepared in the year 1865, when the two hundredth anniversary of the organization of the town of Rye occurred. The following letter, received soon after its delivery, may serve to account in a measure for the present publication : —

RYE, *December* 8, 1865.

REV. CHARLES W. BAIRD :

Dear Sir, — The undersigned, appreciating highly the very interesting discourse delivered by you on Thanksgiving Day, and believing that the valuable historical information which by much careful labor and research you have collected, pertaining not only to the Presbyterian Church of Rye, but to the town itself, from its earliest settlement two hundred years ago, ought to be preserved, and will be prized by many in our community besides ourselves, respectfully solicit the manuscript for publication, with such notes or appendix as you may deem necessary.

Affectionately and truly yours,

WILLIAM MATHEWS,	GEO. S. MURFEY,	JOHN PALMER,
J. H. T. COCKEY,	A. P. CUMMINGS,	G. D. CRAGIN,
D. G. EATON,	A. W. PARSONS, JR.,	W. H. PARSONS,
JOHN GREACEN, JR.,	JAMES H. PARSONS,	W. P. VAN RENSSELAER,
JASPER E. CORNING,	C. V. ANDERSON,	A. W. PARSONS,
E. P. WHITTEMORE,	A. P. CARPENTER,	JNO. E. PARSONS,
E. P. BERRIAN,	E. M. CLARK,	JOS. L. ROBERTS.

The wish to comply with this flattering request, led me to pursue an investigation which had been commenced without a look beyond the occasion in question. This investigation has occupied many of the leisure hours of the last six years ; and the result is a book much larger, certainly, than hearers or speaker contemplated when the request was made.

To the author, at least, the subject has appeared to justify this bestowal of time and pains. As a frontier settlement of New England, as a 'border town,' and as part of the 'neutral ground,' Rye possesses some distinctive claims to historical notice. The customs and adventures of the early settlers, their proprietary system, their

political and religious differences; the fortunes of the inhabitants under the colonial government, and during the Revolution; the planting and growth of our ancient congregations, have seemed worthy of a full and exact recital. Apart, moreover, from details of purely local interest, several topics have fallen within the author's plan, which invited research, and which have not, to his knowledge, been elucidated fully elsewhere, at least in works accessible to most readers. Some of these are treated in the chapters on 'Mails and Modes of Travel,' 'The Proprietors,' 'Harrison's Purchase,' 'The Boundary Dispute,' 'The Boston Road,' 'The Poor,' 'Schools,' 'Slavery,' 'The Indians,' 'The Parish and Vestry of Rye,' in the chapters relating to the Revolution, and in the part devoted to an account of the churches. It is not claimed that this treatment is exhaustive; but it is hoped that some light has been thrown upon the subjects. These and other matters are treated in separate chapters, and under a threefold arrangement, — 'The Town,' 'The Churches,' and 'The Families,' — with less regard to the order of time than to the connection of topics. An Index of dates, at the end of the volume, will be found useful for this reason.[1]

The material for this 'chronicle' has been derived chiefly from the records of the town itself, those of the ancient 'Parish of Rye,' and those of Westchester County; from the manuscripts in the State Departments of New York and Connecticut, and the historical collections published by order of the legislatures of these States; from the 'American Archives,' edited by Colonel Force, and the newspapers of the colonial period and the Revolution. A fuller mention of authorities would be unnecessary, inasmuch as abundant reference is made to them throughout the volume. It is with pleasure, however, that I acknowledge here the help received in the prosecution of this work from persons as well as from books. To Dr. O'Callaghan, State Librarian of New York, I am indebted not only for facilities in the examination of documents in his care, but also for information and for suggestions most kindly given, and exceedingly useful. My obligations to Mr. Charles J. Hoadly, Librarian of the State Library, Hartford, Connecticut; to Mr. George H. Moore, Librarian of the New York Historical Society; and to Mr. Henry B. Dawson, Editor of the 'Historical Magazine,' are similarly great. And my thanks are likewise due to Colonel Thomas F. DeVoe, of New York, for

[1] In this Index, some inadvertencies that occur in the body of the work, with reference to dates, have been corrected.

the contribution of several interesting items ; and to Mr. F. Saunders, of the Astor Library, and Mr. Samuel U. Berrian, Brooklyn, for much friendly aid.

Mr. Bolton's invaluable history of our county,[1] contains with much other information gathered by diligent research, a number of extracts from the first volume of our town records. This volume is now lost ; and the extracts referred to are all that remain to us of its contents. Mr. Bolton's ecclesiastical work [2] has been of still greater service to me. In the correspondence of the missionaries of the Gospel Propagation Society, I have found much of my material for an account of our churches before the Revolution. The labor of writing the history of a single town has enabled me to appreciate the patience, industry, and fidelity of our county historian. He has earned the thanks of every resident of Westchester County, and especially of any who may follow in the path where he has led as a pioneer.

A considerable amount of information, supplementary to that derived from the sources mentioned, has been gained from local traditions, personal recollections, and family records. The facts thus obtained have been available particularly for the third part of the book — the notices of Families. These notices, however, embody chiefly the facts gathered from our *town records*, relative to the settlers of Rye and their descendants. The list is designed to include every inhabitant named in our annals, from 1660 to 1800.

Among the illustrations of this volume, I am happy to be able to give a map, copied from the original charts of the United States Coast Survey. As these charts extend to a distance of five or six miles from the shore, nearly the whole town of Rye is included. The remaining part, with the adjoining town of Harrison, is represented in the small map accompanying it, copied by permission of the publishers, Messrs. Beers, Ellis, and Soule, from the 'Atlas of New York and Vicinity.'

With the hope that this humble chronicle may be found tolerably complete and accurate,[3] I submit it to my fellow townsmen,

[1] *A History of the County of Westchester, from its First Settlement to the Present Time.* By Robert Bolton, Jr. [now Rev. Robert Bolton]. New York, 1848. In two volumes 8vo. I am glad to learn that Mr. Bolton is engaged in preparing a revised and enlarged edition of this work, which has long been out of print.

[2] *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church, in the County of Westchester.* By Robert Bolton, A. M. New York, 1855. In one volume 8vo.

[3] With all the care of author and printer, a few inaccuracies are noticed, besides those already referred to. Page 61, lines 15, 16, for 'a large portion,' read 'a portion.' Page 290, line 40, for 'John Lane,' read 'George Lane.' Page 305, line 18,

and especially to those whose desire for its preparation, so kindly expressed at the outset, has been my motive and encouragement in the work.

The Manse, Rye, *April* 1, 1871.

for 'country,' read 'county.' Page 347, line 1, for 'William,' read 'Charles.' Page 406, line 27, for 'Joseph Budd,' read 'Underhill Budd.' Page 419, line 39, for 'sons,' read 'grandsons.' Page 432, line 8, for 'Peter Disbrow,' read 'John Disbrow.' In Chapter XXXVII., the account of the action of the people, October 6, 1727, — given on page 327, — should follow the letter of the trustees of Yale College, page 325.

CONTENTS.

THE TOWN.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTION.

A Border Town, 1. — Area, 2. — The Dutch in America, 3. — Westchester County, 4. — The Wilderness, 5. — The Old Westchester Path, 6.

CHAPTER II.

THE INDIAN PURCHASES.

Clearings near the Coast, 8. — First Purchase on Peningo Neck, 9. — Manussing Island, 10. — Second Purchase on Peningo Neck, 11. — Apawamis, or Budd's Neck, 12. — The West Neck, 14. — Land above Westchester Path, 15. — Valuation of Lands, 16. — Extent of the Town, 17. — Vague Conceptions of the Country, 18.

CHAPTER III.

THE ISLAND.

Gaining a Foothold, 19. — The Outlook, 20. — Planters of Hastings, 21. — Puritans, 22. — No Outlaws, 23. — Orders from Hartford, 24. — Letter to the General Court, 25. — Transfer of Lands to the Planters, 26.

CHAPTER IV.

BUILDING THE VILLAGE.

Improvements on the Main, 27. — Burying Hill, 28. — The Old Town, 29. — Mill on Blind Brook Creek, 29. — Rye, 30. — Hastings and Rye conjoined, 30. — Removing to the Main, 31. — The Town Plot, 32. — The Town Field, 32. — The Plains, 32. — Home-lots, 33. — The Parsonage, 34. — Absorption of Home-lots, 35. — Hastings in Sussex, England, 35. — Rye in Sussex, England, 36. — Derivation of the Name, 37.

CHAPTER V.

MR. JOHN BUDD'S IMPROVEMENTS.

Differences at Rye, 38. — Unwelcome Neighbors, 39. — The General Court interferes, 40. — Intentions of the Court, 40. — Differences composed, 41. — Jurisdiction of the Town, 41.

CHAPTER VI.

PERILS OF THE WILDERNESS.

Troublous Times, 42. — King Philip's War, 43. — Tidings of Disaster, 44. — Fortifying the Town, 44. — Arrival of a Sufferer, 45. — The Dutch again, 45. — Mr. Banks and Monsieur Colve, 46. — Rye supplicates for Help, 47. — Burning of Schenectady, 47. — Jacob Pierce, 48. — The Old Fort, 49.

CHAPTER VII.

MOVING OUT INTO THE WOODS.

Ten Acres not enough, 50. — Lands in the Field, 51. — The Long Swamp, 52. — Wolf-pit Ridge, 52. — Barton's Neck, 53. — The Settlement still compact, 54. — Byram Ridge, 55. — Lame Will, 55. — Eauketaupacuson, 56. — Second Purchase from Maramaking, 57. — Free use of Lands, 59. — Division of Will's Purchases, 59. — Proprietors, 60. — The 'Layers out,' 60. — Brush Ridge, 60. — Branch Ridge, 61.

CHAPTER VIII.

TOWN MATTERS IN OLDEN TIMES.

Town Offices, 62. — The Records, 63. — Admission of Freeholders, 63. — 'Lists of Persons and Estates,' 64. — Town Meetings, 65. — Licenses and Grants of Land, 66. — Sheep Pasture, 67. — Trustees, 67. — The Commissioner, 68. — Litigation, 68. — The Stocks and the Whipping-post, 69. — Petition for a Patent from the Crown, 69. — Patent granted, 70. — Controversy about Manussing Island, 70.

CHAPTER IX.

MAILS; NEWSPAPERS; MODES OF TRAVEL.

Travel on Horseback, 71. — Despatch of Letters, 72. — Monthly Post to Boston, 72. — Journey of Madam Knight, 73. — Weekly Post to Boston, 74. — Advertisements of Olden Time, 75. — First Stage-coach between New York and Boston, 77. — Stage to Rye, 77. — Communication by Water, 78. — Ferry to Oyster Bay, 78. — The House at the Ferry, 79. — Market Sloops, 80.

CHAPTER X.

THE EIGHTEEN PROPRIETORS.

Proprietary System, 81. — First Proprietors, 82. — Increase of Members, 83. — 'The Eighteen,' 84. — Transactions, 85. — Dissolution, 87.

CHAPTER XI.

RYE IN CONNECTICUT. — THE TOWN AND THE GENERAL COURT.

Connecticut Towns, 88. — Going up to Hartford, 89. — Orders of the General Court, 90. — Rye ceded to New York, 92. — Applies to be received back, 92. — Request granted, 93. — 'Rie Pattent,' 93. — Deputies to the General Court, 95.

CHAPTER XII.

HARRISON'S PURCHASE.

Our Inhabitants *bonâ fide* Settlers, 96. — Lavish Grants of Land, 97. — Harrison's Pretensions, 97. — Vain Remonstrances, 99. — Rye secedes, 100. — A Visit from Colonel Heathcote, 100. — Patentees of the Purchase, 102. — Division of the Purchase, 103. — Brown's Point, 103. — Settlement of the Purchase, 104.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE BOUNDARY DISPUTE.

Rye concerned in the Dispute, 105. — Irregular Course of the Boundary Line, 106. — Differences with the Dutch, 107. — Agreement of Connecticut with the Duke of York's Commissioners, 108. — A Blind Treaty, 109. — New Settlement of the Bounds, 110. — Rye excluded, 111. — Dissatisfaction at Rye, 111. — Governor Dongan summons the Inhabitants to submit, 112. — Rye revolts, 113. — Feuds and Dissensions, 114. — An Armed Invasion, 115. — Governor Fletcher's Proclamation, 116. — Recriminations, 117. — The Town yields, 118. — A Border Fray in 1718, 119. — Collecting the Minister's Rates, 120. — Boundary between Rye and Greenwich, 121. — Attempts to settle the Boundary, 122. — Meeting of Commissioners at Rye, 123. — The Old Surveys imperfect, 124. — A New Survey, 125. — Differences among the Commissioners, 126. — The Boundary Line not settled, 127.

CHAPTER XIV.

MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

Housekeeping in the Olden Time, 128. — Primitive Houses, 129. — Price of Labor and Provisions, 129. — The Train-band of Rye, 130. — Investiture 'by Turf and Twig,' 132.

CHAPTER XV.

OLD NAMES AND PLACES.

Indian Names, 133. — Names conferred by the Settlers, 134. — Localities along the Coast, 134. — Brooks, 135. — Ridges, 136. — Meadows, 136. — Swamps, 137. — Family Names, 137.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE BOSTON ROAD.

The Old Westchester Path, 138. — County Road laid out, 138. — Road from Plantation to Plantation, 139. — Highway from New York to Connecticut established, 140. — Gates across the Road, 141. — Doleful Accounts of our Roads, 142. — Turnpike Company, 143. — Changes in the Road, 143.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE VILLAGE INN.

The Square House, 145. — 'A Noted Tavern,' 146. — An Illustrious Guest, 147. — Lafayette at Penfield's, 148. — Madam Knight at Rye, 149. — Van Sicklin's, 150. — Drinking Habits, 151.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE WHITE PLAINS.

Quaroppas, 152. — Indian Treaty, 153. — Mr. Richbell's Claim, 153. — Colonel Heathcote's Claim, 154. — Early Surveys, 156. — Road to the White Plains laid out, 156. — Apportionment of Lands, 157. — Settlement, 157. — Presbyterian Church, 158. — Removal of the County Courts, 158.

CHAPTER XIX.

OCCUPATIONS; THE POOR.

Hereditary Pursuits, 159. — Millers, 159. — 'Mariners,' 160. — The Oyster Fishery, 160. — Farming in Olden Time, 161. — Washington's Description, 162. — The Town Poor, 163. — Vagrancy, 164.

CHAPTER XX.

PHYSICIANS AND LAWYERS.

Sending to Stamford, 165. — Dr. Devaney, 165. — Dr. Worden, 166. — Dr. Bowness, 166. — Dr. Alleson, 166. — Dr. John Smith, 166. — Dr. William Hooker Smith, 166. — Dr. Hugeford, 167. — Dr. Bailey, 167. — Dr. Daton, 167. — Dr. R. Graham, 168. — Dr. Willet, 168. — Dr. John A. Graham, 168. — Dr. Downing, 168. — Inoculation at Rye, 168. — Dr. Haviland, 169. — Dr. Sanford, 169. — Dr. Rockwell, 170. — Dr. Rogers, 170. — Dr. McDonald, 170. — Dr. E. Belcher, 171. — Dr. E. R. Belcher, 171. — Dr. Willson, 171. — Dr. Close, 171. — Present Practitioners, 171, 172. — Lawyers, 172.

CHAPTER XXI.

SCHOOLS.

School Laws of Connecticut, 173. — Efforts to procure a Schoolmaster, 173. — A School-house to be built, 173. — The Gospel Propagation Society's Schoolmaster at Rye, 174. — Sunday-school at Rye, 175. — Mr. Avery's Advertisement, 176. — George Harris, 177. — School-house on Rye Neck, 177. — At Saw Pit, 177. — On Regent Street, 178. — Education in Olden Times, 178. — Common School System, 178. — School Districts, 179.

CHAPTER XXII.

SLAVERY IN RYE.

Introduced by the Dutch, 181. — Increased Number of Slaves, 182. — Treatment of Refractory Slaves, 183. — Fears of Insurrection, 183. — Mr. Denham's Slave *Primus*, 184. — Slaves landed at Rye, 184. — Religious Instruction, 185. — Manumission of Slaves, 186. — Negro Population, 187. — Action of the Friends in Harrison, 187.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE INDIANS.

Their Condition when the Country was first settled, 189. — Regulations of the Colony of Connecticut concerning them, 190. — A Decaying People, 191. — Visits to the Beach, 192. — Their *Powwows*, 193. — Relics along our Shores, 193. — Mohegan Villages, 193. — Indian Mortars, 194.

CHAPTER XXIV.

CEMETERIES.

Burying-ground by Blind Brook, 195. — Family Burial-places, 197. — Brundige, Bloomer, Kniffin, Merritt, 197. — Lyon, Theall, Purdy, Budd, Haight, Anderson, Gedney, 198. — Burial-place of the Rectors of Christ Church, 198. — Interments near the Church, 198. — Jay Cemetery, 199. — Union Cemetery, 199. — Colored Cemetery, 199.

CHAPTER XXV.

TAXES AND IMPOSTS.

Taxation in Connecticut, 200. — In New York, 200. — Under Governor Cornbury, 201. — Expedition against Canada, 203. — Bills of Credit, 204. — The Excise, 205. — Contest of the Assembly with the Governors, 206.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A HUNDRED YEARS AGO. — RYE IN 1770–1771.

Fire at Rye, 207. — Notabilities of the Town, 208. — Major Brown, Roger Park, Philemon Halsted, Josiah Purdy, 208. — Jonathan Kniffen, 209. — Mr. Peter Jay, 209. — Captain Purdy, Charles Theall, David Haight, Judge Thomas, the Wetmores, 210. — Fair at Rye, 211. — Rye Ferry, 212. — Rye Beach, 213. — Emigration to Canada, 213.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE REVOLUTION.

The Neutral Ground, 215. — Policy of Great Britain, 216. — Claims of the Colonists, 216. — The Stamp Act, 217. — Popular Uncertainty, 218. — Patriotic Meeting at Rye, 219. — Protestation of Loyalty, 220. — Counter Declarations, 221. — The Crisis arrives, 222. — Companies formed, 223. — Passage of Troops, 224. — The Tories grow defiant, 225. — Plot for the Capture of Judge Thomas, 226. — Spiking of Cannon near King's Bridge, 226. — Committee of Safety, 228. — Arrest of Disaffected Persons, 229. — Arrival of the British Fleet, 230. — The Militia called out, 231.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE REVOLUTION.

Washington abandons New York, 232. — Retreats to the White Plains, 232. — Engagement at Mamaroneck, 233. — Battle of the White Plains, 234. — Affair near Horton's Pond, 236. — Burning of the Court House and Church, 239. — Foraging Parties, 239. — The King's Troops at Rye, 240. — Mr. Avery's Death, 240. — Cow Boys and Skinners, 241. — British Force encamped on Sniffen's Hill, 242. — American Force at Saw Pit, 243. — British Fleet in the Sound, 244. — The Queen's Rangers, 245. — The Inhabitants plundered, 246. — Thomas Kniffen's Adventure, 246. — Sniffen's Hill, 247. — Washington encamped at the White Plains, 247. — French Troops near Saw Pit, 249.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE REVOLUTION.

General Heath at King Street, 248. — Loyalists of Rye, 249. — Severities inflicted upon them, 250. — Sufferings in Westchester County, 251. — Capture of Judge Thomas, 252. — Murder of Jonathan Kniffen's Daughter, 252. — The Whale-boat Service, 253. — Operations on the Sound, 254. — Reprisals, 255. — Seizure of Colonel Thomas Thomas at Rye Woods, 256. — Incident near Merritt's Tavern, 257. — Engagements at Sherwood's Bridge and Byram Bridge, 258. — Frequent Incursions, 259. — Lawless Characters, 260. — Shubael Merritt, 260. — Local Incidents and Traditions, 261. — Dr. Dwight's Description of the Neutral Ground, 262.

CHAPTER XXX.

AFTER THE WAR.

Families coming Home, 264. — Departure of Loyalists, 264. — Return of the Soldiers, 265. — Town Meeting, 265. — Quitrent, 266. — Division of the Town, 266.

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE VILLAGE OF SAW PIT.

Origin of the Name, 267. — Location of Old Buildings, 268. — The Haunted House, 270.

THE CHURCHES.

CHAPTER XXXII.

WITHOUT A MINISTER.

Disadvantages of a 'Border Town,' 271. — Religious Views of the Early Settlers, 272. — Lay Preachers, 273. — Orders of the General Court, 274. — Land appropriated for the Ministry, 275.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

EARLY MINISTRY.

Rev. Eliphalet Jones, 276. — Rev. Peter Prudden, 277. — Rev. Thomas Denham, 278. — The Parsonage, 279. — Place of Meeting, 279. — Rev. John Woodbridge, 280. — Rev. Nathanael Bowers, 281. — A 'Meeting-house' to be built, 282. — Tax for building the Church, 283. — The Minister's Rate, 284. — Mr. Denham's Antecedents, 285.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

PARISH AND VESTRY OF RYE.

Early Provision for the Ministry, 287. — Liberty of Conscience secured, 288. — Scheme to introduce an 'Established Church,' 288. — The Act for settling a Ministry, 289. — Governor Fletcher's Manœuvres, 290. — Election of Churchwardens and Vestrymen, 291. — Mischievous Effects of the Act, 292.

CHAPTER XXXV.

ECCLESIASTICAL LANDS.

The Parson's Point, 294. — Land in the Town Field, 295. — Survey of the Glebe, 296. — Trial concerning the Parsonage Lot, 297. — The Home-lot by Blind Brook, 298. — The Spot ascertained, 300. — Mr. Jenney's Garden, 301. — New Glebe on the West Side of Blind Brook, 302. — The Rectory Grounds, 303.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

GRACE CHURCH BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Colonel Heathcote, 305. — Rev. Thomas Pritchard, 306. — Rev. George Muirson, 306. — Building the Church, 307. — Unforeseen Delays, 308. — Mr. Muirson's Ministry, 309. — Rev. Christopher Bridge, 310. — Number of Communicants, 311. — Harmony in the Parish, 312. — Rev. Robert Jenney, 313. — Rev. James Wetmore, 314. — Mr. Wetmore's Ministry, 315. — Rev. Ebenezer Punderson, 315. — The Parish Church incorporated, 316. — Rev. Ephraim Avery, 316. — His Sufferings, 317. — Character of the Early Rectors, 318.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Relative Numbers, 320. — Attempt to take Possession of the Church, 321. — Rev. Stephen Buckingham, 321. — Rev. John Walton, 322. — Memorial to the Connecticut Government, 323. — Petition refused, 324. — The Trustees of Yale College interpose, 325. — Request renewed, 326. — The General Assembly grants it, 327. — Collections throughout the Colony for Churches at Rye and the White Plains, 327. — Building Spot, 328. — The Churches built, 328. — Rev. Edmund Ward, 329. — Vacancy, 330. — Rev. John Smith, 330. — A Contrast, 331. — Mr. Smith's Ministry, 333. — Presbytery of Dutchess County, 335.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH SINCE THE REVOLUTION.

Rev. Richard C. Moore, 337. — The Church rebuilt, 338. — Rev. David Foote, 338. — Rev. John J. Sands, 339. — Name of the Church changed, 339. — Rev. George Ogilvie, 340. — Rev. Samuel Haskell, 340. — Rev. Evan Rogers, 340. — Mr. Haskell returns, 341. — Congregations of Rye and the White Plains separate, 341. — Rev. William Thompson, 341. — Rev. John M. Forbes, 342. — Rev. W. M. Carmichael, 342. — Rev. Peter S. Chauncey, 342. — Rev. Edward C. Bull, 342. — New Church, 342. — Rev. John C. White, 343. — Rev. Reese F. Alsop, 343. — The Church destroyed by Fire, 343. — Rebuilt, 343. — Description, 343.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH SINCE THE REVOLUTION.

Influence of Dr. Lewis, 345. — The Church rebuilt, 345. — Incorporated, 346. — Members, 346. — Feebleness of the Congregation, 347. — The Church alienated, 347. — Repossessed, 348. — Reorganization, 348. — Rev. W. H.

Whittemore, 348. — Rev. David Remington, 349. — Rev. Thomas Payne, 350. — Rev. John H. Hunter, 350. — Rev. James R. Davenport, 350. — Rev. Edward D. Bryan, 350. — Mr. Ebenezer Clarke, 351. — New Church, 352. — Description, 353.

CHAPTER XL.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH OF RYE.

Methodism introduced, 354. — Mr. Ezekiel Halsted, 355. — Early Ministry, 356. — Church built, 357. — Revivals, 357. — Later Ministry, 358.

CHAPTER XLI.

THE FRIENDS.

From Flushing, 360. — Settlers of Harrison, 361. — Purchase Meeting-house, 362. — Rapid spread, 363. — Separation, 364. — Present State, 365.

CHAPTER XLII.

CHURCHES OF PORT CHESTER.

Religious Destitution, 366. — Occasional Services, 366. — Presbyterian Church, 367. — Methodist Episcopal Church, 369. — Protestant Episcopal Church, 370. — Baptist Church, 371. — Roman Catholic Church, 371.

LATER TOWN HISTORY.

CHAPTER XLIII.

RYE.

Act constituting the Present Town, 372. — Survivors of the Revolution, 372. — General Thomas and Robert Kennedy, 373. — Population of Rye at Different Periods. 373. — Joseph Bonaparte, 374. — Growth and Improvement, 374. — Thirty Years Ago, 374. — Academy, 375. — New Haven Railroad, 375. — Captain's Island, 375–377.

CHAPTER XLIV.

PORT CHESTER.

Progress in Trade and Manufactures, 378. — Mr. Jared Peck, 378. — Mills, 379. — Episode of the Last War, 379. — Lafayette's Visit, 380. — Steam Navigation of the Sound, 380. — Steamboats at Rye Port, 381. — Port Chester *vice* Saw Pit, 381. — Incorporation of the Village, 381. — Limits defined, 381. — Census of 1870, 382. — Institutions, 382.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE WAR FOR THE UNION.

Public Meeting, 384. — Union Defence Committee, 385. — Companies formed, 386. — Provision for Families of Soldiers, 387. — Roll of Honor, 387–391.

CHAPTER XLVI.

CONCLUSION.

'A Great Settlement,' 392. — The Prophecy fulfilling, 392. — Our Advantages, 392. — Blessings of Peace, 393.

FAMILIES OF RYE.

I. THE EARLY SETTLERS — 1660 TO 1700 — AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

Alling, Applebe, Banks, 395. — Barton, Basset, Bloomer, 396. — Boyd, 397. — Bowers, Brondige, 398. — Brown, 399. — Budd, 403. — Bullock, 406. — Church, Clere, Collyer, Coe, 407. — Coffel, Disbrow, 408. — Denham, Frost, 409. — Galpin, 410. — Garnsey, Hart, Hyat, 411. — Hoyt, 412. — Hopping, Horton, 413. — Hudson, Jackson, Jefferies, 415. — Jee, Jenkins, Knap, Kniffen, 416. — Lancaster, Lane, 420. — Linch, Lockwood, Lounsbery, 421. — Lyon, 422. — Merritt, 426. — Miller, 428. — Odell, 429. — Ogden, 430. — Park, 431. — Pearce, 433. — Purdy, 434. — Roberts, Robisson, Rockwell, 440. — Sherwood, 441. — Smith, Selleck, Statham, Stephens, Stoakham, 443. — Strang, 444. — Studwell, 446. — Theall, 447. — Thomas, Thorne, Traves, Underhill, 448. — Vowles, Walters, 449. — Wascot, Wood, Woodbridge, Wright, Young, 450.

II. LATER INHABITANTS — 1700 TO 1800 — AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

Abrahams, Adee, 451. — Anderson, Andrews, Armor, Armstrong, Ascough, Adams, Akerly, Baker, Bumpos, Bayly, Barker, 452. — Barnes, Barrel, Bates, Bell, Besly, Bloodgood, Blakeman, Bird, 453. — Birdsall, Bishop, Bowne, Bridge, Brush, Burns, Burrell, Burchum, Bush, 454. — Carle, Carey, Carhartt, Carpenter, 455. — Cavalear, Chatterton, Cheeseman, Clapp, 457. Cleator, Cole, Coon, Cornell, Cornwall, 458. — Covertt, Crampton, Crawford, Cromwell, 459. — Crooker, Cue, Dusenbery, 461. — Daniels, Deall, Delhingham, Demilt, Dickinson, Dixon, Dow, Dodge, Doutty, Doughty, Eisenhart, 462. — Elsworth, Embree, Esmond, Eustace, Farrington, Fauconier, Feenas, Ferris, Field, 463. — Flamman, Flood, Foreman, Fitzgerald, Fowler, 465. — Franklin, French, Gale, Gandal, Gibson, Gilchrist, Glover, Gorum, Graham, 466. — Graham, Green, Griffin, Guion, 467. — Gedney, 468. — Haddon, Hains, 471. — Haight, 472. — Hawkshurst, Hare, Harris, Harrison, Hatfield, 473. — Halsted, 474. — Haviland, 475. — Hawkins, Hays, Haywood, Hill, Hitt, Hubbs, Hosier, Howel, Hugford, Hicks, Hutchings, Huson, Hunt, 477. — Hunter, Ireland, Jacobs, Jagger, 478. — Jay, 479. — Janes, Kennedy, King, La Count, Lamson, Lawrence, Lewis, Man, McCollum, Marsh, Marselis, Marvin, 486. — Mollinex, Morrill, Morris, Morgan, Maynard, Muirson, Murray, McDonald, Moore, Mott, Neally, Newman, Nichols, Oakley, Owen, Panton, Palmer, Peck, Pederick, Peet, Pine, 487. — Parker, Pinkney, Proboy, Provoost, 488. — Quimby, Quinnard, Rickey, Ritchie, Reynolds, Robinson, Rogers, Roll, Roosevelt, Rusforth, Rusten, Ray, Sackett, Sawyer, Schofield, Scott, Seaman, 489. — Saler, Secor, Sears, Setton, Sexton, Seymour, Shaw,

Slater, Smith, 490. — Stevenson, 491. — Stringham, Sutton, Talledy, Taylor, Tebowes, Thacker, Thomas, 492. — Thompson, Tilford, 493. — Titus, Tompkins, Totten, Tredwell, Turner, Varnell, Vail, Vickers, Virdine, Walton, 494. — Warner, Weeden, Weeks, Wetmore, 495. — Weissenfels, Wilcox, Willis, Willett, 496. — Willson, 497. — Wilson, 498. — Willy, Woolsey, Worden, Yeomans, 499.

Clark, 499.

APPENDIX.

PAGE

I. Records of Streets and Highways 501
II. Royal Patents 515
1. Patent for Peningo Neck 515
2. Patent for Budd's Neck 520
3. Patent for Harrison's Purchase 524
4. Patent for the White Plains 526
III. Town Officers 530

INDEXES.

Index of Dates 535
Index of Persons 546
General Index 556

ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE

1. Map — Northern Coast of Long Island Sound, from Delancey Point to Calves Island: including the Towns of Mamaroneck and Rye (U. S. Coast Survey).
2. Map — Towns of Harrison and Rye (*Facing title-page*).
3. Diagram — Peningo, Apawamis, Manussing 1
4. Fac-Simile — Declaration of the Inhabitants of Manussing Island, July 26, 1662 . . . . . *Facing page* 23
5. Rye in Sussex, England 27
6. Land-Gate, Rye, England 37
7. The Old Fort 42
8. Old Fort, Gable End 49
9. Strang's Tavern 71
10. Diagram — The Boundary Line 105
11. Great Stone by the Wading-Place 133
12. Haviland's, or Penfield House 145
13. Diagram — The White Plains in 1721 152
14. Rye Beach 189
15. Rye Ferry 207
16. Sniffen's Hill 215
17. Byram Bridge 248
18. Map — The Town of Rye in 1779. By Robert Erskine, F. R. S., Geographer to Army of U. S. From the Original in New York Historical Society . . . . . *Facing page* 256
19. Halsted House 271
20. Diagram — Parsonage Lot 300
21. The Jay Cemetery, Rye 479

HISTORY OF RYE.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTION.

1609–1660.

'These settling themselves down would in a short time completely dislodge the unfortunate Nederlanders; elbowing them out of those rich bottoms and fertile valleys in which our Dutch yeomanry are so famous for nestling themselves. For it is notorious that wherever these shrewd men of the east get a footing, the honest Dutchmen do gradually disappear.' — IRVING'S *History of New York*, ch. ii.

AMONG the numerous points of land jutting into Long Island Sound, and forming the lesser indentations of its northern shore, is one that may be said to mark the limit of the State of New York. From the jagged rocks that terminate this point, a tract of land nowhere more than two miles wide stretches northward about nine miles to a sharp angle upon the Connecticut border. This little territory, called by the Indians Peningo, with the island of Manussing on the east, and a part of the neighboring shore on the west, constitutes the town of Rye. Lying thus on the confines of two States, whose boundaries from the outset were but ill-defined, and remained for nearly a century in dispute, its history might in a measure be forecast. Throughout the

earlier and forming part of that history, this was 'debatable ground' — a fact very perceptibly bearing on the social and especially on the religious character of the community seated here.

The territory of this town was formerly much larger than that just described. It comprehended also the present towns of Harrison and the White Plains, until after the Revolution. These indeed were the choicest portions of the land originally acquired. The narrow tract along Byram River and the Sound was first occupied by the settlers for convenience and security, because nearer and more accessible to the older plantations of Connecticut. As soon as they could safely do so, they removed from the shore, where the surface is rocky and broken, to the more fertile inland ridges and plains.

From this inequality of surface, however, the scenery of the town takes its varied beauty, and gains attraction as a place of suburban resort and residence.

In the south and southwest, towards the Sound and bordering upon it, the land is generally level. Near the Episcopal Church rises a rocky ridge extending northward, and dividing the town in two nearly equal parts. This ridge gradually widens into a plateau of undulating surface, one fourth to three fourths of a mile wide, sloping on the northeast to the Byram River, and on the west to Blind Brook. Another ridge begins at the lower end of Peningo Neck, or Brown's Point, and gradually rises toward Grace Church Street, where it breaks into a succession of hills that extend to the village of Port Chester. Along the shore of the Sound the rocks[1] rise compactly, forming low bluffs, or are broken into large, irregular masses. Similar masses of coarse granite, below the Beach, form 'clumps' or islands, curiously worn and perforated by the action of the water, and bearing names which were given them by the settlers, or by passing mariners, in remote times.[2]

The date of the settlement carries us back more than two hundred years, to the time when the Dutch were still in possession of the province they called 'New Netherland.' Half a century had

[1] 'These rocks, like those of the entire county, do not differ essentially from the granitic rocks of New England. They are 'crystalline, stratified generally, and metamorphic; principally gneiss, mica schist, mica slate, syenite, steatite, silicious conglomerate. There are no calcareous deposits. The gneiss not unfrequently loses its stratification and becomes granite, or losing its feldspar, becomes mica schist. From the almost uniform dip of these rocks, and from the absence of fossils, we may safely refer them to the *azoic* age.'

[2] *Bar Rock* is the clump which at low tide is connected with the Beach by a sand-

elapsed since these shores were discovered by Hendrick Hudson. In virtue of that discovery, Holland claimed a vast domain, reaching from the 'Fresh' or Connecticut River to the 'South' River, or Delaware, and extending to the great lakes and the Saint Lawrence on the north, an area now covered by three States and part of a fourth. But her hold on these possessions was feeble and relaxing. The progress of the colony had been slow. Little had been done toward the occupation of this expanse. Small towns, scarcely more than hamlets, had risen under shelter of the forts on the island of Manhattan, and near the present site of the city of Albany. Five or six villages were scattered on the south end of Long Island. A few plantations were to be seen along the banks of the North or 'Maurice' River. Some show of a purpose to defend these possessions was made, by keeping up a military post at Hartford, on the extreme eastern frontier, and by the conquest of the Swedish settlements on the Delaware, at the south. But the policy of the Dutch government was not favorable to a colonial system. Though anxious to enrich herself by foreign commerce, Holland was slow to extend protection to distant dependencies, or pledge herself to their defence. These settlements were usually left to be cared for and controlled by individual or associated enterprise. Thus a board of merchants at Amsterdam, known as the West India Company, had obtained the exclusive right of trade with the western world, and the sole privilege of granting lands to those who might choose to remove thither. This Company ruled with a high hand over the traders and farmers of New Netherland. Occasional efforts were made to encourage emigration; but the inducements were not strong. The Company's object was evidently not so much to reclaim the wilderness, as to drive a profitable business with its savage inhabitants.[1] Settle-

bar. On the south side of this clump, the rock is strangely honeycombed in every direction. *Humphrey's Rock* is the next clump south of Bar Rock, and is very similar in appearance. *Black Tom* lies east of Parsonage Point. *Wrack Clump*, southeast of Pine Island, is so called from the fact that many vessels have been wrecked at this point. It is said that not long before the Revolution, a ship came ashore on this clump, having been abandoned by the crew. Two or three men living in the neighborhood went on board, and from that time were well supplied with money.

[1] 'We have neglected to populate the land; or, to speak more plainly and truly, we have, out of regard for our own profit, wished to scrape all the fat into one or more pots and thus secure the trade, and neglect population.' — *Vertoogh van Nieu Nederlandt*, etc., 1650. (*Representation from New Netherland, concerning the Situation, Fruitfulness, and Poor Condition of the same.* Translated from the Dutch by Henry C. Murphy: New York, 1854.)

ments were made with a principal view to the monopoly of the fur traffic; and New Amsterdam itself was little more than a trading post. The emigrants who had been tempted across the sea chiefly by hopes of immediate gain, had little of the energy and public spirit of their New England neighbors, who had crossed it in search of an asylum from oppression, and an inheritance of freedom for their children.

Westchester County,[1] as early as this period of the Dutch occupation, was already a scene of historic interest. For here the troubles of the Dutch with the Indian tribes of the interior commenced. And here began those difficulties with the English, which, though less sanguinary, foreboded much more clearly the termination of their rule.

This region was as yet almost an unbroken wilderness. Except along the seaboard, no settlement had been effected by either Dutch or English.[2] A vast, limitless waste, teeming with vague perils, formed the background of some sparse settlements along the shores of the Sound. Deep forests, pierced by paths known only to the red man, stretched from the Hudson to the Connecticut.[3] These forests consisted chiefly of oaks of various kinds, which, together with the walnut, chestnut, beech, and other trees, grew to a height that amazed European eyes. Many of them were loaded with vines, whose profusion is noticed by early travellers.[4]

[1] The name was not bestowed until the year 1683, when the Province of New York was divided into twelve counties. Westchester County covers an area of 480 square miles, or 307,200 acres.

[2] The former appear to have explored it to some extent along the seaboard. 'The country on the East River, between Greenwich and the island Manhattans,' wrote a Hollander in 1650, 'is for the most part covered with trees, but yet flat and suitable land, with numerous streams and valleys, right good soil for grain, together with fresh hay and meadow lands.' ('Information respecting Land in New Netherland': *Documents rel. to Colonial History of New York*, i. 366.)

[3] 'The English have now (in 1650) a village called Stamford, within six miles of the North River [*i. e.*, Dutch miles, equal to four English miles each], from whence it could be travelled now in a summer's day to the North River and back, *if the Indian path were only known.*' (*Representation from New Netherland*, etc., p. 29.)

[4] Van der Donck, Varazzano, and others. 'I have seen,' says Dominie Megapoliensis, 'many pieces of land where vine stood by vine, and grew very luxuriant, climbing up above the largest and loftiest trees, and although they were not cultivated, the grapes were as good and as sweet as in Holland.' (*Short Account of the Mauquas*, 1644.) Such doubtless was the character of the forest scenery here. In 1670, ten years after the settlement of Rye, we find mention of a 'place commonly called the Vineyard,' on Budd's Neck. Eleven years later, the 'Vineyard Farm,' on the same neck, is named. (Town Records, vol. B. pp. 34, 49.) Forty years ago there was a spot on Mr. B. Mead's farm, in the same region, noted for the profusion of these vines, overrunning the trees and covering the ground.

'Almost the whole land is full of them,' they write, 'as well the wild woods as the mowing lands and flats; but they grow principally near and upon the banks of the brooks and streams.' Some portions of the country were cleared of underbrush, and presented the appearance of beautiful groves. This was owing to the Indian custom of setting fire, in the autumn, to the tall grass, for the purpose of starting their game from the thickets. Elsewhere these fires had completely destroyed the heavier timber, producing tracts of meadow land, a pleasant relief from the sombre shades of the forest. But much of the woodland was marshy, and densely covered with a rank growth of bush and shrub. Extensive swamps overspread the valleys and lower plains, through which the brooks and streams, then much fuller than at present, made their devious way.

Occasionally, however, there were traces of a rude cultivation. Near the rivers, and especially along the inlets of the Sound, portions of the land had long been appropriated by the Indians for their corn-fields and gardens. There are probably not a few spots on our Westchester farms, upon which the red man's toil was expended before the coming of the white settler, who found his labors greatly lightened by the partial preparation of the ground, and who gladly availed himself of the Indian clearings, which were generally effected where the soil was the richest and the location the most favorable.

The country lying between the Hudson and the Byram rivers was claimed by a part of the Mohegan tribe. Various independent families of this tribe had their villages here, and roamed through the surrounding forests in pursuit of game. These villages were most numerous along the shores of the Sound. There the supplies of fish upon which the hunter depended, especially in the winter season, to eke out the scanty subsistence derived from the chase, could be obtained in its waters, and in those of the streams that empty into them. A Mohegan village stood near the beach. The level grounds along the shores of the creek north of the present village of Milton, were cultivated as Indian fields. Here and there clusters of wigwams occurred on the western bank of the creek, overlooking the salt meadows through which the Mockquams winds to the Sound. Some families too, it would appear, had their homes on Manussing Island, off the eastern shore of the neck. The interior of the country retained all its primitive wildness. Much of it, we have said, was overspread by swamps. One of these extended through the valley, once perhaps the basin of a

lake, or the bed of a river, between Rye and Port Chester. Another, which the beaver frequented, stretched along the valley of the Apawamis. Through the woods adjoining this stream, the hunter followed his prey ;[1] and near by, an Indian path, obliquely cutting this tract of land at its widest part, formed the rude thoroughfare connecting the native settlements, which was early designated by the English as 'THE OLD WESTCHESTER PATH.'[2]

[1] Indian arrow-heads have been found here in great abundance.

[2] 'The old Westchester Path' was originally an Indian trail, that led from Manhattan island to a 'wading place' not far from the mouth of Byram River, and thence through the present town of Greenwich, perhaps to Stamford and beyond. It was used by the Dutch and English, from the very first occupation of the country ; and long before any towns or plantations appeared along its course, it formed a line of travel between New York and New England. For this reason it was probably that the earliest settlements were made upon this line. Motives of convenience and safety would induce the settler to fix upon a spot not remote from the only thoroughfare as yet existing through the forest. Accordingly we find that the original purchases of land were in many cases bounded by this path, as a well-known landmark, familiar alike to the red man and the white. Many of the old farms in this town and in the adjoining towns, are described in deeds still extant as bounded by 'the old Westchester Path.' It is now the dividing line between the towns of Rye and Harrison. The first allusion to this path that we have found occurs in the year 1661. Five years later, it is already spoken of as 'y^e^ now known and common path coming up from Westchester.' Owing to such frequent reference in grants and deeds, the precise location of portions of the road has been preserved. Its course was long denoted like other boundaries in early times, by means of 'marked trees ;' and there are maps on record, exhibiting these landmarks, and showing the direction of the road. It is curious to see how long even such rude and perishable monuments may serve their purpose. Some years ago it became necessary to ascertain more exactly the boundary between the towns of Rye and Harrison. A party of several of the 'oldest inhabitants' was made up, to accompany the surveyor, and assist him by their recollections in finding the marks indicated by the old maps and deeds. They had little difficulty in doing this, along the greater part of the way ; though the young saplings and 'staddles' marked a half century earlier and more, had like themselves grown to a green old age. At length, however, the party came to a stand. The 'white oak stump' which was designated as the next way mark could not be found. After some deliberation it was suggested that they should proceed to the extreme end of their survey, and then measure back to the last point ascertained ; and at the given distance they discovered, by digging under-ground, the mouldering remains of a 'white oak stump' whose testimony completed the chain of evidence required.

The Westchester Path in this town has been disused, probably for a hundred years past, except in some few places, and as a way of communication between one farm and another. There is no proof indeed that it was at any time a graded road, travelled by wagons or stages. Such conveyances were scarcely known in those early days. For generations the bridle-path and the 'cart-way' were the only kind of road known or needed. The 'marked trees' which formerly indicated its course, are now replaced by small granite posts, denoting the boundary line of the towns of Rye and Harrison. By means of this boundary, we may trace the old path for about three miles from the vicinity of Mamaroneck River to a point on the bank of Blind Brook, near the house lately Mr. Allen P. Carpenter's. Beyond this, its course is not certainly known. I am inclined to believe that the Ridge Road is the continuation of the old Westchester Path, at least for some distance.

This seems probable from the fact that it begins where that path, so far as it can now be traced, ends; and pursues for awhile the same northeasterly direction. Indeed there is a tradition, which confirms this view, that the Ridge Road is the oldest thoroughfare in these parts. Bearing more to the eastward, perhaps, from a point above the Catholic Cemetery, the path ran to the wading-place, where Byram bridge now crosses the river, and thence followed apparently the course of the present post-road through the town of Greenwich. It is mentioned as a boundary in several ancient deeds of that town.

CHAPTER II.

THE INDIAN PURCHASES.

1660–1662.

'They are gone,
With their old forests wide and deep;
And we have built our homes upon
Fields where their generations sleep.'

BRYANT.

IT was in the last days of the Dutch rule on this continent, that a little company of New England men, from the neighboring town of Greenwich, ventured to establish themselves here. They came to plant another of those settlements by means of which, it is well known, the Connecticut colonists had resolved to encroach on the territory beyond them; 'crowding out the Dutch,' whom they affected to regard as mere intruders. The spot these settlers had chosen was, in their own language, 'a small tract of land lying betwixt Greenwich and Westchester.' It was one of those 'necks' to which the Indian natives were so partial, on account of the facilities afforded them for fishing, and where they were accustomed to make their more permanent homes. Here stood the villages of several Mohegan families, and near by, undoubtedly, lay their gardens and corn-fields. These were much more extensive than we have been accustomed to suppose. There is evidence that a considerable part of the land along the shores of the Sound had been cleared and partially cultivated by the Indians, before the white race obtained possession of it. These clearings were made in the rude way so often practised by our Western pioneers, — through the agency of fire. But they greatly assisted the labors of the white settler in his improvement of the soil. Early writers inform us that the lands thus cleared were at once taken up. 'Those who first arrived,' says one, 'found lands all prepared, abandoned by the savages who here cultivated their fields. Those who have come since have cleared the lands for themselves in the forests.'[1] This was particularly the case near the coast.

[1] 'Ils ont trouvé quelques terres toutes propres que les sauvages avoient autrefois

An ancient historian of Guilford, Connecticut, states that in that own 'some of the Points of Land adjoining the Sea were all lear'd by the native Indians;' and that 'for a great many years he planters were chiefly confin'd to the Lands cleared by the Indians near the Sea.'[1] From the well-known custom of the settlers o avail themselves of these localities, as well as from the abundance f Indian remains in this neighborhood, we judge that Peningo Neck, and especially Manussing Island, had been thus in a measre prepared for them. In all probability they found these shores omparatively denuded of the forest, and portions of the land under tolerable degree of cultivation.

The original purchasers of this place were three in number: Peter Disbrow, John Coe, and Thomas Stedwell. A fourth, John Budd, was associated with them in some of their purchases, and several others joined them in the actual settlement of the place; ut the earliest negotiations appear to have been conducted in behalf of the three persons we have named. They were all residents of Greenwich at the time when the first Indian treaty was igned. Their leader was Peter Disbrow, a young, intelligent, elf-reliant man, who seems to have enjoyed the thorough confidence and esteem of his associates. His name invariably heads the st of the proprietors. Whenever there was a treaty to be formed, r a declaration to be made, Disbrow's services were required. And from two of these documents, which are in his handwriting, e are led to conceive very favorably of the mental and moral haracter of the man.

On the third day of January, 1660, we find Peter Disbrow in reaty with the Indians of Peningo Neck for the purchase of that ract of land. What negotiations had preceded this transaction, nd what were the terms of sale, we do not know. The deed of his purchase has long since disappeared. It was lost during the fetime of Disbrow himself.[2]

réparées où ils sement du bled et de l'avoine . . . . Les premiers venus y ont rouvé des terres toutes propres desertées autrefois par les sauvages qui y faisoient eurs champs. Ceux qui sont venus depuis ont defriché dans les bois.' — *Novum Belgium: an Account of New Netherland in* 1643–44. By Rev. Father Isaac Jogues, of he Society of Jesus. New York: privately printed, 1862. (Astor Library.)

[1] *History of Guilford, Conn.*, a fragment, by Rev. Thomas Ruggles, 1769. Printed rom the original manuscript in *The Historical Magazine* (Henry B. Dawson, Editor), ol. v., 2d series, pp. 225–233.

[2] Town Records, vol. B. We have however an account of this purchase written ome sixty years later, that embodies facts relative to it which had doubtless been reserved by tradition. The petition of the people of Rye in 1720 for a patent from he Crown, recounts the measures by which they had acquired possession of their

It is singular that this purchase should have been made in mid-winter, and — so far as appears — by Peter Disbrow alone. Was he the first to visit and explore these shores? We have no means of knowing where, and under what circumstances, on that January day in 1660, the bargain took place. Not unlikely, it may have been at the Indian village that stood near the lower end of the Beach. Here, perhaps, 'Coko the Indian,' and others whose less pronounceable names are affixed to the ancient deeds, gathered about the white man, and received his coveted gifts of wampum and articles of clothing.

This First Purchase on Peningo Neck comprised the lower part of the present town of Rye, on the east side of Blind Brook. From the extreme end of the peninsula proper, or Brown's Point, as it has long been called, this territory extended north as far as the present village of Port Chester. A line of marked trees from east to west was the boundary of this tract, beginning a little below Park's Mill, where a branch of Blind Brook empties into that stream, and running in a southeasterly direction to Byram River.

Nearly six months elapsed before any further step was taken by our planters. They had no intention of settling, as yet, on the land thus acquired upon the main. But east of Peningo Neck, separated from it only by a narrow channel, lay an island about a mile in length, called by the Indians *Manussing*. This island appears not to have been included in the first purchase. It offered manifest advantages for the commencement of the plantation. On the twenty-ninth day of June, 1660, Peter Disbrow, with John Coe and Thomas Stedwell, concluded a treaty with the Indian proprietors for the purchase of this island. The deed is as follows: —

'Be it knowen vnto all men whom it may concern both Indians and English that we Shanarockwell sagamore, Maowhobo and Cokensekoo have sold unto Peter Disbro, John Coo, Thomas Studwell, all living at this present at Grenwige, to say a certain parcel of land the parcel of land

lands, as follows: 'One Peter Disbrow many yeares since by authority from the Colony of Connecticut (under whose Government the Township of Rye then lay), on the third of January 1660 purchased from the then Native Indian Proprietors a Certaine Tract of Land lyeing on the maine between a sertaine place then called Rahonaness to the East and to the West Chester Path to the North and up to a River then called Moaquanes to the West That is to say all the Land lyeing betweene the aforesaid Two Rivers then called Penningoe extending from the said Path to the North and South to the Sea or Sound.' [1]

[1] *Land Papers*, Secretary of State's Office, Albany: vol. vii. p. 171.

ich these Indians above mentioned have sold is called in the Indian
me Manusing Island, and is near unto the main land which is called
the Indian name Peningo. This said island we above mentioned
e here by virtue of this bill doe sell all our right and title unto John
o, Peter Disbro, Thomas Studwell, quietly to injoy from any molesta-
n of us or any other Indians to them and to their heirs, assigns and
ecutors for ever, and farther we have given unto Peter Disbro John
o and Thomas Studwell feed for their cattle upon the main called
the Indians Peningo and what timbers or trees that is for their
e and not to be molested by us or other Indians: and we doe hereby
knowledge to have received full satisfaction for this purchase of land
ove mentioned to say we have received eight cotes and seven shirts
ene fathom of wompone which is the full satisfaction for the parcel
land above mentioned and for the witness we have hereto set our
nds.

Ipawahun	Shanarockwell
Aramapoe	Aranaque
Wonanao	Cokow
Topogone	Wawatanman
Matishes	Cokinseco
Richard	Maowbert
	Quaraiko.'

The sixth name may have been that of an interpreter, whose
rvices would very likely be needed in the transaction.

By these two treaties, our settlers acquired the lower half of the
esent territory of the town, between Blind Brook and the Sound
Byram River; together with the adjoining island of Manussing.
early a year after, they bought the land lying farther north,
tween the same streams. This included considerably more than
e present territory of the town. The deed of the purchase is
ted May 22, 1661: —

'Be it known to all men whom it may concern both English and In-
ans that I Cokoe and Marrmeukhong and Affawauwone and Nahti-
eman and Shocoke and Wauwhowarnt do acknowledge to have sold
Peter Disbrow, his heirs and assigns, a certain tract of land lying
tween Byram River and the Blind Brook, which tract of land is
unded as followeth, viz., with the river called in English Byram
ver beginning at the mouth of the above said river on the east and
e bounds of Hasting on the south and southwest to the marked trees,
d northward up to the marked trees; which may contain six or seven
iles from the sea along the said Byram River side northward, and so
m the said river cross the neck northwest and west to the river called
e Blind Brook, bounded northward with marked trees which leads
wn to a little brook which runs into the Blind Brook. The which

tract of land I Cokoe and the above said Indians our fellows, heirs and assigns, do here promise and make good to the said Peter Disbrow, his heirs or assigns, peaceable and quiet possession for ever without any molestation either from Dutch, Indians or English. We the above said Indians have also sold this tract of land above mentioned with all the trees, grass, springs and minerals, with feed range and timber northward twenty English miles above the said purchase of land; and do acknowledge to have received full satisfaction for the said land. In witness hereof we the above said Indians have set to our hands this present day and date above written.

MARRMEUKHONG his mark
AFFAWAUWONE his mark
NAHTIMEMAN his mark
COKOE his mark'

These three purchases completed the territory of Rye on the *east* side of Blind Brook. Indeed, they took in also a part of the town of Greenwich — the tract of land between the present State line and Byram River. And we shall see that the claims of Rye to this tract, founded upon the Indian purchase just related, gave rise to not a little trouble in the subsequent relations of the two towns.

Our planters next turned their attention to the lands lying *west* of Blind Brook — a much more extensive and important field. Eastward, they could not hope to extend their limits further than the bounds of the neighboring town of Greenwich, a member of the same colony with themselves. But westward, there were no rights which they considered themselves bound to respect, interposing a barrier to their spread into the unknown and limitless forest waste. And unquestionably, it was in this direction that they chiefly hoped to secure a wide and valuable domain. Accordingly, within a little more than a year after the last purchase east of Blind Brook, they had bought from the Indians the lands on the west side of that stream, extending to Mamaroneck River, and indefinitely beyond. Upon these purchases, the town of Rye subsequently founded its claim to the territory now known as Rye Neck, and to the present townships of Harrison, and the White Plains.

In these transactions John Budd takes the lead, instead of Peter Disbrow. His first treaty with the Indians is dated November 8th, 1661, when he bought the tract of land called by the Indians Apawamis, and by the white men Budd's Neck. This tract was bounded on the east by Blind Brook, and on the west by the little stream whose Indian name was Pockcotessewake, since known

as Stony Brook, or Beaver Meadow Brook. Northward, it extended as far as the Westchester Path, and southward to the sea. The land thus described constitutes now the southwestern part of the town. It has always formed a part of the territory of Rye. But, unlike the former purchases, it was claimed by a single proprietor, and for a period of nearly sixty years, was held under a distinct patent.

"To all Christian people, Ingains and others whom it may concern, that we whose names are hereunto subscribed, living upon Hudson's river, in America, That we Shanarocke, sagamore, and Rackceate, Napockheast, Tawwheare, Nanderwhere, Tomepawcon, Rawmaquaie, Puwaytahem, Mawmawytom, Howhoranes, Cockkeneco, Tawwayco, Attoemacke, Heattomeas, all Ingains, for divers good causes and considerations us hereunto moving, have fully and absolutely bargained and doe for ever sell unto John Budd, senior, of South hole, his heires, executors, &c., all our real right, tittell and interest we or eather of us have in one track of land lying on the mayn, called Apawammeis, buted and bounded on the east with Mockquams river, and on the south with the sea against Long Island, and on the west with Pockcotesswake river, and at the north up to the marke trees nyeer Westchester path, all the lands, trees to fell at his pleasure, with all the grounds and meadow grounds and planting grounds, moynes and minerals, springs and rivers or what else lying or being within the said track of land, and also range, feeding and grasse for cattell, twenty English miles northward into the country, and trees to fell at his or their pleasure, and to their proper use and improvements of the said John Budd, his heirs, executors, &c., for ever to enjoy, possess and keepe as their real right, as also peaceably to inherite the sayd track of land with all thereone, and we the before named Ingains doe acknowledge and confesse to have received in hand of the said John Budd, the juste sum of eightie pounds sterling in full satisfaction for the aforesaid land with all the limits, bounds and privileges with hegrece and regrece,[1] without lett or molestation of any one. Now for the more true and reall enjoyment and possession of the said John Budd his heirs, &c., we doe jointly and severally, us and either of us, or any by or under us, for ever assign and make over by virtue of this our deed and bill of sale, disclayme any further right in the sayd tract of land from the day of the date hereof, and all and each of us do promise to put the said John Budd or his into quiet, peaceable possession, and him to keep and defend and mayntaine against all person or persons whatsoever that shall directly or indirectly lay any clayme or former grant, or shall trouble or molest the said John Budd or his, be they English or Dutch, or Ingains, or whatsoever. We the aforenamed Ingains doe engage ourselves, heirs, executors, &c., to

[1] Egress and regress.

make good this our obligations as aforesaid. I Shanarocke, Rackeate, Mepockheast, Tawwaheare, Nanderwhere, Tomepawcon, Rawmaquaie, Pawwaytahem, Mawmawytom, Howhoranes, Cockkeneco, Tawwayen, Attoemacke, Heattomees, have hereunto set our hands at time and times, and we doe approve of each of our hands to this deed to be good and firm. Witness this our hands this day, being the 8th of November, 1661. Signed, sealed and delivered.

THOMAS REVELL
JOHN COE
THOMAS CLOSE
HUMPHREY HUGHES

The mark of SHANOROCKE
NANDERWHERE
MEPOCKHEAST
HOWHORANES
RAWMAQUAIE
RACKEATE
PAWWAYTAHEM
COCKENSECO'

A second deed, executed a few days after the date of the above, related to the islands in the Sound, near the territory thus purchased. These were Hen and Pine islands, and the Scotch Caps.

'Know all men whom this may concern, that I Shenerock, sachem, have bargained sold and delivered unto John Budd the islands lying south from the neck of land the sayd John Budd bought of me and other Ingains, and have received full satisfaction of Thomas Close for the said John's use, and doe warrant the sale above written in the presence of Thomas Close and William Jones.

The mark of SHENOROCK, sachem.
SHENOROCK

Witnesse THOMAS CLOSE
WILLIAM JONES his marke'

This transaction was followed, in a few days, by the purchase of the West Neck, or the tract of land adjoining Budd's Neck proper, and lying between Stony Brook and Mamaroneck River.

'11 month, twelfth day, 1661.

'Know all men whom this may concern, that I Shenorock, Rawmaqua, Rackeatt, Pawwaytahan, Mawmatoe, Howins, have bargained sold and delivered unto John Budd a neck of land, bounded by a neck of land he bought of me and other Ingans on the south, and with Merremack river on the west, and with marked trees to the north, with twenty miles for feeding ground for cattle with all the woods, trees, manrodes, meadows and rivers and have received full satisfaction in coats and three score faddom of wompom of Thomas Close for the said John's use, and to engage myself to warrant the sale thereof against all men, English, Dutch and Ingans, and for the faithful performance hereof, I

have set my hand in the presence of Thomas Close and William Jones, the day and year above written. The mark of SHENEROCKE

Witnesse THOMAS CLOSE
WILLIAM JONES his marcke

RAWMAQUA his mark
HOWNIS
PRAM his mark
RAZI his mark'

The last of these purchases was made in the following summer, — on the second day of June, 1662, — by John Budd in company with the other three purchasers. It is the first occasion upon which these four names appear together. The settlers now bought the tract of land *above* the Westchester Path, and west of Blind Brook, or directly north of Budd's Neck. This was the territory of the present town of Harrison; and the following deed exhibits the claim of the proprietors of Rye to that tract, which was wrested from them forty years later:

'Know all men whom this may concern that we Peter Disbrow, John Coe and Thomas Studwell and John Budd have bargained and bought and paid for to the satisfaction of Showannorocot and Roksohtohkor and Powataham and other Indians whose names are underwritten a certain tract of land above Westchester Path to the marked trees bounded with the above said river Blind brook; which tract of land with all the privileges of wood, trees, grass, springs, mines and minerals, to the said Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Studwell, to them and their heirs for ever; with warrants against all persons, English, Dutch, or Indians. To this bargain and sale we the above said Indians do bind ourselves, heirs and assigns to the above said Peter Disbrow, John and the rest above said, to them, their heirs and assigns for ever; as witness our hands this present day and date, June the 2: 1662.

SHOWANNOROCOT his mark
ROMKQUE his mark'

To complete our series of Indian deeds, we here give the following, which is a confirmation of the last grant, for the land above Westchester Path. Four years after the sale of this land to Budd and his three associates, the Indians confirm the tract to Budd alone, as included in the grant which they had already made to him individually, November 8, 1661, of a tract of land extending 'northward into the country' sixteen miles from Westchester Path. Thus by three distinct grants from the Indians, our early settlers were secured in the possession of the territory, which was afterwards given to Harrison and his associates. It is not surprising that they should have felt this to be a most oppressive act, nor that they should have resisted its execution to their utmost ability.

'To all Christian people, Indians and others whom it may concern that we whose names are hereunto subscribed living upon Hudson's river in America, Shonarocke, sagamore, and Romackqua and Pathung, whereas we have formerly sold a tract of land unto M^r^ John Bud senr., bounded on the sea on the sowth, on the north by Westchester path, and the name of the tract of land is commonly called Apauamiss, and whereas we have sold unto the sayd M^r^ John Budd twenty English miles northwardes from the above sayd tract of land which is called by Apauamis, the above sayd twenty English miles we doe acknowledge that we have sold unto M^r^ John Budd for range, for feed, for timber, for graseing, to him and his heirs for ever, and now we doe acknowledge that we have bargained, sold and delivered, we and every one of us, from our heirs, executors or assynes jointly and severally unto John Budd, his heirs, executors or assigns, a track of land lying within the compass of the above sayd twenty English miles, bounded on the south by Westchester path, and on the east by the Blind brook, and on the west by Mamarranack river, and the north bounds is sixteen English miles from Westchester path up into the country, for which land we received already in hand a certain sum, to the value of twenty pounds sterling, for the above sayd track of land, for which land we are fully satisfied by the sayd John Budd, for the above sayd track of land, for the which we doe acknowledge we have bargained, sold and delivered unto John Budd and his heirs for ever, with warrantie against all men, English, Dutch and Indians, and doe give him full possession, and promise so to keep him, to the which bargain and agreement we have hereunto set our hands this day, being the 29 of April, 1666.

Witness, Joseph Horton The marke of Shanarocke
Witness, John Rawls The markes of Romackqua Sachems both
The mark of Coco the Indian The mark of Pathung'[1]

The valuation at which our settlers bought their lands from the Indians, deserves attention here. It has often been represented that such purchases were made at a merely nominal price: a few old coats and worthless trinkets. The deeds we have quoted show that this is far from being true of the purchases at Rye. The clothing given was indeed no trifle in those days. The 'eight coats and seven shirts' which formed part of the payment in the purchase of Manussing Island, had a considerable value in the eyes of the planters. But in addition to these, they gave 'fifteen fathom of wampone,' or about four pounds ten shillings sterling.[2]

[1] *Col. Rec. of Conn.*, vol. i. (MS.) p. 334.

[2] Wampum, or wampumpeag, was the Indian currency. It consisted of cylindrical pieces of shells, a quarter of an inch long, and in diameter less than a pipe-stem, drilled lengthwise so as to be strung upon a thread. For the most part, it was made out of the shell of the hard clam; that made out of the blue part or heart of the shell

What were the terms of the first purchase on Peningo Neck, we do not know; nor do we learn what the 'full satisfaction' acknowledged for the second purchase was. But it appears that Mr. Budd paid for the land which he bought on the west side of Blind Brook, the value of about one hundred and twenty pounds. Presuming that the lands on the east side cost our settlers about as much more, we find that they must have expended nearly or quite two hundred and fifty pounds in their Indian purchases. These facts certainly confirm the statements of Dr. Trumbull, relative to the expenses borne by the early settlers of Connecticut. Their lands, he says, 'though really *worth nothing at that time*, cost the planters very considerable sums, besides the purchase of their patents, and the right of preëmption. In purchasing the lands and making settlements in a wilderness, the first planters of Connecticut *expended great estates*.' [1]

We have anticipated the course of events, in the history of our settlement, in order to complete our account of these Indian purchases. They occupied, it appears, a period of two years and a half. Meantime, the three purchasers, who were living at Greenwich when the first two treaties were made, had come down with some others to the little island of Manussing, near the mouth of Byram River, and were already preparing to cross over to the main. The account of this settlement we reserve for another chapter. Elsewhere, too, we shall consider the relation in which John Budd stood to the other colonists, and that of his claims to theirs. But it may be remarked here, that by the several purchases now recorded, the founders of this town acquired the title to a very considerable territory. The southern part of it alone comprised the tract of land between Byram River and Mamaroneck River, while to the north it extended twenty miles, and to the northwest an indefinite distance. These boundaries, so far as they were stated with any degree of clearness, included, besides the area now covered by the towns of Rye and Harrison, much of the towns of North Castle and Bedford in New York, and of

having the highest value. Wampum, or sewan, as the Dutch called it, continued long to be a part of the currency among the whites as well as the Indians, 'and was even paid in the Sunday collections in the churches.' The value of this currency was determined by law, and was subject to occasional changes. At this period, wampum was reckoned at one farthing per bead or shell. (Palfrey, *History of New England*, vol. i. p. 31.) The shell being a quarter of an inch long, 288 shells, making a fathom, would be worth 6*s*.

The Indians who frequented the shores of the Sound were noted for the manufacture of wampum.

[1] *History of Connecticut*, by Benj. Trumbull, D. D., vol. i. p. 117.

Greenwich in Connecticut: whilst in a northwesterly direction, the territory claimed was absolutely without a fixed limit. Indeed, we shall see that as the frontier town of Connecticut, Rye long cherished pretensions to the whole region beyond, as far as the Hudson. It is not surprising that our settlers should have entertained very vague conceptions upon this subject. Except along the seaboard, the country was almost utterly unknown. The vast wilderness that spread down to the very border of their fields upon the coast, remained for years a mystery and a terror to the few settlers who had ventured upon its outskirts.

CHAPTER III.

THE ISLAND.

1660–1664.

'Look seaward thence, and naught shall meet thine eye
But fairy isles, like paintings on the sky,
And waters glittering in the glare of noon,
Or touched with silver by the stars and moon.'

'Towards that smiling shore
Bear we our household gods, to fix for evermore.'

PINKNEY.

THESE dealings with the natives for the purchase of their lands were still in progress, when the settlement on Manussing Island was commenced. The precise date we are unable to fix, but it must have been in the summer or the fall of the year 1660. Disbrow and his companions, it will be remembered, were 'all living at Greenwich' when they concluded their treaty with the Indians for the purchase of the island. This was on the twenty-ninth day of June, 1660. But the next deed, — that for the purchase of the northern part of Peningo Neck, — dated May 22, 1661, mentions 'the bounds of Hasting on the south,' showing that the lands previously bought had received a name, and implying that they were already occupied. It is unlikely, indeed, that the settlers would delay their coming, after securing the site which they judged to be favorable for the purpose; and accordingly we presume that they arrived in July or August, 1660. They came undoubtedly in boats. It was but an hour's sail, and they could thus transport their families and household goods much more readily than by the Indian paths through the forest, and across the ford from Peningo Neck.

It is easy to see why this spot should have been chosen. Here the settlers would be almost in sight of Greenwich, whither they could speedily retreat if molested. They were not likely to be noticed by the Dutch, though their island lay within the line designated by the last treaty. From their savage neighbors they would be comparatively safe. And here, while exploring the ad-

jacent shores, and completing their purchases of land, they could quietly gain a foothold, and wait for accessions to their numbers.

But apart from these considerations, the planters could scarcely have lighted on a more inviting spot, had they sailed along the coast as far as the Manhattoes. Their island was about a mile long. It lay on the eastern side of Peningo Neck, only separated from it by a narrow creek. Westward, a broad expanse of sedge land, or salt meadow — much valued by the early settlers as yielding food for their cattle — intervened, almost hiding this channel in its winding course, and seeming to connect the island with the main. On the other side, toward the sea, a wide beach bordered its entire length. An Indian village had formerly stood on the southern part of the island ; perhaps some of the deserted wigwams yet remained ; and the upland, like the salt meadows, presented that appearance of cultivation, which, as we have seen, drew the white man to the places that had been improved in some measure by the natives before his coming.

Looking southward, our planters had in prospect an almost unbroken wilderness. The only spot between them and New Amsterdam, where Europeans had yet attempted to establish themselves, was a point of land, ten miles below, known to the Dutch as Ann's Hook. Here, eighteen years before, the famous Mother Hutchinson had been slain by the Indians, in one of their risings upon the Dutch. This point had since been bought by Thomas Pell of Fairfield, who was now endeavoring under authority of Connecticut to form a settlement there, in spite of Governor Stuyvesant's remonstrances. Across the Sound, which is here about five miles wide, the shores of Long Island were already in great part possessed by the English. Hempstead,[1] just opposite ; Oyster Bay and Huntington, to the east, had been settled some years before ; the first with the consent of the Dutch themselves, the other two under patent from the New Haven Colony. It was at Hempstead Harbor, directly across the Sound, that the dividing line, agreed upon in 1650, between the Dutch possessions on Long Island and those of the English, terminated.

Manussing Island[2] comprises about one hundred acres of upland

[1] The most distant point of land to be seen from Manussing Island, looking up the Sound, is Eaton's Neck. West of this point is Huntington Bay. Oyster Bay is the next inlet ; and nearer still is Hempstead Harbor.

[2] Traces of several dwellings have been found on the southern part of the island, where they appear to have formed a cluster, a few rods apart. The summer-house on Mr. Wm. P. Van Rensselaer's grounds, indicates about the spot where this little village stood. Thirty or forty years ago, the walls of a small stone house were still

with as many more of sedge or salt meadow. The first business of the settlers was to apportion the land among themselves, and erect some temporary habitations. A home-lot of two or three acres was assigned to each. These lots were probably contiguous to each other, and the houses built upon them soon presented the appearance of a small village. The first houses built were nothing better than log-cabins. The timber was cut on Peningo Neck. More comfortable dwellings soon replaced these; the materials being brought down from the older settlements.

The island village took the name of Hastings. There is no reason to doubt that it was so called after the famous seaport on the British Channel. And it is fair to infer that some one at least of the settlers came from Hastings in Sussex, England.[1] Part of the mainland received this appellation, together with the island. 'The bounds of Hastings,' extended, we have seen, about as far north, on Peningo Neck, as the present village of Port Chester. But some time elapsed before any improvements were attempted in this direction. For two or three years certainly, the planters confined themselves to their insular home.

The three purchasers of the island, Disbrow, Coe, and Studwell, were soon joined by other adventurers, if indeed they were not accompanied by them at the outset. The following are the names of all the planters of whom we have any record, as belonging to the island settlement:—

Peter Disbrow,	Richard Vowles,	Thomas Applebe,
John Coe,	Samuel Alling,	Philip Galpin,
Thomas Studwell,	Robert Hudson,	George Clere,
John Budd,	John Brondish,	John Jackson,
William Odell,	Frederick Harminson,	Walter Lancaster.

Two other names, which are undecipherable, stand connected with these, making seventeen in all. The last three do not ap-

to be seen at this end of the island, — perhaps a part of the ancient house of Richard Vowles.

[1] Old names were given to new places, in these early days, for reasons very different from those which have produced the absurd nomenclature of many of our modern towns. The feeling which prompted this custom is touchingly expressed in the preamble of an act conferring the name of New London, in the year 1657: 'Whereas it hath bene a commendable practice of y^e^ inhabitants of all the Collonies of these parts that as this Countrey hath its denomination from our dear natiue Countrey of England, and thence is called New England, soe the planters in their first setling of most new Plantations haue giuen names to those Plantations of some Citties and Townes in England, thereby intending to keep up and leaue to posterity the memoriall of seuerall places of note there, as Boston, Hartford, Windsor, York, Ipswitch, Brantree Exeter, — This Court,' etc. (*Public Records of the Colony of Conn.*, prior to 1665; p. 313.)

pear until the third year of the settlement. The others may not improbably have been associated with it from the first.

Eight of these names are permanently connected with the history of our settlement. We shall have occasion, further on, to trace the descent of several of the oldest families of the town from these persons. The other seven, in the list given above, were but transient members of the plantation. Their names soon disappear from its records. Of Samuel Alling, Thomas Applebe, and Frederick Harminson, we know scarcely anything. Robert Hudson was living at Rye some years later. George Clere remained long enough to obtain a home-lot in the new village, on the main. John Jackson and Walter Lancaster removed to the town of East Chester, New York, of which place the latter became one of the proprietors and leading men.

It may be interesting just here to pause and consider who these men were, and with what views they had come to this spot. With perhaps one exception, they were Englishmen by birth, and doubtless also Puritans in faith. They were, most of them, the sons of men who had sought refuge on these shores, among the earliest companies of emigrants to New England. There are grounds for believing that they were men capable of appreciating the benefits and obligations of civil freedom. Some of them at least, as we shall see, were men of religious principle and conviction. It is not unreasonable to suppose that they were in sympathy with the great movement which brought the Pilgrims to this hemisphere, a movement influenced, as we believe, by the highest motives that ever led to the founding of a state. It is far from true, that all who came out with the early colonists of New England were men of this stamp. Unworthy and disorderly characters appear to have thrust themselves among them from the first. But there is presumptive evidence that the founders of this plantation were of a different class.

The earliest document that has come down to us from these times, gives us certainly a very favorable impression of the planters. It is a declaration of their purposes and desires, drawn up about two years after the commencement of the enterprise. A word should be said here as to the occasion of this document. The Restoration had just occurred in Great Britain. On the accession of Charles the Second to the throne, it was expected that the American Colonies would profess their allegiance in the usual form of an address and petition. The colonies were somewhat slow to do this. Connecticut, however, was the first to offer these professions of

submission. The address of the General Court at Hartford to the King was ordered to be drawn up on the 14th of March, 1661.[1] It had probably come to the knowledge of the settlers at Hastings. They unite in expressing their concurrence in that address. And they also take the opportunity to define their true position, as those who, though dwelling in the wilderness, 'remote from other places,' are loath to be viewed as outlaws. And while proclaiming their reverence for constituted authority, they reserve their rights of conscience and private judgment. They will yield subjection only to 'wholesome laws, that are just and righteous, according to God and our capableness to receive.'

'HASTING, *July* 26 1662

'Know all men whom this may concern that [we the] inhabitants of Minnussing Island whose n[ames are here] vnder writtne, do declare vnto all the true [th] we came not hither to live withovt goverment as pr[etended,] and therfore doe proclayme Charles the Second ovr lawful lord and king: and doe voluntaryly submit our selves and all ovr lands that we have bought of the English and Indians: vnder his gratious protection: and do expect according to his gratious declaration: unto all his subjects which we are and desiore to be subject to all his holsom lawes that are jvst and Righteous according to God and our capableness to receive: where unto we doe subscribe.

* * * * * * * * PETER DISBROW,
* * * * * * * * * JOHN COE,

'The mark of SAMUELL ALLING, The mark of THOMAS STEDWILL,
The mark of ROBERT HUTSONE, The mark of WILLIAM ODELLE.
JOHN BRONDISH,
The mark of FREDERICK HARMINSONE,
The mark of THOMAS APLEBE.'[2]

It would appear from the language of this document that some suspicion had been cast upon the enterprise. The motive of these planters in going beyond the limits of previous settlements had been impugned. Hence their declaration that they 'came not hither to live without government.' There is evidence, too, that they felt themselves in danger from lawless and disorderly men, who were but too ready to join a new adventure. For at the same

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, 1636–1665, p. 361.

[2] For the fac-simile of this document which is here presented, I am indebted to Mr. Bolton, who made a careful tracing of the original. The volume that contained it is unfortunately lost.

Aquidny July 26 1662

know all men whom this may concern that
inhabitants of mixnettiny Island whose
names are written do declare unto all the
world that we will not bother to live without government ab

and therefore do proclayme Charles the Second our
Lord and King. and do voluntarily submitt ourselves
and all our lands that we have bought of the saghems
Indians: under his gracious protection: and do expect
according to his gracious declaration: and do submit
which we also and desire to be subject to all his
Laws that are
and over us to receive; whereunto we do

Subscribed by Peter Hisbrow

John Ogden

the marke + of Thomas Hedwill

the mark of William Odell

Lucas Atkins
his marke

Thomas
his mark of
Samuell Atkins

the I mark of
Robert Feathers
John Swindish

the mark of
Francis Stone

his mark
Thomas
Atkins

time with the above statement, our settlers drew up the following compact, which they signed in the same manner: —

'We do agree that for our land bought on the mayn land, called in the Indian Peningoe, and in English the Biaram land, lying between the aforesaid Biaram river and the Blind brook, bounded east and west with these two rivers, and on the north with Westchester path, and on the south with the sea, for a plantation, and the name of the town to be called Hastings.

'And now lastly we have jointly agreed that he that will subscribe to these orders, here is land for him, and he that doth refuse to subscribe hereunto we have no land for him. HASTINGS, *July* 26, 1662. The planters hands to these orders.

* * * * * * ROBERT HUTSON,
* * * * * * JOHN BRONDISH,
SAMUEL ALLIN, FREDERICK HARMINSON,
THOMAS APPLEBE.

'August 11, 1662. These orders made by the purchasers of the land with our names.

PETER DISBROW, JOHN COE,
THOMAS STEDWELL, WILLIAM ODELL.'

While thus endeavoring to maintain good order in their little commonwealth, our settlers were anxious, as they had good reason to be, about their political situation. Great uneasiness was now felt throughout New England, regarding the designs of Great Britain. The king, whose restoration the colonies reluctantly proclaimed, was thought to be not a little inclined to curtail the liberties of his subjects across the sea, and to repress the spirit of independence for which they were already becoming noted. Connecticut, however, by the skilful management of its agent, the celebrated John Winthrop, had obtained a royal charter conferring most valuable privileges: constituting that colony, in fact, a self-governing state, and reaffirming its claims to a wide extent of territory. The news of this success spread joy throughout the colony. The General Court at Hartford hastened to apprise the towns, and require their submission to the new order of things. Notice even was sent, to Governor Stuyvesant's great displeasure, as far as Oostdorp, or Westchester Village in New Netherland, where Connecticut men had settled some years before under grants from the Dutch. The Hartford government informed them that by the terms of the new charter they were included in the colony limits; and enjoined upon them, 'at their peril,' to send deputies to the next meeting of the Court. Perhaps it was the

very same messenger, riding 'post-haste' to the Dutch village, who turned aside from his course along the Westchester Path, as he reached Peningo Neck, and came down to the little island settlement with the good news of the charter. At all events, a message of like import reached the inhabitants of Hastings; and they gladly took steps to place themselves at once under the protection of the Colony, and seek the rights and privileges of a fully constituted town. A meeting was called, and Richard Vowles was chosen to go to Fairfield, and there be qualified as constable for the plantation. Shortly after, the settlers addressed the following letter to the General Court: —

'From Hasting the 1 mth 26: 1663.

'Much Honnored Sires, — Wee the inhabitance of the towne of Hasting whose names are heer vnder writne: being seted upon a small tract of land lying betwixt Grinwich and Westchester: which land wee have bought with our money: the which: wee understand doth lye within your patant: and where as you have allredy required our subiection: as his maiesties subiects, which we did willingly and redily imbrace and according to your desiour: we sent a man to Fairfield who have there takne the oathe of a Constable: we have now made choyse of our nayghbar John Bud for a deputi and sent him up to your Corte to act for us as hee shall see good: it is our desiour: to have [some] settled way of goverment amongst us: and therfore we do crave so much favor at the hands of the honnorable Cort: that whether they do make us a constable or aney other offesere that they would give him povr to grant a warrant in case of need because we be som what remote from other places: thus leaving it to yovr wise and judicious consideration we remayn yours to command:

Peter Disbrow
Richard Ffowles
George Clere
Philip Galpine
John Coe
William Odell
John Brondig
John Jagson
Thomas Stedwell

This is ouer desier
In the name of
the Rest.

his mark
Walter Lancaster
his mark.'

The modest request of the men of Hastings was granted, after

some delay. At the session of the General Court in Hartford, on the eighth of October, 1663, —

'Lnt John Bud' makes his appearance, and 'is appoynted Commissioner for the Town of Hastings, and is inuested with Magistraticall power within the limits of that Town.' Moreover, 'Rich: Vowles is appoynted Constable for the Town of Hastings, and Mr. Bud is to give him his oath.'

Connecticut at the same time reasserted its claim to the territory west of this place, the General Court declaring that 'all the land *between West Chester and Stamford* doth belong to the Coiony of Connecticut.'

Budd and Vowles had both been admitted, the year before, to the privileges of freemen; the former as an inhabitant of Southold, and the latter as an inhabitant of Greenwich. Perhaps Hastings, which had not yet been recognized as a plantation, was at that date considered to lie within the bounds of the latter town.

Our little village now rejoiced in something like a well-ordered social state. It had a magistrate 'commissionated to grant warrants,' and also in case of need 'to marry persons.'[1] It had a grave and discreet constable, with full power to apprehend . . .

'Such as are ouertaken with drinke, swearing, Sabboath breaking, slighting of the ordinances, lying, vagrant persons, or any other that shall offend in any of these.'

With these safeguards and immunities, our settlers remained for another year or two upon their island. Meanwhile, however, certain changes had been going on, betokening the removal of some, at least, of the inhabitants from the island to the main. On the twenty-eighth of April, 1663, the four purchasers — Disbrow, Coe, Studwell, and Budd — by a deed of sale conveyed the island, together with the land on the main, to the following planters: Samuel Allen, Richard Fowles, Philip Galpin, Thomas Applebe, William Odell, John Brondig, and John Coe. According to the terms of this transfer, the planters were to pay forty shillings a lot, in cattle or corn, between the above date and the month of January ensuing.[2]

[1] *Public Records*, etc., 1678–1689, p. 5.

[2] Rye Records, vol. A., quoted by Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 19. The second of these names Mr. Bolton gives as Richard Lowe. As no such name occurs in any of our records now extant, I judge the above to be the correct reading.

CHAPTER IV.

BUILDING THE VILLAGE.

1665–1672.

'And now begins the toil
The first loud axe alarms the forest's shade;
And there the first tree falls, and falling wide,
With spreading arms that tear their downward way,
Strips the adjacent branches.

'Now marks each laborer his future home.'

J. B. Reed, *The New Pastoral.*

TWO or three years passed over the island settlement, before an attempt was made to occupy the opposite shores. It is not unlikely that the settlers meanwhile began to appropriate some part of their purchase on the Neck, dividing it into allotments, and perhaps beginning to clear and improve the soil. They continued however to make the island their home. There is a tradition that in those early times the farmer would spend the day in toil on his rough plantation, and then at sundown return, for safety from wild beasts and savages, to the village across the creek.

Rye in Sussex, England.

But about the year 1664, the colony was joined by several new

families. The names of Thomas and Hachaliah Browne, George Lane, George Kniffen, Stephen Sherwood, and Timothy Knap, first appear about this time in our Chronicle. Their coming may have been due to an event which had long been anticipated and eagerly desired. In September, 1664, New Amsterdam was surrendered to the English, who soon made themselves masters of the entire province. This circumstance might lead some to seek a home here, who would hesitate to do so while the Dutch still claimed the soil. The new settlers brought considerable strength to the little colony. Thomas and Hachaliah Browne are known to have been men of substance; and so perhaps were their associates. There was no room for them, however, on the island. Fourteen or fifteen families already occupied its narrow limits; and indeed it no longer seemed necessary or desirable that the settlement should confine itself to this spot. It was now strong enough to push into the wilderness.

The new-comers, therefore, were appointed their home-lots on the coast. But they appear to have settled as near as possible to their comrades. The first houses were built at no great distance from the ford, at the southern end of Manussing Island. Hachaliah Browne — according to a family tradition — built his first house on the bank which overlooks the Beach, in a field now belonging to the heirs of the late Newberry Halsted. Others settled near by. 'Burying Hill,'[1] an elevated point of land beautifully situated at the eastern extremity of the Beach, was doubtless occupied very early as a building spot.[2] These houses formed a suburb, so to speak, of the village on the island. They were probably slight and rude habitations, — 'log-cabins,' — of which every trace has

[1] 'Burying Hill' is supposed to have derived its name from the fact that the Indians anciently used it as a burial-place.

[2] This conjecture is favored by the following deed. The persons who appear as proprietors of Burying Hill in 1715, had probably acquired the rights of early settlers, who had home-lots there: —

'*June* 29, 1715.

'We whose names are hereunder written do freely and voluntarily give to Roger Park and his heirs for ever all our right title and interest of or to a certain parcell of land commonly called the burying hill situated and lying at the northerly end of the flats or horse-race.

	R. Brundige
Sam[L]. Kniffin	Fr. Purdy
Jo. Purdy	Charlotte Strang
Nathan Kniffin	Daniel Streing
	Robert Bloomer
	Peter Disbrow.'

The original is in the possession of the Brown family at Rye.

long since disappeared. But the fact of such a settlement on the coast was long retained in memory. The inhabitants of Rye used to speak of 'The Old Town,' meaning the island, together with the neighboring shore. And the road leading to the Beach was anciently known as 'y^e^ highway that goeth to y^e^ Old Town Plat.'

One of the first buildings erected on the mainland, was undoubtedly the mill. It stood at the head of the creek, or the mouth of Blind Brook, on the opposite side of Peningo Neck, and within half a mile of the Beach. Mr. John Budd was the proprietor; and no doubt the inhabitants of Hastings felt themselves greatly indebted to him for its establishment. A grist-mill was indeed an important institution in a new settlement. The Indian corn upon which the white man, like his savage predecessors, depended chiefly for food, must needs be ground into meal by some readier appliance than the stone pestle and the mortar. Hence great anxiety was always shown for the erection and support of the mill. Special grants and privileges were often conferred on the proprietor. He was generally regarded as a leading member of the community. And the mill itself was likely to be the nucleus of the starting settlement. The settlers would naturally prefer those locations which were of easy access to it. This would be the case especially while the means of transportation continued to be very rude, and the highways were mere paths through the forest, or among the stumps and decaying trunks of recent clearings.

Mr. Budd built his mill on the west side of Blind Brook Creek, at a point where it would be convenient for the inhabitants of Peningo Neck, whilst yet it stood on his own tract of land, known as Apawamis, or Budd's Neck. The spot is still pointed out. It is on the south side of the bridge over which the cross-road from Milton to the post-road passes. Part of the dam, indeed, still remains, and forms the road-bed; and within the recollection of persons now living, traces of the mill itself were to be seen.[1] This was probably the first building erected on the mainland. Hither the 'men of Hastings' came from their island village, while all around was still a wilderness. And hither their descendants for several generations continued to resort.

Thus by the year 1665 there had sprung up two infant settle-

[1] Mr. James Purdy, an old inhabitant of Milton, informs me that a veritable mill-stone of this ancient mill was taken many years ago by Philemon Halsted, and placed as a door-step at an entrance of his new house then building. It is still to be seen there.

ments within 'the bounds of Hastings:' the one on the island, the other on the shore of Peningo Neck, stretching across to Blind Brook. The latter, we find, had begun to be known by the name of Rye. It is supposed that this name was given in honor of two prominent members of the colony, — Thomas and Hachaliah Browne. They were the sons of Mr. Thomas Browne, a gentleman of good family, from Rye in Sussex County, England, who removed to this country in 1632, and settled at Cambridge, Massachusetts. It is curious that the names of two neighboring seaports on the English coast, Rye and Hastings, should have been thus bestowed on this place. But the more famous of the two designations was to give way to the humbler. On the 11th of May, 1665, the General Court of Connecticut passed an act, merging these settlements under the name which the town has borne ever since. The act is as follows: —

'It is ordered that the Villages of Hastings and Rye shall be for the future conioyned and make one Plantation; and that it shall be called by the appellation of Rye.'[1]

At the following session of the General Court, inquiry was made about the state and prospects of the new town. Perhaps the magistrates had their doubts as to the expediency of admitting a settlement so remote and so little known.

'Mr. Lawes and Lt. Richard Olmsted are desired and appointed to view the lands apperteineing to Hastings and Rye, to see what there is that may be sutable for a plantation and to make returne to the Court the next session.'

No report of this committee appears on record. But it was probably favorable, since Rye was now enrolled on the list of persons and estates as a town paying its proportion of the public charge.

Within the next five or six years, the village on Manussing Island ceased to be. Most of the planters who had remained there till now, came over and united with their new associates in building upon the present site of the village. They appear to have acted harmoniously in this, with but a single exception: Philip Galpin, one of the early settlers of Hastings, did not choose to remove from the island; and preferring to remain, he felt sorely aggrieved that his neighbors should leave him behind. So he petitioned the General Court at Hartford, that they might be restrained from

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, 1665–1678. Edited by J. Hammond Trumbull: p. 15.

taking this step. The magistrates took action upon the case on the 11th of May, 1671: —

'This Court haueing heard and considered the petition of Philip Galping, as allso what return L^nt. Richard Olmstead and Mr. Holly haue made to the Court concerning the affayres of Rye, they cannot see that the sayd Galping is oppressed by their remoue as is alledged; but doe aduise the sayd Galping to comply w^th his neighboures and remoue with them. Yet if he remaynes his dwelling where he is, he is aduised to take care of damnifying his neighboures.'[1]

A few planters, it appears, remained, notwithstanding the general migration. In 1668, John Coe sold to Stephen Sherwood his 'house and housing and home-lot, upon the north end of Manusing Island.'[2] The Coes, Sherwoods, and Vowles were the principal owners in 1707, when Jonathan Vowles conveyed his share of lands in that locality to his son-in-law, Roger Park. As late as the year 1720, the island had a population sufficiently large to claim the right to erect a pound. For at the Court of Sessions in Westchester, that year, it was 'ordered, that y^e freeholders and inhabitants of Manussen Island within y^e township of Rye may erect a Pound upon said Island, and receive such dues and Perquisites as are due to other pounds in y^e County, and y^t Joseph Sherwood be pounder for this year, and to choose another yearly by y^e freeholders of y^e said Island as they shall see best.'[3] About the middle of the last century, the families of Fowler, Carpenter, Dusenberry, and Haviland appear as the owners.

The village of Rye was now rising upon its present site amid the forest on Peningo Neck; and here we may describe it as it appeared a little less than two hundred years ago. The new town plot lay at the upper end of the Neck, along the eastern bank of Blind Brook. Our Milton Road — once perhaps an Indian path leading down from the old Westchester Path to the lower part of the Neck — was the village street, on either side of which the home-lots of the settlers were laid out. The Field Fence was the northern boundary of the village. This enclosure began where Grace Church now begins, and stretched across the Neck from Blind Brook to the mill-pond, near the present residence of James H. Titus, Esq. Somewhere, probably, in the neighborhood of the old

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, p. 149. It is not stated where they removed from; but there can be no doubt that the reference is to the removal from Manussing Island. Galpin afterwards lived in Rye 'near the Field Gate.' In 1682 he bought from John Budd a tract of land on 'the neck called Opquamis.'

[2] Rye Records.

[3] Records of Courts of Sessions, etc., in Liber B., Records Westchester County.

district school-house, north of the Episcopal Church, was the Field Gate, of which we find frequent mention.

The home-lots, which commenced here, were generally of two or three acres each. Some are represented as to size and position by the grounds of Messrs. Bell, Ennis, Budd, and others, near the Episcopal Church. They extended down the street as far as the road leading to the Beach. The lots on the west side ran across to Blind Brook; those on the east side reached back to the 'town field.'

The Town Field was the tract of land in the rear of the home-lots on the east side of the Milton Road. It comprised the whole space between Grace Church Street on the north and Milton [1] on the south. This area is now covered by the lands of Messrs. Greacen, Anderson, Downing, and others. Here was the common pasture ground of the early inhabitants, where the cattle, bearing their owners' respective marks, were permitted to run at large during part of the year. Some of the settlers, however, had their meadow lots within this tract; and in after years the whole of the Town Field was by degrees apportioned among the proprietors, till nothing remained of the 'commons.'

A part of the town plot was known in early times as 'The Plains.' This name belonged to the level grounds bordering on Blind Brook, at the upper end of the village, and extending from the present stone bridge to the neighborhood of the railway station. It is not unlikely that this tract may have been originally cleared and improved by the Indians, thus offering a favorable spot for the site of the new plantation. Such clearings, we know, were considered by the settlers of other towns as very desirable for the purpose; and they were wont to designate them by the same appellation.[2] The home-lots on the Plains appear to have been held as the choicest part of the village grounds. They fronted on the street, or Milton Road, and ran back to the brook; the post-road, which now passes through the village, not having been opened as yet.

[1] In 1714 'there were brought before the Court' of Sessions at Westchester, certain 'articles of agreement concluded by the Proprietors of the Neck of land in the township of Rye, which is separated from the town field by the fence that reacheth from Kniffin's Cove to the Mill Creek.' — (*County Records*, White Plains, vol. D., p. 40.) Kniffin's Cove is the ancient name of an inlet on the eastern side of the Neck, in the rear of Rev. W. H. Bidwell's residence.

[2] This was the case at Norwich and Guilford, and elsewhere. 'What is now call^d the Great plain,' writes the old historian of Guilford already quoted, 'this with Some of the Points of Land adjoyning the Sea were all Clear^d by the Native Indians, were Rich & fertile, and by the Skill and Industry of the Inhabitants afforded Quickly a Comfortable Sustinance for themselves and families.' (*Hist. Magazine*, v. 231.)

Along this street, which was nothing more than a pathway, barely practicable for the ox-team, the only vehicle in use, a dwelling might be seen, in the year 1670, rising here and there among the trees that yet remained of the primeval forest. It stood with gable end close upon the road, and huge chimney projecting at the rear, — a long, narrow building, entered from the side. These houses, however, were not mere temporary structures, as those on Manussing Island had doubtless been, but solid buildings of wood or stone, some of which have lasted till our day. The timber used was hewn by dint of hard labor from the neighboring forest; the boards and shingles brought from the older settlements, as there was yet no saw-mill here. For the houses built of stone, abundant material was at hand in the coarse granite of the region, and in the great heaps of oyster and clam shells which the Indians had left in many places, and which the early settlers found very convenient for making lime.[1] Each dwelling generally contained two rooms on the ground floor, a kitchen and a 'best room,' with sleeping apartments in the loft.

By the help of the town records, and a few remaining vestiges of olden time, we may form some idea of the village as it was constituted nearly two centuries ago. A little way back from the lower end of the street, at the head of the creek, stood the mill, of which we have already spoken. Mr. John Budd was now dead, but his son-in-law, Lieutenant Joseph Horton, was the proprietor, and a very important person he was. His house stood near by, and in the same vicinity were the houses of George Lane, Jacob Pearce, Robert Bloomer, and others. Higher up the street, on the left hand, along the bank of the brook or creek, lived William Odell, John Ogden, Jonathan Vowles, John Budd, junior, and George Kniffin. Traces of some of these houses have been seen by persons still living. On the corner of the road leading to the Beach was the house of Timothy Knap. Beyond, on a knoll directly south of the old Clark mansion, stood the homestead of the Purdy family. The late residence of Hachaliah Brown is believed to occupy the spot where his ancestor of the same name settled when he removed from the 'old town.' Opposite the Episcopal

[1] 'All the early accounts,' says the editor of *Novum Belgium*, 'speak of the immense accumulation of oyster and clam shells, and their use for lime.' (Page 46.) Mr. John F. Watson, the author of *Historic Tales of Olden Time* (New York, 1832), mentions the fact, upon the testimony of an old resident of the city then living, that 'they used to burn lime from oyster shells in the Park commons.' (Page 99.)

Church, on the site of the old house now owned by Mr. Daniel Budd, was the dwelling of John Boyd. The church itself stands on the southeast corner of 'Mr. Collier's lot.'

The old stone tavern, lately removed, known as Van Sicklin's, was undoubtedly built at a very early day. There is reason to believe that it was for a time the homestead of Peter Disbrow. Mr. Isaac Denham, son of the first minister of Rye, lived here afterwards. The piece of ground upon which this house stood is perhaps the only one of the original 'town-lots,' the size and shape of which can be distinctly traced. It measured two acres and a half when bought in 1868 by the Methodist Episcopal congregation.

The 'Rectory grounds' adjoining, cover the space occupied by two of the home-lots. Several of them were included in what has been known as the Kingsland Place, now owned principally by Jasper E. Corning, Esq., and the Presbyterian Church.

During the first few years, our settlers continued to cluster in this tolerably compact village, and their improvements were limited to the territory thus defined. Outside the Field Fence, all was yet a wilderness of woods and swamps, secured indeed by purchase from the savage, but waiting to be appropriated and cleared. It was not long, however, before some houses were built a little way beyond this boundary, — outside of the Field Gate. Where the Penfield House, as it was formerly called, — owned lately by Mr. D. H. Mead, — stands now, Peter Brown, a son of the first Hachaliah Brown, lived. On the opposite corner, the property of the late William Smith, was 'George Lane's old house-lot.' Above this, in the block bounded by the post-road and the Purchase Road, were the home-lots of John Banks, John Brondige, Joseph Purdy, and others. And nearly opposite the Park Institute, stood the homestead of Thomas Merritt, senior, mentioned as early as 1688.

There was one house that deserves special mention, and the locality of which is well ascertained. This was the Parsonage, or minister's house. It occupied the southeast corner of the parsonage lot, a piece of land comprising between three and four acres, on Blind Brook, south of the house owned by the late David H. Mead. Here Mr. Thomas Denham was living at the time of which we speak. There was no church as yet. The little congregation met in private dwellings, notably in that of Timothy Knap, to whom the town awarded forty shillings, in 1682, 'for the

liberty of his house to meet in, and for beating of the drum, for the time past.' [1]

Much of the land within the village limits was of course vacant as yet. Only a small portion had been divided among the settlers, while the rest remained unimproved and awaited a future partition. Some of the 'home-lots' had been assigned to persons who left the settlement at an early day. These were bought up by others; and thus began the process of absorption which in time brought these lands on Peningo Neck into the possession of a comparatively small number of persons. The process indeed was a very rapid one. It had been taking place in the other towns of Connecticut, to the great displeasure of the magistrates, who passed a law, in 1650, to arrest the 'great abuse' then creeping in, 'of buying and purchasing Home Lotts and laying them together, by means whereof,' they said, 'great depopulations are likely to follow.' Every person owning such a plot, not yet built upon, was ordered, within twelve months, to 'erect a howse there, fitt for an inhabitant to dwell in.' [2] This measure had probably little effect. In Rye, at least, as the country became open for settlement, and the population spread out into the wilderness, the minute subdivisions of the lands first occupied disappeared. A few farms comprised what had been a mosaic of petty allotments, the earlier ownership of which was almost forgotten. Thus the titles to most of the property in this region go back to the Browns, the Halsteds, the Parks, and others, who are commonly supposed to have purchased their lands directly from the Indians. The curious system of proprietorship, about which we shall speak soon, has passed completely out of mind.

Hastings and Rye, whose names were successively bestowed upon this place, are two neighboring towns on the southeast coast of England, both of great antiquity, and both numbered among the Cinque Ports, or five privileged seaport towns on that coast.

Hastings lies in a valley which forms a beautiful amphitheatre, sheltered on every side except the south, by lofty hills. Southward, this valley gradually expands to the sea. The town consists chiefly of two parallel streets running nearly north and south, and separated by a small stream called the Bourne, which empties into the sea. Hastings formerly had the advantage of a good harbor, formed by a wooden pier projecting in a southeasterly direction from the shore. About the year 1558, this pier was destroyed by a violent storm, and the town, which before had a considerable trade, lost its commercial importance. It now depends chiefly on its fisheries; on boat-building, for which the people of Hastings are noted; and on its advantages as a resort for sea-bathing, and a favorable abode for invalids. The sheltered position of the

[1] Town Records, vol. A. (now lost) p. 53. Quoted by Mr. Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the County of Westchester*, p. 134, *note*.

[2] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. i. p. 562.

town, and the many pleasant walks and rides in its vicinity, render it very attractive to visitors. In 1861, Hastings had twenty-three thousand inhabitants.

On a high rocky cliff west of the town, there are extensive remains of a very ancient castle. Here probably stood a Roman fortress, before the days of the Danish pirates, who used to land at this place for plunder. As early as the reign of King Athelstan, A. D. 925 to 940, Hastings was a town of sufficient importance to have a mint, and was considered the chief of the Cinque Ports. These towns enjoyed peculiar privileges, on condition of providing during war a certain number of ships at their own expense. Hastings, with Rye, was required to furnish twenty-one ships, each manned by twenty-one able seamen.

The famous battle of Hastings, fought October 14, 1066, took place about seven miles northwest from this town, on the site of the present town of Battle. Here William the Conqueror, in fulfilment, it is said, of a vow made on the night previous to that conflict, built an abbey. This building, at the dissolution of the monasteries in the sixteenth century, was sold to Sir Anthony Browne, the ancestor of the Montagu family, whose descendants resided here till the beginning of the eighteenth century.

Rye is situated ten miles east from Hastings, on a rocky eminence near the mouth of the river Rother. Anciently, this hill must have been surrounded by the sea. In the course of centuries the waters receded from its base, leaving extensive flats or marshes, first on the north or land side of the town, and ultimately on all sides. This process was aided by artificial means, embankments being made from time to time for the purpose of excluding the waters, until now Rye stands at a distance of a mile and a half from the shore. At the foot of this cliff, on the sands which the receding waters had already left bare, a cluster of fishermen's huts had found room, in the time of Edward the Confessor. That king, about the middle of the eleventh century, gave Winchelsea and Rye to the abbot and monks of Fecamp, a small seaport on the opposite coast of Normandy in France. Henry III. resumed the possession of these towns in 1246. Some time before this date, Rye had been admitted to the same privileges as the Cinque Ports, besides which it was especially distinguished by the title of 'the *ancient* town of Rye.'

Rye was strongly fortified during the reign of Edward III., and part of the walls still remain. Of three gates by which the town was entered, but one is left. This is the north or land gate, consisting of a Gothic arch, guarded on each side by a round tower.

This town has been the scene of numerous incursions and assaults by foreign foes, as well as of some singular visitations of Providence. In 893, the Danes, with a fleet of two hundred and fifty sail, landed near Rye, in one of their descents upon the coast. In 1377, it was taken by the French, who landed from five vessels, and after plundering the place, set it on fire. It was again burned by the French in the reign of Henry VI., when all the ancient records and charters of the town are said to have perished. In 1287, a tempest which overwhelmed the neighboring town of Old Winchelsea, produced a considerable change in the situation of Rye. The river Rother had hitherto emptied into the sea at Romney, east of this point. But now, being choked up there, it opened for itself a new channel, close to the town of Rye. In the sixteenth century, its harbor, which had been gradually filling up, was restored by the violence of an extraordinary tempest, and still further improved by another. The commercial prosperity of Rye, however, has long since departed. A canal, cut through the sands for a distance of a mile and a half, permits vessels of small tonnage to come up to the quay; but the trade of Rye is now inconsiderable. Its principal objects of interest are, St. Mary's Church, built before the year 1509, and said to be one of the largest parish churches in the kingdom; and Ypres Castle, a strong square pile, with a round tower at each corner, built for the defence of the town, but now used as a prison. There are many old houses, some of which, built of wood, are believed to be nearly four hundred years old. A hundred years ago, it is said, no dwelling-house in Rye was of brick or stone. As late as the close of the sixteenth century, the whole country

around for miles was a forest; the exportation of timber was the principal business of the place; so that in 1591 'a man was ordered to depart the town of Rye for executing the profession of a husbandman, that place not being fit for such an artificer.'

Like other old English towns, Rye has preserved in memory, if not in use, many ancient usages which, to an American especially, appear very curious. Its 'Customal' or code of usages, is long and specific. One of these, relating to the admission of persons to rights of franchise, somewhat resembles the early practice of our own town. 'When any man, a stranger, came into the port of Rye, and dwelt there for a year and a day (being of good character, and desiring the franchise), he might go to the playne common court, praying for the same, when it was awarded what he was to pay; which being paid, he took the freeman's oath, and was duly enrolled.'

The 'train band of Rye,' was the company of militia belonging to the town. Both the name and the institution were maintained by our early settlers.

'Rye Ferry' was anciently the means of communication between the town and a locality known as Cadborough Cliff. We shall see that our settlers had their Rye Ferry at an early day.

The salt marshes abounding along these shores might well remind those of our early settlers who came from that locality, of their 'ancient town.' The Romney Marsh, which lies east of Rye, comprises forty-four thousand acres. This tract is now secured against the sea by an immense embankment, and constitutes a rich sheep pasture.

Rye in 1851 had eight thousand five hundred inhabitants. With Winchelsea, it sends one member to the House of Commons.[1]

Rye probably takes its name from the Latin word '*ripa*' — the bank of a stream, through the French '*rye*' — the sea-shore.

A small hamlet by this name existed on the coast of Normandy, near Bayeux, in the time of William the Conqueror, who on one occasion, in his youth, sought refuge there from his insurgent barons.[2]

[1] *History and Antiquities of the Ancient Town and Port of Rye, in the County of Sussex.* By William Holloway, London: 1847. One vol. 8vo: pp. 616.

[2] Sir Francis Palgrave, *History of Normandy and England*

Land Gate, Rye, England.

CHAPTER V.

MR. JOHN BUDD'S IMPROVEMENTS.

THE earliest notices of Rye that have come down to us, contain allusions to some serious difficulty among the people.

The very act by which the town was constituted, May 11, 1665, refers to this subject. 'Mr. Gold, Mr. Lawes, and John Banks, or any two of them, are desired and appointed to take paines to goe down to settle and issue such differences as may be disturbeing to y^e^ inhabitants of those Villages of Hastings and Rye.' [1]

There is a hint, soon after, that these troubles may have arisen out of some controversy about lands. October 12, 1665, 'Mr. Lawes and Lt. Richard Olmsted are desired and appointed to view the lands apperteineing to Hastings and Rye, to see what there is that may be sutable for a plantation and to make returne to the Court the next session.' [2]

Three years pass, and these divisions are still unhealed. The inhabitants of Rye and one Richard Bullard have petitioned the General Court to interpose. October 8, 1668, 'This Courte sees cause to desire and appoynt L^nt^ Rich^d^ Olmsteed, Mr. Tho: Fitch and Mr. John Holly to goe to Rye speedily, to heare and labour to issue and compose such differences as are amongst them respecting land or other matters, and make returne of what they shall doe, vnder their hands to the next Court.' [3]

What were these differences? One might imagine from such frequent orders respecting the new town, that its inhabitants were 'all by the ears,' in some quarrel that threatened to break up the little settlement. But fortunately, we have the petition which explains the whole matter, and shows that these repeated orders related to one lengthened dispute. The following, dated October 2, 1668, is—

'The humble petition of the inhabitants of the town of Rye, to the Right Honorable the Governor and the rest of the gentlemen of the General Court at Hartford.

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 16.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 25.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 96.

'May it please your Honor, with the gentlemen of the General Courte, to understand that about four years since, that John Budd did present a paper with several names to it, of inhabitants on his neck or island, so called and patented. It was for the settling of himself and children; on which we conceived had it been performed it had done noe great injury to the towne; but he noe ways pretended it, as doth agree, but hath and doth dayley let it and settle people upon it, extreamely prejuditiall to the towne, without the towne's approbation, which wee humbly conceave may be our injury if not speedily prevented; Doe humbly request that neck of land may be delivered up to the town, we paying him by Indian purchases with interest, he abating for what land he hath sold, if not prejuditiall to the towne. And them that are prejuditiall, may be removed, and that you would be pleased to depute two or three persones whom you shall think meet, to come and settell amongst us with what speed may be. Soe we rest your humble petitioners.[1]

PETER DISBROW, WILLIAM WOODHULL,[3] ROBERT BLOOMER,
RICHARD VOWLES,[2] JOHN BRONDIG, STEPHEN SHERWOOD,
TIMOTHY KNAPP, THOMAS BROWNE, GEORGE LANE.'

The origin of this difficulty with Mr. Budd has been related in a previous chapter. About the time when he engaged with Disbrow, Coe, and Studwell in the purchase of Peningo Neck, he bought from the Indians a tract of land on the opposite side of Blind Brook, which was subsequently known as Budd's Neck. This transaction seems to have been not altogether pleasing to his companions. Perhaps they were somewhat disappointed to find that he proposed to hold these lands in his own right. The other purchases had been made by the associates in common; or when effected by one alone, had been transferred to the body of proprietors. Perhaps it was expected that like Disbrow, Mr. Budd would regard himself as an agent simply, and retain only his share of the purchase.

No breach, however, occurred for a few years. In 1663, the inhabitants of Hastings made choice of their 'nayghbar John Bud' to go up to Hartford and urge their claim to be taken under the colony's care. In 1664, he was chosen as their deputy to the General Court. But a new grievance arose when this neighbor began to dispose of portions of his land without the consent of the town. The planters were exceedingly jealous of their right to

[1] This document is given as above by Mr. Bolton. *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 38. I have not learned where the original is to be found.

[2] Richard *Coules*, in Bolton, an evident misprint.

[3] One of the variations of the name Odell.

admit or reject strangers who came among them. The new settlers on Budd's Neck were in close proximity to the village, and indeed they seem to have considered themselves as within the limits of the town of Rye. Yet they had never been formally admitted to the privileges of freeholders.[1]

We are not told how the visit of Messrs. Law and Olmstead resulted, nor what success they met with in the endeavor to 'compose' these differences. But either their efforts were ineffectual, or a new controversy arose; for in May, 1671, a large committee — 'Capt[n] Nathan Gold, Mr. Tho: Fitch, Mr. Holly, L[nt] Richard Olmstead, and Mr. John Burr' — are appointed. 'They, or any three of them, are desired to repayre to the sayd Rye as soone as may be, and to endeavoure a comfortable composure and issue of such differences as are among the people there,' and also to aid them in procuring a minister to settle among them.[2] And finally, all these efforts failing apparently, more stringent measures are adopted. October 14th, 1672, the Court 'order that Mr. Bird [Budd] and those of Rye that have impropriated the lands of Rye to themselves shall appeare at the Generall Court in May next, to make appeare their right, for then the Court intends to setle those lands according to righteousness, that so a plantation may be encouraged, and plantation worke may go forward to better sattisfaction than formerly.'[3]

The person thus summoned to Hartford was John Budd, *junior;* his father having died in 1670. We do not learn how the controversy was ended, for the minutes of the next General Court contain no mention of the case. The following order, however, seems to bear upon it, and implies that the matter was considered and determined at that meeting: —

'This Court orders that all grants of land made to any perticuler

[1] Some of these transfers of land, complained of by the people of Rye, are on record.

In 1665, 'John Budd of Rye in the jurisdiction of Connecticut in New England,' sells to *John Morgan* and *John Concklin* of Flushing in the county of Yorkshire, Long Island, a certain tract of land in Rye. (County Records, vol. B. p. 101.) *Samuel Linds* was another purchaser. In 1670, 'shortly before his death,' Mr. Budd sold another tract to one *Jonathan Selleck:* and in the same year another to *John Thomas.* (Rye Records, vol. B. pp. 9, 34, 150.)

These are all transient names.

On the other hand most of the lands conveyed by Mr. Budd to his family appear to have been held permanently. John Ogden, Joseph Horton, and Christopher Youngs, his sons-in-law, with John Budd, junior, each had a tract of land on Budd's Neck.

[2] *Public Records of Connecticut,* vol. ii. p. 150.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 187.

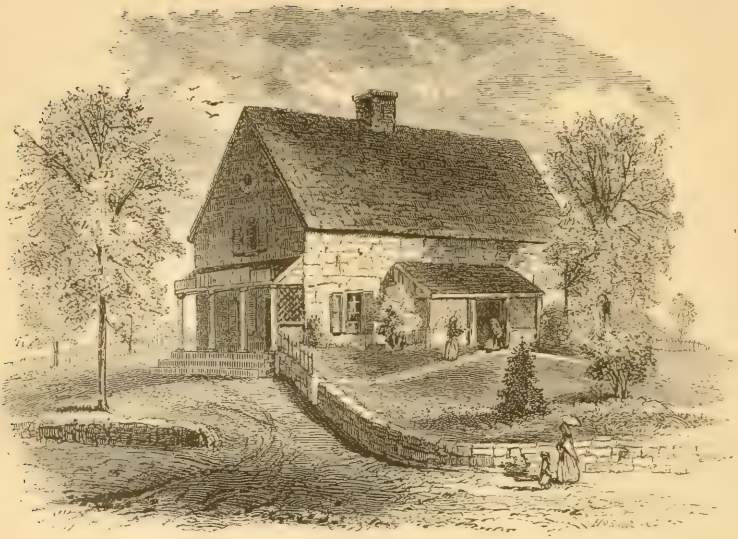
person, not yet taken up and layd out, shall be taken up in one intire peice, in a comely form, except by speciall liberty from this Court; and that all former grants that are or shall be layd out by order shall be sufficiently bownded, and so mayntayned as to preuent all future trouble.'[1]

The decision of the Court, whatever it may have been, seems to have terminated the dispute relative to Budd's Neck. That territory was incorporated into the town of Rye, while the claims of Mr. Budd as proprietor were allowed. There is no evidence that a distinct patent for the tract was obtained from Connecticut. And it was not until the year 1720 that Joseph Budd, grandson of the first purchaser, obtained a patent for his lands from the government of the province of New York.

After the settlement of the dispute concerning Budd's Neck, the jurisdiction of the town appears to have been unquestioned. Local officers were sometimes appointed specifically for the 'east side of Blind Brook,' and the 'west side.' And in the year 1700 we meet with the following record: —

'At a towne meeting held in rye august the 2. the towne in ienerall doth grant unto the inhabitaince of the neck of appoquamas the Liberty to haue a pound and pounders and fence viewers.'

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 200.



The Old Fort.

CHAPTER VI.

PERILS OF THE WILDERNESS.

1669–1689.

OUR little town was founded in troublous times. It is not easy for us to realize now the anxieties and fears that must have occupied the minds of its early settlers; nor to credit them with the degree of courage and resolution which they showed in establishing themselves here amid such discouragements. Let us briefly notice the events that, within the first thirty years of the settlement, brought alarm and even suffering to the firesides of these pioneers.

The Indians dwelling along the shores of the Sound proved from the first to be pacific and friendly toward the settler; and our inhabitants probably felt little apprehension from them until the outbreak of war, in the year 1675. But in that year, King Philip, of Mount Hope, a chief of the Pokanokets, succeeded in uniting the tribes of Massachusetts and Rhode Island in a desperate effort to exterminate the English. The conflict lasted about two years, and it did not actually spread into the territory of Connecticut, yet every town in that colony shared in the anxieties and sorrows produced by the fearful struggle.

The news of the outbreak reached our town early in July, 1675. On the third or fourth of that month, we may suppose, the townsmen — Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown, and John Brondige — called the inhabitants together, and read to them the following letter, just received from the Governor and Council of the colony : —

'Hartford, *July* 1, 1675.

'Hon^rd Sirs : We have received intelligence by letters post from Stonington and New London that the Indians are up in arms in Plimoth and in the Narrogancett Country, that they have assaulted the English, slayn about thirty, burnt some houses, and still are engaging the Indians rownd about by sending locks of some English they have slayn, from one place to another. The people of Stonington and New London send for ayd ; and accordingly we purpose to send them forty-two men to-morrow ; and have given order to the several plantations here to put them in a posture of defence speedily ; and these lines are to move yourselves forthwith to see that the same care be taken in your parts for your security ; and that all plantations have notice hereof, both Guilford *and so on to Rye*, that they also be compleat in their arms, with ammunition according to law. Here is inclosed coppys of some letters we have received from Stonington, &c. Please to peruse them, and hasten the posting of the letter to Governor Andross.' [1]

The scene of the conflict soon removed from Rhode Island and Plymouth to the central and western parts of Massachusetts. By the first of September, all the towns along the Connecticut River were in danger. Deerfield and Hadley had been attacked, and Northfield, the uppermost settlement on the river, was abandoned by its inhabitants. On the ninth of that month, the commissioners of the three colonies now united met at Boston for the first time after the formation of the confederacy. They agreed to prosecute the war vigorously, and ordered 'that there be forthwith raised a thousand soldiers, whereof five hundred to be dragoons or troopers with long arms.' Of this force, Connecticut was to supply three hundred and fifteen men. Rye probably furnished its quota of seven or eight,[2] who joined the Connecticut corps under brave Major Treat.

In the latter part of this month, tidings came from the army of the sad affair of September 18th, between Deerfield and Hadley. A party sent to convey provisions to the latter place had been sur-

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 332.

[2] The militia of Connecticut, in 1675, amounted to 2,250 men, according to Trumbull, who reckons the population of the colony from these figures, supposing every fifth man to have been a soldier. In 1677, Rye contained thirty-eight persons owning real estate, or about two hundred inhabitants in all.

prised by a band of seven or eight hundred Indians, and almost the whole had been slain. Reinforcements arrived too late, and these too would have been cut off, but for the timely arrival of Captain Treat, with one hundred and sixty English and friendly Mohegans, who put the enemy to flight.[1]

Every week now brings tidings of alarm and disaster to our settlers. On the tenth of October, a messenger rides through the town, with a despatch from Governor Andros of New York to the authorities at Hartford, bearing the superscription, 'To be forthwith posted up to the Courte, — post, haste, post, night and day.' He stops only to give the warning, that 'an Indian has told, under pretence of friendship, that there is an extraordinary Confederacy between all your neighbouring Indians and eastward (in which your pretending friends to be included) and designed this light moone to attack Hartford itself and some other places this way as far as Greenwich.' At the same time comes the report that Springfield has been attacked and partly burned, by Indians with whom the planters had always lived on the most friendly terms. Distrust and anxiety prevail in every settlement. No Indian is allowed to approach the towns, and a strict watch is kept night and day. The first Wednesday of every month is observed, by public appointment, as 'a day of humiliation and prayer in view of these alarms and troubles.'[2]

In the winter campaign that followed, the Connecticut force suffered more than any others. Forty men, out of three hundred, were killed, and as many more were wounded in the attack upon the Narrangansett fort, December 19.[3] As the bitter and anxious season wore on, tidings came to our inhabitants of the ravaging and burning of town after town, in Massachusetts and Rhode Island. Although Connecticut continued to be spared, the fears of its inhabitants were unquelled, and suspicion still prevailed as to the fidelity of the neighboring tribes of Indians. It was during this period of danger, — on the fifth of March, 1676, — that the town of Rye adopted the following action : —

'Thomas Lyon and Thomas Brown are appointed to choose a house or place to be fortified for the safety of the town. Also the young men who come into the fortification, and remain during the troubles

[1] Trumbull's *History of Connecticut*, i. 334.

[2] *Colonial Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. 355.

[3] I have surmised that among those who went from Rye, to join the expedition, was John Purdy, and that he lost his life in this or some subsequent engagement. The time of his death, and the manner in which it is referred to in various places in the town records, appear to me to favor this conjecture.

are to have an equal proportion of the undivided lands; provided they be such as the town approve.'[1]

A few weeks after this date, the severity of the conflict began to abate, and in the course of the following summer it was brought to a close. The exhausting effects of this savage war, however, were long felt. Though Connecticut had suffered little in comparison with the other colonies, yet every settlement within its borders shared in the burdens which the struggle involved. 'About a seventh part of the whole militia,' says Dr. Trumbull, 'was out upon constant service, besides the volunteers. A large proportion was obliged to watch and guard the towns at home. The particular towns were necessitated to fortify themselves with an inclosure of palisades, and to prepare and fortify particular dwellings for garrison houses, which might, in the best manner, command the respective towns; and to which the aged people, women, and children might repair and be in safety in the time of danger. For three years after the war commenced, the inhabitants paid eleven pence on the pound, exclusive of all town and parish taxes. After the war was finished, they had a considerable debt to discharge.'[2]

Just after the close of King Philip's War, there came to Rye one who had actually participated in the sufferings which the conflict involved, to settle among the people as their first pastor. In October, 1677, the General Court at Hartford, hearing 'that Mr. Thomas Denham is likely to settle at Rye as minister there,' granted him the sum of ten pounds, to be paid out of the town rate for that year, 'for his incouragement to setle there, and in regard of *his late loss by the war*.'[3]

Two years before the outbreak of King Philip's War, the inhabitants of Rye had been alarmed by danger from another quarter. England was at war with Holland; and the colonies had good reason to fear that the Dutch would embrace the opportunity to attempt the recovery of their North American possessions. On the thirtieth of July, 1673, a fleet of twelve Dutch vessels appeared in the bay of New York, and landed a force of eight hundred men. The town was surrendered to them with little show

[1] Rye Records, vol. i. p. 73 (quoted by Mr. Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. pp. 46, 47).

[2] *History of Connecticut*, i. 351. The disbursements for the war, by the three colonies, were estimated at more than one hundred thousand pounds. The portion raised by Connecticut was over twenty-two thousand pounds. (Palfrey's *History of New England*, iii. 216, 217, *note*.)

[3] *Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, edited by J. H. Trumbull, vol. ii. p. 321.

of resistance, and in a few days Albany, and most of what was formerly New Netherland, came again under the dominion of Holland. The towns on Long Island were summoned to submit, and those nearest to New York did so without objection. The others were threatened with hostilities if they held out. For several weeks the inhabitants of both shores were kept in uneasiness by the appearance of a number of small Dutch vessels cruising along the Sound, and occasionally capturing ships belonging to the English. Connecticut, after sending remonstrances to the Dutch commander at New York, which were received with coolness and indifference, made preparations for war. The several towns of the colony were ordered to provide means of defence.

Rye, as a border town, was all alive to the danger. It was expressly excused from the requirement to raise men and arms for the emergency, on account of its 'being near'[1] to the enemy. But doubtless every able-bodied man was on duty here. The adjoining town, Mamaroneck, had submitted to the Dutch. Four of the inhabitants had gone down to New York to present themselves before the commander, and give in their adhesion to his government. Two of them, John Basset and Henry Disbrow,[2] had been appointed magistrates of the town under the new order of things. The people of Rye appear to have remained firm. One of their leading men, Mr. John Banks, took a prominent part in the events that followed. On the twenty-first of October the General Court sent him from Hartford to New York with a letter to the Dutch commander, Monsieur Anthony Colve, protesting against his course. Nearly a month elapsed before Mr. Banks' return. He informs the Council that Monsieur Colve, who had detained him under restraint fifteen days, 'is a man of resolute spirit and passionate. He is in expectation of strength from foreign parts, upon whose arrival he seems to be resolved to subdue under his obedience what he can. He saith he knows not but he may have Hartford before long.'

A few days after Mr. Banks' return, news comes by a post from the town of Rye. Five vessels — supposed to be the *Snow*, and four ketches in company with her, — passed by here on Saturday, on their way westward. Two men were sent from Rye to Frogmorton's Point, 'to gayne a more certain knowledge' of the matter. They report that they well preceived one of the vessels to be a vessel of about eight guns, which they concluded to be the

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut,* vol. ii. p. 209.

[2] New York Colonial MSS., vol. ii. p. 655. The names are given as John Busset and Henry Pisbrow.

ship *Snow*, having four ketches under her command, to which at that point she made signs to come up to her; and they came under her lee, and suddenly sailed away toward New York. One Loveall, a Frenchman, who came from Yorke, as he relates, Monday last, affirms that the *Snow* had arrived there, bringing in four ketches, — prizes, — but what they were, and where taken, he knows not.'[1] All through that fall and winter, our people must have felt great uneasiness regarding the designs of their unwelcome Dutch neighbors at New York. In December, Rye united with Stamford and Greenwich in supplicating the General Court in Boston for help. Till now, they say, they have kept silent, expecting that forces would come 'against this open declared enemy.' But the long delay renders them fearful that this project has been laid aside. Should this be, they declare, 'we shall be much endangered if not ruined, if your honours do not by some speedy means relieve us: for we are *frontiers*, and most likely assaulted in the first place.'

This war-cloud was soon dispelled by the return of peace between England and the United Provinces. In June of the following year the Dutch evacuated New York, and all other places which they had regained in America, in accordance with the treaty which had been signed. The people of Rye could at least congratulate themselves that they were not to belong to the territories of Holland; though the arrival of Major Andros, at New York, but a few weeks after, gave them new cause for apprehension, in view of the claims which, as we have already seen, were now set up by a new master, the Duke of York.

Another wave of political trouble reached our town in the year 1689. It is strange that this feeble and obscure settlement in the western world could feel the remote effects of the great contests and rivalries that were agitating Europe. But doubtless every colonist of Connecticut, in the seventeenth century, had shared in the apprehensions that were caused by the policy of France. The designs of the French upon Canada and the valley of the Mississippi, and the progress of their plans for the occupation of so large a part of the continent, were topics of village and household debate. But in 1689 France declared war against England. One of the earliest measures of this war, which lasted nine years, was an attempt to conquer the province of New York. In the dead of winter, a party of Frenchmen and Indians fell upon the village of Schenectady, and surprised its defenceless inhabitants in

[1] *Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 565 (Appendix).

their midnight slumbers. Sixty persons were cruelly put to death, and the rest fled in terror, half naked, to Albany. The New England colonies were called upon to raise a force to repel the invasion of the province. Connecticut was especially active in this expedition; and among the volunteers that joined it were a number of the inhabitants of Rye. In a 'list of soldiers for y^e^ Expedition of Albany,' who left Fort William on the second of April, 1689, occur the names of Jacob Pearce, Richard Walters, Jonas Stevens, and John Bassett, all 'of Rye;' together with others that are not so designated, but whom we recognize as persons from this town: John Boyd, Philip Travis, Philip Galpin.[1]

The weather was extremely severe when our soldiers set out for Albany. Captain Milborne received word as they were starting, that he must bring 'as many duffels as he could get.' 'Yesterday evening,' wrote the aldermen, 'the soldiers tormented us considerably for blankets, as it was very cold. We went everywhere and could not find any. Blankets are not to be had here.'[2] Whether from exposure or some other cause, one at least of the soldiers from Rye lost his life in this expedition. 'The inventory of Jacob Pierce's Estate (deceased) who dyed intestate at Albany, 1689,' is entered on our county records.[3]

An interesting memento of these troublous times in the early settlement, has lately disappeared from our village. The ancient stone house, known as 'Van Sicklin's,' was undoubtedly the 'fortified place' referred to in 1676. Many a visitor of Rye will remember the pride with which its denizens were accustomed to call attention to their single historic edifice — the 'old Indian fort,' with its round window in the gable end, said to have been the port-hole through which a beleaguered garrison had poured forth its volleys upon the enemy. It is true, our informants would differ as to the persons thus besieged — some supposing that the aborigines themselves had built the fort for their own protection, and others that the white settlers made their retreat within these massive walls. The simple truth, however, appears to be that this house was fortified during the Indian troubles, as a precaution against an emergency which never occurred. The Indians in this

[1] *Documentary History of New York*, vol. ii. pp. 12–15. Their pay was to be 25*s.* per month, which was paid partly in stores, as appears from the list: 'Jacob Paers [Pearce], of Rye; 9*s.* in money. Richard Walters, of Rye; 9*s.* in money, and 10*s.* in duffels [blankets]. Jonas Stevens, of Rye: 1 pr. shoes, and 1 piece of eight, and 9*s.* in money, and 12*s.* 6*d.* in duffels. John Barsett [Basset], of Rye; 1 pr. shoes and 9*s.* in money.'

[2] *Documentary History of New York*, vol. ii. p. 198.

[3] Vol. B. p. 183.

region, as we have seen, did not rise, like those of Rhode Island and Massachusetts. The building, nevertheless, stood associated with the dangers and apprehensions that called for its provision. It was torn down in October, 1868, the Methodist Episcopal congregation having bought the place for a parsonage. In the process of removal a circumstance confirming the old accounts of this house was ascertained. An inner wall, evidently built after the original construction, was found, extending as high as the beams of the roof. This agrees with the language of the act by which the town in 1676 appointed men 'to choose a house or place *to be fortified* for the safety of the town.'

The Van Sicklin house was a curious specimen of the substantial structures of the olden time. The walls, as above intimated, were hollow, and of great thickness. The beams supporting the floors measured eight inches square; all the wood used was oak, hewn with the axe; the rafters were 'tenoned into plate' without the use of nails; and the timber supporting the mantel in each of the two rooms on the ground floor was twelve feet and a half long, and fourteen by nineteen inches thick. The old fort stood directly south of the present Methodist parsonage, and considerably nearer to the road. It measured twenty-four feet in width and forty in length. The 'stoop' and door-way in front, or at the gable end on the street, were of modern addition. The main entrance, anciently, was at the south side.

Old Fort, Gable End.

CHAPTER VII.

MOVING OUT INTO THE WOODS.

1670–1720.

'Partes fecit in ripâ, nescio quotenorum jugerum.'
CICERO, *Ep. ad Atticum.*

NEXT to the cultivation of their little plantations on Peningo Neck, — their 'home-lots' on the village street, and 'meadow-lots' in the 'Field,' — our first settlers seem to have been chiefly concerned about the occupation of the wilderness beyond them. This, for a number of years, was the great interest of the young community. Its members were tillers of the soil. Their ambition was to possess ample and productive farms. And though the allotments of land made to each at the outset might suffice for immediate use, probably none of them thought 'ten acres enough,' as a permanent investment. Hence, if we may judge from the records, an important theme, in 'town meetings' and by the fireside, was the disposal of the forest lands. Getting new grants from the Indians; marking and laying out the latest acquisitions of swamp and salt meadow and woodland; settling the bounds of each proprietor's share; exchanging one allotment for another, — these appear to have been the most notable doings of those days.

'The former inhabitants,' wrote a resident of Rye, some sixty years after the settlement of the town, 'possessed better estates than their children now. Their estates lay much in *unimproved lands*, — all which belonged to a few men, and are now sold or divided among their children. I can't learn that they raised much, if anything, for the market, but what they trafficked with was chiefly wood and cattle.'

How should we like to have a view of our village patriarchs, two hundred years ago, in council with some grave sachems of the tribes that yet lingered in the depths of the forest farther north, when they came down to smoke the pipe of peace with Peter Disbrow and William Odell, and the rest — perhaps on the village green, the place 'where they usually train,' or at George Lane's

house, where meetings were generally held! And to see the little band of 'layers out,' with stout John Brondige or Deliverance Brown at their head, sallying forth after an Indian guide, to explore a tract of land just purchased, 'above the first branch of Blind Brook,' or following the Indian path where North Street now runs, to Quaroppus, 'which the English call The White Plaines.'

Failing of this, however, we can at least give some account of the process by which this region in which we dwell was converted from a wilderness into a fruitful field, and show what for a succession of years were the transactions of leading importance in the town.

The first treaties with the Indians, in 1660 and the following year, had secured to the planters all the lands between Byram River and Blind Brook, for a distance of 'six or seven miles from the sea.' It seems to have been necessary afterward to repeat the purchase of certain portions of this tract by separate treaties. But the lower part, or that which was properly called Peningo, was held by virtue of the earliest deeds, and was occupied at once, and apparently without interference. For the first twenty years, — or from 1660 to 1680, — our settlers appear to have confined themselves to this part of their land. All the improvements made within that time were limited to Peningo Neck, or as it was sometimes called, The Purchase of the Eighteen. This, we have already seen, was the tract south of Westchester Path, or the mouth of Byram River. These were 'the bounds of Hastings,' afterwards known as

THE FIRST PURCHASE ON PENINGO NECK.

And within this tract the first divisions appear to have related to the lands 'in the Field.' Here new home-lots, of two or three acres each, and new 'meadow lots,' of ten acres each, were distributed among the proprietors out of the common lands 'within the fence,' which, as we have seen, ran from Blind Brook to the nearest inlet of the Sound, along the present line of Grace Church Street. In a short time, each settler had come to own several such allotments, — only one of which, we may suppose, was as yet built upon or cultivated, while the rest were reserved for his children, or for future disposal. Thus John Brondige owned in 1680, a 'piece of salt meadow' of three acres, a 'neck lot' of four acres, a 'share of fresh meadow,' a 'part of Hassock Meadow,' a 'great lot,' a 'swamp lot,' and *four* different 'house lots.'[1]

[1] Town Records, vol. B. p. 6.

There was, very early, a division of lands in the 'Long Swamp.' This was the low ground lying back of those town-lots which were situated on the east side of the 'street' or Milton Road. It ran through part of the present farms of Messrs. Halsted, Greacen, and Anderson. Not unlikely, these were the very first lands distributed, after the apportionment of home and meadow lots. It is well known that the early settlers had a strong partiality for these rich lowlands.[1] They required little improvement, and could readily be made to produce the rank meadow grass, which was needed for the cattle. In fact, these lands were held in higher value than the uplands, which are now in so much better esteem, but where the soil was lighter, and more difficult of cultivation, being heavily timbered, and often encumbered with rock. It must be remembered that at that day there was much more of wet marshy land in this region than now. With the clearing of forests, and the decrease of streams, the swamps have greatly diminished, and in most places wholly disappeared.

Somewhere about the year 1670, there was a division of the lands on 'Wolf-pit Ridge' or Plain. This name was afterward changed to *Pulpit* Plain. It designated the high lands on the road to Port Chester, embraced at present in the estates of Dr. J. T. Tuttle and Mr. J. M. Ives. The lands beyond this remained undivided till 1702. In that year there was a division of 'building lots lying by the country road below the Steep Hollow.' This was the name given to the beautiful glen that lies on the north side of the road to Port Chester, and which forms the eastern boundary of the property of Mr. Quintard. In 1678, the first division of lands on the north side of what is now Grace Church Street occurred. These were called the Hassock Meadow lots, and consisted of about ten acres each. In this division, George Kniffin received an allotment of land which has continued in the possession of his descendants down to the present day.[2]

The division of lands on 'Barton's Neck' began about the year 1678. This was an important part of the territory comprehended in the first purchase on Peningo Neck. The name, however, is en-

[1] 'The Trees grow but thin in most places, and very little underwood. In the Woods groweth plentifully a course sort of Grass, which is so proving that it soon makes the Cattel and Horses fat in the Summer, but the Hay being course, which is chiefly gotten on the fresh Marshes, the Cattel loseth their Flesh in the Winter, except we give them Corn.' (*Good Order established in Pennsylvania and New Jersey*; printed 1685. *Dawson's Historical Magazine*, New York, vol. vi. p. 265.)

[2] The description fixes it upon the precise spot where Jonathan and Samuel Sniffin now live. It is 'bounded southward and westward with a highway which is marked out, and northward and eastward with the upper Hassocky meadow.' (Town Records, vol. B. p. 12.)

tirely obsolete, and we shall need to go into some details to convey an idea of its location. Barton's Neck, then, comprised all the lands now bordering on Grace Church Street, north of the road leading to Manussing Island, as far as the brook and inlet above Dr. Sands' house, near to Port Chester. It included, therefore, the lands now owned by Messrs. Titus and Brooks, the Provost estate and others, ending with what is now Lyon's Point. The *western* boundary of this tract was Hassock Meadow Brook, — now an insignificant rill, but then doubtless a much more considerable stream. This brook takes its rise in the valley behind the house of Mr. Jonathan Sniffin. It flows in a northeasterly direction, till it joins another rivulet, which the early settlers called *Gunn Brook*.[1] The source of Gunn Brook is on the land of Dr. Tuttle, near the street crossing to the Ridge Road.[2] It runs through the grounds of Mr. Webb and Dr. Sands, and empties into the cove already mentioned, known anciently as *Gunn Brook Cove*. In early times, the lands drained by these streams were mere swamps, partly covered perhaps with pools of standing water. It is not difficult to suppose, what we infer from the frequent mention of these two brooks, that they were much larger than now.[3]

Barton's Neck was a tract about a mile long. It lay just outside of the 'Field Fence,' along the shore of the Sound. This made it a very desirable section of land. In the first division, as in some subsequent ones, each proprietor of Peningo Neck received a share in this tract. The first occurred about or before the year 1678; and the shares appear to have been of six or eight acres each. In later divisions they seem to have been larger. New allotments were made from time to time down to the year 1723, when the last of which we find mention occurred. It may be said that the *first farms* in Rye had their origin here. The allotments were on a larger scale than those 'in the field,' and were so arranged that each proprietor came in due time to have a considerable portion of land, not in scattered parcels as before, but in contiguous parts. The same process of absorption, however, which

[1] Perhaps a man's name, — an early settler. Abel Gunn was at Derby, 1682. *Connecticut Records*, iii. 98, and elsewhere. The word is always written Gunn.

[2] There was a 'small plain' known as early as 1685 by the name of Gunn Brook Plain, which I judge to have been the land now bordered by the above roads, or the northeastern corner of Dr. Tuttle's estate. See Town Records, vol. B. pp 48, 56, 59, 71.

[3] 'Within the limits of human recollection,' say the authors of the *Natural History of New York*, 'changes of the same nature have been going on. Small lakes are gradually drained by the deepening of their outlets, or filled up by the accumulation of sediments.' (*Nat. Hist.*, vol. xii. p. 359.)

was going on in the Field, took place eventually on Barton's Neck. Some of the proprietors bought out the claims of others, and became the principal owners of the lands. Chief among these was John Merrit, who by the end of the century had acquired most of the upper part of Barton's Neck, and from whom this part received the name it bore for perhaps a hundred years, of *Merrit's Point*. The Sherwoods, Coes, and Ogdens also owned large portions of land here.

Grace Church Street was not laid out through this tract until the beginning of the next century. There was a path or 'drift-way' leading to the lots before this. But in 1701 the town appointed Jonathan Vowles, John Merrit, Sr., and Deliverance Brown, Sr., 'to mark the road upon Barton's Neck, and the highway down unto the salt water' [*i. e.* the cove already spoken of]; 'that is to say, to mark out a good sufficient road and highway to the best of their discretion.' This undoubtedly was Grace Church Street, a name, however, which we do not meet with until the year 1736.[1] The lower part of this street, below the corner of the road leading to Manussing Island, originated as we have already seen, in a path along the line of the Field Fence.

Thus by the year 1680 there seems to have been a tolerably thorough distribution of the lands embraced in the first purchase on Peningo Neck. Considerable spaces indeed were left of 'common or undivided land' between the allotments. But as the number of settlers had now increased to forty-nine or fifty, there must have been some impatience to reach farther into the unoccupied forests that lay north of their present bounds. Doubtless a feeling of insecurity had thus far held them back. The recollections of 'King Philip's War' were yet fresh in their minds. The policy of New England settlers in those days of uneasiness was to keep together as much as possible for mutual defence. They were slow to remove their families into the depths of the wilderness, however anxious they might be to own and subdue it. In fact it does not appear that the population of this place had as yet spread far from the spot of the first settlement. Their dwellings were still conveniently near to each other, on 'the street,' or 'the Plains,' — not further off at all events than 'Wolf-pit Ridge' at the northern end of the village, or the old mill at the south. So it continued to be, probably, until the early part of the next century. 'Their manner of living,' says the writer already quoted, in 1728, 'was at first

[1] The first mention of it, corrupted to Gracious Street, is in a deed from Joseph Sherwood to Joseph Bloomer (Records, vol. C. p. 136) for thirty-five acres of land.

somewhat *more compact* than it is now; for as they increase, they move out into the woods, and settle where they can get good farms.'

The next step tending toward this result, was the improvement of some of the lands comprised in the

SECOND PURCHASE ON PENINGO NECK.

It will be remembered that our settlers in 1661 bought lands from the Indians, north of the bounds of Hastings, or the first purchase. This tract lay between Blind Brook and Byram River, extending back into the country six or seven miles from the Sound. Until the year 1678, however, no part of this tract seems to have been appropriated. And even then, the only lands laid out were those along the eastern line or Byram River. This region became known as Byram Ridge. About the time we have mentioned, a distribution of land occurred here, allotments of eighteen acres each being made to the proprietors, along the western side of Byram River, beginning apparently at the lower end of King Street, in the present village of Port Chester. These lots stretched across the colony line, being bounded on the east by the river. King Street is first alluded to in 1681, as a road recently laid out through this tract. Hither in the course of time many of the settlers removed, to what they evidently considered the most eligible part of the domain as yet occupied. Here new distributions were made in subsequent years, one of which occurred in 1699; until the whole of this beautiful ridge, as far as the northern boundary of the town, was divided up.

About the time these lands on Byram Ridge were first divided, a fresh bargain was made with the Indians for the purchase of the adjoining tract on the west. This was really included in the bounds of the second purchase. But it appears to have been claimed as the peculiar property of a chief whose demands the settlers found it expedient to satisfy. Hence the acquisition of the territory which now constitutes the northern part of the town of Rye, or all that portion of it which lies above the present village of Port Chester. This our settlers were long accustomed to call —

LAME WILL'S PURCHASE.

Lame Will, or Limping Will, was the very familiar name by which a certain Indian was known in the white settlements. His veritable name was Maramaking. He was one of the chiefs with

whom the treaty of 1661 had been made, for the lands above 'the bounds of Hastings.' But he seems to have become displeased with his bargain.

This was no uncommon occurrence in dealings with the natives. Their ideas of proprietorship were notoriously imperfect; and the settlers of New England often found it necessary, in order to pacify them, to repeat the purchase of the very same lands.[1] So it was at Rye. Our planters in 1680 actually bought again, in two separate tracts, the whole territory to which they were already entitled under the treaty of 1661.

In the fall of the year 1680, Robert Bloomer and others, in behalf of the Proprietors of Peningo Neck, bought of Maramaking or Lame Will a certain tract of land 'called by the Indians Eaukecaupacuson and by the English name the Hogg penn ridge.'[2]

'To all Christian peopelle to whom these shall com greeting know yee that I Marramaking Commonly called by the English Will have for a valuabelle consideration by me allradi Recaifed of Robart blomer haccaliah Brown and thomas merit alinated and sould unto them the said Rob^{t} blomer, Haccaliah brown and thomas merit them their heires executars administratars or asignes a certain trackt of Land Lyeing by a brooke commonly called blind brook which tract of Land is called by the Indians Eauketaupacuson bounded as followeth beginning at the southermost end which is betwene the above said brook and a branch thereof and from thence to the great swomp at the oulld marked tree which is now new marked with these Letters R B H T M and from thence by marked trees to a small Runn which Runns into the above said brook and there is marked with a mark the which tract of Land is called by the English name the hoggpenn Ridge to have and to howlld the above said trackt of land for ever and I the said Maramaking alice Will doe bind by sellfe my heires execators and administratars firmly by these presents to warrant and make good the above said salle unto the above said Robart blomer, Brown and merit their heirs exceutars administrators or asignes without any Lett hindrance molistation or trouble from or by any person or persons whatsoever that shall from or after the date hereof make or lay any claim or claims theare unto In witnes here of I have set to my hand this 4th Day of september in the yere 1680.

Witnes the mark of Couko — The mark of Maramaking
the mark of Owrowwoahak — alis Will
John ogden
John Stokham

[1] Palfrey's *History of New England*, vol. i. p. 605.
[2] Town Records, vol. B. p. xiii.

'Maramaking alise Will hath acknliged this bill of salle before me in Rye this 28 of november 1680.

JOSEPH HORTON Comissoner

'Know all men by these presents that wee Robert Blomer, Hacaliah Brown and thomas merit doe asigne over all our Right titel and Intrust of this within written bill of saile to the propriatars of peningo neck. as witness our hands this second day of march in the year sixtene hundred eighti one wee three above said Reserving our equall portions with the other propriatars above said.

Delivered in presence Of us JOHN GEE — ROBART BLOMER
His marke JOSEPH GALLPEN — HACKALIAH BROWN
THOMAS MERIT.'

Lame Will's Purchase commenced at a point where the 'branch' of Blind Brook joins the main stream. From thence the southern boundary ran eastward to 'the old marked trees' at 'the Great Swamp.'[1] Northward, it extended along Blind Brook to certain other marked trees, where the line now divides the town of Rye from that of North Castle.[2] This was Lame Will's tract, and a very valuable one it was. But either the old Indian flew again from his bargain, or he was anxious to effect a more extensive sale of lands under his sway. For a few weeks later, November 28, 1680, we find the town appointing Peter Disbrow, together with the three men previously sent, 'for to go with the Indians to view some land lying between the Blind brook and Byram river, and to make a *thorow* bargain with them if they shall see it best.'[3] Nearly a year elapsed before the contract was concluded. The second purchase from Maramaking was effected on the 8th of October, 1681. For the valuable consideration of '*three coats* received,' Lame Will sold to the inhabitants of Rye a tract of land 'between Byram river and the Blind brook' or 'Honge;'[4] apparently lying north of the preceding purchase, and within the present limits of North Castle.

[1] The Great Swamp extended over a considerable part of the region bounded on the east by King Street and on the west by the Ridge Road, north of the present Roman Catholic Cemetery. In 1705, Deliverance Brown sold to George Kniffin four or five acres of swamp land, bounded west or northwesterly 'by a branch of Blind Brook *that runs out of the great Swamp* commonly so called.' (Town Records, vol. C. p. 275.)

[2] In the papers relating to the patent of the town of Rye in 1720, it appears that the territory for which that patent was sought and granted, was coextensive with Will's Purchase.

[3] Rye Records, vol. A. Bolton's *History of Westchester County*, ii. 24.

[4] Town Records, vol. B. p. xv. The name *Honge* may have been applied to the upper part of Blind Brook, or to the branch already referred to. The Indians, it is well known, often had various names for the same stream.

'Know all Christian People to whom these shall com greting know ye that I maramaking Comanly called by the english will have for a valuabell Consideration by the inhabitance of the towne of Rye allradi Resaived namely, three cotse In hand of the inhabitants of Rye by me Resaived I Maramaking doe acknolidg that I have aLinated covinanted soulld and deLivired unto them the inhabitants of Rye to them theare heirs Execetars administratars or asignes a sartain tract of Land Liing betwene Biram river and the blind brooke or honge: acording as it is allradi marked by the Indians and bounded:: to have and holld the above said trackt of Land for ever: and I the said maramaking or else Will doe bind my sellfe my heires execetars and administratars firmly by these presents to warant and make good the above said salle unto the above named Inhabitants of Rye to them thaire heires execetars asignes or administratars without any Let hindrance moListation or trouble from or by any person or persons what so ever that shall from or after the date here of make or Lay any claim or claims theare unto In witness here of I have set to my hand this 8th of Octobar in the yere 1681

Witness the mark of WESSACONOW
the mark of COWWOWS
the mark of PUMMETUM
JOSHUA KNAP
JACOB PAIRS

The marke of MARAMAKING
or elce WILL

'Marmaking or else will hath acknowliged this bill of salle before me in Rye this 8 of october 1681

JOSEPH HORTON Comissioner.

'Recorded decem 20–1682.'

The lands comprised in Will's purchases, along Blind Brook, do not appear to have been divided and improved until long after those on Byram Ridge. There was a manifest reluctance still to spread into the interior, and a strong preference for the neighborhood of the shore and river, especially in the direction of the older Connecticut settlements. We have good reason to believe that those lands were mostly appropriated, and many of them cleared and partly cultivated, before much advance was made into the forests lying immediately to the north.[1] *Twenty years* after the first division on Byram Ridge, we find the following entry in the town records: —

'At a town meeting in Rye, February 14, 1699–1700, the town hath made choice of Lieutenant Horton, Benjamin Horton, Joseph Purdy, Justice Brown, Sergeant Merritt, and John Stoakham, [who] are to survey and lay out the three Purchases of land; that is to say, the White Plaines' purchase, and Lame Will's two purchases; and the town doth

[1] Town and Proprietor's-Meeting Book, No. C. p. 6.

give them full power to call out such person or persons whom they shall see cause to have occasion of.'[1]

Nothing however seems to have been done under this order. Will's Purchase was not actually laid out till ten years later. But meanwhile the town made a liberal offer of the free use of lands to any that would take them : —

'At a town meeting in Rye, January the last day, 1699–1700, the town doth agree and give liberty that any person living in the said town that wants land to work upon, may take up lands and improve them the space of ten years, anywhere in the town bounds, provided it be not prejudicial to the said town or any particular person therein ; and to return it to the said town again ; provided they keep and maintain good sufficient fence about the lands they shall so take up during the space of ten years aforesaid ; and Hachaliah Brown, and George Lane, senior, are appointed to make out the lands to any person that shall take them up as aforesaid.'[2]

Under this act, lands were taken by several individuals in the yet undivided tract of Will's Purchase. Robert Bloomer, in 1701, took five acres, 'lying on the lower end of the Hogpen Ridge, being near the lower falls of Blind brook.'[3] Here was located the mill long known by his name. In 1707, 'the town granted unto Robert Bloomer jun. the stream of Blind brook at the falls of the said brook, to erect a mill or mills, with this proviso, that the said Bloomer does accomplish the said mill within the space of ten years; but if not, the stream to return unto the town again.'[4]

In 1708, the town appointed a committee 'to search the records concerning Will's two purchases, and to bring their report in to the next town meeting.'[5] And in the following year the first division took place. 'This 11th day of April, 1709,[6] the lots laid out in Will's purchases, were drawn for.' The division was on a liberal scale. Each allotment was of thirty-eight acres. February 18, 1711, 'the second division of lots laid out in Lame Will's two purchases' occurred. These were situated higher up, and on the

[1] Town and Proprietors'-Meeting Book, No. C. p. 6.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 10. [3] *Ibid.* p. 14. [4] *Ibid.* No G. p. 22.

[5] *Ibid.* p. 32. At the same meeting, the town granted to Timothy Knapp, who apparently had taken lands under the act of 1699, 'that he shall have his proportion of land in Will's two purchases on the lower end of Hachaliah Browne's wolf-pit ridge — when it shall be laid out.'

[6] Rye Records, vol. B. p. 162.

east side of the colony line.[1] A third draught of seven-acre lots followed.[2]

The proprietors of Will's purchases numbered thirty-four.[3] The list comprises the names of nearly all the proprietors of Peningo Neck, who were evidently interested in both these acquisitions.[4] But the companies were quite distinct; and there were several of the proprietors of the more recent purchases who had no rights among those of the former. Occasionally, it seems, they met together to consult upon matters of common interest. Thus,—

'At a meeting held in Rye by the Proprietors of the Neck of Apequamas and Peningo Neck and the purchasers of the White Plaines and Will's purchasers, June the 15th, 1715, Justice Browne, David Ogden, Justice John Hoyt, Richard Ogden, Samuel Purdy, George Lane, jr., are chosen to take the care and the whole management of surveying the town's bounds of their lands to the best of their discretion, and to call out any person or persons in managing of the same.'[5]

At each division of lands, the shares were distributed by lot, the numbers commencing at the upper end of the portion divided and proceeding downward.

The 'layers out' of these lands appear to have had a laborious and responsible task. Their surveys were of course of a very general kind. The number of acres in the tract and in each allotment were rudely determined by the eye or by guess; not by any exact measurement. But it must have been rough work to do this, in the wild forests and the tangled swamps, where as yet no path had been made. Some of the settlers were evidently regarded as peculiarly fitted for this business, and as eminently to be trusted. Isaac Denham, John Brondige, and the *Justices*, Deliverance Brown and Joseph Purdy, were repeatedly chosen.[6] The 'layers out' received as their compensation an additional appropriation of land. In the division of the White Plains purchase, this amounted to one hundred and ten acres.[7]

There was a tract of land adjoining the lower part of 'Will's first purchase,' but not included in it, which was held by the proprietors of Peningo Neck. This was the tract between Blind Brook and the Ridge Road, south of the road to Park's mill. The lower portion of this tract was called Brush Ridge, and the upper

[1] Rye Records, vol. B. p. 160 (back).
[2] Rye Records, vol. B. p. 66 (back.)
[3] *Ibid.* vol. B. p. 162.
[4] Records of Town Meetings, p. 15.
[5] Records of Town Meetings, p. 15.
[6] Records, vol. B. pp. ix., xxii., 80.
[7] Records, p. xiv.

part Branch Ridge. The lots on Brush Ridge were divided about the same time that the first division of Will's Purchase occurred. The allotments were of eight acres each.[1] Those on Branch Ridge, a continuation of the same tract, laid out in 1713, were of five acres each.[2] A considerable part of the land on these ridges was bought up, a few years after the divisions, by Samuel Brown, 'bachelor,' — a son of Deliverance Brown. He thus came into possession of a farm of over one hundred acres, upon which he lived, as it seems, in his lone bachelorhood; for he designates himself as 'Samuel Brown of Brushie Ridge.'[3] The beautiful slope upon which these lands were located, — the eastern bank of Blind Brook and its branch, — is now a part of the farms of Messrs. Wilson, Minuse, Park, and others.

The changes in the ownership of 'Will's first purchase' have been fewer, probably, than in any other part of the town. A large portion of it which came at an early day into the possession of the Brown family is now the property of S. K. Satterlee, Esq. Representatives of the Merritt, Studwell, Sherwood, and other ancient families of Rye, are still among the owners of the upper portion of this tract.

[1] Records, vol. B. p. 20.

[2] Records, vol. C. p. 93, etc. Town-meeting Book, No. G. p. 20.

[3] The pains taken in those days to spell badly, have an illustration in this name, which became corrupted from Brush to 'Brushshey's' Ridge. Records, C. 99.

CHAPTER VIII.

TOWN MATTERS IN OLDEN TIMES.

'Each state must have its policies.
Even the wild outlaw, in his forest walk,
Keeps yet some touch of civil discipline.'

TOWN offices, in the olden time, were posts of honor and rewards of merit. The good people of Rye appear to have had enough of these in their gift to gratify any reasonable number of aspirants. About the year 1700, when there were sixty persons paying county rates, we find them making choice of the following officers: a Supervisor; five Townsmen or Selectmen; a Constable; a Town Clerk or Recorder; two Assessors; two Listers; two Pounders; two Fence-viewers; three Sheep-masters; and a Collector. With a Justice of the Peace, besides two Deputies to the General Court, and any number of 'layers out' of public lands and roads, to say nothing of the captain, lieutenants, ensigns, and sergeants, of the 'train-bands;' there seems to have been official business of some sort or other, for nearly every member of the little commonwealth.

The town clerk was perhaps the most important of these village worthies. Certainly his office was of the most permanent tenure. Only two persons filled it during the first three quarters of a century. John Brondige was probably chosen to this office in the early days of the settlement. We find mention of him as town clerk in 1678. He remained in office probably till the time of his death, in 1697, and was succeeded by Samuel Lane, who was town clerk until 1736. Our most valuable records, therefore, are in the writing of these two men.

The town clerk, besides keeping a record of the proceedings at the town meetings, was required to enter in a book provided for the purpose a statement of the bounds and dimensions of every man's land. Each grant, sale, or mortgage of land must likewise be thus recorded, in order to be of force.[1] These records for the town of Rye were kept, prior to the Revolution, in three folio

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. i. p. 552.

volumes, which are still preserved, in tolerably good condition. Our most important records, however, are those of the town meetings. These were kept, unfortunately, not in bound volumes, but in books composed of forty or fifty leaves perhaps, rudely stitched together, and in material and aspect suggestive of the times when writing-paper was scarce and poor. The oldest of these records have within a few years past disappeared. They related to the doings of the first thirty or thirty-five years, — from the foundation of the town to the year 1697. Mr. Bolton, however, who had access to these documents when preparing his county and ecclesiastical histories, has preserved many interesting facts which he gathered from them. Some accounts of town matters are also interspersed among the land records which fill the bound volumes. Here, too, the Indian deeds for all the territory purchased by the proprietors and the town are carefully engrossed.[1]

At the first town meetings, the number of freeholders was perhaps twenty-five or thirty. Eighteen of these were proprietors, and had exclusive control of the common lands within the first purchase on Peningo Neck. All other lands not yet distributed belonged to the 'town in general,' or the whole body of inhabitants qualified to vote. These also possessed the right to admit or exclude new-comers into the settlement. All the plantations at that day were very careful to exercise this right.[2] Our lost records are said to contain some curious examples of the mode in which the village fathers received applicants for the privileges of citizenship among them. The following extract, which occurs in the land records, illustrates the action of the proprietors and the town respectively, in making grants to new members: —

'At a *town-meeting* held in Rye November the 23, 1686, Benjamin Collyer hath by grant from the *proprietors* of Peningo neck a certain house lot which was formerly Thomas Jefferies. . . . And the *town* doth further give and grant unto Benjamin Collyer a privilege of all

[1] One of our oldest documents is the Brander's Book, or Record of Ear-marks. This record was kept in conformity with an act passed by the General Court of Connecticut, in 1686, entitled 'An Act for preventing of fraud concerning horses.' It required that a place should be assigned in each plantation where horses should be branded; and that a brander should be appointed, who should 'make, and keep the true record of all such horse kind wh^h shall be presented to them . . . entering the same in one book to each plantation.' A solemn oath to be taken by the brander, was prescribed. (*Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 205.) The Brander's Book at Rye consists of a volume of leaves stitched together (pp. 1–24), the entries running from 1715 to 1796. The first seven pages are in Samuel Lane's writing. Earlier marks are scattered over the town records.

[2] The General Court ordered that 'Intruders into Plantations' should be put in the stocks. (*Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 66.)

out lands undivided which belongeth to *the town in general*, proportionally to an estate of fifty pound.' [1]

The value here put upon an estate at Rye appears to have been the usual estimate of the property of a freeholder. The following statement shows the population, and the estimated property of the inhabitants for the time during which the town was subject to Connecticut. It is made up from the 'Lists of Persons and Estates' kept by the General Court: —

	Persons.	Ct. Rec.	Estates.
1665	25 [2]	ii. 28	£1211 00 00
1666	32	ii. 49	1547 10 00
1667	36	ii. 72	1721 00 00
1668	45	ii. 94	2174 00 00
1669	50	ii. 117	2403 10 00
1670	41	ii. 137	1950 12 00
1671	42	ii. 160	1979 15 00
1672	43	ii. 186	2031 00 00
1673	37	ii. 210	1767 05 00
1674	41	ii. 236	1944 00 00
1675	40	ii. 264	1909 01 00
1676	32	ii. 290	1591 00 00
1677	38	ii. 320	1789 00 00
1678	44	iii. 17	2122 00 00
1679	48	iii. 36	2361 00 00
1680	49	iii. 67	2274 00 00
1681	50	iii. 86	2415 00 00
1682	50	iii. 106	2612 00 00
1683	47	iii. 126	2339 00 00
1698	56	iv. 265	3136 18 00
1699	60	iv. 297	3306 00 00

[1] Town Records, vol. B. p. 3.

[2] From 1665 to 1675, the number of 'persons' is not given in the *Public Records* of the colony, though the list is entitled a list both of '*Persons*' and of '*Estates*.' The figures therefore in the first column, for those ten years are conjectural; but they are based on the proportion of £48 to £50 to an estate, which is that observed in the complete lists for the subsequent years. From 1676 to 1683, and in 1698 and 1699, the lists contain the number of persons also. The average value of an estate in the years 1676–83, is about £48; in 1698–99, it rises to £50.

The fluctuation in the population of the place is noticeable and significant. It rose to fifty 'persons' within five years from the settlement, and then decreased; the lowest figures being reached in 1673 and 1676. These were the years of the Dutch invasion and of King Philip's War. See Chapter VI.

Reference is made in the third column of the above table to the *Public Records of Connecticut*, which have been published in four volumes from 1635 to 1706.

The 'persons' here enumerated were male inhabitants of adult age, paying taxes upon an estate of fifty pounds each. Ministers of the Gospel, deputies to the General Court, and some others, were exempted. The foregoing figures may be taken to represent approximately the number of *families* in the town.

The town meeting of those days was a very different affair from that of our times. Besides electing officers, the inhabitants had a great variety of matters to talk over and determine. We give some examples, without attempting to classify the subjects.

The prevention of damages by cattle was an important matter to be considered. Frequent orders were given concerning the building and repair of fences. 'At a town meeting held March, 1672, it was agreed that the first of April following should be taxed of all persons and young cattle and horses, unless it be such as are wrought, and that they henceforward should goe out on the first of April, and whatever person hath not his fence up by that time shall forfeit five shillings a rod.' [1]

The town not only hel thed right to receive or exclude inhabitants, but it also regulated the disposal of lands belonging to persons removing from the town. 'All lands within the township,' the law required, 'shall be tendered to sale to the town before any other sale be made of them to any other than the inhabitants of that towne where they ly.' [2] The object of this provision was, of course, to prevent unsuitable persons from acquiring rights in the town by such purchase.

On the fifteenth of December, 1689, a bounty of fifteen shillings was ordered to be raised by a town rate, for the killing of wolves.[3] One mode of destroying these animals was by entrapping them in wolf-pits. Several of these existed in this neighborhood. The ridge overlooking the village, where Park Institute now stands, was known as early as 1690 by the name of Wolf-pit Ridge or Plain.

Persons were appointed at town meetings, to look after the boundaries of public lands. These were preserved, in a very rude and imperfect manner, by means of marked trees. From time to

[1] Fuller regulations were enacted at a later day. At a town meeting held June 3d, 1706, it was ordered that all division fences should be made four feet and a half high, 'being of pine Rayles well and substantially erected.' Walls or hedges, or any other partition judged sufficient by the fence-viewers, were to be considered equivalent to such a fence. It appears from this act that individuals were allowed to inclose portions of land for pasture in the common field

[2] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 187.

[3] Town Records, vol. A., quoted by Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, ii. 23.

time the marks required to be renewed. As early as 1680 we read of the '*old* marked trees.' As there were several such dividing lines that ran across the tract between Blind Brook and Byram River, and separated the several purchases from each other, it must have been no easy task to trace them and keep them up.

In 1733, Samuel Purdy, Robert Bloomer, and Daniel Purdy were appointed a committee 'to regulate and renew the bound marks of lots in Will's Purchase, to the eastward of the colony line, beginning at Thomas Sutton's land and going northward along said line.'[1] This southern limit of Will's second purchase is the present boundary of the town of Rye in that direction.

Public lands were sometimes given away by the town. Not however in the lavish way in which they were often disposed of by other towns; but generally in small parcels and on particular occasions. Indeed, the town as such does not appear to have had much land to give away, so long as the proprietary bodies existed and kept the management of their large possessions in their own hands.

The town gave permission for the opening of taverns, erecting of mills, etc.

March 3, 1696. 'Samuel Lane and Joseph Lyon, are, or either of them [is] permitted to build a fulling or grist mill upon Blind brook, above the town, provided they choose their location in three weeks, and build the fulling mill in three years.'

'March 24, 1697–8, Joseph Horton is chosen by the towne of Ry to keep a house of entertainment for travlers for the year insuing.'

'At a town meeting held in Rye March the 5th day 1705 the town hath given and granted unto Samuel Hunt of Rye the streame of Memoranuck river at the falls of the said river above Humphery Underhills to erect and bould a grist mill or mills upon the said streme and the said Samuel Hunt is to grind the towns cornn for the fourteenth part and the said Samuel Hunt is to bould the said mill or mills within the space of two years from the date hereof. And if the said Samuel Hunt shall at any time [fail] to keep the said mill in repair fit to grind above two years together then the said streme is to return to the town again.'

April 16, 1712, 'the towne hath by a voat granted unto Richard Ogdin the priviledge of the strem in Byram river between the *lower going over* and the country rode to erect and bould a mill or mills provided the said Ogdin doe bould a mill or mill [dam] in the space of one year from the date hereof.'

The regulations concerning sheep and cattle were very frequent and particular.

[1] Rye Records, vol. B. p. 143.

'At a meeting held by the inhabitants of Peningo Neck in Rye, February 24, 1703–4,' sheep masters are chosen 'to agree with a shepherd and to take care of the flocks to let them out if any presents to hire them and to take care of the rams and to take care for yards for the flock when they are not let out.' Rams are not to be let loose on the commons from August 15 to November 5. In 1708 the proprietors agree to lay out a new sheep pasture, consisting of all the lands yet undivided below a line from the branch of Blind Brook to Gunn Brook. In 1714 the town orders that 'no sheep between Memoronuck river and Byram river shall have liberty for the year ensuing to goe upon the commons or upon any land belonging to any particular man unfenced from the first of May till the last of October but what shall be put under the care of a shepherd or shepherds which shall be chosen by the said towne; and every particular man whose sheep shall goe on the commons or upon unfenced lands as above said shall pay his proportion unto the shepherd or shepherds which shall be hiered as above said according to the number of his sheep.'

Where the town meetings were held we do not learn, until the year 1738, when it is mentioned that the meeting took place 'at the school house near the Church in Rye.' The probability is that this had been the place of meeting for some previous years. As early as 1708, notice of a special meeting of the town was given by 'a warrant from a Justice of the Peace sett upon a signe post nere the Church four days before the meeting.'

The Selectmen presided on these occasions. 'At a lawfull town meeting held in Rye, April 1, 1713, the town hath past a voat that the townsmen hath and shall have for the futer liberty and full power to putt all towne voats to voat in all townings to the best of their descretion, only the choice of the towne men the justices are apointed to put to voat.'

As early as 1705, the town chose Trustees or Overseers of the town, whose functions are thus described: —

'To take care of the towns Lands and intrests rights priviledges in Land in the towns bounds of Rye and to doe their indeavour in defending the said towns rights and interests in Lands belonging to the said township of Rye and likewise to keep and secure our possession of our township in Lands by all lawfull means and ways whatever they can devise or [execute] in Law whatsoever from time to time as occasion shall require against any parson or parsons whatsoever claiming any right title or intrest against the towns intrest or any part thereof and the towne doth give these trustees over overseers full power to raise mony

in the said town as they shall have occasion in pursueance of their trust from time to time to sell or mortgage undivided Lands or other ways as they shall see best within their said year.'

The charges that might arise the town agreed to 'disburse by equall proportion, and alsoe to have equall proportion of Lands thereby recovered.'

This action was evidently taken in view of the serious encroachments upon its territory which the town had already suffered, and the danger of further losses unless vigorous efforts should be put forth to maintain its rights.

Justice was administered by a magistrate, known at first as the Commissioner. In 1697–98, the General Court of Connecticut substituted for this office that of Justice of the Peace. These functionaries were alike appointed by the government. They were invested 'with magistraticall power within the limits of the respective Townes where they lived;' and were impowered 'with the Selectmen of the town, or any two of them, to hear and determine any action that should be presented before them for tryall to the value of forty shillings.' The first Commissioner appointed for Hastings at Rye, in 1663 and 1664, was Mr. John Budd. He was followed by Lieut. Joseph Horton, in 1678. And in 1698, pending the return of the town to Connecticut, the General Court appointed to the office of Justice of the Peace, then newly created, Mr. Deliverance Brown, who was continued in office by the provincial government of New York, and remained justice till the year 1716.[1]

It is said that the early settlers of New England towns were fond of litigation. 'A case in court was, with some men, little more than a customary part of the year's business.' Rye, we presume, was not free from this weakness. Such at least is our impression, upon opening the earliest extant volume of records. The first half dozen pages of this book are taken up with records of 'executions.' Several suits are referred to, of the date of 1678 and after. These suits were tried at the County Court at Fairfield. Execution is granted to sundry persons, and levied by

[1] The nature of this office, and its powers under the provincial government, are thus described by William Smith, the historian of the province: 'Justices of the peace are appointed by commission from the governors . . . . Beside their ordinary powers, they are by acts of Assembly enabled to hold courts for the determination of small causes of five pounds and under; but the parties are privileged, if they choose it with a jury. They have also a jurisdiction with respect to crimes under the degree of grand larceny. Any three of them, one being of the quorum, may try the criminal without a jury, and inflict punishments not extending to life or limb.' — *History of New York*, vol. i. p. 369, App.

Lieut. Joseph Horton or by the constable. Robert Bloomer appears as defendant in most of these cases, but in his turn enters a complaint for defamation. It was not all peace and harmony, we infer, in the small community on Peningo Neck.

We are sorry to say also that an occasional entry upon our records makes known the connubial infelicities that prevailed in some dwellings; the community is warned in set terms not to 'sell, barter or trade, directly or indirectly' with the wife of the signer. These entries are probably copies of notices that had been duly posted to be read by the little public in the usual place.

For the punishment of trivial offences, they had the *stocks* and the *whipping-post*. Our notices of these interesting objects are scanty, but sufficient. The town in 1739 and two subsequent years elected a 'public whipper.' Thomas Rickey and Samuel Bumpas were the persons chosen to this office. They do not appear to have distinguished themselves in any other capacity. Of the stocks, mention is made but seldom. In the records of the Vestry of Rye, we find the following item, under the date of March 6, 1770: —

'Allowed. To John Doughty for fees of putting —— —— in y^e^ Stocks, 6 shillings.'

The supervisor of the county in 1772 ordered an extra charge upon the town of Rye 'for Capt. Merritt's building stocks, and the money to be paid to Merritt.' [1]

In the year 1720, the inhabitants of Rye took steps to procure a patent for their lands from the British crown. It appears that they had delayed to seek such a benefit until then, though twenty years had now elapsed since their unwilling return to the province of New York. We might infer from this delay that the people were not yet wholly reconciled to their lot, or at least that some of them were indisposed to ask for a charter from the New York government, inasmuch as they already held one from Connecticut. However this may be, the formal action of the town was not taken until a few persons, apparently without the general consent, undertook to write to the Governor and Council on the subject. 'The Humble Petition of Daniell Purdy Son of John Purdy deceased Samuell Brown and Benjamin Brown Inhabitants of the Township of Rye in the County of West Chester in behalfe of themselves and diverse other Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye,' is dated

[1] Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors of the County of Westchester for the years 1772 to 1787; published with the Proceedings of the Board for 1869, p. 7.

June 20th, 1720.[1] They ask for letters patent for the tract of land lying between Blind Brook and the colony line, from the southern extremity of Peningo Neck to 'the Antient marked Trees of Limping Will's purchase.'

The Governor and Council very properly referred this petition to the people of Rye at large; directing Joseph Budd, then supervisor, to 'call a town meeting of the inhabitants,' for the purpose of ascertaining their wishes on the subject. This meeting took place early in July, and Mr. Budd reports, 'New York y^e^ 14th July, 1720, to the Hon. Peter Schuyler,' etc., 'in Council,' that the inhabitants of Rye 'unanimously have noe objection against Granting the said Lands to the said Petitioners, but only that the same cannot be Granted to them by the Express Limitts and Boundaries as pticularly Described by the said Petition by reason it would Interfere with Lands already Granted to other persons.' They suggest a somewhat different description, *e. g.*, 'beginning at a certaine Rock lyeing on a point of Land c^y^ known by the name of Town Neck point' . . . . 'together with a certaine Island Included known by the name of Monussing Island lyeing about Twenty Rodes from the maine Land.'[2]

No little stir was caused in Rye by these measures relative to the patent. An old controversy which had been slumbering for some years, regarding the ownership of the southern part of Manussing Island, was revived. Samuel Odell, who claimed it, against Roger Park, remonstrated against the granting of a patent that should fail to secure him in his rights to that property.[3] Depositions of various parties were taken on the subject before the Council. The Surveyor-general, Cadwallader Colden, surveyed the tract, exclusive of the island, and made his report August 11, 1720. And finally, July 28, the gentlemen of the Council to whom the petition of Rye had been referred, reported favorably upon it.

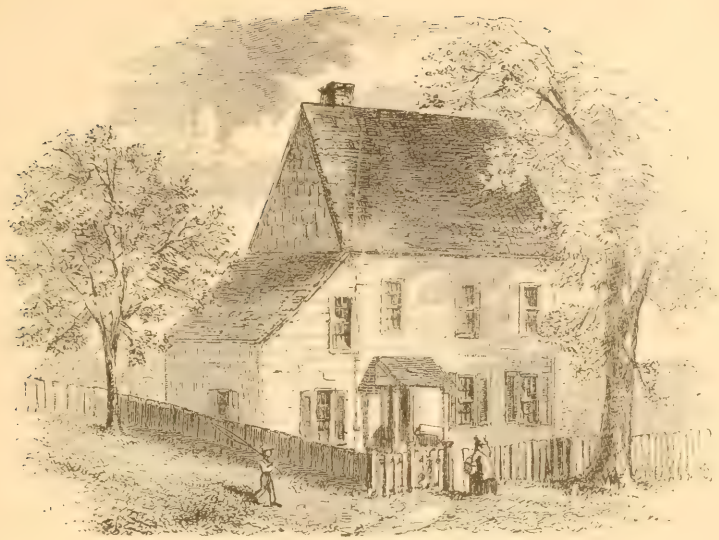
Letters patent were issued August 11th, 1720, to Daniel Purdy and Samuel and Benjamin Brown, for themselves and the other inhabitants of Rye, exclusive of Budd's Neck, that tract being held by another patent granted the month before.[4]

[1] Land Papers, in the office of the Secretary of State, Albany: vol. vii. p. 171. 'To the honorable Peter Schuyler y^e^ President of his Majesties Councill of the Province of New York and Territories thereon depending in America in Counsill.'

[2] Land Papers, etc., vol. vii. p. 190.

[3] Land Papers, etc., vol. viii. p. 5.

[4] Both of these patents will be found in the Appendix.



Strang's Tavern.

CHAPTER IX.

MAILS; NEWSPAPERS; MODES OF TRAVEL.

1672–1812.

'This folio of four pages — that holds
Inquisitive attention.'

The Task.

SITUATED so near the seaboard, and within thirty miles of the city, Rye has enjoyed from the earliest times whatever facilities existed for public communication. But it is difficult to conceive how rude and inconvenient these must have been, until a comparatively recent date. For at least fifty years after the foundation of the town, all travel by land was performed on horseback. Deputies rode their hired horses up to the sessions of the General Court. It was seldom, however, that the inhabitants ventured so far as Hartford, except on public duty. Their journeys were generally short, and limited to the neighboring towns of Greenwich and Stamford. The sympathies and interests of the people then turned eastward — not as now toward New York.

In 1672, the government of Connecticut established a schedule of prices, to be paid to persons who should be employed for the

conveyance of letters and other missives in the service of the colony. This was done in view of the great extravagance of people thus employed, 'by profuse spending at the ordinaries and other places on the road upon the country's account, and also by great delays on journeys.' According to the schedule, the charge was to be as follows, from the first of May to the middle of October: 'From Rye to Hartford, the horses hyer twelve shillings, the man and expences twenty shillings; all is one pound twelve shillings.' From October to April, the charge was to be eight pence more 'for every night they lye out.' [1]

Postal communication between New York and Boston was first established in the year 1672, during the administration of Colonel Lovelace, the second English governor of the province. The following order shows what facilities were thus afforded: —

'A Proclamacion for a Post to goe Monthly from this City to Boston and back againe.

'Whereas it is thought convenient and necessary in obedience to his Sacred Ma'ties Commands, who enjoynes all his subjects in the distinct Colonyes, to enter into a strict allyance and Correspondency with each other, as likewise for the advancem^t of Negotiation, Trade and Civill Commerce, and for a more speedy Intelligence and Dispatch of Affayres, That a Messenger or Post bee authorized to sett forth from this Citty of New Yorke monthly, and thence to travail to Boston, from whence within that Month hee shall returne againe to this Citty. These are therefore to give notice to all persons concerned, That on the first day of January next, the Messenger appointed shall proceed on his journey to Boston: If any therefore have any Letters or small portable Goods to bee conveyed to Hartford, Connecticut, Boston, or any other parts in the Road, they shall be carefully delivered according to the Directions by a sworne Messenger and Post who is purposely imployed in that Affayre; In the Interim those that bee disposed to send Letters, lett them bring them to the Secretary's Office, where in a Lockt Box they shall be preserved till the Messenger calls for them; All persons paying the Post before the Bagg be seal'd up. Dated at New Yorke this 10^th day of December 1672. By order of y^e Governor.' [2]

According to the instructions to the post or messenger, dated January 22, 1672–3, he was to apply to the governors, especially Governor Winthrop of Connecticut, for 'the best direction how to forme the best Post Road;' to establish places on the road where to leave the way-letters, and 'to mark some Trees that shall direct Passengers the best way, and to fix certain Houses for your sev-

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, 1665–78, pp. 242, 244.

[2] Communicated by Dr. O'Callaghan.

erall Stages both to bait and lodge at.' The messenger was to allow persons who desired it to travel in his company and to afford them the best help in his power. He was to provide himself with 'a spare horse, a Horn, and good Portmantles.'

Such was the mode of travel and despatch for the next thirty years. Madam Knight's account of her journey from Boston to New York, and back, in 1704, agrees precisely with this description. It appears that she availed herself when she could of the company and protection of the messenger riding post. The following extract gives us a life-like view of the good lady and her conductor: —

'Tuesday, October y^e^ third, about 8 in the morning, I with the Post proceeded forward . . . and about 2, afternoon, arrived at the Post's second stage, where the western Post met him and exchanged Letters. . . . Having here discharged the Ordinary for self and Guide, as I understood was the custom, about 3, afternoon, went on with my third Guide, who rode very hard: and having crossed Providence ferry, we come to a River which they generally ride through. But I dare not venture; so the Post got a lad and Canoe to carry me to the other side, and he rid through and led my horse. . . . Rewarding my sculler, again mounted and made the best of my way forward. The Road here was very even and y^e^ day pleasant, it being now near Sunset. But the Post told me we had near 14 miles to ride to the next Stage, where we were to lodge. I asked him of the rest of the Road, foreseeing we must travel in the night. He told me there was a bad River we were to ride through, which was so very fierce a horse could sometimes hardly stem it: but it was narrow, and we should soon be over.' Late at night, the traveller after all these adventures 'was roused from her pleasing imaginations by the Post's sounding his horn, which assured me he was arrived at the stage where we were to lodge: and that musick was then most musical and agreeable to me.'

In the same year that this memorable journey was performed, the governor of the province of New York wrote home, 'The post that goes through this place, goes eastward as far as Boston, but westward he goes no further than Philadelphia: and there is no other post upon all this continent.' [1]

As late as the year 1750, letters were carried in this same way by messengers riding on horseback from stage to stage,[2] and there was but one mail each week for Boston and the intermediate

[1] Letter of Lord Bellomont, in Documents rel. to Colonial History of New York, vol. iv. p. 1113.

[2] On the twenty-fourth of January, 1755, the *Post* informed the public that 'he was obliged before he left Albany, to send his *Horse* upon the ice over to the opposite

places. Indeed, from the following notices it would seem that these accommodations were even diminished during the winter season: —

'March 26, 1750. The Boston and Philadelphia Posts set out on *Monday* next, at the usual Hours, to perform their Stages Weekly.'

'Dec. 3, 1750. The Posts set out To-morrow to perform their Stages once a Fortnight during the Winter Season.' [1]

On the third of February, 1755, Alexander Colden, postmaster of New York, issues the following notice: —

'It being found very inconvenient to persons concern'd in Trade that the Post from New York to New England, has heretofore set out but once a fortnight during the Winter Season: the Stages are now alter'd, by orders of the Post Master General; [2] and the New England Post is henceforth to go once a week the year round, whereby correspondence may be carried on and answers obtained to letters between New York and Boston in two weeks, which us'd in the Winter to require four weeks. But to obtain this good end it is necessary, on account of the Badness of the Ways and Weather in Winter, to dispatch the Post some Hours sooner from New York: Notice is therefore hereby given that he begins his Weekly Stage on Monday next, being the 10 instant, and will be dispatched precisely at *Nine* o'clock in the morning, on that day, and every Monday following.' [3]

The trusty messenger who made his weekly transit through the village of Rye, must have been very familiar to the inhabitants.[4] A goodly number of them, doubtless, awaited his arrival at Haviland's inn, to receive not only their letters, but also the city

shore; and that in the afternoon of the same day, the weather being extremely moderate and giving, he was obliged to cross in a Ferry boat, the ice having broke away,' etc. — *New York Gazette and Weekly Post-Boy.*

[1] *New York Gazette.*

[2] Benjamin Franklin, who had been appointed to this office two years before, and was vigorously endeavoring to improve and extend the postal system of the colonies. Five years later he surprised the people with a proposition to run stage wagons to carry the mail from Philadelphia to Boston, once a week, starting from each city on Monday morning, and arriving at the end of the route by Saturday night. Franklin was removed from this office in 1774.

[3] *New York Gazette and Post-Boy.* Communicated, with several other items in this chapter, by Col. Thomas F. De Voe.

[4] 'Lately died at Stratford, of a Fever, Deacon Thomas Peet, in the 62 year of his age. He was employed as a Post-Rider between New York and Saybrook, for the *last* 32 *years of his life*, in which station he gave general satisfaction.' — *New York Mercury*, October 27, 1760.

'Run away, from Ebenezer Hurd, of Stratford, the old post-rider, which has rode post 47 years, from New York to Saybrook, a negro man about 25 years of age . . . Five dollars reward. EBENEZER HURD.'
— *Supplement to the New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury*, April 10, 1775.

papers fresh from the press — the 'Gazette,' the 'Journal,' the 'Post-Boy,' the 'Mercury' — some or all of which had eager and interested readers at Rye.[1]

Besides the public post employed by the government, there were post-riders in the service of the newspapers. In 1762, the 'New York Gazette and Weekly Post-Boy' of March 18, boasts that its messenger 'brought the Boston papers a week later than the other post, who came in the Night before' with letters for the governor, though he had been 'hinder'd by the Snow, which in some places was prodigiously deep.' The post not only carried the papers, but also received subscriptions for them; and delinquents were occasionally reminded of their duty to pay their subscriptions in this way.

Our good people not only read the papers, but advertised in them occasionally. Here are some Rye advertisements of the olden time: —

'Oct. 23, 1749. Wm Burtus, Hat-Maker, Now *living at Harrison's Purchase*, in Rye, carries on the Hatter's Trade there, and makes and sells as good Hats as any in the Province, for ready Money, or short Credit. Wm. Burtus.'

'July 3, 1775. Stolen out of the pasture from the subscriber at Rye the 21st June 1775, a sorrel mare, about 14 hands high, a natural trotter, marked with a ball face, her main hanging on the near side, four year old. Any person that will apprehend the thief and mare, so that the owner can have his mare again, shall be paid the sum of five pounds, and for the mare only three pounds paid by me.

William Lyon.'

'July 1, 1771. Capt. Abraham Bush, of Rye, in the province of New York, on a voyage from the eastward, bound home, coming out of Milford harbour, in Connecticut, Sunday morning the 14th day of last April, about three hours after his departure, saw (above half sound over towards Long Island) a wreck . . . . which he brought into Rye harbour. Any person proving his property in said scow and boom, by applying to said Bush, in Rye, may have them again, paying him for his trouble and the charge he hath been put to.

Abraham Bush.'

'March 21, 1774. For sale at public vendue, on the premises 1st April, a house and lot of land in Rye, situated by the water side, very convenient for a boatman or merchandizing or any water business: the lot containing ten acres, a nice orchard and some meadow land. The

[1] The *New York Gazette* was the first newspaper issued in New York, commencing October 23d, 1725. The *New York Weekly Journal* was published from 1733 to 1752. The *New York Gazette and Weekly Post Boy* was first issued in 1743.

house is large with five rooms upon a floor. On the premises are also a barn, store house and dock. Apply to Ezekiel Flaster, [Halsted?] or Jonathan Budd.'

Advertisements of stolen goods, at Rye, are frequent, the injured parties sometimes indulging themselves in the expression of their suspicions as to the persons who have committed the theft, naming and describing them.

'July 14, 1760. Last Thursday (July 10) night the wash-house of Timothy Wetmore, of Rye, was broken open and stole out of the wash-tub, three linnen shirts . . . . a considerable number of linnen cambrick and lawn handkerchiefs and caps, a parcel of child's clothes, and sundry other articles too tedious to mention. It is supposed they were taken by Moll Rogers, and that she has or will make towards New York.

'Whoever will apprehend the thief, that the person may be bro't to justice, shall have 8 dollars reward, paid by the subscriber.

'This wretch has been a general plunderer and disturber of the repose of the honest people of this province, particularly the country, for a long course of time, and has actually been in the hands of the authority time after time, and yet is as daring as ever in her villainy.

TIMOTHY WETMORE.'[1]

Mr. Timothy Wetmore lived in the house now occupied by his granddaughter, Mrs. Buckley. His brother, Mr. James Wetmore, who proclaims his losses in the following advertisement, lived at the time in the 'Square House,' now owned by the family of Mr. D. M. Mead: —

'March 31, 1763. Stolen out of the house of James Wetmore, at Rye, on the 16th inst., in the night, by Mary Barrington, an Irish woman, three silver watches, and sundry other small articles. One of the watches is French make, and winds up on the dial plate: the second is an old-fashion'd frosted dial plate: the other is a common China dial plate. A reward of five dollars will be paid &c. by

JAMES WETMORE.'[2]

It was not until 1772, just a hundred years after the establishment of Governor Lovelace's post system, that a better mode of travel was introduced. In that year, the *first stage-coach*[3] began to run between New York and Boston. The following advertisement appeared in Holt's 'New York Journal' of July 9: —

[1] *N. Y. Mercury.* [2] *N. Y. Gazette and Weekly Post-Boy.*

[3] It is difficult to believe that until the date here mentioned, no public conveyance of the kind existed on this route. Such however is the fact. Between New York and Philadelphia, stages had been running for some years.

New-York, 24th June 1772.

THE

STAGE COACH

BETWEEN

NEW-YORK AND BOSTON,

WHICH for the firſt Time ſets out this Day from Mr. Fowler's Tavern, (formerly kept by Mr. Stout) at Freſh Water, in New-York, will continue to go the Courſe between Boſton and New-York, ſo as to be at each of thoſe Places once a Fortnight, coming in on Saturday Evening and ſetting out to Return, by the Way of Hartford, on Monday Morning.

The Price to Paſſengers, will be 4d. New-York or 3d. lawful Money per Mile, and Baggage at a reaſonable Rate.

Gentlemen and Ladies who chooſe to encourage this uſeful, new, and expenſive Undertaking, may depend upon good Uſage, and that the Coach will always put up at Houſes on the Road where the beſt Entertainment is provided.

The Stage Coaches will next Trip arrive at New-York and Boſton, on Saturday the 11th of July, and will ſet out from thence to Hartford on Monday the 13th, meeting at Hartford on Wedneſday the 15th, where, after ſtaying a Week, they will ſet out again on Wedneſday the 23d for New-York and Boston, where they will arrive on Saturday the 25th, and ſet out to return on Monday the 27th, &c.

If on Trial the Subſcribers find Encouragement, they will perform the Stage once a Week only altering the Day of ſetting out from New-York and Boſton to Thurſday inſtead of Monday Morning. 28—

JONATHAN and NICHOLAS BROWN.

This appears to have been the commencement of travel by public conveyance between New York and Boston. In 1787, the stages made three trips every week in summer, and two in winter. They set out from Hall's Tavern, No. 49 Courtlandt Street, on Monday, Wednesday, and Friday mornings, arriving at Boston in six days. The fare was four pence a mile.[1]

In 1787, there was a stage every other day from New York to Rye, and the following advertisement, which appeared in the 'New York Journal,' intimates that such a special conveyance to this place had been running before: —

September 27, 1787. 'STAGE. — The subscriber informs the public, and his friends in particular, that he now runs the Stage from this to Rye, which Mr. Hall formerly run: which stage starts from Mr. (David) Osborn's at Peck Slip, No. 136 (138 Water Street) on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, at five o'clock in the morning, and returns on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays, at six o'clock in the evening. As the subscriber has furnished himself with a very convenient new *Waggon*, and good *horses*, for the purpose, he flatters himself, that he shall be able to give those Gentlemen and Ladies, who please to favor him with their custom, universal satisfaction.

[1] Frank's *New York Directory* for 1787 (the first published in that city).

'N. B. The subscriber likewise keeps a very genteel Coach, with a good pair of horses, to Lett: likewise, Horses and Chairs, and saddle horses. Any orders, left with Mr. Osborn, at Peck Slip, or at his stable, Cortlandt-street, will be immediately attended to, by the public's most humble servant, OBADIAH WRIGHT.

'New York, Sept. 27, 1787.'

But the inhabitants of Rye had other means of communicating with the outside world, and they probably depended more upon *water* communication than upon that by land. The earliest mention of a dock or wharf at this place occurs under the date of 1679, when the town granted to John Ogden 'forty-eight or fifty acres of land by the water side at the Fishing Rock, for the purpose of building a house and wharf. The inhabitants of Peningo neck to have wharfage free.'[1]

A great event for Rye was the establishment of a *ferry* in 1739 between this town and Oyster Bay, Long Island. The charter issued in that year for this purpose, sets forth that 'the principal freeholders and proprietors of the lands in the two patents called Budd's Neck and Penning's Neck' have made application for it.[2] The inhabitants generally seem to have taken a deep interest in the enterprise. Messrs. John Budd, Hachaliah Brown, and Jonathan Brown were at the head of it. The list of subscribers toward the expense of obtaining the patent, embraces twenty-six names.[3] Those who thus contributed were to 'enjoy a share of the privileges and emoluments of the ferry in proportion to the sums' subscribed. A meeting of the shareholders was appointed to be held annually, 'at some convenient place near the Church,' on the first Tuesday in April, when a committee was to be chosen,

[1] Bolton's *History of Westchester County*, ii. 93.

'Francis Purdy's landing' is mentioned in a return for the division of vacant lands in 1718. (Town Meeting Book, No. G.)

[2] Rye Records, vol. C. pp. 130–32, 178–81.

[3] The list is as follows: —

Samuel Purdy, £3 00 0	Thos Howel, £0 11 3	Roger Park, £1 10 0
Samuel Brown, £3 00 0	David Kniffin, £0 15 0	Peter Tatlon, £0 15 0
James Wetmore, £3 00 0	Henry Strang, £1 10 0	Joseph Sutton, £0 07 6
The same, in trust for	Dan'l Purdy, Esq. £3 00 0	Edward Palmer, £0 15 0
Lavinia, daughter of	Joseph Galpin, £1 10 0	Robert Palmer, £0 15 0
Henry Strange, £1 10 0	Thomas Lyon, £3 00 0	Hach. Brown, jr. £1 06 3
Monmouth Hart, £1 10 0	Samuel Wilson, £3 00 0	Gilbert Bloomer, £3 00 0
Sam[l] Crompton, £0 3 9	Benj. Kniffin, £0 11 3	Ebenezer Kniffin £1 10 0
Andrew Merrit £1 10 0	Jonathan Horton, £0 15 0	Sam[l] Graves, jr. £0 15 0
	John Coe, £0 07 6	

who should lease the ferry, and take charge of the profits that might accrue.[1]

This ferry continued in use till the latter part of the century. In 1786, Mr. Isaac Brown, of Rye, purchased the rights of the proprietors of Rye ferry.[2] A map of Rye in 1797, shows the 'house at the Ferry,' near the mouth of Byram River. This house, about a century ago, was kept by a German who afterwards attained some distinction as an officer in the Revolutionary War. Frederick De Weissenfels advertises in the 'New York Mercury' of April 30, 1759, concerning the

FERRY CALLED RYE-FERRY, TO OYSTER BAY ON LONG ISLAND.

'This is to give Notice, to all Travellers and Strangers, that at the place called Rye-Ferry, in the County of Westchester, and Province of New York, is a good regular and constant Ferry kept, from the abovementioned Place to Oyster-bay, on Long Island, where there is good entertainment for Travellers: And by the subscriber hereof is also to be sold all sorts of Dry-goods, as Broad-Cloths, German Serges, Ratteens, Half-thicks, Pennistons, Forrest-Cloth, mill'd Druggets, Bombazeens, Flannels of divers colours, Shalloons, Silverets, Burdoas, Irish-stuffs, Camblets, Everlastings, Worsted Damasks, Velvets, Taffaties, Persians, 3-4 and yd-wide Garlix, Irish Linnens, Checks, Millenets, Pistol and Tandem Lavins, Silesias, Ozenbrigs, Calicoes, Ribbands, Fans, Gloves, Necklaces, and other Dry-Goods too tedious to mention, as also an Assortment of Iron-mongery, Paint, Window Glass, Looking Glasses; Swords, Hangers, Guns, Powder and Shot, Nails, Lead, as also good West-India Rum, Molasses, Sugar, Cotton &c. by

FREDERICK DE WEISSENFELS.'

'Rye Ferry' must have been a place of frequent resort for the inhabitants of Rye, to justify the keeping of such an assortment of goods.

At the beginning of the present century, the ordinary and favorite mode of travelling to New York and back was by sloop. Several market sloops ran regularly between this place and the city. Some of them started from 'Saw Pit,' now Port Chester; others from Milton, and others still from Rye Neck. There was a dock below Milton, at Kniffin's Cove, and one known as Jonathan

[1] The tariff of prices for ferriage is curious. These are some of the items: For one person, 1*s.* 6*d.* Man and horse, 3*s.* Wagon, cart or carriage, 7*s.* 6*d.* Horned cattle over two years old, 2*s.*: under, 1*s.* Fitch of bacon, or piece of smoked beef, 1*d.* Frying pan or warming pan, 2*d.* Looking glass of one foot, 6*d.*, and so in proportion, &c. (Records, C. pp. 131, 132.)

[2] This appears from a memorandum in the possession of Mrs. David Brown, of Rye, dated March, 1786.

Horton's, near the house of Captain Bouton. In 1803, nine 'market sloops' ran regularly from Rye to New York; four from Saw Pit, and one from Rye Neck. There were also three 'packet vessels' carrying freight and passengers.

In 1812, one sloop ran from Rye Neck to New York, and three from Saw Pit.

CHAPTER X.

THE EIGHTEEN PROPRIETORS.

1660–1744.

OF all matters that interested the people of Rye in ancient times, their institution of 'Proprietors' was perhaps the chief. The doings of this body fill a considerable part of our town records; and from these and other sources we derive a tolerably complete account of a system which has long since passed away. But nothing that we have been able to learn on this subject has been gained from *oral* testimony. Since the period of the Revolution, the old proprietary system seems to have been consigned to oblivion. Of the many aged persons whom the writer has conversed with, and from whom he has gained much valuable information, not one has appeared even to have heard of such a body as 'y^e^ Eighteen Proprietors of Peningo Neck.'

Yet the institution was by no means peculiar to this town. Indeed, it has afforded a theme of no little discussion to writers of local history. Many of the towns of Massachusetts and Connecticut were founded like our own, by organized companies of settlers. Usually, these settlers would enter into a written agreement before starting from their homes. An agent or a committee would then be sent to purchase the lands which they designed to occupy from the Indian owners. Having obtained a formal release of the soil from the head men or chiefs of the tribe, they would then make application to the General Court of the colony for the confirmation of their title. This request was generally granted, and the company became a kind of corporation, known as a 'Proprietary,' in whom the right to the soil was vested. These proprietors owned the land as tenants in common, until it should be divided and assigned for individual occupation. Each member of the company was entitled to a certain share of land for immediate use. He also possessed a right or share in the undivided or common lands, by which he could claim his portion of any part of them

that might be distributed at any time. These were called Proprietors' Rights, and were handed down, in most cases, from father to son, as valuable privileges. Sometimes, however, a proprietor would sell his right in the undivided lands to a new-comer in the settlement, who would thus acquire all the privileges of an original member. More frequently, the proprietor would sell a part of his proprietary right; and then the new member would become joint owner with the seller, of any lands that might fall to him in future.

Of course, in the origin of every town, this company of proprietors would be likely to include all the actual settlers: for each person joining the enterprise would expect to share in its privileges, as he must in its dangers and hardships. But with the growth of a settlement, there would come to be a distinction between those possessing such privileges, and others. An individual might be admitted as freeholder in the town, without becoming entitled to the rights of a proprietor. He might purchase lands which had already been divided, or obtain a grant of land from the town; but this would not secure to him an interest in the undivided lands. So in the course of time the number of inhabitants might exceed that of the proprietors, yet the latter would still retain the exclusive control of whatever portion of the public domain remained undistributed and unimproved.

At Rye, the first purchase of land was made, as we have seen, by Peter Disbrow and his companions. These were, at first, John Coe and Thomas Stedwell. Two others soon after appear as associates in the enterprise, John Budd and William Odell. It is doubtful whether they formed any such organized company as existed in the settlement of other towns. The place was remote and almost unknown to the authorities at Hartford, who were very cautious in encouraging a new plantation. There is no evidence that these proprietors sought or obtained a patent from the government of Connecticut at this period. They appear to have proceeded without the usual formalities, hoping to be recognized in their rights when once securely established in their new venture.

But on the twenty-eighth of April, 1663, Peter Disbrow, John Coe, Thomas Stedwell and John Budd, by a deed of sale, conveyed the island, together with the mainland which they had purchased, to a body of planters. These were seven in number, namely: —

Samuel Alling, Thomas Applebe,
Richard Vowles, William Odell,
Philip Galpin, John Brondig,
John Coe.

Undoubtedly the four grantors of this deed retained their personal interest in the property thus conveyed, so that the new body of proprietors consisted of eleven persons. Another was probably added before long, making twelve. This we suppose to have been the original number of the company afterwards designated as The Eighteen Proprietors of Peningo Neck.[1]

It will be understood that the lands which this body of men held at their disposal were only those comprehended in the first purchase on Peningo Neck. This, as we have said, was the lower part of the tract between Blind Brook and Byram River, south of the present village of Port Chester. All other lands yet undivided were owned by the town or by other bodies of proprietors, as the White Plains purchase, and 'Lame Will's' tract.

We do not know with certainty when the number of proprietors was increased from twelve to eighteen. But the following circumstance seems to indicate the time. On the fifth of March, 1676, when fears were entertained of an attack from the Indians, —

'Thomas Lyon and Thomas Brown are appointed to choose a house or place to be fortified for the safety of the town. Also the young men who come into the fortification, and remain during the troubles, are *to have an equal proportion of the undivided lands*, provided they be such as the town approve.'

This measure would of course require an increase of the proprietary body; and in point of fact we find that several persons about this time begin to appear as proprietors. Meanwhile some of the first settlers leave the enterprise, selling their rights to others; so that by the year 1690 the list of names has undergone material change. At that date it consisted probably of the following: —

Peter Disbrow,	Richard Vowles,	John Banks,
John Coe,	John Ogden,	John Purdy,
Thomas Stedwell,	Philip Galpin,	Thomas Merritt,
George Kniffin,	Jacob Pierce,	John Merritt,
John Brondig,	George Lane,	Thomas Brown,
William Odell,	Isaac Sherwood,	Hachaliah Brown.

The company in due time took its permanent name, that of 'The Eighteen Proprietors of Peningo Neck.' This title seems to

[1] In 1666, John Coe sold to Hachaliah Brown '*one half of a twelfth lot*, with all the privileges thereunto belonging.' (Town Records, B. p. 3.)

A list apparently of the proprietors in 1683, comprises fourteen names, namely, Stephen Sherwood, Jonathan Vowles, Peter Disbrow, John Boyd, Timothy Knap, George Knifen, William Odell, John Brondig, Thomas Brown, Deliverance Brown, John Merrit, Francis Purdy, George Lane, Thomas Merrit. (Records, B. p. 48.)

have been abridged in ordinary parlance to that of 'The Eighteen.' And it remained unchanged long after the name had ceased to represent the actual number of partners. For while there continued to be but eighteen full or entire shares, the number of persons holding them increased considerably, in the way already described. Parts of shares were often sold, and the purchasers obtained a right to the specified proportion of the undivided lands remaining.

These fractional shares were sometimes produced by the division of an estate; two brothers, for instance, holding each one half of an eighteenth part of the common lands. Thus, in 1706, John Odell of Fordham sells to George Kniffin his interest in the undivided lands 'below the marked trees, which belong to the Eighteen,' namely, 'a thirty-sixth part of said lands, which was his deceased father, William Odell's.'

In 1717, Samuel Odell, Jr., of Westchester, sells to the same 'a full quarter part of three lotments of land *in the Eighteen of Rye*, and one quarter part of all the undivided lands within the limits of the said Eighteen.'

In 1736, Robert Bloomer and Joseph Kniffin convey to Caleb Wetmore, for the sum of twenty-five pounds, 'one five-eighths of a twenty-sixth part of all undivided lands' in Rye, to which they 'have any right by virtue of proprietorship, or grants made to them by the ancient proprietors of Rye.'

In the same year, the same parties, who seem to have made a specialty of this kind of traffic, sold to John Disbrow for twenty pounds current money of New York, 'the one equal fifty-second part and share of all the undivided lands unto which we have right by virtue of our proprietorship,' etc.

The purchasers of these rights laid much stress upon the fact that they thus acquired all the privileges of original proprietorship in the place. Of this we find some curious examples.

Thus, in 1726, John and Jonathan Brondig sell to Justus Bush, 'Merchant of the city of New York,' for eight pounds, 'one eighteenth part or proportion of undivided land in a certain purchase of land known by the name of Peninggoe neck purchase, now called Rye.' And in 1745, Anne, widow of Justus Bush, conveys to her youngest son Abraham, all the rights in Peningo Neck purchase belonging to his father, 'who was one of the eighteen proprietors.'

In 1745, John Glover, of Newtown, Connecticut, late of Rye, releases to Joseph Haight his right as a '*descendant* of the ancient proprietors of the said town of Rye *by purchase*,' as that right 'was released to him by Robert Bloomer and Joseph Kniffin.'

The proprietors met for the transaction of business twice every year, usually in the spring and fall. The records of their proceedings that have been preserved, are contained in the same books with those of the town meetings, but are entered separately. The first of these volumes now extant, is entitled 'Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. 3 or C.' Here are some of the earliest entries, which may serve as specimens of the transactions: —

'At a meting of the Proprietors of penningo nack doth agree to keep the feld intier while the least day of october in yere 1698.'

February 27, 1698–9, 'the said proprietors doe agree and make choice of Hacaliah Brown, Deliverance Brown, John Merritt, Robert Bloomer and John Stoakham, to lay out what lands of theire propriety they shall see convanient, also to lay out high wayes or other out lets as they shall see good in the said propriety, and further wee doe impower these aforesaid men to bargaine with and sell unto John Lyon a certain tract of land lying up Byram River if they shall see good and convanent soe to doe.'

The proprietors at the same meeting 'acknowlidg that they have formerly granted unto Thomas Merritt senior, a parsil of Land commonly called the Pine island which land is joyning to the said Merritt's medow and all other wayes bounded with salt water.'

They likewise confirm to John Lyon a parcel of land 'lying against the mill betwen the cartway down into the nack and the mill creak bounded up the said creek by John Hoit's meddow and to Run down the said Creek till it comes to John Boyd's maddow provided the said John Lyon doe not praiadice the carte way into the nack nor the way to the mill naither shall hee hinder any parson from settin up thare field fence if they have accassion.'

At the same meeting 'the said propriators do grant *unto the towne of Rye* a parcell of Land of four Rodd square for the said towne sett a house upon Lying as convanient as may be on that lott where the town hous now stands.'

They also grant unto Deliverance Brown a parcel of land 'below his first parcel of meadow commonly called the Scotch Capps point.'

November 28, 1699, the proprietors exchange a certain lotment belonging to them for one that Richard Ogden holds 'lying at a place commonly called the pulpitt.'

September 14, 1700, they appoint Hacaliah Browne and Isaac Denham to lay out a home-lot for Francis Purdy, junior, and John Merritt, junior, each, 'above the Lotte of Thomas Merits iuner.'

August 29, 1707, a committee is appointed by the proprietors to

'view the records to see whether Joseph Studwell has any grant to change the third part of a Lott lying by the Steep Hollow for Land ioining to his home Lott and if there be no such grant found as above said' then they are 'to give the said Studwell warning to pull the fence down about what land he hath fenced in which has not bin Layd out unto the said Studwell.'

From time to time, at these meetings, a new division of the common lands was ordered. Persons were chosen as 'layers out,' to define and distribute the new allotments. Their office was one of some responsibility, and not unfrequently, though the wisest and discreetest seem to have been chosen to it, their decisions appear to have failed to satisfy the parties interested. A report of a committee of 'layers out' in 1711, shows among other things what care was exercised to guard the rights of orphans and non-residents, a precaution of which we find other proofs beside: —

'Know all men by these presents that we whose names are here under writtne haveing binn chosen by the proprietors of peninggoe neck to Lay out severall divisions of Lands within the bounds of said proprietors as by the records reletion thereto being had may apere we have accordingly so done and do make returne to said proprietors in maner as followeth we have Layd out four divitions and in each divition eightteen lottments and have takne care to lay out the said lottments in each divition all so good each as the other in quantity or quallity according to the best of our discretion the said proprietors haueing takne care when said divisions of lottments were drawn for in respect of orphans and forrainers and did allow of severall parsons to draw for their lottments in their behalfs whose names are hereafter expressed to say George Kniffen were allowed to draw in the behalf of the Odills and John Stoakham in the behalf of Samuell Banks and Mr. Isaac Denham in the behalf of the Pearses and John Meritt in the behalf of John Boyd and John Disbrow in the behalf of his brother Peter Disbrow deceased the said lottments so drawn for with the numbers thereof may appear upon records as wittness our hands this 30th day of November anno domini 1711.'

The allotments were of eighteen acres each. On the same day, a division of the 'Branch Ridge lots' were made, of five acres each.

Various other matters besides the distribution of lands engaged the attention of the proprietors. In 1711, they 'agree to build a school house upon their own charge.' In 1705, they lay out a tract of land for a sheep pasture. In 1709, they grant to Isaac Denham 'liberty to make a woulf pitt on the pull pitt plaine, and to fence in half an acre of land about' it.

One of the last meetings of the proprietors, of which we have any full account, was held November 23, 1731. At this meeting, a committee was chosen to lay out and distribute the undivided lands remaining, and sell, and appropriate the proceeds of the sale for their trouble. Some small parcels are mentioned as still left. About this time probably the affairs of the company were wound up, and it soon ceased to be.[1] There were common lands held and distributed long after this period; but these belonged to the town, being outside of the proper limits of the first purchase on Peningo Neck.

A 'last division of Peningo Neck' is mentioned in 1751, as having occurred since 1744. Among the lands then distributed was a tract on the Boston road, above the house where Mr. Ezrahiah Wetmore now lives. In this division a parcel of land was laid out 'to the Lyons.'[2]

[1] It was so in other places where the proprietary system had prevailed. At Norwich, about the same time, — in 1740, — 'the final division of the common lands was made, the accounts of the proprietors closed, and their interests merged in those of the town.' (*History of Norwich*, by F. M. Caulkins, 1866, p. 95.)

[2] Rye Records, D. 33; comp. C. 188.

CHAPTER XI.

RYE IN CONNECTICUT. — THE TOWN AND THE GENERAL COURT.

1664–1700.

AT the time when Rye was settled, in 1660, there were within the present limits of Connecticut sixteen plantations dignified with the name of *towns*. Each of these was a petty commonwealth by itself, maintaining, within a certain district, a government of its own choice. The inhabitants of this district elected their own local officers, framed their own codes, cared for their own common interests. Assembled in town meeting, they discussed and determined all questions relating to local improvements and expenses; they took action as to the opening of roads, the building of bridges, the levying of taxes, the support of the poor, and many other matters. They exercised also the right to grant or deny applications for admission to citizenship. Two deputies, chosen by a majority of voters in each town, took part with magistrates also chosen by the people in the general government. The legislature thus constituted, known as the General Court, met in the spring and fall of each year at Hartford. With this law-making body, and a governor and other high officials of their own election, the people of Connecticut were already, more than a hundred years before the Revolution, an independent State.

Our little island settlement of Hastings was never a 'town,' in the strict sense of the word, though honored with that title in the records of the General Court. It was not enumerated among the plantations of the colony, nor had it any deputy in the Court. The following is the earliest mention of the settlement: —

'HARTFORD, *October 8th*, 1663.

'Ln^t^ John Bud is appoynted Commissioner for the Town of Hastings, and is inuested [with] Magistraticall power within the limits of that Town. Rich: Vowles is appoynted Constable for the Town of Hastings, and Mr. Bud is to g[iue him his oath.'][1]

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, vol. i. p. 413.

In the records of the next fall meeting, October 13th, 1664, Rye is mentioned for the first time: —

'This Court orders that Ln^t Bud continue in his place of Com^r for Hasting and Rye, untill the Court order otherwise, or the Goun^r and Gent^n that goe to New Yorke.'[1]

At the following spring session, we find among the deputies at Hartford, 'Peter Disborough,' who is admitted to a seat as representative of the town of Rye, now and henceforth recognized as one of the plantations of the colony. The order to this effect has already been quoted, 'that the villages of Hastings & Rye shalbe for the future conioyned and make one Plantation; and that it shalbe called by the appellation of Rye.'[2]

October 12, 1665, Richard Vowles appears as deputy. Rye for the first time has a place in the 'List of Persons and Estates.' The several towns are ordered, at their meeting, to have 'a towne brand for horses,' and to choose a person who shall keep a record of the marks, 'naturall and artificiall,' of each horse so branded. The mark for this plantation is the capital letter R.[3]

May 10, 1666, Lieutenant Budd is deputy. Rye is now included within county limits. 'From the east bounds of Stratford,' the Court orders, 'to y^e west bounds of Rye shalbe for future one County w^ch shalbe called the County of Fairfield. And it is ordered that the County Court shalbe held at Fairfield on the second Tuesday in March and the first Tuesday in November yearly.'[4]

May 9, 1667, the Court confirms Joseph Horton as 'Lieutenant to the trayn band of Rye. Mr. Richard Lawes [Law] and Mr. John Holly are chosen Commissioners for the Townes of Standford, Greenwich & Rye, and to assist in the execution of justice at the courts at Fayrefield for the yeare ensuing.' The constable of Rye is to take his oath of office before Mr. Lawes.[5]

October 8, 1668, Rye sends two deputies to Hartford, Mr. John Budd and Richard Vowles.[6] The General Court fixes the allowance to be made by each town for the expenses of its deputies in attending the sessions, 'leaueing each severall town to their liberty to send one or two to euery session, according to charter.' Rye, as the remotest plantation of the colony, must pay three pounds for this object.

[1] *Public Records of the Colony of Connecticut*, p. 436.
[2] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 15.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 28.
[4] *Ibid.* p. 35.
[5] *Ibid.* p. 63.
[6] *Ibid.* p. 93.

Richard Vowles is again chosen deputy in 1669.[1]

May 12, 1670, Mr. John Banks and 'Peter Disbroe' appear for Rye.[2] Several of the inhabitants are propounded at this meeting as freemen: 'Joseph Horten, George Snuffene, Hackalyah Browne, Jonath: Fowles.' At the October session this year, Timothy Knap is deputy.

May 11, 1671, Mr. John Banks and Peter Disbrow are sent again. The several plantations are now ordered for the future to pay 'for the hyer of their Deputies' horses, which they ride upon up to the seuerall sessions of the Generall Courte.'[3] At this session and the next, important action is taken relative to the extent of the territory of this and the neighboring towns. 'This Court grants the towne of Rye's bownds shall extend up into the country northward, twelve miles.'[4] May 9, 1672, the Court 'desires and appoynts Lnt Olmsteed, Mr. John Holly, Jonathan Lockwood and Lnt Joseph Orton, a committee to measure on an east northeast lyne from Mamorenack River to the west bownds of Fayrefeild, and to make report to this Court in October next, the distance twixt the sayd places and the quantitie of miles belonging to each of those plantations. This to be don at the charge of the townes of Norwalke, Standford, Greenwich & Rye.'[5] A similar committee was appointed in 1673, 'to consider of those lands between Stratford and Momoreanoke River, that are not allready granted by order of the Court to any plantation; and to proportion them to the seuerall plantations between Stratford and Momoranoke River, as they judge may be most equal and accommadating to the plantations as now they are setled.'[6]

In the same year the General Court confirmed the report of a committee appointed to settle the bounds and dividing lines of the several towns in Fairfield County. 'The bownds between Greenwich and Rye,' according to this act, 'is to be from the mouth of Byram River, to runn up the River one quarter of a mile above the great stone lyeing in the cross path by the sd Riuer; and from thence the sayd comons, upwards, between Standford bownds and the Colony line, is to be equally diuided between them by a paralell line wth Standford and Norwalke, to the end of their bownds up in the countrey.'[7]

October 12, 1676, the Court appoints a committee 'to put a value upon all the lands in the severall plantations,' determining

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 106. [2] *Ibid.* p. 127.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 154. [4] *Ibid.* p. 151. [5] *Ibid.* p. 174.
[6] *Ibid.* p. 195. [7] *Ibid.* p. 203.

the rate of their valuation in the lists of estates. Lands at Rye are to be estimated 'as Stonington,' namely, 'for one fowerth of their improved land by tillage, moweing and English pasture, to be listed twenty shillings p^r^ acre; the other three partes at tenn shillings p^r^ acre: and all other lands perticulerly impropriated by fence at one shilling per acre.'[1]

May 9, 1678, Lieutenant Joseph Horton of Rye is 'commissionated to grant warrants and to marry persons.' This appointment is repeated in the two following years, and in 1681 Mr. Horton is made commissioner, or justice of the peace, for the town.[2]

At the October session, 1681, Peter Disbrow is deputy from Rye. We learn that our little settlement has lately witnessed a calamity which in those days must have been peculiarly distressing. 'This Court considering the great losse that hath befallen Peter Disbrow by fyer, doe remitt unto him his country rate for the year ensueing.'[3]

May, 1682, Mr. John Ogden of Rye presents himself at the meeting of the Court, and obtains a grant of 'twenty acres of land to make a pasture, provided he take it up where it may not prejudice the colony's interest nor any perticuler persons former grants.'[4] He has, however, a more important matter to lay before the magistrates. The people of Rye complain that sundry persons, and particularly Mr. Frederick Philipse, have been making improvements of land within their bounds. Mr. Philipse has been building certain mills, near unto Hudson's River; encroaching thereby upon the town's territory, which is believed to extend in a northwesterly direction from the mouth of 'Mamorroneck River' to the Hudson, and even beyond. Mr. Ogden, coming home, is the bearer of a letter from the General Court to the governor of New York, gravely remonstrating against such unneighborly proceedings, and reminding him that by the agreement made in 1664, a line running north-northwest from the mouth of Mamaroneck River to the Massachusetts line, was to be the dividing line between Connecticut and New York.[5]

Timothy Knap is deputy in October, 1683, and obtains remittance from certain fines imposed upon himself and upon Caleb Hyat as constables of Rye, for failure to make up the payment of the country rate.[6]

This was the last meeting of the General Court of Hartford,

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. pp. 294, 295.
[2] *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 5.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 89.
[4] *Ibid.* p. 102.
[5] *Ibid.* pp. 100, 313.
[6] *Ibid.* pp. 128, 129.

at which deputies from Rye were present, until the revolt of the town to Connecticut some years later. In the following month, November 28, 1683, Rye was ceded to the province of New York, according to the articles of agreement then concluded for the establishment of the boundary line. It speaks well certainly for the town that during the twenty years of their connection with the colony, from 1664 to 1683, the inhabitants should have sent up one of their number, and sometimes two, to the legislature every year. A long, weary, perilous journey on horseback, over roads 'from plantation to plantation,' the neglected state of which is vividly described in an order of 1684, 'the wayes being incumbred with dirty slowes, bushes, trees and stones &c.' when wolves and 'panters,' not to speak of the red-skinned savages, were so numerous that 'for the encouragement of the good people to destroy those pernicious creatures,' the government frequently offered a liberal bounty.[1] Mr. John Banks, Peter Disbrow, and Timothy Knap served most frequently as deputies; Mr. Banks, who lived part of the time at Fairfield, and so had a shorter distance to travel, attending sometimes two sessions or more in the same year.

Rye remained unwillingly for some years beneath the rule of New York, until smarting under certain grievances, the story of which we shall tell further on, the inhabitants 'revolted' back to Connecticut. They were strongly attached to the colony, and it would seem that even while submitting outwardly to the new government, they made overtures to their former friends, asking to be received back. Thus as early as 1686, we find them applying for a patent, doubtless in view of an order which the General Court had issued the year before to all the towns within its jurisdiction, relative to the securing of charters for their lands. November 23, 'the town empowered Benjamin Colyer and John Brondige to treat with the governor for a general patent for the township of Rye.' The proprietors of Peningo Neck at the same time authorized these persons to obtain a particular patent in their behalf for the said Neck.[2] The Court, it appears, however well inclined, did not see fit just then to grant either of those applications.[3] Again, in

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. pp. 30, 157; vol. iv. p. 135, etc.

[2] Bolton, *History Westchester County*, ii. 29. These facts were apparently derived from our lost volume of town records.

[3] Mr. Bolton says, 'The general patent appears to have been granted, for on the 28th of Feb. 1686–7, occur certain "charges, arising from the business between Richard Patrick and the town of Rye, and all the expenses of procuring a *patent*, for the bounds and privileges of the said town."' The inference is unfounded, as the charges

1692, at the October session of the General Court, 'Mr Underhill of Rye and Zachary Roberts of Bedford' were in attendance, and the Court granted them an allowance for their expenses in coming, 'to be payd at Standford out of the country rate.'[1] But the time for this step did not arrive until five years later. At a meeting of the Governor and Council, January 19, 1697, Thomas Merritt and Deliverance Brown appear in behalf of 'the town of Rie,' with the request that this plantation may be owned as included within the colony, and that a charter may be granted to them for their lands. The petition is granted, and a patent for the town is ordered to be prepared forthwith. It is now printed, we believe, for the first time: —

'RIE PATTENT.

'Whereas the Hon^rd Gen^ll Court of the Colonie of Connecticutt have on May the fourteenth day 1685 ordered and declared that every town within the said Colonie should take out Pattents or Charters for their severall grants of Lands Given them by the said Gen^ll Court Or derived by purchase or otherwise obtained. which Pattents they did order should be made and Given to them vnder the seal of the Colonie and hands of the Govern^r and Secretary. And that such Pattents shall be a sufficient Evidence for all and every township that hath the same to all Intents and purposes for the holding the said lands firme to them their heirs successors and assignes forever According to the Tenor[2] given by his Maiestie Charles the second In his Charter bearing date the three and twentieth day of Aprill. in the fourteenth year of his Reign. And the said Gen^ll Court having granted and assigned to severall persons a certain townshiip to be known by the Name of Rie bounded westward eight Miles upon the Dividing Line between the Province of Newyork and the Colonie of Connecticutt according as it was settled by his Maiesties Comissioners as appears by their act or Report thereupon. And Eastward on a line beginning at the mouth of Byram River and Running up the said River one quarter of a mile above the Great Stone lying in the path by the said River and from thence Continued by a parralel Line eight miles into the Countrey and bounded southward upon the sea and northward upon the Wildernesse. Now know all men by these presents that I Robert Treat Esqr Govern^r of his Majesties Colonie of Connecticutt. have given granted bargaind enfeoffed and Confirmed. And by these

might just as well accrue from an *unsuccessful* attempt. It is certain, moreover, that no patent was granted by Connecticut until the revolt of 1697; and quite as clear that the people of Rye never sought nor obtained a charter from New York until long after that escapade.

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iv. p. 83.

[2] Tenure.

presents doe give grant bargain enfeoffe and Confirme unto Joseph Theale Thomas Merritt. Deliverance Brown, John Horton, Joseph Horton, Francis Purdie, Hechaliah Brown, Timothie Knap, George Lane, and John Merritt, their heirs assignes and their Associates forever. All that part or parcell of Land which lies and is Contained within the bounds above-mentioned. With all and singular the Lands, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever are thereunto belonging or any way appertaining to the same or any part thereof. As of his Majesties mannor of East Greenwich [in Kent] to Have and to hold in free and Comon Soccage, And not in Capite nor by Knight Service. Excepting and reserving for his Majestie his heirs and successors the fift part of all the Oar of Gold and Silver which shall be found therein from time to time. In witnesse whereof the said Robert Treat with the Secretary of the Colonie have hereunto annexed our hands and afixed Our Colonie Seal, this two and twentieth day of January Anno Domini 1696.[1] And in the eighth year of the reign of our Soveraign Lord William by the Grace of God of England Scotland France and Ireland King Fidei Defensor: Always provided that nothing herein Contained shall Extend or be understood or taken to Impeach or preiudice any Right, title, Interest or demand, which any person or persons hath or have or claim to have, of into or out of any part of the said township situated within the Limitts above-mentioned according to the Laws and Gen[ll] Customes of this Colonie but that all and every such person and persons May and shall have hold, and enioy the same in such maner as if these presents had not been Made.

R. Treat, *Gov[r]*
Eleazar Kimberly, *Secret[ry]*'[2]

The dispute with New York regarding this revolt of the town of Rye will be related in another chapter. The town remained nearly four years connected with the colony. At the meeting of the General Court, May 13, 1697, 'Mr. Vmphrie Vnderhill,' and Mr. Deliverance Brown took their seats as deputies. The Court 'did by their vote declare their approbation of the act of the Councill Jan. the 19[th] 1696 [1697], in undertaking the protection of the townes of Rie and Bedford as members of this corporation, and appointed John Horton Lieu[t] for the town of Rie, and John Lyon to be their Ensign.'[2]

At the next spring session, May 12, 1698, Mr. Joseph Horton was representative from Rye. Captain Humphrey Underhill was sent to the Court in October of the same year. Deliverance Brown, of Rye, was appointed one of the Justices of the County

[1] 1697, New Style.

[2] Colony Book of Deeds, Patents, etc. [MS.] Hartford: vol. ii. p. 251.

of Fairfield.[1] And in October, 1699, the deputies of this town appeared for the last time. They were 'M^r^ Tho^s^ Merritt,' and 'Lieu^t^ Jn^o^ Horton.' The following year, the king having decided the boundary controversy adversely to the claims of Connecticut, the Court gave order, October, 1700, that 'a signification thereof be sent to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford, signed by the Secretary, that they are freed from duty to this goverm^t^ and that they are under the goverm^t^ of Newyorke.'[2]

DEPUTIES TO THE GENERAL COURT, 1664–1700.

October,	1664	Lnt John Budd.	May,	1676	Peter Disbroe.
October,	1665	Richard Vowles.	October,	1676	Timothy Knap.
October,	1666	Lt. Bud.	May,	1677	John Brundige.
May,	1667	Mr. Jn^o^ Bud.	October,	1677	Mr. John Bankes.
October,	1668.	Mr. John Budd, Richard Vowles.	May,	1678	Mr. John Bancks.
			October,	1678	Timothy Knap.
May,	1669	Richard Fowels.	October,	1679	Peter Disbrough.
"	1670	Mr. John Banks, Peter Disbroe.	May,	1680	Mr. John Bankes.
			May,	1681	John Brandige.
October,	1670	Timothy Knap.	October,	1681	Peter Disbroe.
May,	1671	Mr. John Banckes, Peter Disbroe.	October,	1682	Timothy Napp.
			October,	1683	Timothy Knap.
May,	1672	Mr. John Bankes, Mr. Jos : Orton.	May,	1697	Mr. Vmphrie Vnderhill, Mr. Deliverance Brown.
June,	1672	Mr. John Bancks.	May,	1698	Mr. Joseph Horton.
October,	1672	Mr. John Bankes.	October,	1698	Capt^n^ Vmphrie Vnderhill.
May,	1673	Peter Disbroe.			
October,	1674	Mr. John Ogden.	October,	1699	Mr. Tho^s^ Merrit, Lieu^t^ Jn^o^ Horton.
May,	1675	Mr. John Bankes.			
July,	1675	Mr. John Bankes.			

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iv. p. 261.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 335.

CHAPTER XII.

HARRISON'S PURCHASE.

1695–1778.

'Heathcote himself, and such large-acred men,
Lords of fat Esham, or of Lincoln Fen.'

POPE.

FROM the facts already gathered, it is plain that the early proprietors of this town were *bonâ fide* settlers. They came hither with an honest purpose to remain, and cultivate the soil, and live by it, and establish homes for their children. Their land was owned in common till it could be parcelled out to advantage in equal shares, and in such quantities as might be speedily improved. This was the uniform policy of the New England colonist. Rye, the last town of Connecticut, well represents, as to the spirit and the method of its settlement, the previous plantations of that colony.

But it was quite otherwise in the province of New York, to which our planters soon found themselves unwillingly annexed. The little stream of Blind Brook separated them from a region in which land speculation was as rife as it has ever been in the 'far West.' Under the rule of the Dutch, vast domains had been given away to wealthy merchants or gentry.[1] One of these estates had passed into the hands of Frederick Phillips, who now owned the whole of the western part of Westchester County south of Croton River, between the Hudson and the Bronx.

The English governors of New York were quite as generous as their Dutch predecessors in giving away the public lands. Grants were made to individuals who succeeded in gaining their favor, of tracts that covered in many places from fifty to one hundred thousand acres, and in more than one instance, it is said, of as many as a *million* acres. Colonel Fletcher and Lord Cornbury

[1] The charter of the West India Company, in 1629, provided that whoever would within five years plant a colony of fifty souls above fifteen years old, was to become Lord of the Manor, or Patron, and should possess in absolute property the lands he might so colonize. These lands might extend sixteen miles in length, or if they lay along a river, eight miles upon each bank, and as far into the interior as circumstances might require.

were especially distinguished for the lavish way in which they squandered the property of the crown — not without suspicion of interested motives. So carelessly were the patents for these grants bestowed, that not unfrequently they intrenched upon the boundaries of lands previously taken up, or completely absorbed them.

The people of Rye were sufferers to a considerable extent from this abuse. Their principal troubles related to the tract of land since known as Harrison's Purchase. This tract was situated above Westchester Path, between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, and extended as far north as Rye Pond. It was, we have seen, one of the earliest purchases of the settlers of Rye. On the second of June, 1662, Peter Disbrow and his companions bought from certain Indians a territory 'above Westchester Path.' Four years later, John Budd bought a more extensive tract, including this, and reaching to a distance of sixteen miles north of Westchester Path. But like most other *inland* purchases of our settlers, these lands had remained hitherto unimproved.

Meantime, an individual named John Harrison, in the year 1695, disregarding these claims, bargained with an Indian who professed to be 'the true owner and proprietor,' for the purchase of the territory north of Westchester Path. In the same year, Colonel Fletcher, the provincial governor of New York, gave an order for the survey of Harrison's Purchase; and shortly after, a patent was granted by the British government to Harrison and certain others whom he had associated with him, for the whole of this tract.

By this summary measure, the people of Rye were despoiled of a most important part of their rightful possessions. It was a loss felt by each proprietor, for each had an interest in the undivided lands, to the distribution of which he looked forward as a provision for his children. The only show of reason for this act of spoliation was in the fact that the inhabitants of Rye were as yet without a patent for their lands under the government of New York. In 1685, Governor Dongan had issued a proclamation to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford, requiring them to appear before him and prove their title to the lands upon which they were seated. This summons, it appears, had not been obeyed. The sympathies of the people were with the colony from which they came, and to which they yet hoped permanently to belong. Their rights besides had been amply recognized by Connecticut, and they doubtless saw no propriety in the requirement to obtain a patent from New York.

But nothing could justify the arbitrary measure by which these

lands were wrested from the town. It was an act simply worthy of its perpetrator — one of the most unscrupulous of the bad men who with few exceptions were sent to fill the place of provincial governor of New York. Colonel Fletcher was notorious for the extravagance with which he disposed of the public lands.[1] His course in this respect was so flagrant that his successor in office applied to the British government for power to annul all the grants which he had made. 'They are so extravagant,' writes Lord Bellomont, 'that the province can never be peopled.'[2] 'There are many complaints,' he reports, 'against them, many people being violently stripped of their lands by these grants, supported by the favour of former governors.'

The people of Rye, when they heard of Harrison's design, doubtless used every means within their reach to prevent its execution. One of their number, the grandson of the original purchaser of Budd's Neck, was especially earnest in opposing the grant, on the ground that it conflicted with the rights acquired by his ancestor. Harrison's petition to the Council represented that he had bought 'a tract of vacant and unappropriated, uncultivated land in y^e^ County of Westchester, bounded on the north by Rye Pond, on the east by Blind brook, on the west by Mamaroneck river, and on the south by the land of Joseph Budd.' 'At a Council held at his Majesty's fort in New York the 13th of February, 1695–96,' Harrison's petition was referred to the Attorney-General, Major Austin Graham, Surveyor-General, Justice Theale, Joseph Purdy and Joseph Horton, or any three of them, 'to inquire into the manner of circumstances of said land, and make report.' Their report, dated February 17th, states that 'Humphrey Underhill appeared in behalf of Joseph Budd, son and heir to John Budd deceased, and produced an Indian Grant dated December 8, 1661, alleging that the same did contain the lands mentioned.'

[1] 'The most extraordinary favors of former governors,' wrote Cadwallader Colden, surveyor-general of the province, in 1732, 'were but petty grants in comparison of his. He was a generous man, and gave the king's lands by parcels of upwards of one hundred thousand acres to a man, and to some particular favorites four or five times that quantity. But the king was not pleased with him, as I am told, and he was recalled in disgrace. This lavishing away of lands probably was one reason.' (Report on the State of the Lands in the Province of New York: *Documentary History of New York*, vol. i. p. 380.)

[2] Lord Bellomont to Secretary Popple, July 7, 1698: Documents relating to the Colonial History of New York, vol. iv. p. 327. In a subsequent letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, he instances some of them, — 'to let your Lordships see that man's fraud to the Crown. To Mr. Godfrey Dellius, a grant of land 86 miles in length, 20 and some say 25 miles in breadth. To Col. Bayard a grant of about 40 miles long and 30 miles broad,' etc. (New York Colonial MSS., vol. iv. p. 780.)

The committee found the deed to contain a description of 'a tract of land called Apawanis, bounded on the east by Mackquam River, on the south by the sea against Long Island, on the west by Poccottsewack River, and on the north by marked trees near Westchester Path; together with range for feeding and range for cattle, and to fell trees twenty miles north.' This land, they say, is altogether disclaimed by Harrison; the tract purchased by him lying north of said marked trees. Underhill was asked whether he had any other objection to advance, and replied that he had at home an Indian deed which justified Budd's claim to the soil for sixteen miles north of the marked trees; but he did not bring it along with him, for it was old and spoiled, being dated in 1666; but he had a copy of the deed, which he gave to Colonel Heathcote, who left it before the Governor and Council. The committee could not examine this paper, but humbly referred the matter to the Council.[1]

The document which Underhill thus unfortunately failed to produce was undoubtedly the deed of April 29th, 1666, by which Shanarocke and others conveyed a tract between Blind Brook and Mamaroneck River, extending 'sixteen English miles from Westchester Path up into the country.' And it was also, as we have seen, to all appearance the same tract which, four years earlier, June 2, 1662, the purchasers of Peningo Neck, Disbrow, Coe, and Studwell, had bought together with Budd. Both parties, the inhabitants of Rye in general and the proprietor of Budd's Neck, were now to lose a territory for which, had they claimed it jointly and without dispute among themselves, they could certainly have made a stronger plea. As it was, no regard seems to have been paid by the Council to either claim. The lands were granted to Harrison, and the people of Rye 'revolted' back to Connecticut.

The individuals to whom this grant was made, were William Nicolls, David Jamison, Ebenezer Wilson,[2] John Harrison,[3] and Samuel Haight. Nicolls was a member of Colonel Fletcher's Council; Jamison was clerk of the Council; Wilson was sheriff of the city of New York, and a prominent merchant. All these men stood high in the governor's favor, and were largely concerned in

[1] County Records at White Plains, vol. B. pp. 259–261.

[2] The patent for Harrison's Purchase, as given by Mr. Bolton (*History of Westchester County*, vol. i. pp. 249–251), reads Ebenezer *Williams* — undoubtedly a clerical error. The name is *Wilson* in the partition deed as entered in the Records of the town of Rye, vol. D. pp. 280–283, and in the patent itself; see Appendix.

[3] In his petition for a patent, he signs his name John *Harrijson*. Little is known about him. Mr. Bolton supposes him to be the son of John Harrison of Newtown, L. I., in 1655 — father of John and Samuel.

the land grants which he made.[1] Of course the humble farmers of Peningo Neck had no influence to weigh against the interests of a company so powerfully manned.

Under this grievance, the town of Rye *seceded*. It renounced the authority of the provincial government, and returned to the colony of Connecticut. We do not greatly wonder at the secession. The provocation was great and the temptation strong. It is more surprising that the Connecticut government should have received the rebellious town. But there was much bitter feeling just at this time between the two colonies, growing out of the unsettled state of the question as to their boundaries. We shall see in the next chapter what passed between the colonial governments relative to this secession. Meanwhile, for four years Rye was a part of Connecticut. From 1697 to 1700, inclusive, the inhabitants designated themselves as living in Rye, 'in the county of Fairfield, in the colony of Connecticut.'[2] They applied to the General Court at Hartford for the settlement of any matters in dispute, and the Court seems to have considered and disposed of such applications precisely as in the case of any town east of Byram River.[3]

We have a curious account of the state of feeling among the good people of Rye during this interval. It occurs in a letter of Colonel Heathcote, written after a visit to Rye, the object of which was to persuade the malcontents to submit with a good grace. Colonel Heathcote writes to the Governor and Council: —

'Westchester, *Feby* 19, 1696–97.

'Gentlemen, — I had long ere this given you an account of my Rye Expedition, had I not at my coming here been kept Prisoner a Fortnight or three weeks by reason of the weather and a nimble distemper; . . . . from which so soon as I was disengaged I proceeded and called a meeting of y^e^ Inhabitants, taking particular care to have the Ringleaders summonsed; and enquired of them the reason of the Revolt. They told me that the grant to Harrison and his associates was so great an Injury to 'em that their town was nothing without it, and that they

[1] Jamison is stated to have been 'first in Col. Fletcher's confidence and favour, above all others, and enriched himself by the grants of land sold by Col. Fletcher, he having a share for brokerage.' (Documents, etc., Colonial History of New York, vol. iv. p. 400.) He afterwards became Chief Justice of New Jersey, and later, Attorney-General of New York. Nicols, a man of great influence and highly connected, was an ardent supporter of Fletcher. Captain Ebenezer Wilson was a prominent merchant of New York, sheriff of the city at the time, and afterwards mayor. (*Documents*, etc., vol. iv. pp. 377, 555; 25 *seq.*; 769,783, etc.)

[2] Some twenty deeds on record, within these years, are thus dated. Those entered immediately before and after are dated 'in the county of Westchester and province of New York.' (Town Records, vol. B. pp. 72–168.)

[3] See the action on the bounds of Rye and Greenwich, given in the next chapter.

had as good lose all as that; and a great Deal of Stuff to that effect. I asked them why they did not take out a Patent[1] when it was tendered them. They said they never heard that they could have one. I told them that their argument might pass with such as knew nothing of y^e^ matter, but that I knew better; for that to my certain knowledge they might have had a patent had they not rejected it; and that it was so far from being done in haste or in the Dark, that not a boy in the whole Town nor almost in the County but must have heard of it; and that I must always be a witness against them, not only of the many messages they have had from the Government about it, but likewise from myself. At which they began to be divided amongst themselves, some saying It was true, others that those the Crown had employed had proved false to 'em. After a great Deal of time spent in argument on this and other subjects, I endeavoured to make them sensible of y^e^ risque they run in this affair. But they seemed Deaf to all I could say, arguing that the Government of Connecticut had taken them under their Protection, and shewed me a blind sort of a Paper from under Kemblell's[2] hand to y^t^ effect. When I found I could do no good with the herd, I talked separately w^th^ some of y^e^ Hottest of 'em; which seemed to take some Impression; and I desired them to talk with their neighbours, and lett me know their minds against I came y^t^ way again, that I might be able to serve them before it was run so far that it would be out of my Power.

'I told them as to the last purchase, wherein I was concerned, if that gave them any dissatisfaction, I would not only quit my claim, but use my interest in getting them any part of it they should desire. Their answer was, they valued not that; it was Harrison's patent that was their ruin.

'I intend, God willing, before my return to Yorke, to throw one Journey more away upon them, tho' I despair of Successe therein. However my utmost Endeavours shall not be wanting therein. I am, Gentlemen, in much sincerity, your most obed^t^ and affect^te^ serv^t^

CALEB HEATHCOTE.'[3]

[1] The granting of patents was a favorite mode of raising money with the provincial governors of New York. New England men ever regarded it as a most unjust exaction. Sir Edmund Andros, who was made governor of New York and New England in 1688–89 declared, on arriving here, that the titles of the colonists to their lands were of no value at all. Indian deeds, he said, were no better than the scratch of a bear's paw. 'Not the fairest purchases and the most ample conveyances from the natives,' remarks Trumbull, 'no dangers, disbursements, nor labours, in cultivating a wilderness, and turning it into orchards, gardens, and pleasant fields, no grants by charter, nor by legislatures constituted by them, no declarations of pretending kings, nor of his then present majesty, were pleas of any validity or consideration with Sir Edmund and his minions. The purchasers and cultivators, after fifty and sixty years' improvement, were obliged to take out patents for their estates. For these, in some instances, a fee of fifty pounds was demanded. Writs of intrusion were issued against persons of principal character who would not submit to such impositions, and their lands were patented to others.' (*History of Connecticut*, i. 373.)

[2] *I. e., Kimberly's;* see page 94.

[3] N. Y. Col. MSS., Albany: vol. xli. p. 36.

The inhabitants of Rye obtained no redress. For four years they enjoyed the happiness of belonging once more to the 'land of steady habits.' And then in 1700, the king's order in Council placed them back within the jurisdiction they had renounced, 'forever thereafter to be and remain under the government of the Province of New York.' The people acquiesced in this decision; and the following action of the town is the record of the last protest made against an unrighteous procedure to which they were obliged in the end to submit: —

'At a lawful towne meeting held in Rye, September the 29, 1701, Deliverance Browne, senior, is chosen to goe down to New York to make the town's aggrievances knowne unto the Governor and Council, and alsoe to make inquiry concerning the Claim that John Harrison makes to our Lands, and to use what methods he shall see good for securing the towne's interest.'[1]

'At a lawful towne meeting held in Rye, February 1702–3, the towne hath by a major vote chosen Capt. Theale and George Lane, senior, and Isaac Denham, to forewarne any person or persons that shall lay out any Lands within the towne bounds without the towne's approbation or order: that is to say, within the township of Rye.'[2]

The purchase was owned in common by the five patentees, who soon divided it up among themselves in equal shares.[3] Harrison

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. C. p. 20.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 13.

[3] The following advertisement appeared in the *New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury*, Monday, March 18, 1771: —

'If any Person has in his keeping the Partition Deed that was made between the Patentees of Harrison's Purchase, in the County of Westchester, and will notify where he may be applied to, by a Letter to the Printer hereof, he will afford a great Pleasure to the Proprietors, and may expect a handsome Reward for his Trouble. The Patentees were Harrison, Nicolls, Haight, Wilson, and William Jamison. The Deed must have been made about the Year 1700, and is likely to be among some old Papers about Flushing, on Long Island.'

The deed appears to have come to light hereupon with very little delay — an early proof of the advantage of newspaper advertisement — for on the twenty-eighth of June, 1771, the recovered document was admitted to be recorded, and we have it in full in the Records of the town of Rye, vol. D. pp. 280–283. It sets forth that the tract of land in question was bought by John Harrison in 1695, with funds belonging to his four associates equally with himself, and that the purchase was made in their behalf also 'in a joint and equal right and interest, and not otherwise,' to be held by the five purchasers 'as tenants in common, without any right, claim or demand of survivorship by reason of joint tenancy upon the death of all or any of the said parties.' The deed is dated November 10, 1700, and is signed by W. Nicols, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, Samuel Haight, and John Harrison. The following statement is prefixed to Harrison's signature: —

'This may satisfy whom it may concerne that I underwritten doth assign over all my right, title and interest of this deed to Major William Lawrence, his heirs and assigns forever; as witness my hand this twenty-third day of May, 1702.

JOHN HARRISON.'

sold his interest to William Lawrence in 1702; Nicols and Wilson probably parted with theirs soon after. The only one of the original patentees who retained his portion was Samuel Haight, the ancestor of a prominent family of the town, in whose possession it remained until a comparatively recent day. Samuel Haight, like Harrison himself and Lawrence, was a native of Flushing, Long Island. He belonged to the Society of Friends. Indeed, nearly all the settlers of this purchase came from Flushing and other towns of Long Island;[1] and most of these were of the same religious persuasion.[2] It appears to have been from the first a 'Quaker' settlement, and from the fact that one of the original patentees was a leading member of that body, we are led to believe that such was designed to be the character of the enterprise from the first. A 'Friends' meeting house' existed here as early as the year 1727. A few of the inhabitants of Rye bought lands in this section, but in no such numbers as removed to the White Plains and other purchases.[3]

Brown's Point, now a part of the town of Harrison, but bordering on White Plains, appears to have been held at first as a tract

[1] 'John Harrison, late of Flushing in Queen's County,' and 'Samuel Haight of Flushing,' are thus named in the partition deed above referred to. In 1750, Samuel Harrison, supposed to be a brother of John, was living in the purchase. (Rye Records, C. 255.) William Lawrence, 'of Flushing,' is mentioned (Records, C. 118.) The following persons, who were early settlers in the purchase, are also known to have come from the same place: William Fowler (Records, B. 180, C. 45), William Marsh (*Ibid.* C. 118), William Thorne (*Ibid.*), Henry Franklin (*Ibid.* C. 255, 261), Anthony Field (Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, i. 259).

Thomas Tredwell and John Thomas were from Hempstead, L. I. So, probably, was Richard Seaman. (Rye Records, D. 148.) Thomas was the son of a missionary of the Church of England settled in that town. Samuel Cheeseman was from Oyster Bay (*Ibid.* C. 14), Thomas Carpenter, 'of the island of Nassau,' probably from the same town (*Ibid.* D. 149).

[2] 'The Humble Petition of Samuel Haight, John Way and Robert Field on behalf of themselves and the rest of the Freeholders of Queen's County of the persuasion and profession of the people called Quakers,' was addressed to Governor Nanfan, of New York, October 3d, 1701. They complain that in a late election of representatives in Queen's County, they and others were interrupted of their right and privilege of voting by the justices. (*Documentary History of New York*, vol. iii. 1007.)

The Society of Friends had numerous adherents in the towns of Long Island. Lists given in the *Documentary History of New York*, vol. iii. pp. 1027–30, contain several of the names above given. Compare also Thompson's *History of Long Island*, vol. ii. p. 68, *seq.*

[3] Roger Park, of Rye, had acquired lands in Harrison's Purchase, which are owned by some of the name at the present day, as early as 1740. (Records, C. 170.) Rev. James Wetmore owned a farm in the lower part of the purchase. William Horton owned lands on 'Brown's point,' near St. Mary's Pond, in 1757. (*Ibid.* D. 116, 178.) Gilbert Bloomer owned in 1743 a farm which he then sold to Thomas Carpenter, situated where Mr. Charles Park has lately bought.

distinct from either purchase. The principal proprietors in the lower part of this tract were Obadiah and David, sons of Joseph Purdy, who owned lands situated here at the time of his death in 1709. Home-lots of fifteen acres each were owned here in 1725, by John Haight, Caleb Hyat, Abraham Miller, Francis La Count, and others. In 1749, Daniel Cornell sold his house and 130 acres on Brown's Point 'near Mamaroneck River,' to Daniel Merritt. In 1739, Walter Williams sold eighty acres at the same place to Eliezur Yeomans. In 1752, David Purdy sold sixty-six acres 'on Brown's Point near the White Plains' to Michael Chatterton; bounded west by John Horton's mill-pond, and east by Mamaroneck River. In 1757, William Hooker Smith, oldest son of the Rev. John Smith, of Rye, owned land on Brown's Point, and in 1769, Thomas Smith, his younger brother, bought a house and thirteen acres of land, beginning at the bridge across the Causeway Brook, and lying between the brook and the road to John Horton's mill. Here, in a house which is still standing, Dr. Smith passed the last years of his life.

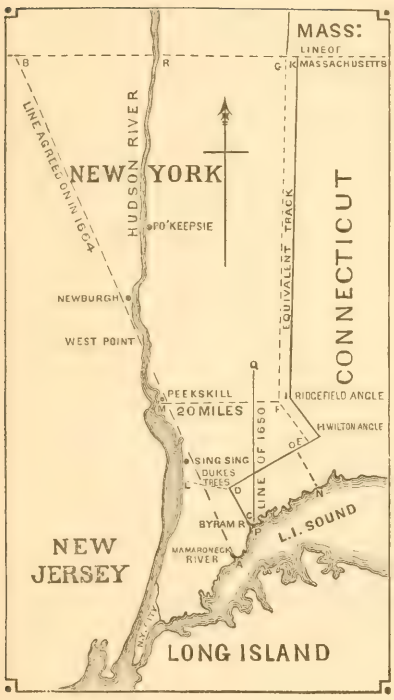
Harrison's Purchase was first settled about the year 1724. The earliest transfers of land in this tract are of that date, and the first local officers for this part of the town were appointed then. We find Samuel Field chosen as 'surveyor for haryesns pattne' in 1724, and 'sheep-master' in 1725; and Roger Park, chosen as 'pounder' in 1729. Until the Revolution, the inhabitants of the purchase participated with those of Rye in the transaction of town business, without any other distinction than that of having their own officers for the discharge of these local functions. In 1773 the board of supervisors for Westchester County refused to recognize a supervisor for Harrison, as distinct from the town of Rye.[1] Harrison also formed one of the six precincts of the parish of Rye, under the semi-ecclesiastical system of which we shall speak in another chapter. Elsewhere we shall also give an account of the Society of Friends in the purchase, and of various interesting occurrences within this part of the town during the Revolution. It only remains for us to add here, that Harrison was organized as a separate township on the seventh of March, 1788.

[1] Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors of the County of Westchester for 1869; Appendix, pp. 9, 10.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE BOUNDARY DISPUTE.

1650–1870.



IT has been the fortune of the town of Rye to be concerned from the first in a boundary dispute which has been pronounced 'one of the most remarkable on record.'[1] This controversy has referred to the line separating the Dutch territory of New Netherland, afterward the British province of New York, from the colony of Connecticut. The differences that arose in this connection were a fruitful source of uneasiness and strife to our inhabitants for a period of seventy years and more. This practical inconvenience ceased in the year 1731, when the line was at length virtually fixed where it is now considered to be. But, strictly speaking, the question is an open one even yet. Strange to say, after a lapse of two hundred years, the boundary between New York and Con-

[1] Report of the Commissioners appointed to ascertain the Boundary between the States of New York and Connecticut, April 9, 1856. Senate Document No. 165.

Report of the Commissioners to ascertain and settle the Boundary Line between the States of New York and Connecticut. Transmitted to the Legislature February 8, 1861. Albany: 1861.

From these two documents chiefly the account here given of the controversy has been prepared. I have availed myself particularly of the historical sketch prefixed to the report of 1856, using the language as well as the facts where convenient. Other authorities will be referred to.

necticut remains unsettled in 1870; nor is there any immediate prospect of its determination.

Every school-boy has noticed the singular zigzag course of this boundary line, as it approaches the shore of the Sound. Instead of proceeding directly southward, in continuation of the line (K I) which forms the western boundary of Massachusetts, it diverges, at a distance of sixteen miles from the coast, to a southeasterly course, and runs for nearly seven miles in a straight line (I H) toward the Sound. Next, it strikes off at a right angle with this course, and runs for fifteen miles parallel with the Sound (H D) toward the Hudson River. At length it turns again to the southeast, and completes its way to the Sound (D C) in the same direction with the first deviating line. By this erratic course, five towns and part of a sixth, which would otherwise fall within the territory of New York, are cut off and inclosed within the limits of Connecticut. Greenwich, Stamford, Darien, New Canaan, Norwalk, and a part of Wilton, are the favored towns, while Rye just falls short of being thus included with them in that goodly land.

This peculiarity of our border — as noticeable as the famous 'Pan-handle' of Virginia — has its explanation in the history of the boundary dispute. It is a memorial not only of long and angry controversies which have been waged with reference to this line, but of the ignorance and uncertainty which in early times prevailed regarding the geography of the country, and in a great measure occasioned the whole trouble. It reminds us how utterly in the dark, respecting the form and character of the land we inhabit, were those who laid claim to its possession but a couple of centuries ago. 'The sources and directions of the Nile or Niger,' it has been truly said, 'have not in the present century been more shrouded in mystery, or given rise to more absurd conjectures, than attached' in those days 'to the St. Lawrence, the Connecticut, the Hudson, and the Delaware rivers.'

The differences relative to this boundary question began, as we have said, in the times of the Dutch. We have already seen how conflicting were their claims and those of the neighboring English. Massachusetts and Connecticut professed a right to the whole territory beyond them, westward to the Pacific Ocean. Holland advanced a counter claim to the domain of the colonies, eastward to the Connecticut River, if not to Cape Cod. The first proposal to adjust these differences came from Peter Stuyvesant, in the year 1650. His conference with the English at Hartford resulted in an agreement on various matters in dispute, one of which was

the vexed question of the boundary. It was resolved that the line should 'begin at the west side of Greenwich bay, being about four miles from Stamford, and so run a northerly line twenty miles up into the country, and after as it shall be agreed by the two governments of the Dutch and of New Haven, provided the said line come not within ten miles of Hudson river.'

This agreement, which seems to have been entered into by the Dutch in perfect good faith, never acquired the force of law, as it was not sanctioned by the governments at home. The English practically disregarded it in their subsequent steps to plant settlements along the coast, even beyond the specified line. A second conference took place thirteen years after, on the thirteenth of October, 1663.

The correspondence on this subject, preserved in the archives at Hartford, is very curious. The proposition made by Connecticut 'to the Agents of the Dutch Governor that came from the Manhadoes' was, among other things, 'That West Chester and all y^e^ people and lands Between that & Stamford shall belong to this Colony of Connecticutt till it be other wise issued.' Governor Stuyvesant's agents refused this proposal, but made another, as follows: 'Westchester with the land & people to *Stamford* shall Abide under the Government of Connecteeute tell the tyme that the bounds and limits betwixt the Abovesaid Collonij and the province of new Netherlands shall be Determined heare [by our mutual Accord or by persons mutually chosen, *margin*] or by his Royal Majesty of england and the high and mighty lords the estates of the vnited provinces.' [1]

The Dutch, however, soon vanished from the scene; and now began a conflict of claims among the English themselves. On the twenty-third of April, 1662, King Charles II. by that famous charter, afterward so remarkably preserved, granted to the colony of Connecticut a territory described as follows: —

'All that part of our dominion in America bounded on the east by Narraganset River, commonly called Naragonsit Bay, where the said river falleth into the sea, and on the north by the line of the Massachusetts plantation, and on the south by the sea; and in longitude as the line of the Massachusetts colony, running from east to west; that is to say, from the said Narraganset Bay on the east to the South Sea on the west part; with the islands thereto adjoining,' etc.

This grant not only covered the territory formerly in dispute with the Dutch, but included also the greater part of that claimed

[1] Colonial Boundaries Hartford (MS.), vol. ii. doc. 4.

by the Dutch on the Hudson River, leaving them only a few miles at the mouth of that stream.

The remainder of the Dutch territory King Charles conveyed to his brother the Duke of York and Albany, on the twenty-fourth of March, 1663. The charter setting forth this conveyance gives him that part of the continent east of Massachusetts now comprised in the province of New Brunswick and the State of Maine, — with some variations of the boundaries, — and also the whole of Long Island, 'together with all the river called Hudson river, and the land from the west side of the Connecticut river to the east side of Delaware bay.'

Comparing the two charters with the map of the country before us, we perceive at once that the king bestowed upon his brother not only the lands held and occupied by the Dutch, to which he had no shadow of a claim, but also the greater part of what by a solemn charter he had only a few months before granted and guaranteed to the colony of Connecticut!

The Duke of York at once prepared to take possession of his royal brother's magnificent gift; and for that purpose sent out an armed force under the command of Colonel Richard Nicolls, to whom the city of New Amsterdam was surrendered on the seventh of September, 1664. The whole of New Netherland became subject to his government on the twelfth of the next month. The administration of the province devolved upon Colonel Nicolls, who also held in conjunction with three officers under his command the power to settle questions respecting the contested boundaries of the patent.

Though the charter of Connecticut was of earlier execution, and consequently of greater authority than the patent to the Duke of York, the inhabitants of that colony naturally felt considerable alarm at his Majesty's disregard of their rights, and in view of the advent of so powerful a claimant to their lands. Accordingly the General Assembly of the colony hastened to appoint delegates to accompany their governor to New York, for the purpose of congratulating the duke's commissioners, and settling the boundary with them.

On the twenty-eighth of October, 1664, these delegates met the commissioners, and without any difficulty agreed upon a settlement of the boundary between the province and the colony. It was understood that the limit should be fixed at a distance of twenty miles east of the Hudson River, running parallel with that stream northward from Long Island Sound. An agreement to this effect was

written out, but did not receive the signatures of the parties. The treaty actually signed a few weeks later, described an entirely different line. According to this, it was ordered and declared 'that y^e^ Creeke or ryver called Momoronock w^ch^ is reported to be about thirteen myles to y^e^ East of West Chester and a lyne drawne from y^e^ East point or Syde where y^e^ fresh water falls into y^e^ Salt, at high water marke North North west to y^e^ line of y^e^ Massachusetts, be y^e^ westerne bounds of y^e^ said Colony of Connecticutt.'

Little did the commissioners who agreed to this arrangement imagine whither a boundary thus projected would carry them. Manifestly, they supposed that a line drawn in a direction north-northwest from the mouth of Mamaroneck River, which was said to be about twenty miles east of the Hudson, would continue at the same distance from the river till it should reach the Massachusetts border. So far from this, however, a look at the map will show that such a line (A B) must intersect the Hudson near West Point, and even cut off a large tract of land on the other side of that river, before reaching the southern boundary of Massachusetts, which at that time it was claimed ran across the continent to the sea! Whether it was the design of the delegates from Connecticut to mislead in this matter or not, they certainly made the most of their advantage, and soon extended their settlements to the banks of the Hudson.

The people of Rye were particularly interested in this construction of the compact. Their town had been organized under the jurisdiction of Connecticut; and as the remotest settlement of that colony, its territory would of course reach to the extreme western boundary, wherever that might be fixed. A survey made about the year 1680 showed the inhabitants what a wide extent of country they could now legally claim. It appears that they actually tried to enforce this claim. Some inhabitants of Rye — who they were we do not know — attempted about this time to occupy and settle the lands along the Hudson, which fell within the line traced from the mouth of Mamaroneck River. Meeting with opposition in this attempt, they complain to the legislature of Connecticut, who gravely present the matter to the governor of New York as a grievance that requires redress. The letter stating these facts is dated Hartford, May 11, 1682.

'May it please your Hon^r^', write the magistrates, 'We your friends and neighbours the Governor and General Assembly of his Majesty's Colony of Connecticut' having 'at our present session had information and complaint made unto us that sundry persons under your jurisdiction, and particularly Mr. Frederick Phillips,

have erected, and lately and are erecting certain mills and other edifices, and making improvements of land, within the limits of the township of Rye, and in the bounds of this his Majesty's Colony of Connecticut, near unto Hudson's river, alleging to such as have questioned with them thereabout, that they do it in virtue of a patent or patents or other allowances, from the Governor of his Highness' Territory of New York. And not only so, but some of the said improvers do give out threatening speeches, that if any of our Colony's cattle shall come there, that they will not suffer our people peaceably to have them away; and also that others of your jurisdiction are purchasing or have purchased large tracts of land on the east side of Hudson's River, within our limits, from the Indians, in order to planting there.' The magistrates remind his honor of the terms of settlement in 1664, and inclose a copy of the agreement, which they would not doubt he will desire to hold, as they do, inviolable.

Connecticut, however, was not really prepared to insist on the advantage given her by the careless wording of a hastily written treaty. On the arrival of a new governor in New York in the following year, delegates were sent from Hartford to congratulate him and assure him of the friendly disposition of the colony. They were empowered at the same time to treat with him for a new settlement of the bounds upon the best terms to be obtained. An agreement was soon reached. On the twenty-fourth of November, 1683, the articles were concluded between Governor Dongan and Council and the governor and delegates of Connecticut, by which the dividing line of their respective territories was placed very nearly where it has remained ever since.

It was agreed on both sides that the line should run as originally intended, about twenty miles east of the Hudson River. But it became evident that to follow this measurement rigidly would be to inflict a serious injury upon Connecticut. Under the terms of her charter, she had long before planted several towns beyond the limits thus defined. It was therefore conceded that these five towns should remain a part of Connecticut; the boundary being so traced as to exclude them from the province of New York, though by so doing it must be made to approach considerably nearer to the Hudson than the distance agreed upon for its general course. Indeed the nearest of these towns — Greenwich — is actually within *eight* miles of the Hudson, at its northwestern corner. As an offset, however, to the tract thus surrendered (C D O N), New York was to gain an 'equivalent tract' from Connecticut. A strip of land

along the boundary, north of the excepted towns, was to be measured off, just wide enough to embrace as many acres — 61,440 — as they contained; and this tract (E C K H), lying beyond the required distance of twenty miles, was to belong to New York. It measured two miles in width and over fifty miles in length, and was afterwards known very appropriately as 'The Oblong.' And thus the zigzag course of our frontier line is explained.

In pursuance, then, of this agreement, the boundary was to begin at the mouth of Byram River, a small stream dividing the towns of Rye and Greenwich, at a point about thirty miles from the city of New York. This river was to be followed as far as the head of tide water, or about a mile and a half from the Sound, to a certain 'wading-place,' where the common road crossed the stream. Here a rock known as 'the Great Stone at the Wading Place,' was to be a boundary mark. From this point the line was to run north-northwest till it should reach a point eight miles from the Sound. A line twelve miles in length was then to be measured, running eastward, parallel to the general course of the Sound. From its termination, another line of eight miles was to be traced, again running north-northwest. Thence, and for the remainder of its course, the boundary was to run parallel to the Hudson River, in a northerly direction to the Massachusetts line, at a distance of twenty miles, besides the equivalent tract.

DISSATISFACTION AT RYE.

This arrangement was of course highly pleasing to the towns that found themselves comprehended within the limits of the colony to which they had hitherto been attached, and toward which all their sympathies inclined. But Rye and Bedford were as heartily attached to Connecticut as any of these; and it was with deep sorrow that they saw themselves shut out from their sister plantations. The government of Connecticut seem to have anticipated some dissatisfaction from this quarter. On their return from the conference in New York about the boundary, the governor and his assistants wrote to the selectmen of Rye, acquainting them with the results of the conference.

'FAIRFIELD, *December* 3, 1683.

'LOVING FRIENDS, — We had purposed in our passage to York to have called upon you, but the badness of the weather, and taking our passage by water, we missed the opportunity of seeing you in our going thither and in our return. And therefore we take this first opportunity to acquaint you that altho' we were loath to have parted with you, and

would have been glad to have continued you in this government, yet the providence of God hath so disposed, that by our agreement with Governor Dongan we were forced to part with you, and could not help it. . . . . By the agreement with the Governor Dongan, the west bounds of our Colony is now Byram river; and it runs as the river till it comes to the road, and from thence it runs north-northwest till it hath run eight miles from the east point of said Byram River. Gentlemen, we do request you to be satisfied and content with this change, and to carry it suitably to the Government under which you are now stated, and apply yourselves to the honourable Governor, who is a noble gentleman, and will do what you shall desire in a regular manner to promote your welfare. Which with best respects is all the needful from your assured friends,

ROBERT TREAT, *Governor.*
NATHAN GOLD,
JOHN ALLYN, *Assistants.*'

'These for Lt. Joseph Horton
the selectmen of the town of Rye.

It must have been a stirring time at Rye when this letter, conveying perhaps the first intimation of the accomplished change, was read in 'town meeting.' Hard things were doubtless said of their Connecticut friends, who so readily consented to part with them; and harder yet of their undesired lieges at New York. Some earnest remonstrances too were not improbably sent up to the General Court. But the course of matters could not be arrested now. On the eighth of May in the following year, the legislature of Connecticut formally approved of the agreement made by the commissioners; and in accordance with its terms appointed a surveyor and certain others to attend to the laying out of the line. These, with Governor Dongan's officers, met at Stamford in the following October, and performed their duties, ascertaining the amount of land conceded to Connecticut, as nearer than twenty miles to the Hudson River. Their survey terminated, however, with the line drawn parallel to the Sound as far as a point twenty miles from the river. Beyond this, they simply indicated what they supposed would be the extent of the oblong to be laid out as an 'equivalent tract.'

The people of Rye were soon sternly summoned to make submission to their new masters. We have a proclamation from Governor Dongan which implies that they had shown some reluctance to do this. Its tone certainly was not calculated to conciliate them, nor to justify the good opinion which the magistrates had expressed of this 'noble gentleman.'

'Whereas I am given to understand that the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford are possessed of certain lands of which they seem to have no

right and legal title, these are therefore to authorize and empower you to warn all the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford aforesaid to be and appear before me and the Council on the second [or] third day in October next ensuing the date hereof, to show what right and title they have to their rights and possessions; otherwise to be proceeded against according to law. And you are to make return thereof to me, and for so doing this shall be your warrant.

'Given &c., this fourth day of June, 1685.

'THO: DONGAN.

'To Benj. Collier, High Sheriff for the County of Westchester.'

This summons was not obeyed. The people doubtless felt that it was a grievous wrong to question the validity of their claims to the lands they held. These had been acquired in a manner recognized by the Connecticut laws as valid and sufficient, — by purchase from the Indians and actual possession. They had held them for a quarter of a century under the Hartford government. It was manifestly unjust that they should be required to seek a new title to them, risking their forfeiture, and submitting to fresh expense and trouble. The magistrates of Connecticut had been especially careful to secure the relinquished towns in their former rights. The delegates who treated with Governor Dongan relative to the boundary, were instructed, 'If you grant any part of the lands within any of the townships of the Colony, you are to endeavour to preserve those lands to the town's proprieties, though as to jurisdiction they belong to his Highness.' There was therefore at least a tacit understanding that the rights of the inhabitants should be recognized under the one government as they had been under the other.[1]

RYE REVOLTS.

But besides, in their unwillingness to submit to the new order of things, the inhabitants took courage from the fact that the agreement by which they were set off to New York did not receive the sanction of the authorities at home. And for want of this ratification, the towns of Rye and Bedford now boldly declared the arrangement to be null and void, and asserted their independence of New York and allegiance to Connecticut. In this position, they were not, of course, without the sympathy, and quite probably the secret countenance of Connecticut, whose magistrates doubtless

[1] The state of perplexity in which the minds of men were kept about this time, is illustrated by the language of a deed given 1682 by John Budd of Southold, 'in the limits of New York in New England.' Book B., County Records, p. 156.

hoped that they might yet retain these unwillingly ceded towns. For ten years disaffection had smouldered; the authority of the province was practically ignored; taxes were paid but irregularly to either government; and whenever possible, matters in controversy were carried up to Hartford, and Hartford magistrates came down to perform their functions at Rye. These were troublous times in the town. Feuds and dissensions among themselves added to the perplexity of the inhabitants. Some of them, it would appear, sided with the province in the controversy; and hence doubtless some of the actions for defamation and other proofs of disturbance which we find on record about this time. At length, the circumstance which has been stated in a previous chapter, led to the breaking forth of this spirit of discontent into actual rebellion. In 1695, John Harrison, of Flushing, on Long Island, applied to the governor of New York for a patent of lands which he had purchased from an Indian who claimed to be their proprietor. These lands were a part of the town of Rye, and had been purchased long before by some of its proprietors. Governor Fletcher granted them to Harrison and his associates, wholly setting at nought the just claims of the people of Rye. Upon this added grievance, they revolted. On the nineteenth of January, 1697, Rye, with Bedford, applied to the General Court of Connecticut to be taken back under its care, and was received.[1]

The Governor and Council lost no time in acquainting the government of New York with their action. On the same day that Rye and Bedford were received, they wrote to Colonel Fletcher, giving the reasons for their procedure,[2] and closing with the expression of a benignant hope that his excellency 'will manifest such a compliance with his Maiesties dispose in the premises, as shall be

[1] See note at the end of this chapter.

[2] The letter is dated Hartford, January 19, 1696–7. 'The inhabitants of Rie and of the plantation of Bedford applying themselves to us by their Messengers and asserting that their respective townehips are included within the Limits of our Charter and earnestly desiring that they may inioy the priviledges and protection of our Charter Governmt We being sensible of our obligation to preserve the extent of our Charter Governmt according to the Grant of his late Maiestie Charles the Second and to protect all the kings subiects that lie within our limits by the due administration of Justice to them according to our Established laws, and finding upon Serious Consideration that both by the terms of our Charter and also by the act of his said Mies Comissioners . . . a North North line from Momoronock River . . . should be the dividing line between the province of New York, and this Colonie . . . . and there doth not appear anything that doth vacate the said act of his said Majesties Comissioners . . . . doe therefore see Cause to own the inhabitants of the said town to be his maiesties Subiects under the govermt of our Corporation.'

consistent with the preservation of the peace and properties of his maiesties good subiects.'

It does not appear that Governor Fletcher made any reply to this communication. Doubtless he waited for instructions from England. But meanwhile an event occurred which precipitated his action.

The eighth of April, 1697, was a memorable day at Rye. Mr. Benjamin Collier, high sheriff of the county, had come to the town, to superintend a meeting for the choice of a member of Assembly. Notice had been duly given to the freeholders of such election, under a writ from the Council at New York. The meeting was to be held 'in the heart of the town, in the place where they usually traine.' But to the sheriff's vexation, 'after all the pains he has taken to warne them,' not more than sixteen or seventeen men make their appearance. The meeting however is opened, the clerk of the county in person reading the king's writ, which he does without much interruption; when 'up comes Major Sellick of Standford with about fifty Dragones whom he called his life guard, with their arms presented, and demanded my business,' relates the sheriff. 'Whereupon I replied, By virtue of his Majesty's writ I came there; and gave the writ to the Clerk again, who read it in person to the said Major Sellick and his life guard as he called them. For the writ being fully executed and the choice made, Major Sellick fell into hard words, and said he came there to protect the Inhabitants of Rye under their government of Connecticut; the which I denied, and said was within my Bailywick. But after much banter he invited us into a house and withdrew himself from his Company, and did acknowledge his Excellency to be their Captain General; and so I left him.' [1]

Major Sellick's raid, however, caused great excitement at the seat of government. The Assembly of the province being in session at Albany, the governor addresses them in a message, apprising them of the defection of Rye and Bedford, and announcing the fact of an *armed invasion* at the former place. On the fourteenth inst., only six days after the occurrence, the representatives reply. They 'conceive that the late appearance of Major Sellick with a Troop of Dragoons armed to disturb the Sheriff in the execution of His Majesty's writ for the election of a member of Assembly, and to the terror of His Majesty's subjects there assembled for the service at the said town,' is 'a forcible invasion of His Majesty's

[1] Letter of Benjamin Collier, High Sheriff of Westchester County: New York Colony MSS., xli. 56.

right and dominion of this His Majesty's Province.' They are 'humbly of opinion, that the inhabitants of the said towns of Rye and Bedford ought not to continue in their defection, without incurring the Pains and Penalties established by law upon such as rebel against His Majesty's Government.' They therefore petition the governor to 'address his proclamation requiring the inhabitants of the said towns to return unto their faith and allegiance at a certain day; and assure them of His Majesty's grace and pardon upon that condition, — otherwise that they may be proceeded against as the law directs.' They would also have his excellency to represent unto the government of Connecticut 'the great evil they commit by protecting such of His Majesty's subjects that have revolted;' how they have thereby 'lessened the strength of His Majesty's government here — being a frontier province — and by that means given great advantage to His Majesty's declared enemies the French. And if they have any right or claim in the law to those towns of Rye and Bedford, that they may apply unto His Majesty, who is the sole Judge of extent and limits of his dominions in America, and submit the same unto his royal determination; and not by force of arms enter upon His Majesty's Dominions, to the evil example of those disaffected to His Majesty's government, and the disuniting of strength of His Majesty's subjects, now necessary to be employed against His Majesty's enemies the French.'

Governor Fletcher issued his proclamation in all haste, on the next day, requiring the towns to return to their allegiance;[1] and

[1] One of the original handbills is preserved in the State Library at Hartford, — the only copy known to exist. It reads as follows: —

'By His Excellency

'Collonel *Benjamin Fletcher* Captain General and Governor in Chief of His Majeſtie's *Province* of *New York* &c.

'A PROCLAMATION

'Whereas sundry of the Inhabitants of the Towns of *Rye* and *Bedford* in the County of *Weſtchester*, in the Province of *New York*, have made Defection from their Allegiance to His moſt Excellent Majeſty, in the Government of this Province (to evade the paying of their Taxes and Arrearages) and have applyed themſelves to the Government of *Connecticut Collony* for Protection. By which means the strength of the Province is much leſſened, the Peace and Safety of His Majeſties good Government diſturbed, the Fronteers weakened, and great Advantages given to the common Enemy, the *French* of *Canada*, in this time of actual War. And the said Persons have thereby incurr'd the Penalty of the Law.

'It being Resolved, by Advice of His Majeſties Council and Repreſentatives of this Province convened in Gen'l Aſſembly, to Reduce the said Inhabitants, who have made this Defection to their Duty. Nevertheleſs I have, by and with the advice and consent of His Majeſties Council of this Province, publiſhed this my Proclamation

shortly after addressed his complaints to Connecticut.[1] That colony replied promptly, disclaiming any intention to use violent measures, but referring the whole matter to the king, who, they declared, had never annexed those towns to New York.[2] May 10th, New York retorts, treating the reasons of Connecticut as mere subterfuges, and complaining that she makes a disturbance in time of war, assuring her at the same time that New York will use all lawful means to reduce these people to obedience.[3] May 19th, Connecticut rejoins. Her Governor and Assembly consider the arguments of New York weak and unsatisfactory, and are therefore determined to protect these people.[4] May 31st, Governor Fletcher and his Council find 'just fault' with Connecticut 'for using such a style,' and declare that Connecticut gave up these towns by arrangement in 1683, and made no claim to them for twelve years or more. New York is therefore determined to pursue her duty.[5]

Here the correspondence rests, in consequence of the recall of Governor Fletcher to England. In April of the next year his successor Lord Bellomont arrives, and Connecticut sends a delegation to congratulate him. Lord Bellomont soon writes, expressing his thanks and good-will toward the colony, but denying their reasons for countenancing the towns of Rye and Bedford in their revolt. He also incloses a letter from the Lords Commissioners of Trade on the subject.[6] In reply, the government of Connecticut profess the kindest and most friendly feelings toward his excellency, but cannot answer concerning these towns until Governor Winthrop shall return from England.[7]

Nearly two years more elapsed before this controversy was ended

and I do hereby require the Inhabitants of the Town of *Rye* and *Bedford* in the said County, to return unto the Faith and Allegiance &c.

'Given at Fort William Henry the 15th day of April, Annoque Domini 1697.

'God save the King.'

[1] Colonial Boundaries (MS.) Hartford, vol. ii. doc. 142. The governor ignores the real grievances of the town of Rye, and lays their defection to the desire to escape the payment of taxes.

'Their remissness and neglect in the paym^t of their taxes of late has made the arrearages amount to a considerable sume much wanted to answer the security of the frontiers (which is a defence to your collony) and to pay the soldiers there to avoid which pay^t they have made application to you for protection,' etc.

[2] *Ibid.* doc. 144. [3] *Ibid.* 145.

[4] *Ibid.* 146. 'Our design is not (neither will it end in) any weakening of your province or withholding any arrearages of taxes that may be due from that small people; but it is the protection of the king's people committed to our charge.'

[5] *Ibid.* doc. 147. [6] *Ibid.* doc. 148

[7] *Ibid.* doc. 149.

by the royal decree. On the twenty-ninth of March, 1700, King William III. approved and confirmed the agreement of 1683 and 1684, whereby Rye and Bedford were included in New York. And on the tenth day of October following, the General Court at Hartford released Bedford and Rye from all allegiance.[1]

Their revolt therefore had lasted nearly four years. At Rye, matters had gone on meanwhile pretty smoothly, the inhabitants holding their town meetings as usual, choosing their officers, and attending to the division and improvement of lands. Good Deliverance Brown, with Captain Joseph Theall, had been their justices before the separation, and retained their office for years after. They with the constables, Robert Bloomer and Caleb Hyat, and the townsmen, at the head of whom was Hachaliah Brown, kept good order in the little settlement. Mr. Nathaniel Bowers was the worthy pastor of the parish during this period; at the close of which, however, perhaps unwilling to leave the colony of Connecticut, he accepted a call to Greenwich. It was during these years that the inhabitants showed a greater diligence in their ecclesiastical matters. Now they appoint committees for carrying on the work of building a 'meeting house — thirty feet square' and 'a towne house for the use of the ministry — to be thirty foot in length, and twenty foot in breadth, and two-story in height, and a lean-to joining to it.' Now also they choose men to lay out land for a 'parsonage, not exceeding forty acres, and so to remain a parsonage,' or glebe. The rates are gathered for the salary of the pastor, and an outstanding debt to the former minister, Mr. Woodbridge, is settled, without a trial at law, of which there has been some prospect. Altogether, the town presents during this space of time the aspect of a well-ordered New England village, and so would have continued to do doubtless, could the people have had their way.

Nevertheless, it appears that they yielded without demur to the final decision of their case by 'the Crown.' So testifies Deliverance Brown, who has occasion very soon to petition the governor in their behalf for relief from oppressive taxation. His 'humble petition in the behalf of the inhabitants of the Town of Rye in the

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iv. p. 335. October, 1700. 'This Assembly receiving an expresse from his Majestie that the line between New York Province and this Colonie be as the settlement or concession by our commissioners made November the 23, 1683, doe order that a signification thereof be sent to the inhabitants of Rye and Bedford, signed by the Secretary, that they are freed from duty to this government, and that they are under the government of New York.'

County of Westchester in this Province,' is dated New York, December the 16th, 1701. The worthy justice had come to town upon a difficult errand. 'At a lawful town meeting held in Rye, September the 20th, 1701,' he was chosen 'to goe down to New York to make the town's aggrievances known unto the Governor and Council: and also to make Inquiry concerning the Claim that John Harrison makes to our Lands, and to use what methods he shall see good for securing the town's interests.'[1] Poor success seems to have attended the latter part of this mission, as we have seen in the matter of Harrison's Purchase. The other 'grievance' he thus relates: 'The Justices of the Peace of the County of Westchester have lately sent their orders to y^e^ said Town for the assessing and levying severall Taxes laid on the Inhabitants of this Province during the time of the unhappy Separation of the said Town from this Province: the which amount to considerable sums of money.' The inhabitants therefore ordered him to lay before their honors the following statement: 'That upon the first notice of His Majesty re-annexing them to this province they did heartily and readily return under the Government thereof, and are resolved with their lives and fortunes to serve His Majesty in the same. But so it is, that the Justices of the Peace of the County of Westchester, none whereof belong to the Town of Rye, have from time to time during the said separation been very partial in assessing the quotas of the town; when at the same time their representatives in General Assembly had the quotas of the County often lessened by reason of the separation aforesaid, and so had a benefit thereby, and another by levying such a part as they pleased on the town. Your petitioner,' he continues, 'is also instructed to acquaint your Honours, that the Inhabitants of the Town of Rye as good and liege subjects to y^e^ Kings Majesty, are willing and ready as much as lyes in their power to pay all such rates, taxes and other charges imposed by the Laws of this Government, as shall appear to be their just due.' He ends by asking that the assessing and levying of the taxes may not be insisted on until a more equal apportionment shall be made; and promises that then the quota shall be collected and paid with all expedition.[2]

A BORDER FRAY IN 1718.

No further claim upon the territory of Rye was made by Connecticut, nor do the people appear to have renewed their attempt

[1] Town Meeting Book, No. C. p. 20.

[2] New York Colonial MSS., vol. xlv. p. 38.

to join that colony. Yet for thirty years more, till the completion of the boundary survey in 1731, there was an unsettled feeling among them relative to their political state. Some petty annoyances resulted from this condition of things, an instance of which occurred in 1718. Samuel Mills, the constable of Greenwich, went to the house of one of the inhabitants of Rye, living close upon the Connecticut line, and demanded of him the rates due to the minister of the parish of Horseneck. Upon his refusal, the constable and his assistant 'took him into safe custody, and put him under keepers, in order to be committed to gaol, there to lye, till said Rates and charges were paid.' Elated by success, the constable was proceeding to the neighbors' houses on the same errand, when, as he relates, 'There did meet us one John Clap, Elias Clap, Benjamin Clap, and Thomas Sutton, all with clubs in their hands; . . . . and John Clap asked me where I was agoing; and I said, To your house and your neighbours' houses; and he and the other three run across the lots to his house and shut to the doors, and told me if I came in they would knock me in the head; and then I went from them, and was coming home, about a quarter of a mile from the Colony line and within the township of Greenwich; and there came up to me Adam Ireland, Thomas Sutton, John Clap, Elias Clap, Benjamin Clap, all of the Government of Connecticut, and Thomas Daniels, now of Rye, late of Connecticut, William Fowler, and Strange and Green, all of Rye, near neighbours to said Daniels, with sundry others; and said Ireland asked, Where is the constable of Greenwich? and said he had a warrant to take me prisoner. Then the said company soon laid hands upon the deponent, and by force and violence pulled him off from his horse, threw away his constable's staff, and carried him and the collector before Justice Budd of Rye, and there were obliged to give bond of three hundred pounds, for their appearance at the Court to be held at Westchester on the first Tuesday of June next.'

Evidently constable Mills was somewhat astray as to the limits of his jurisdiction. He represents the families whom he visited as 'living west of the west bounds of the township of Greenwich, and east of the dividing line between this government and the government of New York.' This very confused idea of the metes and bounds of the two territories was probably shared by many. The fact is that there had long been pending between Rye and Greenwich a boundary question upon a small scale, like that waged by the two governments to which they belonged. Their respective limits were very indefinitely traced as yet. The early records of

our town show this. Thus at a town meeting held April 1, 1699, a committee was appointed 'to agree with Greenwich men to run the preamble line.' At a similar meeting held November 1, 1707, Thomas Merrit, Deliverance Brown, senior, and Robert Bloomer were chosen a committee to agree with Greenwich men to settle and run the line between the town of Greenwich and the town of Rye.[1] In 1722 the inhabitants of Rye near Byram River again complain that they are assessed by the government of Connecticut; some of them, who have not given in an estimate of their estates, have been assessed four times the value of the lands; others have been imprisoned, and have had their goods distrained.[2]

In May, 1717, the inhabitants of Rye petitioned the General Court at Hartford to appoint persons to settle the disputed boundary between their town and Greenwich.[3] The court summoned the inhabitants of Greenwich to attend their next session, and 'show reason why the petition of Rye shall not be granted.'[4] At that session the following action took place: 'Upon the Petition of the town of Rye contra the town of Greenwich, Resolved by this Assembly that the bound between them is already well settled, and that a parralell line with the line dividing between Stanford and Greenwich beginning a quarter of a mile above the great stone lying in the path by Byram river according to their Pattents given in 1696 and in 1697 and by each party rested in to this time shall remain to be construed and understood to be a good and sufficient Partition of the Comon Lands mentioned in the return of the Comittee in 1673.'[5] Not even this decision, however, seems to have terminated the dispute.

But the constable's mistake, though not unnatural, caused a deal of trouble. Another mimic war had been enacted in our little town of Rye, and the report thereof spread alarm and indignation, reaching even to the high powers at Fort William. Thomas Daniels of the town of Rye hastens to New York and there makes his deposition before the worshipful Council.

Governor Hunter lost no time in transmitting to Connecticut a copy of these complaints from Rye. In his letter to Governor Saltonstall, he expresses his hope that there has been some mistake in the matter, as otherwise he must regard it as 'the most extraor-

[1] Town Meeting Book, No. C. p. 4; No. G. p. 23. Records of Town Meetings, p. 33.

[2] Colonial Boundaries (MS.) Hartford, vol. ii. doc. 155.

[3] Petition of Rye about the line, May, 1717; Towns and Lands (MS.) Hartford, vol. iii. doc. 106.

[4] Towns and Lands (MS.) Hartford, vol. iii. doc. 108.

[5] *Ibid.* doc. 109.

dinary method of procedure in disputes about boundaries between two provinces under the same Sovereign, that has been hitherto known.

'You see,' he adds, 'the necessity of your having a law passed previous to the running the line, in your Colony as has been done in this, declaring the line which shall be so run to be forever hereafter the true division line betwixt the two. The minute that is done, I shall appoint Commissaries and Surveyors who shall in conjunction with such as you shall appoint, forthwith set about it to prevent all future disputes. We have hitherto,' concludes the good-natured governor, 'at least during my time, lived together in good and friendly correspondence, and I hope nothing can intervene that shall be able to break it off.' [1]

This episode at Rye may have had some effect in hastening the movement for the settling of the boundary line. In October of the same year, 1718, commissioners appointed by the two governments met at Rye, but failed to agree upon a method of procedure. The commissioners from New York refused to go on, because those from Connecticut were not empowered to complete the line, and bind their government to its adoption. In 1719, Connecticut appointed new commissioners with larger powers; but still without pledging itself that the survey should be final. New York, meanwhile, without taking any notice of this action, passed what was termed 'a probationary act.' It provided for the appointment of commissioners on the part of that province, in conjunction with others from Connecticut. These were to run all the lines in accordance with the agreement and survey of 1683 and 1684. But if no commissioners should be sent from Connecticut duly empowered, those from New York were authorized to go on alone, taking every precaution to do justice to both provinces, and to conform to the agreement and former survey; and the line so run was to remain forever as the boundary. This act was made conditional on the royal approbation.

Four years elapsed before this proposition was responded to. At length, in October 1723, the General Assembly of Connecticut appointed commissioners with full powers, as requested by New York. A meeting was arranged to be held at Rye on the fourth of February, 1724. But tedious negotiations followed, and it was

[1] New York Colonial MSS. (Albany), vol. lxi. doc. 11. A few days after, he writes to ask of Governor Saltonstall a true statement of the matter, adding, 'I have no great faith in the representations of these men.' Colonial Boundaries (MS.) Hartford, vol. iii. doc. 154.

not till April, 1725, that the commissioners met here. Their first business was to agree upon the mode in which the survey should be made. This accomplished, they entered upon their work, starting at 'the great stone at the wading-place' which had been designated as the point of beginning, forty-one years before. Their survey was extended as far as that of 1684, to 'the Duke's trees,' at the northwest angle of the town of Greenwich, where three white oak trees had been marked as the termination of the former survey. Here the work was suspended for want of funds; and it was not resumed until the spring of 1731. The survey was then completed to the Massachusetts line; the 'equivalent tract' or 'Oblong' was measured, and set off to New York; and the line dividing the province of New York from the colony of Connecticut was designated by monuments at intervals of two miles.

This survey was ratified by both governments, and terminated all local differences and contentions respecting the boundary. The town of Rye especially felt the benefit of the decision. During much of the time that this controversy had been waging, it was even doubtful to which territory the town belonged. And to the very last, its eastern limits remained uncertain, to the great annoyance and perplexity of the increasing population in that quarter. In 1729 the town appointed a committee 'to meet Greenwich men concerning running the preamble line between Rye and Greenwich, and to act in that matter to the best of their discretion.'[1]

This boundary question has always been regarded with particular interest by our inhabitants. For generations it must have been a theme of frequent discussion. Old men among us tell of the care that was taken in their boyhood to keep up the knowledge of its exact course. One of them remembers being taken, when a boy, to 'the great rock at the wading-place' and led along the traditionary line for some distance, in order that he might be acquainted with it; and though he denies any such experience in his own case, he testifies that it was usual to administer to some of the rising generation a sound flogging on the occasion, to insure their lasting remembrance of the localities pointed out.

Whoever chooses to seek it may find the Great Rock, among other rude boulders, at the northeastern end of the bridge crossing the Byram River. The boundary line strikes across from this point to King Street, and follows the course of that road for about two miles. At the distance of five miles from the wading-place, it crosses Blind Brook near the head of that stream, at an angle

[1] Records of Town Meetings (Rye), p. 33.

which terminates the territory of this town. The famous 'Duke's trees' are about two miles north of this point.

Since the year 1731, there has been no dispute as to this part of the boundary line, nor indeed respecting the first thirty miles of its course. Nor was it extensively known until within a few years, that any part of it remained indefinite. The first public intimation of any difference was given by the legislature of Connecticut in 1855. It then appeared that in the process of time doubts and uncertainties had arisen as to a considerable portion of the line. These resulted in part from the imperfect character of the surveys made so long ago, and in part from the temporary nature of the marks which had been used to designate the lines. A century and a quarter had elapsed; the troublous years of the Revolution had intervened; the country had been gradually filled up and settled; and in consequence, on some portions of the line all trace of the lines formerly established had vanished. 'Ranges of marked trees had long since disappeared. Many of the heaps of stone originally erected had been scattered. Traditions were found inconsistent and contradictory, varying the line in places to a considerable extent. Along the whole distance the greatest uncertainty existed, and a distrust and want of confidence in all the supposed lines rather than a disposition to contend for any. Residents near the border refrained from voting in either State; while officers of justice and collectors of revenue from both hesitated to exercise their authority up to any clearly defined limit. These circumstances were taken advantage of by those who desired to evade the payment of taxes or the severity of the law.'

In view of these facts, the General Assembly of Connecticut, in May, 1855, took steps to have the true position of the boundary line ascertained by means of a new survey and the erection of new monuments. Commissioners were appointed, to meet others from the State of New York, for the performance of the work. This proposition was submitted to the legislature of New York by the governor on the twenty-fifth of January, 1856, and received its prompt concurrence. Commissioners were appointed as proposed; and on the twenty-fifth of June in the same year they entered upon their duties.

Mr. C. W. Wentz, of Albany, an engineer of established reputation, began the survey of the line, by direction of the joint commission. The line was run without question or difference of opinion, from 'the great stone at the wading-place' on Byram River, to the 'Duke's trees' at the northwest corner of the town of

Greenwich; thence on the line parallel to the Sound to the Wilton angle, and thence to the Ridgefield angle. Thus far it would appear that the commissioners were agreed. But with regard to the line from the Ridgefield angle northerly to the monument at the southwest corner of the State of Massachusetts, a controversy arose. The commissioners from Connecticut were for adopting a straight line between these two extreme points, fifty-three miles apart. They urged this course on the ground that the old monuments and marks upon the intervening line were generally removed, and the original line could not be traced with any certainty by reference to them. The commissioners from New York, on the other hand, insisted that their duty was simply to 'ascertain' the boundary as originally defined. They believed that most of the boundary marks could be found and identified, and that where they should fail to find them, other evidences of their original location might be discovered that would be sufficient.

In this diversity of views the parties could scarcely fail to be confirmed by the fact which a survey of the ground revealed. It was found that the line originally traced was not straight, but inclined considerably to the east of a direct line. This appeared sufficiently from the monuments that remained, and that were incontestable marks of the ancient boundary. It was also seen, that by abandoning the original line and adopting a straight one in its place, the State of New York would lose, and the State of Connecticut would gain a tract of about two thousand eight hundred acres and between two and three hundred inhabitants, who had always been residents of New York.

The commissioners on both sides adhered to their respective opinions in this debate, and no agreement could be reached. In August, 1859, new commissioners were appointed on the part of each State. These gentlemen had their first conference at Port Chester, on the thirteenth of September in that year. The same difference of views manifested itself at once in the commissioners' minds. They agreed, however, as a preliminary step, to make an effort to trace out the true position of the original line of 1731. And on the twentieth of September, the two parties, each with a competent engineer, met again at Port Chester. After examining the localities at the mouth of Byram River, they decided, as there would probably be no difference about the line between the 'great stone' and the Ridgefield angle, to proceed to that point, and explore the line from thence to the south line of Massachusetts. This was done. Monuments were found without difficulty that enabled

the commissioners to verify the ancient line. Some of the marks were wanting, but where this was the case, satisfactory evidence of their original position was obtained from the location of line fences or from tradition. No space of more than eight miles intervened between the monuments found standing. The line was not found to be straight. The greatest divergence from a direct course proved to be ten chains and twenty-six links. This irregularity was owing to the fact that in the survey of 1731, the line was not run directly from point to point, but monuments to mark it were placed at the end of perpendiculars, run from the west line of the Oblong over surfaces often very uneven, and by a compass subject to constant variations, owing to the mineral deposits along its course.

Notwithstanding the fact, however, which thus became apparent, that the original line could be accurately traced, the Connecticut commissioners adhered substantially to the position which their predecessors had taken. A straight line must be run, regardless of all existing monuments. As this, in the judgment of the commissioners from New York, would be to establish an entirely new line instead of ascertaining the old one, the proposition was refused, and the conferences of the commission were ended for the time.

The last step taken in this matter occurred in 1860. On the third of April in that year, the legislature of New York passed an act, empowering the commissioners formerly appointed 'to survey and mark with suitable monuments' the 'line between the two States, as fixed by the survey of 1731.' They were to give due notice of their purpose to the commissioners of Connecticut, inviting them to join in the duties imposed upon them. But in case of their refusal or neglect to do so, they were to proceed alone, and perform the work assigned. The commissioners of New York, acting under these instructions, held several conferences with those of Connecticut. But the latter adhered inflexibly to the principle that the boundary to be established must be a *straight line*. The commissioners from New York therefore pursued the course enjoined upon them. They fixed and marked the boundary line between the two States, placing monuments along its course at intervals of one mile, from the Massachusetts line to the mouth of Byram River. This work was undertaken on the eighth of June, 1860, and was completed in the autumn of that year.

Since that time, nothing has been done to settle the 'vexed question' of our boundary. The line indicated by new marks and monuments is recognized by New York, but not by Connecticut.

It is to be hoped that some definite agreement may be reached before the lapse of a third century over this singular dispute.

Revolt of Rye and Bedford. — The patent granted by Connecticut to the town of Rye upon its return to that colony in 1697, has been given, pp. 93–94. The following record of the action taken with reference to those towns, shows the precise grounds upon which the Connecticut government based its decision in this case: —

'At a Meeting of the Governr and Councill held at Hartford Jany ye 19th 1696:

'Thomas Merritt and Deliverance Brown in behalfe of the Plantation of Rie: And Zechariah Roberts in behalfe of the Plantation of Bedford Petitioning this Councill that the Plantations of Bedford and Rie might be owned as included within the Charters of this Colonie. And enioy the protection of the Goverm^t and Lawes of this Corporation. The Councill considering that the said Plantations are included within the Charter granted by his Royal Majtie Charles the Second to this Corporation, And also further Confirmed to this Territory by the Settlem^t of the dividing line between this Colonie and the province of Newyork by the Solemne act of Commissioners for that end Comisionated under the broad seal of England by his said Majestie. And assented to by Comiss'oners appointed by this Corporation, which settlement bears date Novembr ye 30th 1664: And was approved and Rattified by his said Majestie as appears by his Majesties letters bearing date Aprill the 10th: 1666: And since the said Settlement whereby the said dividing Line was stated, And this territory so farre extended Westward as to include the said Plantations. No act doth appear whereby the said Plantations might be alienated from this Territory and become part or parcell of the neighbouring province: And the inhabitants of the said Plantation Claiming their right to and Interest in the Govement priviledges and protection, of this Corporation, and being willing to submit thereunto. The Councill doe therefore soe Cause and judg themselves obliged to own the said Plantations to belong to this Territory and to receive the inhabitants thereof under their Goverm^t and protection. And doe hereby order that Pattents shall be granted to them for their Respective townships. And that they shall enioy all other priviledges in Comon with other his Majesties Subjects in this Corporation Acknowledging themselves obliged to submitt to his Majesties wise and iust determination in the matter appearing in our Charter and the Settlm^t aforesaid.

'Hartfrd Jany ye 21st: 1696: A true Copie

'Test. Eleazar Kimberly *Secrety*

(Endorsed:) "A Copy of the Act of the Councill in refference to the Town of Rye: 1696'[1]

[1] Colonial Boundaries (MS.) Hartford, vol. ii. doc. 138.

CHAPTER XIV.

MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

1680.

'In a plaine habbit, according to the maner of a poore wildernesse people.'
Address of Connecticut to Charles II., 1683.

HOUSEKEEPING in Rye in the olden time did not require a great variety of furniture. Each room, even the kitchen and the parlor, or 'best room,' was generally supplied with a bed. Beside this, a table or two, a cupboard and some chests, constituted the heavier articles of 'household stuff.' Of chairs there were few, sometimes none. Philip Galpin's house, in 1684, boasted of three benches; and rude stools, and the invariable coffer or chest, served our early inhabitants for seats.

The cupboard displayed the choicer eating utensils of the family. They were of *pewter;* the dishes in ordinary use were of wood. The value set upon these articles appears from old inventories and from wills, where they rank with important legacies. Richard Lounsbery, in 1690, leaves to his wife 'her bed and some small reversions of Pewter;' and to his daughter Mary 'two Great Chargers of Pewter, two pewter platters next to them, two lesser Platters, and a flaggon, and a cow.' Peter Disbrow's widow, in 1688, relinquishes her thirds in favor of her sons Peter and John, who promise her a certain yearly allowance, 'only her wearing clothes with her bed and what belonged to it, and her *pewter* — those to remain to her, and to be at her disposal.'

The apparel of our settlers was mostly of domestic manufacture. Samuel Hoit's wardrobe, in 1684, contained 'one pair of serge trowsers, one pair of linen trowsers, one ould serge coat lined,' and 'one Kersye Coat.' Serge and kersey were woolen materials of different texture. Leather garments were much worn at this period. Deerskin and buckskin, raccoon and foxskins, wolf and bearskins, were much used for this purpose. 'Indian stockings,' or moccasins, were worn to some extent instead of shoes.

The household linen with other valuables were stored away in

the great 'chests,' three or four of which appear to have been owned by every family. These were the only receptacles which the housewife had at her command for such domestic treasures. In these chests, also, important papers and other treasures were preserved. Sometimes a neighbor would intrust his valuables to be locked up with the family goods. Nathaniel Sherwood testifies, November 1, 1704, that some years ago he had charge of a deed from Richard Ogden to John Wilson; but having 'lost the key of his chest, he did desir them to Secure it other where, but they neglecting that he cannot now tell what is be come of it.'[1]

Few luxuries were to be found in these dwellings. The floors were generally bare. 'One rugg' is mentioned in the inventory of John Hoyt's estate, in 1684; also 'one carpet *or curtain*,' — a hanging for the parlor wall, perhaps, — and 'one cushion case.' Feather beds and *chaffe* beds, feather pillows and bolsters, are specially noted. The 'warming-pan' was considered indispensable to comfort. Every house possessed a loom; a shop for weaving, frequently built of stone, would be found on nearly every farm. A huge fire-place, ten or twelve feet wide, and half as many in depth, occupied one side of the kitchen.[2] The 'cross-cut saw' of the early settler was needed, to prepare the great logs which were rolled into this cavernous depth. 'In the kitchen, the high wooden settle was never absent — now used as a screen, and now receding to the wall. This was the principal sitting-room of the family. Blocks in the chimney-corners were used for children's seats; the settle kept off the air from the door; a tin candlestick with a long back was suspended on a nail over the mantel. As fears of the Indians died away, and weapons of warfare were less used, occasionally a musket might be seen suspended transversely from beam to beam. A small open recess for books was usually seen on one side of the fire-place, a little below the ceiling. The family Bible was never wanting. It occupied a conspicuous station upon the best table, and though much used, was well preserved.'[3]

Labor was well paid in early times, at least that of the *white* man. In 1680, a day laborer in Connecticut had two shillings, and sometimes two shillings and sixpence per day. Provisions were cheap. Wheat sold at four shillings a bushel; peas at three

[1] Town Meeting Book, G. p. 4.

[2] Old people tell us of these fire-places, where as children they would ensconce themselves, sitting on each end of an enormous log; and where they could 'look up and see the stars' through the vast chimney overhead.

[3] *History of Norwich*, by Miss F. M. Caulkins, pp. 76, 77.

shillings; Indian corn at two shillings and sixpence; 'Porck' at threepence per pound; 'Beif' at twopence half-penny; butter at sixpence.[1]

In 1681, Humphrey Underhill engages to pay seven hundred pounds for the Vineyard Farm at Rye; payment to be made in provisions at the following rates: Beef at twopence and one farthing a pound; pork at threepence, one farthing; winter wheat at five shillings, and summer wheat at four shillings sixpence the bushel; Indian corn at two shillings sixpence the bushel.[2]

In 1700, the town orders Mr. Bowers's salary to be paid 'in specie as followeth; Wheat at five shillings per bushel; Indian Corn two shillings sixpence p^{r} bushel, and all other provisions pay equivalent.'[3]

The week-day life of our early settler was one of hard and unremitting toil. No 'eight hours' labor' law would have suited his ideas or agreed with the requirements of his position. His acres of forest land must be cleared and fenced, his meadow and upland lots be tilled by his own strong arms, aided perhaps by those of his stalwart boys. Not less busy were the wife and the daughters, upon whom devolved not only the cares that now rest upon the humblest of their sex, but also the labor of preparing, through every stage of manufacture and adjustment, the coarse but substantial garments of the entire family.

The 'TRAYN BAND of Rye' is mentioned in the Colony Records of 1667. This was the *militia* company of the town, such as every settlement in Connecticut was required to maintain.[4] It consisted of all male persons between sixteen and sixty years of age, ministers and magistrates only excepted. The officers of the train-band were a captain, a lieutenant, an ensign, and four sergeants. Not fewer than sixty-four, and not more than two hundred men, might constitute such a company. The arms of the private soldiers were pikes, muskets, and swords. These they provided, if able, for themselves. The muskets had matchlocks, or firelocks, and to each there was a pair of 'bandoleers,' or pouches for powder and bullets, and a stick, called a *rest*, for use in taking aim. The pikes were poles, with a spear at the end, fourteen feet in length.[5] For defensive armor, corselets were worn, and coats quilted with

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 300.
[2] Rye Records, vol. B. p. 49.
[3] Town Meeting Book, C. p. 8.
[4] Palfrey, *History of New England*, vol. ii. p. 49, *note*.
[5] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 45.

cotton. It does not appear that any uniformity was attempted in dress.

'Trainings' took place six times a year. These were great occasions, and were usually solemnized by prayer. The time of meeting was eight o'clock in the morning. No man could be absent unless excused, without incurring a heavy fine. Ministers, as well as magistrates, were exempted from training; but they too, with every other male person above sixteen years of age, were required to 'bee allwayes provided with, and haue in readiness by them, halfe a pound of Powder, two pound of shott, and two fathom of Match.'[1] Good Mr. Denham, at Rye, had his 'musquett' and his 'two-edged sword,' which he could doubtless make use of, upon occasion. 'A pair of shot moulds,' is an item of frequent occurrence in lists of household effects.

Convenient to the spot where these martial exercises took place, stood the village stocks. For here, in full view of the concourse, unhappy culprits were sometimes put, as a punishment peculiarly severe. Thus persons found guilty of cursing and swearing, were fined ten shillings, and were condemned 'to sit in the Stocks two howers the next Trayneing day.'[2]

In Rye, there was a place 'in the heart of the towne, where they usually traine.'[3] This we conjecture to have been where the flagstaff now stands, at the junction of the post-road and the road to the purchase. Here, perhaps, in 1697, 'Major Sellick, of Stand ford, with about fifty Dragones whom he called his life guard,' made his appearance, ready to defend the town against the authority of New York, from which it had revolted.

The train-band of Rye does not seem to have been completely officered for a number of years. Joseph Horton is confirmed in 1667 as '*lieutenant* to the trayn band.' The fact is, our town did not number persons enough, until near the close of the century, to entitle it to have a company under the law. '*Captain* Joseph Horton' is first heard of in 1690. Captain Theall, who is mentioned about the same time, had been 'the chief military officer for the train-band' of Bedford, and hence probably retained his title after coming to this place.

The train-band was held to be a most important means of public security in every town. Rye, from its remoteness and its feeble condition, must have depended peculiarly upon this defence.

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 544.
[2] *Ibid.* vol. i. p. 50.
[3] New York Colonial MSS., vol. xli. p. 56.

In 1673, when there was a prospect of collision with the Dutch, who regained possession of New York for a short period, 'Rye, *being near*' to the enemy's position, was '*excused*' from sending its quota, to form a company of five hundred dragoons, who were to be drawn from the train-bands of the several towns for the protection of any threatened part.[1]

Our early settlers had doubtless brought with them many old-world customs which are little known to us. One of these they observed in the conveyance of lands: it was called the investiture 'by turf and twig.' This was a relic of feudal times. It consisted in the delivery of a turf, a stone, a branch, or some other object, as a symbol of the transfer of the soil. Anciently, this had been practised by the feudal lord, in conferring a fief upon his vassal.[2] We find it observed on Manussing Island in 1693, with all formality, and on Budd's Neck as late as 1768. In a dispute between Samuel Odel and the heirs of Jonathan Vowles, about the 'southernmost part' of that island, John Frost testified that in 1693 he went by request of Vowles to the said island, 'where he did see Jonathan Vowles upon the said southernmost part of said Island, (being in a manner Divided from y^e^ other part of said Island by a Sand Beach,) cutt a Turfe upon the same as also Cutt a Stick or Twigg thereon; and the said Jonathan Vowles did then and there deliver the said Turfe and Twigg to the said Samuel Odel, who desired this Deponent to take notice that Jonathan Vowles did putt him in full and peaceable possession.'[3]

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 207.

[2] Hallam, *Middle Ages*, vol. i. p. 170.

[3] Land Papers in Secretary of State's Office, Albany, vol. iii. p. 4.

Great Stone by the Wading-place.

CHAPTER XV.

OLD NAMES AND PLACES.

THE quaint nomenclature of our early settlers is rapidly passing out of mind. Many of the names traced on our ancient records have become quite obsolete, and will be as novel to the descendants of those who used them as to those of us who dwell in places that know them no more. Yet it may be presumed that some interest will be felt in the effort to recall, and as far as possible to locate them.

The Indian names, Peningo,[1] Apawamis,[2] Manussing,[3] Honge,

[1] Not *Poningo*, as Mr. Bolton (*History of Westchester*) writes it, doubtless misled by the resemblance of the letters *e* and *o* in the ancient style of writing. This name occurs several hundred times in our records, and usually as spelt in the text. Sometimes it is written *Peninggoe*, and occasionally, in later times, Penning's Neck. Of course the derivation of the word from Ponus, the title of an Indian chief living at Stamford in 1640, becomes improbable. We have, however, no other to suggest.

[2] Variously spelt: Apawammeis (Ind. deed 1661: Colonial Records of Connecticut, i. MS. 334); Epauquammes (John Budd's will, 1669: Indexes of Southold, L. I.); Epawamos (deed J. Budd, 1678, B. 9); Opquamis (deed J. Budd, 1682, B. 55); Apawquammis (Budd's patent, 1720: Book Patents, Alb. No. 8, p. 375).

[3] 'Of two words meaning Island,' says Dr. Trumbull, 'MUNNOHAN, or, rejecting the formative, MUNNOH (Abnaki, *menahan*; Delaware, *menatey*: Chippewa, *minis*, a diminutive) is the more common, but is rarely, if ever, found in composition.' 'Long Island was *Menatey* or *Manati*, "the Island" to the Delawares, Minsi, and other neighboring tribes. Any smaller island was *menatan* (Mass. *munnohhan*) the *indefinite* form, or *menates* (Mass. *munnises*, *manisses*), the diminutive. Campanius mentions . . . .

Eaukecaupacuson, Quaroppas, Pockeotessen, Mamaroneck, Mockquams, or Moaquanes, Armonck, were carefully retained by the early settlers in their deeds, but most of them were never used. The Armonck was already known as Byram River, the Mockquams as Blind Brook, when they came here. Eaukecaupacuson soon yielded to 'Lame Will's Purchase,' and 'Rye Woods.' Pockeotessen was called Stony Brook. Apawamis became Budd's Neck, and later Rye Neck. Quaroppas was replaced by 'The White Playnes.' Only Peningo, Manussing, and Mamaroneck remain in common use. It must be confessed that the aboriginal designations had little of beauty or euphony to recommend them.

Homely as they were, the Anglo-Saxon names of these localities were certainly more convenient. We begin our list where the settlers began when they crossed from Manussing Island to the main shore.

'*The Flats*,' and the '*Horse-race*,' were ancient names for our beautiful beach. '*Burying Hill*' was the point of land which terminates it on the east — now the site of a hotel. The channel or creek between the island and the main shore has always been known as '*The Gut*.'

'*Rye Ferry*,' the ancient landing-place, was north of the present steamboat landing, at the end of a lane on the Provoost estate. The late residence of Mr. Jacobs was known as 'The House by the Ferry.' '*Fishing Rock*,' mentioned as early as 1699, and also called Ogden's Dock, is on Fox Island, at the mouth of Byram River. '*Chevalier*,' or '*Cavalier's Rock*' is within sight, just below the steamboat landing.

"*Manataanung* or *Manaates*, a place settled by the Dutch, who built there a clever little town, which went on increasing every day," now called New York. New York Island was sometimes spoken of as "*the* island," Manaté, Manhatte; sometimes as "*an* island," Manathan, Menatan, *Manhatan*; more accurately, as "the *small* island," Manhaates, Manattes, and "the Manados" of the Dutch. The island Indians collectively were called *Manhattans*; those of the small island, *Manhatesen*. . . . *Manisses* or Monasses, as Block Island was called, is another form of the diminutive, from *munnoh*; and Manhasset, otherwise written Munhansick, a name of Shelter Island, is the same diminutive with the locative affix, *munna-es-et*. So is "Manusses" or "Mennewies," an island near Rye, N. Y., now written (with the southern form of the locative) *Manussing*.' (*The Composition of Indian Geographical Names, illustrated from the Algonkin Languages*. By J. Hammond Trumbull. Hartford, 1870: pp. 22, 23.)

The earliest and usual form of this name in our records is that which Dr. Trumbull gives as the correct one — Manussing. There are, however, some twenty variations, the most extreme of which are *Mounsons*, *Mounsting*, *Man*, and *Nassau*. 'Nursin' Island was common fifty years ago.

'Minnewies' or 'Minnewits' was an early name of City Island I find no evidence that Manussing Island was ever so called.

'*Fox Island*' was 'commonly so called' as early as 1699.

'*Goose Island*' is to be sought not very far from Fox Island, about half a mile up the Byram River, and directly opposite Lyon's Dock, at the termination of the road across Lyon's Point.

'*Negro Point*' is the name of a locality on the west side of Byram River, just below Lyon's Dock. It was formerly indicated by a rock which 'has been blown off, but may yet be found at low water a few feet outside the dock.'[1]

The '*Wading-place*' across Byram River was at the point where the bridge now crosses that river. Here, on the Connecticut side, close to the northeastern corner of the bridge, is the '*Great Stone* by the Wading-place,' which has been a boundary mark for two centuries past. There was another wading-place used in former days, about where the New Haven Railroad crosses the river. This was called the '*lower going over.*' It is so designated in our town records in 1711. This came to be pronounced the '*Loginover*,' a corruption that was familiar to the inhabitants fifty or seventy-five years ago.

The '*Scotch Caps*' are the rugged masses of rock that lie off the tapering point of land known as Brown's or Wainwright's Point. They received this name from the first settlers, who also called the southern part of the peninsula itself the '*Scotch Cap Neck*,' or '*Ox-pasture Neck*.'

'*Parsonage Point*' is the next projection from Peningo Neck on the east. It is the site of the residence of Mr. Van Wagenen.

'*Knittin's Cove*' is a small inlet of the Sound, on the lower part of Mr. Underhill Halsted's land, in the rear of Mr. Bidwell's house. Here there was anciently a 'warehouse' and a dock.

'*Ware's Cove*' or *Reynolds' Cove*, is below this, opposite the north end of Pine Island. This island contains about eight acres, and lies within a few rods of the shore. '*Galpin's Cove*' was on Budd's Neck, below '*Bullock's Landing*,' at the foot of Mr. Genin's land.

We have on record the names of several brooks which are represented at the present day only by very insignificant rills. There can be no doubt that they were more deserving of the name when the forests and the swamps were here to feed and shelter them. Besides Blind Brook and Stony Brook, there was Bound Brook, Gunn Brook, Hassock Meadow Brook, Horseneck Brook, Rattlesnake Brook, Blind Brook Branch, Crooked Gutter,

[1] Survey of road and landing, Negro Point, in Port Chester, 1852; Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 336.

and Causeway Brook.[1] These were noted boundary marks in other days; and in our fall freshets they sometimes approach their former volume.

> 'Before these fields were shorn and tilled,
> Full to the brim our rivers flowed;
> The melody of waters filled
> The vast and boundless wood.'

Our ancient inhabitants had names for the hills and slopes upon which their most eligible lands were situated. Some of these we have not succeeded in locating. Who can tell us where to find '*Walles' Ridge*,' '*Raccoon Ridge*,' or '*Taffy's Plain*'? '*Tom Jeffer's Hill*' we have identified as the elevation upon which the Episcopal Church stands. There are more permanent names, however, which can be assigned without much danger of mistake. In the beautiful valley of the upper Blind Brook, we have '*Branch Ridge*,' and '*Brush Ridge*.' These names were given to the eastern slope, along which the present Ridge Street proceeds as far as the road to Park's mill, and perhaps some distance beyond. Above this the same street runs over '*Hog-pen Ridge*,' by which elegant term the settlers, as early as 1682, were pleased to designate some of their choicest lands.[2] '*Byram Ridge*' was the tract of land on the west side of Byram River, from the junction of Ridge and King streets, or thereabouts, down to the neighborhood of the present village of Port Chester. '*Wolf-pit Ridge*' or '*Pulpit Plain*,' has already been described as the high ground north of Rye, upon which our district school, academy, and seminary are now situated. A modern name for the same region — itself more more than a century old, however — is '*the Cedars*.'

'*Steep Hollow*' was the name of a beautiful glen on the property of Mr. Quintard. It was so called as early as the year 1700. The 'Upper' and 'Lower *Hassocky Meadows*'[3] lie in the valley between Grace Church Street and the post-road, through which

[1] Bound Brook was perhaps the rivulet flowing through Dr. Cockey's land. Gunn Brook begins on Dr. Tuttle's land, and joins Hassocky Meadow Brook, which takes its rise near Mr. Jonathan Sniffin's. Rattlesnake Brook flows through Mr. Brevoort's land, from a spring known as Cold Spring on Dr. Jay's land. Horseneck Brook flows into the creek of the same name on Mr. S. L. Mitchill's land.

[2] 'Itt is ordered [March 1641] thatt all those thatt have hoggs shall drive them from the plantation about 5 miles from the towne, and haunt them forth abroade, neverthelesse every one is to endeavour to secure their corne by sufficient fences.' *New Haven Colony Records*, vol. i. p. 52.

[3] This has been considered an Indian word. Mr. Bolton (*History of Westchester County*, ii. 16) and Mr. Mead (*History of Greenwich, Conn.*) mention '*Haseco*,' as one of the aboriginal names of Rye and Greenwich. Our records speak of 'hassock' and

the railroad passes from Rye to Port Chester. '*Sniffin's Hill*' is the rounded eminence since known as Bloomer's Hill, above Port Chester, upon which a house has lately been built.

'*Barton's Neck*' is the ancient name of the tract through which Grace Church Street runs, from the neighborhood of the road to Manussing Island, as far as the entrance to Port Chester.

'*Saw Pit*,' the ancient name of that village, occurs for the first time in 1732. Before that date we find mention of the '*Saw-log Swamp*.' '*Merritt's Point*' is now known as Lyon's Point.

The swamps, now happily disappeared, had each its peculiar designation. The '*Long Swamp*' lay back of the home-lots, in the Town Field, east of the Milton Road and Grace Church Street. The '*Great Swamp*,' lay north of the present Roman Catholic Cemetery, and east of Ridge Street. '*Beaver Swamp*' was in the valley of Stony Brook, where the Union Cemetery is situated. '*Timothy's Swamp*,' named perhaps after the old constable of Rye, Timothy Knap, was a part of the '*Saw-log Swamp*.'

Sundry persons or families bestowed their names upon certain localities. The land between Regent Street and King Street, from the post-road to Purchase Avenue, was long known and is still remembered as '*Kniffin's land*.' The extreme eastern part of the Town Field, bordered by Grace Church Street and the road to Kirby's mill, was anciently '*Coe's land*,' since '*Bird's land*.' '*Bloomer's Island*' is a tract of a few acres in the old Town Field near the creek or Sound, the waters of which surround it at high tide. '*Bullock's Meadow*' was a part of the farm now owned by Mr. Stevens.

'hassocky' meadows in various localities; in one place the language is 'fresh or hassocky meadow.' The word is obviously English. Wright's *Provincial Dictionary* defines Hassock, '1. A reed or rush, a tuft of rushes . . . . 3. Anything growing thick and wild. *Sussex*.'

CHAPTER XVI.

THE BOSTON ROAD.

'Yon rugged road which like a stream
Bursts through the shadowy forest to the west.'
The New Pastoral.

IN a local history, some notices of the principal roads within the limits of the town will not be out of place. To the inhabitant this record will possess a certain interest, for it relates to our most enduring monuments of the past. The travelled highway, which retains the course of some ancient forest path, first worn it may be by the Indian hunter, then used by the early settlers, and gradually improved with the progress of the community, is often the link that most visibly connects the present with by-gone times.

But a wider interest belongs to the great thoroughfares of the land, such as that which crosses the town of Rye. The post-road from New York to Boston intersects the lower part of our town, and forms the main street of the village. This road did not exist at the time of the first settlement. The only avenue of communication by land with other places was, as we have seen, the 'old Westchester Path.' An Indian trail originally, it was never laid out as a public highway, but was used for awhile by the inhabitants of the towns through which it passed, as well as by occasional travellers to New York or Connecticut. In all likelihood, this for several years was the route of the monthly post on his way to the eastern settlements. Here, not far from the line over which the engine now speeds hourly, our settlers may have heard the shrill notes of the messenger's horn that announced his approach to the village.

The '*country road*,' as it was called, appears to have been laid out about the year 1672. In May of that year, the General Court of Connecticut appointed —

'Mr. John Holly, L^{nt} Jonathan Bell and John Green to veiwe the townshipp of Rye, and to consider what highways may be requisit and necessary for the use of the towne and Colony, and lay them out and see them recorded in the town book; and if the said highwayes shall fall

in any man's perticuler proprietie, the sayd committee are hereby appoynted to order such person or persons reasonable sattisfaction for the same, which shall be allowed out of the common lands within that township not allready layed out. And the sayd Gent" are desired to take care to lay out the highwayes so as may be least prejudiciall to the proprietors.' [1]

The roads here provided for were for the most part neighborhood roads simply. As yet there was no public thoroughfare through Connecticut or New York. But the convenience of every town would require that there should be at least a road to the nearest settlement. This, at Rye, was the road to Greenwich or Stamford, which was probably one of the roads laid out under the order of 1672. 'The Stanford road' — 'the path commonly called the Standford Road' — is mentioned in 1680, eight years after that order.[2] We suppose this to be identical with our present post-road, leading from Mamaroneck River to Byram River, in the same general course as now. That portion of it which passes through the village of Rye along the bank of Blind Brook, must have been opened before the year 1676.[3]

The 'country roads' leading from one town to another came in time to be considered as the *public highway* of the colony and the province. In 1679, the General Court of Connecticut ordered: —

'That the present roades from plantation to plantation shall be reputed the country road or King's highway, and so remayne untill the Court doe see good reason to make alteration of the same. And whereas the inhabitants of each plantation are by law required once a yeare to worke a day in cleareing of the brush, it is by this Court recommended to the townesmen of the severall plantations to improve their inhabitants in cleareing the comon roades, in the first place, that lye between towne and towne, vntill the sayd roades are cleared at least one rod wide.' [4]

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 170.

[2] A record of John Brondig's land in 1680, describes a meadow lot lying on the 'Stanford road.' (Town Records, vol. B. p. 6.) Jacob Pearce, in 1683, had a meadow lot on the 'Stanford path.' (*Ibid.* p. 23.) In 1686, John Winter of Westchester sold to Francis Brown of Rye forty acres on the 'path commonly called the Standford Road.' (County Records, vol. A. p. 176.) This was on Budd's Neck.

[3] This I think is evident from the fact that the old house known as Van Sicklin's or Doughty's, and which is believed to be the building referred to in 1676 as a fortified place, stood fronting on this road. Two other buildings that front on this street — 'Strang's tavern' and the tenement house belonging to Mr. Joseph Kirby — are supposed to have been erected in the latter part of the seventeenth century. It would be difficult to account for their position without supposing that there was already a public highway along Blind Brook at the time of their erection, a fact which is abundantly proved by other indications.

[4] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 30.

The 'country road' is mentioned as already existing in 1699, when a survey of it was ordered by the town: —

'At a towne meeting in Rye aprell: 1: 1699.

'John Merrett Senior and Joseph Budd are chosen surveyors to run the contere Rode and Lay it out begining att Birriam River and so to Run to Mamoranock River.'

This survey was ordered probably with a view to the widening of the road, which prior to this may have been but *one rod* wide, as prescribed by the colony law.[1]

Rye was then claimed by Connecticut as still within the colony's limits. But in 1700 the town was returned to the province of New York. The towns of this province under the Dutch and English governments, like those of Connecticut, had the superintendence and management of all their local affairs, including the laying out of roads. In 1691 an act was passed 'to enable each Town to regulate its Fences and Highways.' By this law freeholders were impowered to meet in their respective towns and to choose annually three surveyors or 'ordrers' to lay out and repair roads. Their 'orders' were to be 'entered in the Town's books for that purpose and approved by the next Court of Sessions.' This law was in force until the year 1703. In that year an act was passed for laying out highways throughout the several counties of the province. Among other provisions, it directed that —

'One Public, Common Highway be laid out and kept in repair from New York through that county and the county of Westchester four rods, English, wide, to be forever a Public Road to the Colony of Connecticut.'

This was the first formal act establishing our present post-road. It had existed before, as we have shown, in separate links, from town to town, following very much the same general course as now. But it had never before been constituted as one road.

Commissioners were appointed to carry out this act. Up to the year 1728 they were appointed for the whole county. From that time till the Revolution they were appointed for the several towns. After the war, in 1784, an act was passed vesting in the freeholders and inhabitants of the towns themselves the power to elect at their annual meetings not less than three nor more than five persons in each town to be commissioners of highways.

[1] At the same town meeting, April 1, 1699, the road to White Plains, which had certainly been in existence for some years, was ordered to be surveyed and laid out 'to be 3 Rods in breadth.' (Rye Records.)

All this legislation, unfortunately, did not make good roads. Their condition indeed was a theme for lament and execration year after year. In 1684 the legislature of Connecticut complains that 'There is a great neglect fownd in mayntaining of the highwayes between towne and towne.' The ways are 'incumbered with dirty slowes, [sloughs,] bushes, trees and stones.' The Court orders that 'each plantation shall forthwith take sufficient care that the highwayes stated between townes be well amended from such defects, and so kept from time to time.' Mention is made 'especially' of the 'road from Hartford to New Haven, and from New Haven *to Greenwich*.' Rye just then was 'out in the cold,' Connecticut having relinquished the town to New York a few months before. But we may suppose that in the matter of roads it was not much better off than its neighbor 'Horseneck.'

'One peculiarity of the highway of that early day,' remarks Mr. Huntington, 'was the fact of *a gate across the road* wherever a side road entered the main one of the settlement — so that for several years, one could not probably have travelled a half mile in any direction from the centre of the town, without meeting one of these gates.'[1] Often, in the laying out of a new road, it was stipulated that the owner of some adjacent lands should have 'liberty to hang a gate or make a draw-bars for his conveniency,' the said owner 'keeping said gate in good repair at his own cost and charge.' There was such a gate on the Milton Road near the present cemetery by Blind Brook, in 1719; and another on the road leading from the Great Bridge, near the spot where the Presbyterian Church now stands, to Manussing Island. And as late as 1779, on the fine road now leading from Harrison Station to North Street, there were 'bars' at different points, as the reader may see by Erskine's 'Map of Rye,' a fac-simile of which we give elsewhere. Many such obstructions doubtless existed in the earlier part of the century, even on the Boston Road, where it crossed our town.

In 1704 we have a doleful account of the highway through these parts. Our oft-quoted traveller, Madam Knight, groans out her complaint as from Norwalk she and her guide 'Hasted towards Rye, walking and Leading our Horses neer a mile together, up a prodigios High Hill, and so Riding till about nine at night.' Returning from her visit to New York, she passes again through our town to the limits of 'York Government,' and there 'Descending the Mountainos passage' that almost broke my heart in ascend-

[1] *History of Stamford, Connecticut*, by Rev. E. B. Huntington, p. 436.

ing before, we come,' she says, 'to Stamford, which we passed, and thro' many and great difficulties, as Bridges which were exceedingly high and very tottering and of vast Length, steep and rocky Hills and precipices, bugbears to a fearful female traveller.'

Eighty-five years later, a more eminent personage describes our roads in terms not much more flattering than Madam Knight's. 'The Road [from Kingsbridge to Rye] for the greater part, indeed the whole way, was *very rough and stoney*, but the Land strong, well covered with grass and a luxuriant crop of Indian Corn. . . . . The farms . . . . are very close together, and separated, as one inclosure from another also is, by fences of stone, which are indeed easily made, as *the country is immensely stoney*. . . . . After passing Horse Neck, six miles distant from Rye, *the Road through which is* HILLY, and IMMENSELY STONEY, and trying to Wheels and Carriages.' Pretty strong language this, for the calm and benignant Father of his Country. It is to be feared that our post-road tried his patience as severely as it tried his carriage. Indeed, on his way homeward from the same excursion into New England, Washington, as if unable to express his feelings on the subject, writes, while resting for the night at the 'widow Haviland's in Rye,' '*The badness of these roads having been described as I went, I shall say nothing of them now!*'[1]

Some comfort may be derived under these mortifying comments, from the fact that older countries than ours were suffering at the same period from the misery of bad roads. England, whose smooth and solid highways are now the special admiration of every American visitor, was not much better off than New England two centuries or even one hundred years ago. How was it with our venerable namesake, Rye, in Sussex, on the British channel? From the voluminous 'History and Antiquities' of that 'Ancient Town and Port,' we learn that the first turnpike act, 'for repairing and widening the Road from Flimwell Vent to Rye,' was passed in 1762. Before this the travelling was so bad that corn was frequently brought into the town on horses' backs. In the latter part of the previous century, coaches occupied ten and eleven hours in a trip of thirty miles. The ground was so rugged and full of holes that the traveller would often have to dismount and lead his horse. The fords, where there were no bridges, could not be crossed in rough weather without extreme danger. 'Riding in a dark lane, towards evening, across a descent made by a rivulet of water, I

[1] *Diary of Washington, from the first day of October,* 1789, *to the tenth day of March,* 1790. New York, 1858: pp. 19, 47.

was twice like to be thrown into the water,' writes a traveller in 1693, who at another time states that wishing to return by a ford from a neighboring place, 'I could not get to Rye that night, nor next day till noon, after having waited in the wind and cold on the gravelly ground.'

In 1775 an English clergyman writes to a friend, from Brighton, in the same county, and only forty-seven miles south of London: —

'If you should ever stand in peculiar need of very violent exercise, come down hither, by way of Ryegate, and before the present stage-coach is worn out. The road is the roughest, the country the coarsest, and the vehicle the uneasiest that can well be imagined. I never had so complete a shaking; and, though much used to travelling, was literally sore from head to foot for twenty-four hours after my arrival here, occasioned by such a series of concussions as I really thought it impossible for any carriage to impart.'[1]

Until quite recently the Boston Road was familiarly known to us as 'the turnpike.' It has in fact ceased to be a turnpike road only within two or three years past. In 1800 a corporation was formed by act of the legislature, by the name of 'The President, Directors and Company of the Westchester Turnpike Road.' Messrs. Philip Pell, John P. Delancey, Cornelius Rosevelt, Peter J. Monroe, and Gabriel Furman, were the members of this corporation mentioned in the act.[2]

The general course of this road coincided with that of the old Boston Road established by act of the Assembly in 1703; just as that road followed in the main the course of the country road established in 1672. There have been several deviations, however, from the ancient line in the town of Rye; and these we may here indicate.

The first occurred where the turnpike road entered Rye, crossing Mamaroneck River. Here the old road ran about thirty rods north of the line adopted in 1800. The street now called Tompkins Avenue is the ancient highway. In 1811 the commissioners closed a part of 'the old Boston road, beginning at Mamaroneck River and extending eastwardly to the post set in the ground opposite Daniel Gidney's house, and thence to the land of William Gidney.'[3]

Another change was made between Dr. Jay's house and Mr.

[1] Rev. A. Toplady, Works, pp. 873, 874.

[2] An act to establish a turnpike corporation for improving the road from East Chester to Byram, passed seventh April, 1800, chap. cxxi.

[3] Town Records, vol. D. p. 361.

Thomas Haviland's. The old road diverged from the line adopted for the turnpike at a point a little south of Mrs. Bradford's residence. It returned to its present course at the southeast corner of Mr. Haviland's lawn, forming a curve about fifteen rods at its greatest distance from the present road.[1]

Above Mr. Theall's house the road was straightened for a distance of half a mile. The old road is that which passes Mr. Benjamin Mead's house. The stone bridge across Blind Brook, which has lately been demolished and replaced by a larger one, was built by the turnpike company. Before this, the road crossed the brook over a wooden bridge, which stood about half-way between the present bridge and the ford. Through the village of Rye the turnpike retained the course of the old road, except at the head of Grace Church Street, where a slight change was made.[2] Between Rye and 'Saw Pit' or Port Chester, there was no material change.

A slight deviation occurred between Rye and Port Chester, at the foot of Regent Street. A more considerable change was made in the village of Saw Pit. Here the turnpike company opened a new road between the old road and the water. This change begins where the road to Lyon's Point intersects Main Street. Beyond this the back street now called Fountain Street represents the course of the old road as far as Mrs. Moseman's residence. Passing along the north side of that house, it ran about parallel with the present course of the railway, and very near it, to the spot where the turnpike crosses the railway; thence as the turnpike runs to a place not far from the railway embankment, indicated by bars; and thence along the bank of Byram River nearly to the bridge.

[1] Information from Mr. T. Haviland, Rye.

[2] Along the land now occupied by the residences of Mr. Augustus M. Halsted, Miss R. Bush, and Mr. Thomas Peck, the old post-road was *straightened* to some extent by the turnpike company. This land, as we shall see in another chapter, constituted the 'old parsonage,' and was owned by the Episcopal Church until within a few years.

Haviland's, or Penfield House.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE VILLAGE INN.

'As ancient is this hostelry
As any in the land may be:
Built in the old Colonial day.'

LONGFELLOW.

HALF a century ago, the old Square House on the post-road at Rye was the centre of life and intelligence for the whole neighborhood: and such it had been for at least as many years. Old inhabitants still speak of the times when the great, lumbering coach, with panting horses, and sorely-jolted passengers, would bring up about sunset at Penfield's Hotel; and when the chief exciting event of every evening throughout the village would be the approach and arrival of the eastern and western stages. For it was at Penfield's that these vehicles — the one bound for Boston and the other for New York — would usually meet and deposit their loads of travellers, to remain over night.

But nearly a century ago, the Square House was said to have been 'a noted tavern for many years;' and before that, it was the goodly mansion of one of the leading men of the town. Here Peter Brown lived previous to the year 1731. After his death the house passed into the possession of the Rev. James Wetmore,

rector of the parish of Rye. It was the residence of his son, Timothy Wetmore, in 1763; about which time probably it became an inn.

As early as the year 1770, Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, afterwards a surgeon in the army during the Revolution, kept this tavern. The records of the Board of Supervisors, October 7, 1772, contain this item: 'To Doct. Ebenezer Haveland, for dining the Supervizors and liqure, £1. 11. 4.'

The 'New York Gazette,' Monday, April 18, 1774, announces that —

'The lottery for the benefit of a Clergyman is in such forwardness that the managers will be enabled to begin the drawing on Thursday the 28th instant, at the house of Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, in Rye.'

About the same time the following advertisement appears: [1] —

TO BE SOLD, AT PRIVATE SALE,

A LOT of land in the town of Rye, Weſt-Cheſter county, containing about 20 acres, moſt of which is excellent meadow land; on which is a large two ſtory houſe, neatly finiſhed, with a large cellar under the whole houſe; a kitchen ſeperate from the manſion houſe; a barn, ſtore houſe, ſtables, horſeſhed, and other out-houſes, all in good repair: The above has been a noted tavern for many years; is a good ſtage upon the Boſton road, being 31 miles to New-York: it is a convenient place for a trader, as there has been a ſhop kept there for twenty years paſt, and is within a mile and a half of the landing — Alſo,

A farm of about 50 acres of choice land, on which is a good dwelling houſe, a cyder-mill and houſe, barn, ſtables, &c. an orchard containing near 400 bearing apple trees, 100 of which are Engliſh pippins; there are a large number of locuſt trees on ſaid land. The above farm is ſituate in Harriſon's purchaſe, Weſt-Cheſter County, within two miles and a half of a landing; affords an extenſive proſpect of Long-Iſland and the Sound. ——— Alſo,

A houſe and four acres of land in the town of Rye, lying by the poſt-road, ſuitable for a tradeſman; either of the above may be purchaſed at a reaſonable rate, by applying to the ſubſcriber in the town of Rye.

EBENEZER HAVILAND.

To be ſold at public vendue on the premises, on Wedneſday the 6th of April next,

A FARM containing 200 acres of good land, ſituate in Harrison's purchaſe, Weſt-Cheſter county, on which is a new dwelling-houſe, a large barn, and other out-houſes, &c. The above was lately the property of James Haviland. For further particulars, inquire of the ſubſcribers, who will give an indiſputable title for the ſame. EBENEZER HAVILAND,
TIMOTHY WETMORE.

RYE, MARCH 5, 1774.

[1] Rivington's *New York Gazetteer; or, The Weekly Advertiser.* Thursday, March 10, 1774.

The following year he advertises again : —

'To be sold, the house where the subscriber now lives, in Rye, which has been a noted tavern for many years past. There are three rooms with fire places on the lower floor, and two on the second, and three without; a large cellar, a shop adjoining the house, and a kitchen at a little distance. There is a good barn,' etc., 'and about twenty acres of land of the best quality, through which runs a fine stream for a grist or oil mill. . . . .

'Likewise a small farm of 50 acres, with a good house, barn, and other out houses, in Harrison's precinct. It affords a very beautiful prospect of the Sound and Long Island.'

In 1774, John Adams stopped at 'Haviland's, of Rye,' on his way from Boston to New York.[1]

During the war, one Jotham Wright kept this inn. It appears to have reverted, after the war, to Mrs. Tamar Haviland, then the widow of Dr. Ebenezer, who for several years maintained the good repute of this 'ancient hostelry.' It was during her incumbency that Rye had the honor of a visit from General Washington, and that the Square House became invested with that interest which hallows every spot associated with the Father of his Country. The hostess and the inn were immortalized by the following notice in the President's diary : —

'Thursday, Oct. 15th, 1789. After dinner, through frequent light showers, we proceeded to the Tavern of a Mrs. Haviland at Rye ; who keeps a very neat and decent Inn. . . . Friday 16th, about seven o'clock we left the Widow Haviland's, and after passing Horse Neck, six miles distant from Rye, the Road through which is hilly and immensely stoney, and trying to Wheels and Carriages, we breakfasted at Stamford, which is six miles further, at one Webb's — a tolerable good house, but not equal in appearance and reality to Mrs. Haviland's.'

The General made a longer stay at Rye on his way back to New York from New England. 'A little after sunrise [Thursday, Nov. 12th] we left Marvin's, [at Fairfield,] and breakfasting at Stamford, 13 miles distant, reached the Widow Haviland's, 12 miles further : where, on acct. of some lame horses, we remained all night.' 'Friday, 13th, Left Mrs. Haviland's as soon as we could see the road, and breakfasted at Hoyet's tavern, this side King's-bridge ; between 2 and 3 o'clock arrived at my house at New York, where I found Mrs. W. and the rest of the family all well

[1] Diary, in President Adams's Works, vol. ii. p. 345.

— and it being Mrs. W's night to receive visits, a pretty large company of ladies and gentlemen were present.' [1]

The widow was succeeded by Peter Quintard, who was landlord in 1797. The town, which looked carefully after the taverns in those days, resolved that year that —

'If Peter Quintard should not occupy the House he now lives in longer than the first of May next, then he shall pay no more Excise Money than in proportion of time he has occupied said house.'

One Peter William Marrener next kept the Square House for two years. But in 1801 it passed into the hands of Mr. Nathaniel Penfield. This gentleman is well remembered by many at the present day as a fine specimen of the ancient landlord; a man of courtly manners and unblemished character. After his death, in 1810, the house was kept for a few years by his son, the late Mr. Henry L. Penfield, a most amiable and estimable man, whose death occurred in 1867. Penfield's Hotel was still a noted place. Here the stages on the Boston Road stopped, until some forty years ago.[2] Among its distinguished guests in later times was General La Fayette, when making a tour from New York into New England in 1824.

'At Mamaroneck, the General was received with the same enthusiastic welcome. A salute was fired by the inhabitants, the bells were rung, and an excellent band of music continued playing our national airs. At Rye, the General, his suite, and the committee of arrangements dined together at *Penfield's Hotel*.' [3]

But 'Penfield's' was by no means the most 'ancient hostelry' of Rye. We must go back another half century at least, to speak of two other village inns, long known as 'Strang's' and 'Doughty's.'

The public house was an important institution of the olden time. Innkeepers were chosen by the town, and none but persons of good character and estate were considered eligible.

The earliest notice of such an appointment in our records is the following: —

'At a towne meeting in Ry, March 24, 1697–8, Joseph Horton is

[1] *Diary of Washington, from the first day of October, 1789, to the tenth day of March, 1790.* New York, 1858: pp. 20, 21, 46.

[2] The Square House ceased to be a public house about 1830. In 1835 Rachel, widow of Nathaniel and Henry L. Penfield, and his wife Mary, sold to David H. Mead this property, with 23 acres of land. (County Records, lib. lviii. p. 358.)

[3] *Niles' Register*, August 28, 1824.

chosen by the towne of Ry to keep a house of entertainment for travlors for the year insuing.'[1]

Lieutenant Joseph Horton, we have seen, was a leading inhabitant at that day. He lived on Rye Neck, and the house here referred to is supposed to have stood on the site or in the neighborhood of the old mill which has lately been renovated, opposite the house of Mr. Jonathan H. Gedney.

In the village itself, 'Strang's tavern' was the ancient public house. A portion of the original building is still standing, on the southeast corner of the post-road and Rectory Street.[2]

Madam Knight of Boston gives an amusing description of her entertainment at this inn, in the course of her journey on horseback in 1704 from that city to New York: —

'From Norowalk we hasted towards Rye, walking and leading our horses neer a mile together, up a prodigios high hill; and so riding till about nine at night; and there arrived and took up our lodgings at an ordinary, w^ch^ a French family kept. Here being very hungry, I desired a fricasee, w^ch^ the Frenchman undertakeing mannaged so contrary to my notion of cookery, that I hastned to bed superless: being shewd the way up a pair of stairs w^ch^ had such a narrow passage that I had almost stopt by the bulk of my body. But arriving at my apartment found it to be a little *Lento* chamber, furnisht amongst other rubbish with a high bedd and a low one, a long table, a bench, and a bottomless chair. . . . My poor bones complained bitterly, not being used to such lodgings; and so did the man who was with us; and poor I made but one grone, which was from the time I went to bed to the time I riss, which was about three in the morning. Setting up by the fire till light, and having discharged our ordinary, w^ch^ was as dear as if we had had far better fare, we took our leave of *Monsier*, and about seven in the morn came to New Rochell, a French town, where we had a good breakfast, and in the strength of that, about an how'r before sunsett, got to York.'

The Frenchman of whom Madam Knight speaks was undoubtedly Daniel L'Estrange, or Strang, as the name soon came to be written — a French Protestant refugee who had removed to this country a few years before. His death occurred two years after Madam Knight's visit. The village inn was kept by his widow for several years.

'Strang's Tavern' was a place of note long after this. On a map of Budd's Neck in the year 1720, the bridge over Blind

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. C. p. 5.

[2] A view of this house, taken before the recent alterations, will be found on page 71.

Brook is denoted the King's Bridge 'nere Strange.' The Justices and Vestry of Rye held their meetings here as early as 1734, and the town meetings may not improbably have been held here at a much earlier day. The old house was still a place of public entertainment thirty years ago, and was kept by a lineal descendant of the first 'Daniel L'Estrange.' It remained unaltered until within two or three years past, the 'lean-to' chamber which Madam Knight occupied being quite distinguishable.

Another noted inn was the old stone house known of late years as 'Van Sicklin's.' In the early days of the settlement, this building, as already stated, was a fort or place of defence. Afterwards it became the dwelling of Mr. Isaac Denham, son of the first settled minister of Rye, and one of the wealthiest and most influential persons of his day. Mr. Denham died in 1723, and in 1728 his executors sold his house and home lot to 'Francis Doughty, junior, of Flushing.' The 'New York Gazette' of June 20, 1748, contains the following advertisement: —

> FRANCIS DOUGHTY, *who kept the* Kings-Bridge, is now removed to the Sign of the SUN in Rye, where all Gentlemen, Travellers, and Others, may depend on good Entertainment for themselves and Horſes.

Mr. Doughty, like his predecessors Horton and Strang, was a justice of the peace for the town of Rye. The Justices and Vestry met at his house from 1730 to 1734, and again at the same place from 1770 to 1776, when his son John Doughty kept the tavern. Another John Doughty, grandson of Francis, succeeded to the dignities and emoluments of the office, which seems to have descended from father to son as a matter of course. A map of the town in 1797, represents 'Doughty's' house as still known by that name. An old lady of our acquaintance remembers well attending balls and parties, as a young girl, at John Doughty's, which was a favorite and quite respectable place of resort early in the present century.

Under the old Connecticut laws, the regulations with regard to public houses were very strict. By the code of laws adopted in that colony in 1639, no innkeeper was allowed to sell 'more than half a pint of wine at one time to be drunk,' or to permit any guest 'to continue tippling above half an hour, or after nine o'clock at night.'[1]

[1] *Colonial Records of Connecticut*, edited by J. H. Trumbull, vol. i. p. 509.

The earliest reference to the sale of liquor in this town occurs under the date of April 17, 1789, when David Doughty was 'permitted to sell spirituous liquors without paying excise.'

April 14, 1797, 'Samuel Travis was permitted to keep a Tavern in the House which David Doughty formerly occupied — the Town to refund back money he shall pay for a permit for the same.'[1]

Of the drinking habits of our early settlers, we have other traces besides the maintenance of so many public houses. Even those who brought with them something of the rigidity of Puritan manners, had their drinking cups and tankards at hand.[2] But there is reason to believe that they exercised a comparative moderation in the use of spirituous liquors. At a later day, we hear much of the prevalence of drunkenness in this community. The Rev. Mr. Muirson writes, in 1707, 'Swearing and drinking and Sabbath-breaking' are the vices that are 'chiefly predominant.'[3] And Mr. Wetmore, schoolmaster at Rye, complains in 1765, that 'many of our people are too much addicted to the taverns.'[4]

[1] Records of Town Meetings.

[2] The inventory of the estate of John Hoyt, 1684, mentions, among his scanty effects, 'one quart pot, two pint pots, one gill pot, one drinking cup, one old quart pot, one tunnil.' (County Records, vol. A. p. 80.)

The last will and testament of Francis Brown, 1685, requires that his wife shall 'pay Captain Silleck for the cider I bought of him this last fall, [out] of the gear, and take in my bill.' Rye Records, vol. B. p. v. (end.)

[3] Bolton's *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Westchester County*, p. 181.

[4] *Ibid.* p. 312. 'To the *dissenting meeting*, taverns, and slothfulness on the Lord's day,' is Mr. Wetmore's mournful language.

The custom of furnishing liquor at funerals prevailed here a hundred years ago, as appears from the following entry in the Vestry-book of the parish: 'March 13, 1759. To Ebenezer Kniffin, for half a Gallon Rum for y^e^ Burying of Patrick Holoday.'

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE WHITE PLAINS.

1683–1788.

THE tract of land known to the natives as Quaroppas, and called by our settlers 'The White Plains,' was purchased by them from the Indians in the year 1683. The treaty was as follows: —

'To all Christian peopell to hom these presence shall com greting Know yee that we Shapham, Cockinseko Orewapum Kewetoahon, Koawanoh Paatck Shiphattash Korehwewous panawok memishott pesekanoh oromahqah pathunck hohoreis sotonge wonawaking owhorawas nosband:: have for a valuabell sum of mony to us In hand paid by the towne of Rye that are inhabitance bargained Covinanted alinated and soulld unto the Inhabitance of the above said town of Rye A sartain tract of land Lying within the town bounds of Rye Bounded as followeth on the north east with mamarinek River and on the Southweast with a branch of the said River and marked trees till it coms to brunckes River and then to Runn by brunckes River till it Comes to the head of the whit plaines soe called and by marked trees from thence till it comes to the uppermost branch of marrinneck River which trackt of Land is commonly called by the English the whit plaines and called by the Indians Quaroppas which said tract of Land wee the above said shapham Cockinceeko orewopum kewetoakon koawanoh moahalice and

The White Plains in 1721.

the Rest of the above said endians have soulld as above said unto the Inhabitance of the said towne of Rye them theire heires Execatars administratars or asignes for ever and Doe hereby bind our selves our heires exectars Administratars and asignes unto the Inhabitance of the above said towne of Rye them theire heires Execatars administratars or asignes that they may att all times from and after the date hereof peasably and quieatly poses occupy and injoy the above said tract of land free from all former bargaines salles morgages or other incombrances what so ever and all soe to warrant and make good the above said salle against any parson or parsons what so ever that shall or will make or lay any claime or claimes theare unto and In teastimony there of wee have caused this bill of salle to be made and here unto haue sett our hands and sealles this two and twentieth of November one thousand six hundred Eighty three.

Sealed signed and delivered
in the presents of us
CORNEILASS
his marke
JOSHUA KNAP
the marke of
MOTEPEATEHON
JOHN ODELL
his mark

This bill of salle is acknowledged by the granters to be their ackt and deed before me in Rye the day and yere aboue written
JOSEPH HORTON
Comissioner.

the marke of
SHAPHAM
COKENSEKO
OROWAPAM
KEWETOHAM
KOAWANOH
MOAHPOATCH
PATTHUNK
HOHORNIS
SOTONGE
OWHORAWAS
ORAMAPUAH'

But the inhabitants of Rye were met at once by an opposing claimant in the person of Mr. John Richbell, of Mamaroneck. This gentleman, a native of England, had bought of the Indians in 1660, about the same time that Disbrow effected the purchase of Peningo Neck, the lands adjoining the town of Rye on the west. His right to these lands was confirmed in 1662 by the authorities of New Netherland; and in 1668 by the government of New York. Mr. Richbell's patent gave him possession of the 'three necks' bounded on the east by Mamaroneck River, and on the west by Stony Brook; together with the land lying north of these bounds, 'twenty miles into the woods.' The claim thus set up conflicted manifestly with the pretensions of the settlers of Rye. As the border town of Connecticut, they conceived that their bounds extended westward as far as the western line of that colony. This, we have seen, was 'a line drawn from the east side of Momoronock river, north north west to the line of Massachusetts.' But negotiations were now pending between Connecticut and New

York for a more satisfactory settlement of that boundary; and on the twenty-eighth of November, 1683, the two governments agreed upon a line, to begin at the mouth of Byram River. Meanwhile, doubtless anticipating this decision, the inhabitants of Rye, on the twenty-second of November, only six days before the date of that agreement, concluded a treaty with the Indian proprietors of the White Plains for the purchase of that tract. They describe it as 'lying *within the town bounds of Rye.*' A week later the description would have been incorrect.

Long after this, however, we may observe by the way, the people of Rye clung to the indefinite right which the earlier boundary treaties gave them. 'The old colony line' running from Mamaroneck River, so as to include the White Plains Purchase and a good deal more, was often referred to in their deeds and town acts as the western limit of Rye. It was difficult for them to come down from the large ideas with which their forefathers had commenced the settlement, to the consciousness of their very moderate importance.

Mr. Richbell was not inclined to yield his claims upon a territory which he had now held for twenty-three years. On the twelfth of March, 1684, he petitioned the governor, Colonel Dongan, on the subject: 'Haveing a Desire to dispose of some Quantity of said Land which is Called the White Plaines,' and which was comprehended in his patent, 'to severall Persons to settle thereon with themselves and familyes,' he is 'wholly obstructed and hindered by *Rye men*,' who have 'made a great Disturbance amongst them and Pretends a right to the same.' He cannot therefore dispose of any part of these lands until the governor 'will be pleased to grant an Order to clear the same.'[1]

This complaint came before the Council at Fort James on the seventeenth of March; and the inhabitants of Rye, or some to be deputed by them for that purpose, were summoned to show cause at the next Court of Assize in Westchester County, why the said lands do not of right belong and appertain to Mr. John Richbell.[2]

The dispute appears to have remained unsettled. Mr. Richbell died soon after this, and the greater part of his lands, including all the northern portion, came into the possession of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote. In 1701 Colonel Heathcote obtained a confirmation of his rights to the Richbell estate by purchasing again from the Indians the 'necks' formerly known as East and Great Neck, now

[1] Land Papers, Albany, vol. ii. p. 30.

[2] Council Minutes, Albany, No. V. 47. (Quoted by Mr. Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. i. p. 291.)

called Orienta and Larchmont, with the lands lying north of them along Mamaroneck River to its source, and across to the Bronx.[1]

This tract included the whole of the present town of Scarsdale, for which Colonel Heathcote immediately obtained letters patent from the British crown, securing to him that territory, and constituting the 'lordship' or manor of Scarsdale. But his Indian grants included also the whole of the *White Plains*, which the inhabitants of Rye had purchased from the Indians in 1683, and where some of them were already settled, though no division of the lands had yet been made. This new encroachment on their limits occurred just at the close of their unsuccessful attempt to return to the colony of Connecticut. Having failed to recover the lands appropriated by Harrison, the people of Rye probably had little hope of resisting these claims. Colonel Heathcote, however, seems to have been disposed to treat them with great fairness. In the charter which he obtained for his lands, exception was made of 'y^e^ land called White Plains, *which is in dispute* between y^e^ said Caleb Heathcote and some of y^e^ inhabitants of y^e^ town of Rye.' To that land the patent gives him no further title than he already possesses. The following action of the inhabitants refers to this matter: —

'At a meeting held by the Properities of the White Plains purchase, Febeweary the 24, 1701–2, Hacaliah Browne and Deliverance Browne, and Humphery Underhill, Thomas Merit sener, Isaac Denham, John Stokham and Benjamin Horton are chosen a Committy in the behalf of the above said Proprietors to agree with Coll. Heatcoote consarning the runing of a line between said Coll. Heatcoote's patent and said White Plains purchase as they shall see good; and what line shall be mutually agreed upon betweene the said Commity and Coll. Heatcoote, the said Properities do ingage for themselves and their heirs and successors to stand and abide by forever; and what else the said Commitie mutually agrees upon shall be held good by them and their associates for ever.'[2]

The controversy was still pending in 1702, when 'the Rev. Mr. Christopher Bridge, Mr. Hacaliah Browne, Ensign John Horton, Capt. Joseph Bude, and Mr. John Hoytt are chosen to treat with the Honrble Conl. Caleb Hathcut about the White Plaine purchase, and to make returne to the Proprietors of their treat upon what termes the Hon. Coll. Hathcut will agree with them to acquit all his claime of the above said White Plaine purchase.'[3]

[1] Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. i. p. 293.

[2] Town and Proprietors' Book, No. C. p. 20.

[3] Records of Town Meetings, p. 9.

At the time of Colonel Heathcote's death, which occurred about four years later, this question was still unsettled, but it does not appear that any claim upon these lands was made by the heirs to his estate.

Owing doubtless to these uncertainties and differences, the White Plains Purchase remained undivided for many years. Occasionally, from 1683 to 1715, we find in the town records entries like the following, which show that the inhabitants had their eyes upon this precious inheritance, and meant to keep it for future distribution : —

April 12, 1694, 'Hachaliah Brown and Thomas Merrit are appointed to go with the Indians and renew the marks of the White Plains purchase, agreeing with the Indians as reasonably as they can.' [1]

April 1, 1699, 'John Lyon and Isaac Denham are chosen to laye out a rode to the White Playnes, begining at the head of Capt. Theall's land, and so to run to the caseaway [causeway ?] brook.'

April 17, 1699, 'The town hath past an act that the Rode shall continue . . . up to the White Playnes where John Lyon and Isaac Denham have marked it out, and the said Road to be 3 Rods in breadth.'

February 14, 1699–1700, Lieutenant Horton and others 'are to survay and lay out the three purchases of land, that is to saye, the White Plains purchase, and Lame Will's two purchases.'

April 27, 1708, the town 'chose Ensign Budd in the room of Captain Horton [deceased] to lay out lands in the White Plains purchase and Will's two purchases, according to the town's acts.' [2]

Finally, 'at a meeting held in Rye by the Proprietors of the White Plaines purchase, Febeuery the 11, 1714–15,' Captain Joseph Budd, Ensign John Horton, Mr. John Hoyt, Samuel Purdy, Caleb Hiat, and George Lane, junior, 'are chosen to rectify all mistakes that has been formerly made by the former layers out of the White Plaines purchase, and also has power to add or diminish the just and true proportion of all the lotments of land which is in dispute to be above or under the true proportion, and to lay out proporsiable all the remaining part of the abovesaid purchase; and when so done to make return to the said proprietors.' [3]

This committee appear to have completed their work in the year 1720. The lands divided were apportioned to forty-one proprie-

[1] Records, vol. A. (Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 340.)
[2] Town Meeting Books, C. and G.
[3] Records of Town Meetings, p. 9.

tors,[1] all of whom were inhabitants of the town of Rye. It is not known what number of acres were contained in this division, which was soon followed by others.[2] Nor do we know positively how far the lands thus divided were actually appropriated to the persons named. But in the following year, 1721, certain individuals who had already settled upon lands in White Plains, obtained from the British government a patent for themselves and their associates, for the whole tract of four thousand four hundred and thirty-five acres.

These persons were Joseph Budd, John Hoit, Caleb Hoit, Humphrey Underhill, Joseph Purdy, George Lane, Daniel Lane, Moses Knap, John Horton, David Horton, Jonathan Lynch, Peter Hatfield, James Travis, Isaac Covert, Benjamin Brown, John Turner, David Ogden, and William Yeomans. Several of them were actual settlers. The diagram at the head of this chapter shows the location of their lands and houses. It is copied from the map accompanying a survey of the tract made before the granting of the patent.[3]

The settlement at the White Plains drew largely on the strength of the community at Rye. Several of its most enterprising inhabitants removed thither about this time. Some branches of nearly

[1] The list is given by Mr. Bolton, who found it in the first volume of the Rye Records, now lost, to which he had access. (*Hist. Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 341.)

Joseph Horton,	Caleb Hiat,	Joseph Budd,	Richard Walter,
Isaac Denham,	Samuel Hoyt,	Philip Galpin,	Andrew Coe,
Francis Purdy,	Timothy Knap,	R'd Lounsbery,	Thos. Jeffrey,
Deliverance Brown,	Jacob Pearse,	John Galpin,	Isaac Sherwood,
Geo. Lane,	Geo. Kniffin,	John Horton,	Jos. Sherwood,
Thos. Brown,	Joseph Purdy,	Joseph Horton,	Francis Brown,
John Frost,	Benj. Horton,	Henry Disbrow,	Wm. Odell,
Peter Brown,	Isaac Odell,	Garret Travis,	Jonas Sherwood,
Peter Disbrow,	Joseph Galpin,	John Stoakham,	Thos. Lyon,
John Merrit,	John Hoyt,	Jonathan Fowler,	John Brondig,

Hachaliah Brown.

[2] The '*fifth* or last division of the White Plains purchase' is mentioned in 1751. Records, C. 267.

[3] The references in the diagram are explained as follows in the original drawing: — 'A, Caleb Hyat's. B, Joseph Purdy's. C, Humphrey Underhill's. D, Sam[l] Merritt's. E, Sam[l] Hunt's. F, Sam[l] Hunt's Mill. G, Sam[l] Hoit's. H, John Hoit's. I, George Lane's. K, Dan[l] Brundige's. L, James Travis. M, Moses Knap's. N, John Hyat's. O, Dan[l] Lane's. P, Sam[l] Horton's. Q, Christ[r] Yeomans. R, Anthony Miller's. S and T, Dan[l] Brundige's Bound Trees. U, Beginning of Mr. Bridge's Patent. V, Y[e] Bound Tree between Mr. Bridge and Sam[l] Hunt. W, Y[e] Bound Tree between Humphrey Underhill and Sam[l] Hunt a, Y[e] road to Mamaroneck. b, Road to East Chester. c, Road up to y[e] woods. d, Road to Hudson's Ferry. e, Road to Mr. Phillips' Mills. f, Road to Bedford. g, Road to California Patent [*sic*]. h, Road to Rye. i, Road to Budd's Neck.'

all the ancient families established themselves there, and indeed those families are now represented there more numerously than in the parent settlement.

There was a Presbyterian church at the White Plains as early as the year 1727. It stood on or near the site of the present edifice. The land — three quarters of an acre — upon which it was built, appears to have been a part of the farm of the Rev. John Walton, the first minister who officiated here.[1] In 1730 a 'highway was laid out in the White Plains, beginning at the street near y^e^ Meeting house, running four rods wide by marked trees till it comes to the Bridge over Bronckes' river near John Garritson's.'[2]

In 1759 the county courts were removed from Westchester to the White Plains, and a building for their accommodation was erected on the site of what is now called the old Court House.

Of the memorable scenes that occurred here during the Revolution, we shall speak in the proper place. After the war, in 1788, the White Plains became a town distinct from Rye, of which it had till then formed a part.

[1] Rye Records, vol. D. p. 188.

[2] Record of Highways, White Plains, p. 32

CHAPTER XIX.

OCCUPATIONS: THE POOR.

'The spinsters, corders, fullers, weavers.'
King Henry VIII.

OUR ancient inhabitants were wont to call themselves, for the most part, by the humble but honest name of 'yeomen.' They were farmers, living frugally upon the produce of the soil. Most of their wants were supplied by domestic industry; and what they purchased was commonly procured in the way of barter. 'They trafficked chiefly,' we are told, in 'wood and cattle.'

By the middle of the last century, however, we find quite a variety of trades carried on in Rye: such as those of wheelwrights, cordwainers, carpenters, saddlers, tailors, hatters, weavers, rope makers, and the like. We are not to suppose that the persons so designated were employed exclusively in these occupations. They were generally farmers, who joined some kind of handicraft to their ordinary business, particularly in winter. The weaver's or wheelwright's shop was no unusual appendage to a farm-house a century ago.

As in all old-time rural places, these occupations were very generally pursued by the same families age after age. In one branch of an ancient family, for instance, the designation 'house-carpenter' occurs through as many as four successive generations. Another family is said almost to have covered the lower part of Budd's Neck with its 'rope-walks.' And others of our inhabitants, even to the present day, show a long transmitted fondness for the fisherman's goodly craft, which their remote ancestors followed along the same shoals and shores.

Rye, from early times, rejoiced in a considerable number of *millers*. Our numerous streams afforded excellent facilities for mills. Of these we find fifteen or twenty in operation before the period of the Revolution. The first established were grist-mills. John Budd's, afterwards known as Lyon's mill, on Blind Brook Creek, was built some time before the year 1669. Not long after, perhaps, the mill on the opposite side of Rye Neck was built by

the same proprietor on Mamaroneck River. In 1696, Samuel Lane and Joseph Lyon received permission from the town to build a mill on Blind Brook, — the location of which is supposed to be that now occupied by Park's mill. This was long known as Bloomer's mill: and there were at least two others, above it, on the same stream. What is now known as Davenport's mill, near the outlet of Stony Brook, was owned in the latter part of the last century by Justice Gilbert Bloomer; and that now known as Van Amringe's was formerly Deall's mill.[1] In 1705, Samuel Hunt had leave to build a grist-mill on Mamaroneck River at the falls above Henry Underhill's. He must build within two years, and 'grind the town's corn for the 14th part.' In 1711, Richard Ogden was allowed to build a mill on Byram River, 'between the *lower going over* and the country road.' Peter Brown's fulling-mill stood in 1731 in the rear of the late 'Penfield House,' — now owned by the family of the late D. H. Mead. Kirby's mill was built about a hundred years ago, by one Wright Frost. Colonel Thomas' mill is indicated on our revolutionary chart of 1779: it stood near the cross road from Harrison post-office to King Street. Kennedy's mill is marked on a map of Rye in 1798.

No early mention is made of saw-mills at Rye. The first settlers built their houses without the aid of this useful instrument. Not only the beams, but even the planks and shingles, were hewn and shaped by hand.

But beside these various employments, our inhabitants had abundant opportunities of making or eking out a livelihood by 'following the water.' The title 'mariner' soon appears as an occasional substitute for 'yeoman.' Within a few years after the settlement of the town, there were several docks or landings along our shore. From these, small fishing craft put out into the Sound, and before long a few sloops or barges sailed to Oyster Bay and to New York. A century ago, most of the families composing the little village of Saw Pit derived their support from these pursuits. So too did many of those living on the lower part of Rye Neck. This familiarity with the water prepared them to engage actively, as they did, in expeditions of various kinds upon the Sound during the Revolutionary War.

A hundred years ago, the oyster fishery had become quite an important business at Rye. In 1753, much excitement was caused

[1] This mill, however, is not as ancient as it is generally supposed to be. Permission to build a dam across the mouth of the creek known as 'Horseneck creek,' was granted by an act of legislature about the year 1790.

by a 'great destruction of our oysters in Byram river.' Certain persons were 'getting great Quantities with Rakes, to Burn into Lyme.' A town meeting was called, and the inhabitants 'agreed and voted that no person or persons shall hereafter during the said year presume to take and destroy said oysters,' under penalty of a fine of forty shillings for each offence. Half of this sum was to go to the complainant, and the other half to the poor. This act was confirmed yearly until the time of the Revolution.[1]

The 'New York Gazette' of July 3, 1765, records the sad end of one of our Rye fishermen.

'On Tuesday evening, about eight o'clock, one Godfrey Haynes, who followed the business of Lobster Catching for this Market, and has a family in Rye — went into the water to swim near Burling's Slip; but not appearing again, his son, a young man about 21, and another man, went in search of him, and found his hand above water, holding the edge of the boat, his body and head under water: but he was entirely dead. They tried all methods that could be thought of to recover him, but in vain. From the time he went into the water till he was taken out was less than six minutes. The Coroner's inquest brought in their verdict — Accidental Death.'

Besides the market sloops that sailed from Saw Pit, Rye, and Rye Neck to New York, there were some larger vessels belonging here, and sailing to distant ports. Mention is made in 1774 of a 'Whaling Sloop belonging to Mamaroneck.' In 1771, Captain Abraham Bush, of Rye, advertises that 'on a voyage from the eastward, coming out of Milford harbour,' he discovered a scow and boom which he rescued and brought into port.[2] The same Captain Bush, on the twenty-sixth of September, 1785, 'was cast away and drowned with all his crew, consisting of five persons, including himself,' in a violent hurricane that occurred off the coast of North Carolina.[3]

As to the farming of olden times, though deficient in modern improvements, it possessed some advantages by no means to be despised. The sturdy yeomen of the Purchase and Byram Ridge seem not unusually to have been blest with numerous sons, content to follow the plough over their paternal acres, and not yet

[1] The last entry in the Town Records before the Revolution relates to the recent discovery of 'a Bed of young Oysters on the East side of the old Colony line joining to Mamaroneck Harbour lying Between Gilbert Budd's Neck and Hog Island.'

[2] Hugh Gaine's *New York Gazette and The Weekly Mercury*, Monday, July 1, 1771.

[3] Family Record in the possession of Mr. A. Theall.

possessed by the longing for city life. Land was plentiful and cheap, and the soil fresh and productive.

'A Good Farm in the Town of Rye,' is advertised in the 'New York Weekly Post-Boy' of March 5, 1743. It consists of 'a good house and barn, an orchard of five acres, with nearly three hundred apple-trees: about eighty acres of ploughed land: near fifteen acres of English Meadow, and about fifty acres of land yet untilled.'

We have a graphic description of the farms and the farming in this region, as they appeared in 1789, from the pen of General Washington. Writing at Mrs. Haviland's, in Rye, he speaks of the land he had passed through during the day, as 'strong, well covered with grass and a luxuriant crop of Indian Corn intermixed with Pompions (which were yet ungathered [1]) in the field. We met four droves of Beef Cattle for the New York Market (about thirty in a drove) some of which were very fine — also a flock of Sheep for the same place. We scarcely passed a farm house that did not abound in Geese. Their Cattle seemed to be of a good quality, and their hogs large, but rather long legged. No dwelling house is seen without a Stone or Brick Chimney, and rarely any without a shingled roof — *generally* the sides are of shingles also. The farms are very close together, and separated, as one enclosure after another also is, by fences of stone, which are indeed easily made, as the country is immensely stoney.' [2]

The stone walls here spoken of had but lately taken the place of the rail fences which prevailed throughout this region before the Revolution. During the war these had all been consumed as fuel, and the whole country at the close of that period lay open and waste. In the great abundance of timber in early times, farmers made little use of stone for walls. The rock that cropped out of the soil in their fields was generally undisturbed, while smaller stones were gathered in cairn-like heaps, out of the ploughman's way.

The Poor. — Under the Connecticut laws, the poor were 'to be relieved by the townes where they live, every towne providing for theire own poore: and so for impotent persons. There is seldom any want releife, because labour is deare . . . . and provisions cheap.' [3]

[1] The date of this entry is October 15th.

[2] *Diary of Washington, from the first day of October,* 1789, *to the tenth day of March,* 1790. New York, 1858: pp. 19, 20.

[3] Answers to Queries of the Privy Council, July 15, 1680: *Public Records of Connecticut,* vol. iii. p. 300.

The Vestry of Rye, about whom we shall have more to say hereafter, had among other cares the charge of the town poor. This was made their duty by the Act of 1693, 'for Settling a Ministry' in the province of New York; which provided for the maintenance of the minister, and also of the poor, in each of the parishes constituted by that law. The sum required for both purposes was to be raised by a tax on the inhabitants; the justices and vestrymen being required to lay the tax, which the constable was to collect.

Nothing is said, however, of any appropriation for this purpose at Rye until the year 1725, when the Vestry agreed that there should be raised, besides the money 'for y^e^ Minister,' the sum of eight pounds 'for y^e^ Poor.' This moderate amount appears to have sufficed for several years. But in time the duties of the Vestry accumulate. Bills come in for the boarding of paupers; for medical attendance; for funeral expenses, including the usual allowance of 'Rum'; for transporting vagrants to other parishes. These items bring up the sum required to forty or fifty pounds sometimes, and even to ninety or one hundred.

Just before the Revolution, we find introduced in Rye the custom of putting up the poor *at auction*. Before this, they had been taken in to board with families, whose bills, if approved, were paid by the Vestry. But in 1775, 'the Justices and Vestry agreed that the poor of the parish should be sett at vandue to the Lowest bidder, and that the Clark of the vestry put public advertizement for the same.' And next year 'pursuant to the advertizement for the sale of the poor of the parish of Rye, the poor was at vandue sold' at the house of John Doughty (lately Van Sicklin's). The four or five paupers thus disposed of were bidden off at various prices, from six to twelve pounds each; and notice was given that 'whoever takes them or any of them are to find him, her or them with comfortable Clothes, Meat, Washing and Lodging, and return them as well clothed as they receive them.' This transaction, however, was not as barbarous as it appears. The sale was simply a contract with parties who engaged to support the poor at the least expense to the Vestry, and the sums named represent the amounts they were willing to take for their board.[1]

The parochial system ceased at the time of the Revolution, and the Vestry of Rye became a defunct institution. After the war, the care of the poor devolved in this county as elsewhere upon the county officers. In 1784, the board of supervisors had 'a

[1] Records of the Vestry.

settlement with the late Church wardens and other persons concerned of the late Parish of Rye, for the arrears due for supporting the poor, within the same.' They found that the sum of £397 2*s.* 1*d.* was due to the said parish. The money for this purpose was ordered to be levied from the several towns and precincts within the bounds of the late parish.[1]

The care of the poor in olden times involved some preventive measures which have a quaint look to modern eyes. In 1716, Jonathan Haight of Rye informs the Court of Sessions at Westchester, that 'one Thomas Wright, an orphan in that town, hath no certain Place of Abode there, but lives like a Vagabond and at a loose end, and will undoubtedly come to Ruine unless this Court take some speedy and effectual care for y^e^ prevention thereof.'[2] Persons in a destitute condition who belonged to other places were summarily removed thither by the town officers. Worthy John Doughty, constable of Rye just before the Revolution, appears to have been kept busy in this way. The supervisors in 1773 allow his charges 'for transporting of one Deborough Con *sundry times*, and her child; and also for transporting Christian Fulday alias Christian Torner, £1 5*s.* 6*d.*' Some other provisions, which are still carried out under the poor laws of England, were in force here for the prevention of pauperism.

[1] Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors, 1869: Appendix, pp. 33, 46.

[2] County Records, White Plains, vol. D. p. 68.

CHAPTER XX.

PHYSICIANS AND LAWYERS.

1724–1870.

RYE appears to have been without a resident physician for the first sixty years. Judging from the accounts we read of the medical profession in those days the loss may not have been very serious. 'During the greater part of the colonial period,' that profession is said to have been 'totally unregulated. Quacks, said a colonial historian, abound like locusts in Egypt.'[1]

Our people probably depended for medical aid, as they did for many other conveniences, on the neighboring town of Stamford. At Stamford there were professors of the healing art as early as the beginning of the last century. Twelve miles were quite a distance to 'send for the doctor,' but the circuits of old-time physicians extended often to even greater lengths. Mrs. Sarah Bates, 'a useful and skilful' female practitioner of Stamford, was one of 'several ancient dames of the town, in whose hands,' says Mr. Huntington, 'for the first hundred years, probably, was most of the medical practice known here.'[2] A letter of hers, dated July 30, 1690, to a patient in Rye, lies before me.[3]

Dr. Devaney is the first physician whose name is on record here. It occurs in the Vestry Book, under the date of 1724. His charge of £3 19*s.* for attendance on 'a poor man that dyed

[1] Discourse of De Witt Clinton, quoted in *The Bland Papers*, p. 19, from *The Independent Reflector*.

[2] *History of Stamford, Conn.*, by Rev. E. B. Huntington: pp. 360, 361.

[3] This letter is in the possession of Dr. D. J. Sands, Port Chester. We give it as a curiosity: —

'Loveing freind my respects to you: I am sorry for your present sicknes I am not well [enough] to come to you upon your desire which I should be ready to doe if [I] were well: if god please I shall direct as I have sent you a potion of pills: take as soone as y^e^ messenger returns in a litle honey: and if your vomiting still follow you: take about half a gil of brandy if you can git it two spoonfuls of salit oyle two sponfuls of lofe sugar nutmeg: mix it together and drinke it aply mint with rum or brandy to his stomocke: this I know hath been found good in y^e^ like distemp^r^ . . . Sarah Bates.

'Stanford: 30^th^ July: 1690.'

at Joseph Horton's house,' is the only mention made of him or of his services.

Dr. Worden is the next on our list. He practised in Rye about the year 1738. The only person of this name then living here, so far as we have learned, was one *Valentine* Worden, who in 1742 resided on King Street. Dr. Worden appears in the Vestry records under circumstances which many of his professional brethren can appreciate. One Margaret Stringham, daughter of Peter Stringham, was his patient. She was sick and lame, and was chargeable to the parish. After some months' attendance from him she was removed to Bedford, to 'be placed conveniently where Dr. Ayers, who takes care of her, may readily attend her.' Next year she is carried to Long Island to be put under the care of Dr. Joseph Hinchman, who in due time brings a bill of £30 for his services against the Vestry, and upon their refusal to pay it as 'unreasonable,' sues them and recovers costs and damages. Whether the patient derived any benefit from this change of physicians we do not learn.

Dr. William Bowness[1] practised here in 1739, and Dr. William Alleson in 1747. Nothing further is known of either.

Dr. John Smith was a practising physician at Rye in 1747. This was the *Rev.* John Smith, for nearly thirty years pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Rye and the White Plains. He was settled here in 1742, and died in 1771. According to some of his descendants, Dr. Smith was distinguished for his medical skill, particularly in the treatment of the insane. His recipes are said to have been kept in the family and followed with great success long after his death. The records of the Vestry of Rye contain the following notices of his practice: —

'January 12, 1747. To Mr. John Smith for Doctering Widdow Merritt in y^e^ long [lung] feavour £1. 0. 0.'

'January 9, 1749. The Justices and Vestrymen present do order the Church wardens to pay out of the Money now raised for the Poor, ... to Dr. John Smith for Doctering Francis Parker £5. 0. 0 if Cured by the first day of May nexte: if *then not cured* then to have but £3. 10. 0.'

'January 15, 1750–51. The Justices' order payment 'to Dr. John Smith for Doctoring a sick woman at Benjamin Brown £1. 2. 0.'

Dr. William Hooker Smith is mentioned frequently from 1753 to 1771. He was the oldest son of Dr. John Smith, and

[1] 'March the 23^d^ 1763, Allowed to the Executors of Dr. William Bowness, etc., £8 0. 0.' (Vestry Book, p. 155.)

appears to have practised with his father, and to have succeeded him at Rye. Dr. William H. Smith entered the American army as surgeon at the outbreak of the Revolution, and remained in the service until the close of the war. He appears to have discharged the duties of his office with credit, serving for several years as the only officer of the medical staff at the post to which he was assigned.

Dr. Peter Hugeford practised in Rye as early as the year 1753, and continued until near the commencement of the Revolution. He is last mentioned in 1772. He resided in the town of Courtland, and was probably, says Dr. Fisher, 'the first regular physician in the northwestern portion of Westchester County. He was an Englishman by birth and education, and was unquestionably an accomplished medical practitioner. He was certainly a gentleman of the decided English stamp, as can be seen by his full-length portrait which now hangs in an ancient parlor of his granddaughter, Mrs. Betsey Field, a widow of over eighty years, residing near the village of Peekskill. Dr. Hugeford had many students of medicine. Being a royalist, he retired to the British army when war was declared. His fine farm of two hundred acres was confiscated, and subsequently given by government to John Paulding, for his services as one of the three distinguished captors of Major André, the British spy. Dr. Hugeford was probably the most accomplished physician of his day in this country.'[1]

Dr. Nicholas Bailey practised medicine in Rye for a number of years previous to the Revolution. He is first mentioned in 1758. He lived about a mile above the village of New Rochelle, where his house, which is indicated on the map of 1779, was still standing a few years ago. He had an extensive practice, as I learn from Dr. Albert Smith, at the time that his father, Dr. Matson Smith, came to New Rochelle in 1777; he died two or three years after. Dr. Bailey was of French Huguenot extraction. The name was originally Besley.

Dr. David Daton practised medicine here about the year 1768. He was a resident of Newcastle, however, and his name occurs for several years previous to the Revolution as supervisor of that town. Once it is written *Dayton*, which is probably the more correct spelling.

[1] *Biographical Sketches of the Distinguished Physicians of Westchester County, N. Y.*, being the Annual Address before the Westchester County Medical Society, June 1, 1858. By George J. Fisher, A. M., M. D. New York, 1861: p. 52.

Dr. Robert Graham practised here in 1771 and in 1775.

Dr. Willet was a practising physician in Harrison's Purchase, where he resided about the time of the Revolution.

Dr. John Augustus Graham resided at the same period in the village of the White Plains, and was a leading patriot. His name appears very often in the records of the Committee of Safety for Westchester County.

Dr. Nathaniel Downing resided here in 1763. His name occurs in connection with a subject which was just then agitating our community in common with others, that of *Inoculation*. This method of preventing the contagion of small-pox — by introducing into the system a minute portion of the virus, and thus communicating the disease in a mild and comparatively harmless form — was extensively used a hundred years ago. It awakened, however, the liveliest fears of the ignorant everywhere ; and in some places inoculation was absolutely forbidden, and physicians performing it were rendered liable to severe penalties. In Rye, it appears to have been permitted under certain regulations, which betray the same prejudices and misapprehensions that prevailed elsewhere. April 4, 1763, James Wetmore, in Rye, on the post-road, 'acquaints all persons that are disposed to be inoculated, that they may be well accommodated' at his house, 'where constant attendance will be given by Doctor Nathaniel Downing (as he boards at said house) who has inoculated a Number of persons there that have had the Small Pox uncommonly light.'[1] September 23, 1763, 'The pleasant situated house at *Rye Ferry*, where inoculation was carried on last fall and Winter with great success,' is advertised as 'now provided with genteel accommodations, for all those who are inclined to be inoculated for the Small Pox the ensuing season at a very moderate price : and as the greatest care and attention will be given by the Doctors and Nurses, provided for the patients ; it is hoped that the usual success and encouragement will be continued.'[2]

But the inhabitants watched these proceedings with an evil eye. Their alarm and displeasure found vent before long 'at a lawful town meeting' which was held at the school-house in Rye, April 2, 1765. They think it —

'Nesecery that wharas sum persons have in said town in their own houses tacken percons from other places into their familes and sum of the Inhabitents of said town and their hath ben anocelated with the Small pox whereby it hath put maney of the Inhabitents in fear of

[1] *New York Gazette.* [2] *New York Gazette and Weekly Post-Boy.*

cetching of the same whereby the said town's people as well as straglers could not pass about their lawfull accasions, to do their Buisness for Remedy whereof it is anacted by a vote in said town meting that no person or persons shall after the day of the date hereof tacke into their houses or family any person or suffer them to be inocleted in their said houses or nurse the same unless it shall be in such houses as any two of his maiestyes Justices of the peace and the Supervisor of said town shall thinck it a Convenant place and from a publick Road and not nigh to naighbours under the penelty of five pound Each person or persons as shall be inocalated and that in Case any docter or phision or other person or percons Shall assume to Inocalate unless at such places as said justices and Supervisor of said town shall premitt such docter phercion or other person so offending shall pay the sum of forty shillings for each percon or persons they shall Inocalate with the Smoall Pox and the fines and forfitures arising here from shall be Recovered in a Summorey way Before aney one of his maiestyes justices peace who upon proof to awoard Execution there on the one half to the Complaynor that shall sue for the same and the other half to the poor of said town. The above was this day unamously voted at said meeting as *law* for the year Ensuing.'[1]

Dr. Ebenezer Haviland was living at Rye in 1766, and appears to have had an extensive practice. He entered the army upon the outbreak of the Revolution, and served through the greater part of the war as a surgeon. He died at Wallingford, Conn., about the close of the war.

The Journal of the Provincial Congress of New York contains the following: 'August 4, 1775, A Certificate of D^r^ John Jones and D^r^ Bard was read and filed. Those gentlemen thereby certify that they have examined D^r^ Ebenezer Haviland, respecting his knowledge of Physick and Surgery, and that they find him very competently qualified to act as Surgeon of a Regiment.' Upon this recommendation, he was appointed 'Surgeon to the Fourth Regiment of the Troops raised in this Colony.'[2]

Since the Revolution, Rye has been favored with the services of a number of able and successful physicians. For the following account of them I am chiefly indebted to my esteemed friend Dr. J. D. Sands, now the oldest practitioner in this town.

Dr. Clark Sanford, a native of Vermont, commenced the practice of medicine in the town of Greenwich, near the Connecticut State line, about the year 1790. As a large part of his practice

[1] Town Records.

[2] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. ii p. 1817.

was in the town of Rye, he may be properly mentioned as one of the physicians of this place. Dr. Sanford was noted for his skill in the treatment of a fearful epidemic known as the 'Winter Fever,' which prevailed extensively from 1812 to 1815. He was widely known to the profession as one of the first who manufactured pulverized Peruvian bark. This preparation was sold under the name of 'Sanford's Bark.' He had a mill at Glenville for grinding drugs, one of the first establishments of the kind in the country. Dr. Sanford was an eccentric man and a great smoker, usually to be seen with his pipe in his mouth. He died about the year 1820, aged over sixty years, leaving three sons, — Josephus, John, and Henry, — and two daughters.

Dr. Benjamin Rockwell commenced practice in Saw Pit, now Port Chester, about the year 1809. He was born in Lewisboro or South Salem, N. Y., about the year 1786, and was a son of Judge Nathan Rockwell of that place. Dr. Rockwell practised medicine here for twelve or fifteen years, and was regarded as a very skilful physician. He removed to the city of New York, and died there a few years ago. He had a son William, who was also a physician.

Dr. David Rogers, after practising for many years in Fairfield, Conn., removed to the town of Rye about the year 1808. He remained here until the time of his death.

He was the father of Dr. David Rogers, junior, who commenced practice in Mamaroneck before the year 1800, and removed about 1820 to the city of New York, where he died about the year 1844, aged nearly seventy. Dr. David Rogers, junior, had two sons, also physicians — Drs. David L. and James Rogers, — of New York.[1]

Dr. Charles McDonald settled in the village of Saw Pit in 1808. He was already past the meridian of life. In his younger days he had served in his professional capacity in the army of the Revolution, and was a warm and devoted patriot. His professional career in this town covered a period of about a third of a century, and was highly creditable for its skill and success. He was a portly man, weighing not less than two hundred and fifty pounds. His countenance always wore a genial smile, and he was the particular favorite of the juvenile portion of the community. Dr. McDonald died, respected and beloved by a large circle of friends, September 12, 1841, aged eighty-two years.

These old men, observes Dr. Sands, have all passed away without leaving any written memorial of their early history, education,

[1] *Biographical Sketches*, etc., by Dr. Fisher.

or professional career; a fact generally true of country practitioners; the fatigue incident to their profession, together with other inevitable duties, leaving them little time to record the progress or the results of their experience. Hence what they learn, and what they learn to discard, is lost when they cease from their labors.

Dr. Elisha Belcher, a native of Preston, now Lebanon, Conn., joined the Continental Army, and was stationed as surgeon at Greenwich, where he continued to practise medicine until within a year of his death. He died, December 1825, in his sixty-ninth year. He was eminent in his profession. Most of his practice was in this county. He had two sons, both physicians, one of whom —

Dr. Elisha R. Belcher, settled in Saw Pit in 1816, and engaged partly in the exercise of his profession and partly in mercantile pursuits. He remained here about four years, and then removed to New York, where he practised medicine up to the time of his death, which occurred some four or five years ago.

Dr. James Willson was a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons in the city of New York. He practised in the city for some years, and removed to Rye about the year 1825. He was a man of fine professional education, marked and decided in character, and successful in practice. He died in 1862.

Dr. Thomas Close was a native of Greenwich, Conn. He commenced the practice of medicine in Port Chester about the year 1830. He was much esteemed as a physician. He removed to Brooklyn in 1862.

Dr. William Stillman Stanley is a graduate of Brown University, Providence, R. I., and received the degree of M. D. from that institution in 1828. He became a resident of Mamaroneck in that year, and in 1837 removed to Rye Neck, where he has since resided.

Dr. D. Jerome Sands graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in the city of New York in 1840. Soon after he came to Port Chester, and has practised here ever since.

Dr. John H. T. Cockey is a native of Maryland, and graduated at the University of Maryland in 1832. He engaged in the practice of medicine first in Frederick County, Md., then in Litchfield County, Conn.; and after practising in New York for four years, came to Rye in May, 1855.

Dr. Seth Stephen Lounsbery graduated in 1861 at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in the city of New York. He

commenced practice in the city, and in 1862 entered the army as Assistant-Surgeon of the 170th Regiment N. Y. Volunteers. He was promoted to be Surgeon of the 156th N. Y. V., remained till the close of the war, and was mustered out of service in August, 1865. He commenced practice in October, 1865, in connection with Dr. Wm. S. Stanley, at Rye Neck.

Dr. Edward F. Mathews graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and commenced practice in Port Chester, his present location, in 1856.

Dr. Norton J. Sands graduated at the same institution in 1868, and is now engaged in the practice of his profession in Port Chester.

Dr. Granville C. Brown, homœopathic physician, is a graduate of the New York Homœopathic Medical College, 1862; he commenced practice in Port Chester in 1866.

Dr. Matthew McCollum, a practitioner of the same school of medicine, graduated at the same institution in 1863, and came to Port Chester in 1869.

The *legal* profession was not largely represented in early times in the town of Rye. The single name of Timothy Wetmore appears as that of an attorney-at-law living in this place before the Revolution. Mr. Wetmore was licensed April 26, 1770.[1] He was the son of the Rev. James Wetmore, and held a position of commanding influence in this community.

Jonathan F. Vickers, who taught school at 'Saw Pit' for some years toward the close of the last century, was familiarly known as 'lawyer' Vickers, and was engaged to some extent in the practice of the law.

Daniel Haight, Esq., attorney and counsellor-at-law in Port Chester, was admitted at the bar in 1850, and has pursued his profession in this town since that time.

Amherst Wight, junior, Esq., was admitted at the New York bar in 1849, and came to Port Chester to reside there in 1859. His father, Amherst Wight, Esq., is one of the oldest members of the bar in New York, having been admitted to practice in that city in 1816. He is still, though eighty years of years, in active business, going daily to his office in New York from Port Chester. Mr. Wight was born in Bellingham, Mass., where his father and grandfather lived and died. He came to this place in 1862.

[1] Information communicated by Dr. O'Callaghan.

CHAPTER XXI.

SCHOOLS.

UNDER the old Connecticut laws, every town of fifty householders was required to 'appoint one within their Towne to teach all such children as shall resort to him, to write and read.' The wages of this teacher were to be paid either by the parents or by the inhabitants in general. When any town should have increased to the number of one hundred householders or families, 'they shall sett vp a Grammer Schoole.' The instruction imparted at this school must be such as would fit youths for the university. These provisions were made to the intent — in the quaint language of the times — 'that Learning may not be buried in the Grave of our Forefathers.'[1]

As the population of Rye scarcely reached the lowest of these figures while the town belonged to Connecticut, these regulations were never enforced here. If anything was done for the education of the young, it was by voluntary effort.

The first mention of this matter that we find, however, implies that the people had not been very successful in such endeavors. At a meeting of the town held April 22, 1690, 'Captain Horton, Joseph Theall, and John Brondige, are chosen to procure a minister, and *if possible a schoolmaster*.'

Nothing more appears on the subject till January 29, 1711, when 'at a meeting held by the Proprietors of Peningo Neck, the said Proprietors agree by a vote to build a schoole house upon their owne charge and to sett the said house nere Tom Jeffers hill[2] below Joseph Kniffens. Sarg[t] Merrit, Richard Ogden and George Kniffen is chosen to stake out the ground where the said school house shall be sett and allso to mark out a quater of an acre of Land to be ioining to the said schoole house to lye for a garden for

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. pp. 554, 555.

[2] 'Tom Jeffers Hill' probably took its name from one Thomas Jefferies, an early settler. November 22, 1686, the town gave to Benjamin Collyer a certain house-lot, which was formerly Thomas Jefferies'. There are grounds for believing that this site is identical with that occupied until within twenty or thirty years by the district school-house in Rye, in front of the Episcopal Church.

the use of the schoole master as the said Proprietors shall see cause.'

It was also agreed that 'any person or persons that will bear his or theire proportion of moneys in building the schoole house shall have an equall privilege of the said house for schooling with the Proprietors.'[1]

There were other schools about this time in different parts of the town, of which we know but little, and that little not greatly in their favor. In 1716, one Elizabeth Shaw appears before the Court of Sessions at Westchester, and complains that 'a travelling woman who came out of y^e^ Jerseys, who kept school at several places in Rye parish, hath left with her a child eleven months old, for which she desires relief from the parish.'[2]

'As to schools,' writes the Rev. James Wetmore in 1728, 'there are several poor ones in different parts of the parish. Where a number of families live near together, they hire a man and woman at a cheap rate, subscribing every one what they will allow. Some masters get £20 per annum and their diet: but there is no public provision at all for a school in this parish.'[3]

There was no respect in which Rye lost so much by its annexation to New York as in the matter of common school education. Connecticut, like Massachusetts, showed from the first great care for the instruction of the young. Hartford established a town school as early as 1642, and in 1643 a vote was passed that 'the town shall pay for the schooling of the poor.' In 1670, it was said that one fourth of the annual revenue of the colony was laid out in maintaining free schools. In New York, no provision was made for a general system of education before the Revolution. Whatever was done for this interest was done by individuals or by religious bodies.

The society in England for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, supported a schoolmaster at Rye for a great many years. This was done originally at the instance of the Honorable Caleb Heathcote, who was active in establishing a school here about the year 1706. In 1707, Mr. Joseph Cleator[4] began teach-

[1] Town Records.

[2] County Records (White Plains), vol. D. p. 68.

[3] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 250.

[4] At a meeting held April 27, 1708, 'the town granted unto Mr. Cleator ten acres of land in the White Plains purchase; that is to say, if any of the said Cleator's family come over, then the said land is to be the said Cleator's proper right, and if not, to remain to the school.' (Town Meeting Book, No. G. p. 32.)

Mr. Cleator lived at one time in a house that stood south of the present Methodist Episcopal parsonage. (Rye Records, vol. D. p. 88.)

ing and continued to keep a school until his death, which occurred in 1732. For the last eight or ten years of his life, however, he was blind, and could only give instruction in the catechism. 'While he had his sight,' says Mr. Wetmore, 'they tell me he kept a constant and good school.'

In 1714 a Mr. Huddlestone was also engaged in teaching, under the Society's care, in some part of the parish of Rye. The parish, it should be said, included Bedford and Mamaroneck as well as the town of Rye; and the town itself comprised Harrison and the White Plains as well as its present territory.

From 1734 to 1745 Mr. Flint Dwight taught school under the same auspices at the White Plains. At Rye, Mr. Cleator was succeeded in 1733 by Mr. Samuel Purdy,[1] who continued in charge till 1749, when he removed to the White Plains, where he died in 1753. Timothy Wetmore, a son of the Rev. James Wetmore, succeeded him at Rye, and taught the school till 1769. His brother James, after a short interval, took charge of it, but gave it up at the outbreak of the Revolution, being an active supporter of the British cause.[2]

The number of children attending the Society's school at different periods is stated as follows: —

In 1719, Mr. Cleator taught 50 pupils.
In 1739, Mr. Purdy taught 41 : Mr. Dwight 46.
In 1776, Mr. Wetmore's school numbered 71.

The Society's schoolmasters at Rye acted as readers or assistants to its missionaries who were stationed here. They appear to have been humble but zealous and laborious men. Under one of them, Mr. Huddlestone, Rye may be said to have possessed a *Sunday-school* twenty years before the birth of Robert Raikes, the supposed founder of that useful institution. In 1714, we find that 'on the morning of the Lord's days, not only his own scholars, but several of the young people of the town, of both sexes, come willingly to be informed.'[3]

[1] Mr. Samuel Purdy was justice of the peace in Rye for more than thirty years, and was a man highly respected. His 'home lot of five acres,' which he conveyed in 1753 to his two sons Samuel and Caleb, comprised the present rectory grounds. (Rye Records, vol. D. p. 88.)

[2] The facts here given relative to the Gospel Propagation Society's schoolmasters at Rye, are gleaned from Mr. Bolton's ecclesiastical history of the county, *passim*.

[3] The common impression, however, that the Sunday-school originated with Robert Raikes about the year 1781 is a mistaken one. The germ of this institution appeared at the Reformation in every one of the great Evangelical Churches. Luther founded a Sunday-school at Wittenberg in 1527. Calvin, in 1541, published his Catechism, divided into portions for each Lord's day, when the children were to be instructed and catechized in the afternoon. Knox, in 1560, carried out the same system in Scotland.

This school was probably held in the building mentioned first in 1738 as 'the school-house near the Church.' It stood close upon the cross-road, and a few rods back from the post-road, in front of the Episcopal Church in the village. Here, as we have already seen, the town meetings were held for forty years or more. As to the kind of instruction given, we learn from a distinguished visitor who spent a night at Rye in 1774, 'They have a school for writing and cyphering, but no grammar school.'[1]

The year after John Adams's visit the Rev. Mr. Avery, minister of the Episcopal Church in this place, announced his purpose to establish a school of a superior kind. His advertisement appeared in the 'New York Mercury,' of April 3, 1775: —

'Rye, 13 *March*, 1775.

'TO THE PUBLIC.

'Ephraim Avery, A. M., Rector of the Parish of Rye — Intends opening a school the 18th day of April next, at his house in Rye; any gentlemen in city or country, that will favour him with the care and instruction of their children, may depend upon the utmost dilligence and attention. He will teach the reading of English properly; writing, arithmetic, the Latin and Greek languages, geography, surveying, trigonometry, &c. Particular care will be taken of their morals, and religious education, as he proposes boarding in his own family eight or ten; and in order to give them an acquaintance with the first principles of the doctrine of Christianity, he will set apart half a day in every week, to instruct them in the catechisms, and other fundamental branches of the Christian religion.

'Board, washing, lodging and tuition will be 22£ per annum, and one guinea entrance: one load of wood will likewise be expected, and four pounds of candles, for the use of the scholars in the winter evenings.

'He begs it as a particular favour of his friends to encourage his scheme, as they must be sensible a country clergyman, with a large family, can very indifferently subsist upon their small livings.

'Those that will be kind enough to promote the above design, will please to give notice of their intention before the day prefixed, that he may be provided accordingly.'

The place where Mr. Avery proposed to keep this school was probably the parsonage, across Blind Brook. It is uncertain

[1] President Adams's Works, vol. ii. p. 345.

Rye was no exception among the towns of the province in the meagreness of its educational advantages. 'Our schools,' wrote William Smith, the historian of New York, about the year 1760, 'are *of the lowest order* — the instructors want instruction.' (*History of New York*, vol. i. p. 328.)

whether his plan was carried into effect. His death, by violence, occurred November 5, 1776.

There was a certain George Harris who taught the school more or less of the time from 1762 to 1776. He was not in the employ of the English Society, and the fact which tradition establishes that he here ruled the rising generation, would lead us to suppose that the school at that period was controlled by the town, and was no longer of a denominational character. This Harris is said to have been a man of a most violent temper, exceedingly harsh and cruel in his treatment of the scholars. Some of the punishments he inflicted are described as truly barbarous. One redeeming trait he seems to have possessed, in his strong republican sympathies. According to his own account he stood in this respect alone at Rye, 'faithful among the faithless.' In 1776, he addressed a petition to the Convention of the State of New York, then in session at Harlem.

He writes from prison, having been the victim, as he says, of a conspiracy to ruin him, instigated by one Wetmore, who had been a competitor with him for the school, and had done what he could to injure him in his business. He complains that his school has been taken from him, and the use of the school-house denied him, by James Wetmore, 'the brother of that arch tory, or enemy to his country, Timothy Wetmore, who has and does yet keep up the spirit of toryism in Rye.' [1]

On Rye Neck, or Budd's Neck as it was then called, there was a school-house as early as the year 1739.[2] It stood not far from the spot where, thirty years ago, there was a little building which some of our citizens well remember as the place where they acquired the rudiments of knowledge. This was on the west side of the post-road, below the farm-house belonging to Dr. Jay. From this spot the school was removed a few years since to its present site on Barry Lane. This is now one of the most flourishing and well managed schools in the town.

There was a school in the neighborhood of Saw Pit some time before the Revolution. The school-house stood on King Street, upon land now owned by Mr. Charles White. 'The fire-place and chimney were of stone, and occupied one entire end of the building. There was no school within its walls during the Revolution. Jonathan Vickers, sometimes called 'lawyer Vickers,' taught the school during the closing years of the last century. He

[1] New York Revolutionary Papers, p. 159.

[2] Rye Records, vol. C. p. 265; vol. D. p. 39.

was succeeded by Henry Kelly about the year 1800, and he by a Mr. Chichester about the year 1802. In 1803, the old house was demolished, and a new one was erected in the course of the following year, on the east side of the street. As there was no church in the place, this was intended to serve the double purpose of church and school-house. The house was removed to what is now called King Street Square, probably about the year 1810. The present house was built in 1853, remodelled and enlarged in 1867 and 1868.' [1]

There was a school-house a few years since on Regent Street, where a small office now stands, not far from the corner of Purchase Avenue. Here one Evans B. Hollis taught school, some fifty years ago. He was an Englishman, and is said to have been an excellent teacher. He came to Rye from Sing Sing, and taught first for a while at the school near 'Saw Pit.' The school on Regent Street had existed, I am told, long before Mr. Hollis's time.

On the whole, we can say but little to the advantage of Rye in olden times, as to the vital interest of education. All we have been able to learn of the schools themselves, and the state of education among former generations, inspires us with the greatest satisfaction and thankfulness in view of the advantages which the town now possesses, in its numerous and generally excellent institutions of learning. As to the past, we fear that the remarks of President Dwight, early in the present century, relative to the moral and religious condition of the people of Westchester County, applied to Rye as much as to any other portion of the county: —

'Neither learning nor religion has within my knowledge flourished to any great extent among the inhabitants. Academies have been established at New Rochelle, Bedford, and Salem, but neither of them has permanently flourished. The ancient inhabitants had scarcely any schools, at least of any value. A few gentlemen are scattered in various parts of this county, possessing the intelligence usually found in that class of men, but the people at large are extremely stinted in their information.' [2]

Our common school system, in the State of New York, has been in operation for less than sixty years. The first act which contemplated a permanent system of common schools was passed by the legislature in 1812. It created the offices of trustee, clerk

[1] Annual Report of the Port Chester Union Free School, District No. 4 of the Town of Rye, for the Year ending October 1st, 1869, p. 5.

[2] Dr. Dwight's *Travels*, vol. iii. p. 490.

and director, for school districts, which were to be formed by the division of towns into convenient sections. Each town was required to elect three commissioners of common schools, whose first business was to form the school districts. They were the financial officers of the schools, to whom was paid the public money for distribution to the districts, and to whom the trustees were required to report. The office of State Superintendent of Common Schools was also created at this time.

In 1814, certain amendments were passed. The former act had left it to the discretion of the inhabitants of towns whether they would vote for the appropriation of money for the support of schools in addition to the State school moneys. It was now made compulsory upon boards of supervisors to levy on each town a sum equal to its distributive share of the State school moneys. The act also authorized the levy of a like sum, in addition to this, if voted by the town. The act of 1812 required trustees to have a school kept for at least three months in the year. By the amended act, failure on the part of the board of supervisors to levy the requisite sum of money, wrought a forfeiture of the school money for the county.[1]

In the town of Rye, action was taken upon the subject at the first meeting of the town after the passage of the school law. On the sixth of April, 1813, 'a vote was taken, agreeably to notice from the County Clerk that the School Fund was to be distributed; and it was carried in the affirmative, to accept of the money allotted them.' At the same meeting, school commissioners and inspectors were chosen for the first time. Messrs. Samuel Deall, Ezrahiah Wetmore, and Jared Peck were elected commissioners; and the Rev. Samuel Haskell, and Messrs. John Guion, Charles Field, and John Brown, were chosen inspectors of schools.

The division of the town into school districts was commenced in 1814. Three districts and two 'neighborhoods' were formed. A fourth district was added in 1826. According to this division, District No. 1, on Rye Neck, comprehended that part of the town south of the house of Sylvanus Lyon (now Mr. Benjamin Mead's). No. 2 lay north of this point, extending as far as Thomas Brown's house (Mr. Charles Park's, lately Mr. Allen Carpenter's). On the east side of Blind Brook, it included that part of the town

[1] I am indebted, through Mr. W. H. Smith, of Port Chester, to the Superintendent of Public Instruction at Albany, for these facts relative to the present common school system of the State. He refers to a Special Report on Education, by Superintendent Rice, in 1867, pp. 80, 81.

which lies south of Ezrahiah Wetmore's and north of Philemon Halsted's (now Mr. Daniel Budd's). No. 3 lay north of this, comprising the village of Saw Pit, now Port Chester, and the upper part of the town. No. 4 included the whole of Peningo Neck below Philemon Halsted's. This arrangement has been somewhat modified. At present, there are five school districts in Rye — the fifth comprising the upper part of the town, above Port Chester. Rye Neck, commencing at Dr. Jay's, forms a separate district (No. 1), and No. 2 includes Peningo Neck, below Mr. Anderson's, with the west side of Blind Brook, below Mr. Mead's.

CHAPTER XXII.

SLAVERY IN RYE.

1689–1827.

AMONG the institutions of the olden time, slavery must not be left out of the account. It is in fact little more than forty years since this unhappy system ceased to have a legal existence in our State. The Dutch had introduced it during their possession of the province of New Netherland. As early as the year 1629, we find the West India Company complaining that their plantations could not compete with those of Spain, for want of slaves, and of means to obtain a supply of them.[1] Before the year 1647, the slave-trade had been opened with Brazil;[2] and by the time the English acquired New York, its villages and 'bouweries' were amply stocked with black laborers. The English governors of the province gave all encouragement to the traffic. The Duke of York himself was at the head of a company chartered in England for the purpose of carrying it on.

In New England, slavery never prevailed very extensively. Our first settlers appear to have brought a few negroes with them from Connecticut. But for a considerable length of time the number of slaves in Rye was very small. A census taken in 1712 — fifty years after the founding of the town — showed but eighteen negroes of all ages within its limits, which then included Harrison and the White Plains.[3]

The first mention of slavery occurs in our records in 1689. Jacob Pearce, one of the original planters, left among his goods and chattels —

'A negro woman called by the name of Rose, which is not inventoried, because 'twas proffered to be proved upon oath that her master Jacob Pearce did give her her freedom after his wife's decease.'[4]

[1] Documents relating to the Colonial History of New York, vol. i. p. 39.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 244.

[3] Papers relating to Westchester County, in *Documentary History of New York*, vol. iii. p. 949.

[4] Records of Deeds, Westchester County, vol. B. p. 183.

In the same year, James Mott of Mamaroneck sells, alienates, and makes over to Humphrey Underhill of Rye — 'A sartain neger named Jack aged about fortene yeres or thareabouts.' [1]

'Slaves from sixteen years old and upward,' are mentioned in a rate of assessment, April 2, 1703. They are valued at the same rate with 'all *Christian* male persons' of the same age — at £12 per head.[2]

The people of Rye were called upon in 1711 to pay taxes under 'an act for raising one shilling on every chimney, and two shillings on every *Negroe or Indian Slave*.' [3]

With the growth of the town, the number of slaves increased very considerably. From eighteen, — according to the census of 1712, — it had risen in 1755 to one hundred and seventeen. A list of the families owning slaves at that period,[4] shows that they were distributed very widely throughout the town. Neither layman nor ecclesiastic appears to have entertained scruples as to this kind of proprietorship. The names even of several members of 'the Society of Friends' are on the list. It is noticeable, however, that few families owned more than two or three negroes. Mr. Jay, Colonel Willett, and Mr. Thomas[5] were the largest owners.[6]

A few passages from our town records may serve to illustrate

[1] Rye Records, vol. B. *end.*

[2] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. 3 or C. p. 3.

[3] The New Receipt Book, Westchester County, 1714–15, p. 75.

[4] *Documentary History of New York*, vol. iii. p. 855.

[5] 'Run away from John Thomas, Junr at Rye, in Westchester County, about the middle of November last: A negro man called Joe, about thirty-five years of age; he is near six feet high, of a yellowish complexion, has had the small pox, but hardly visible, has some scars on his breast, was born in Jersey, but since lived with Messenger Palmer, near Stanford, in Connecticut: Had on when he went away a brown Cloath jacket, a woolen shirt; a pair of leather breeches, a pair of white woolen stockings. Whoever takes up said negro and secures him so that his master may have him again, shall receive three pounds reward, and all reasonable charges, paid by me JOHN THOMAS JUN.'

'Rye, January 9, 1765.' (*N. Y. Gazette and Weekly Post-Boy*, January 17, 1765.)

[6] Cornelius Flaman, one of these owners, had been in trouble about his slaves. The *New York Gazette* of October 3, 1734, contains his statement concerning 'two negros, to wit, one negro man called Jack, and one negro woman named Rose,' belonging to him. These servants were claimed by Mr. William Roome, who had posted up a notice at Rye, to the effect that Mr. Francis Garabrant, deceased, father-in-law to Flaman, had made them over to him in June, 1731. Flaman denies this claim. From the advertisement, it appears that he had been apprentice, from 1707 to 1722, to Garabrant, who lived in New York, where he had a house and lot. Flaman lived at 'Saw Pit.' He had deceased in 1758, when Cornelius, his 'eldest son and heir,' sold his land to Daniel Hawkshurst. (Rye Records, D. 121.)

some of the workings of the 'peculiar institution,' about the time when it had become so extensively prevalent here: —

In 1739, George Kniffin gives to his loving and dutiful son David, fifty acres of land on King Street, 'together with two negro children commonly called and known by their names, viz., Abel and Doll.'[1]

In 1741, Benjamin Merritt appoints his 'true and trusty friend Joshua Brundige, to be my lawful attorney to recover all my debt due to me in Connecticut, and likewise to bring back my servant George Egit, and dispose of him according to his discretion.'[2]

In 1747, Ebenezer Theale, 'in consideration of the love, good-will and affection which I have and do bear unto my youngest daughter Hannah Theale,' gives her 'all that my negro boy called Jeffrey, my young black bald-faced riding horse,' etc., 'to have and to hold the said negro boy Jeffry and all the other above mentioned moveables.'[3]

In 1739, we find the town making choice of Thomas Rickey to be the public whipper. In 1747, Samuel Bumpos is chosen to the same office.[4] Such an appointment implies the usual treatment of refractory slaves. The whipping-post and the public stocks are said to have stood on the open space west of the Episcopal Church. A small stone building in the rear of the house formerly occupied by Andrew Clark, Esq., was anciently a place of confinement for slaves. It was torn down only two or three years since.

A chronic trouble under the system of negro slavery was the fear of insurrection. The citizens of New York during the last century were exposed to a series of panics relative to this danger, the accounts of which are truly surprising. In 1712, a supposed plot to burn the city was detected, and nineteen negroes were tried and executed on the charge of being concerned in it. In 1741, under suspicion of similar designs, one hundred and fifty-four negroes were committed to prison, of whom seventy-one were transported, eighteen were hanged, and fourteen were burned at the stake! The inhabitants of Rye doubtless shared in these alarms. Indeed, we have intimations of trouble here connected with the first plot of 1712. In 1714, Mr. Isaac Denham of Rye

[1] Rye Records, vol. C. p. 286.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 140.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 207.

[4] Records of Town Meetings (not paged).

'Bumpus' old house' is mentioned in the description of a highway laid out in 1750. (County Records, lib. G. p. 407.) It stood near Rye Flats, on the Beach.

'Deliverance Bumpus, Daughter of Thomas Bumpus,' is mentioned in the Brander's Book, 'April y^e^ 10th, 1740.'

petitions the Court of Special Sessions at Westchester 'to raise the sum of twenty-five pounds for satisfaction for One Negro Man called *Primus*, who was executed for his misdemeanours.' And in 1719, Mr. Denham, and one Charles Forster, apply 'to be allowed the value of two negro men lately belonging to them and executed for crimes committed *in this county*.' The men were appraised at £20, and payment was ordered.[1]

SLAVES LANDED AT RYE.

About the year 1698, some negroes brought from the coast of Guinea were landed at Rye, and there delivered to the son of Mr. Frederick Philipse, of Philipsburg.[2] The circumstance was of sufficient importance to be noticed in a report of the London Board of Trade. It was not, however, the importation of slaves that called for this notice, but the fact that the parties concerned were suspected of dealings with *pirates*. Piracy had long been infesting the seas of both hemispheres. 'No vessel was safe upon the waters, and the ocean commerce was almost destroyed. New York suffered especially from these depredations. Her merchant vessels were rifled and burnt within sight of her shores; and the pirates even entered her harbors, and seized her ships as they lay at anchor.'[3] Under Governor Fletcher's administration, many of the merchants and even government officials of the province were notoriously implicated in this infamous business. The huge profits to be realized by trade with the pirates formed the inducement. Ships were sent out to purchase cargoes from the buccaneers, who were glad to dispose of them at prices much below their value. Lord Bellomont, who succeeded Fletcher, came with express orders to suppress this shameful traffic. But he found great difficulty in doing so. The merchants contended that what they did was in the lawful pursuit of commerce, that is, the slave-trade, in which they met with these opportunities of profitable purchase. Mr. Frederick Philipse, one of the richest men of that day in New York, was concerned in several operations of this kind. It was in the course of one of these, doubtless, that the circumstance we have mentioned occurred. The landing of these slaves at Rye doubtless made quite a commotion among our quiet inhabitants. They were likely to be far more disturbed by the

[1] Records of Courts of Sessions, etc., in liber B., County Records, White Plains, N. Y.

[2] New York Colonial MSS., vol. xxxiv. p. 2.

[3] *History of the City of New York*, by Mary L. Booth, p. 253.

thought of pirates in their neighborhood than by the presence of slave dealers. Captain Kidd was then in the height of his career as a freebooter; and the shores of Long Island Sound had been frequently visited by him and others for the purpose, it was believed, of burying their ill-gotten treasures upon its shores.

RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION.

Of the moral and religious condition of the slaves at Rye, we have but a sad account to give. The early regulations of the British government for its foreign plantations required that measures be taken whereby 'slaves may be best invited to the Christian faith, and be made capable of being baptized therein.'[1] Governor Dongan, however, writes in 1686, respecting the inhabitants of this province, 'I observe that they take no care for the conversion of their slaves.'[2] The missionaries of the Gospel Propagation Society had special directions to look after the spiritual interests of the blacks. With what success they did so at Rye, we learn from their letters. In 1708, Mr. Muirson writes, 'There are only a few negroes in this parish, save what are in Colonel Heathcote's family, where I think there are more than in all the parish besides. However, so many as we have, I shall not be wanting in my endeavours for their good.'[3] Mr. Jenney reports in 1724, 'There are a few negroes and Indian slaves, but no free infidels [heathen] in my parish: the catechist, a schoolmaster from the Honourable Society, has often proposed to teach them the catechism, but we cannot prevail upon their masters to spare them from their labour for that good work.'[4] In 1728, Mr. Wetmore writes:—

'The number of negroes in the parish is about one hundred. Since Mr. Cleator has been blind, and unable to teach school, he has taken pains with the negroes, so many as their masters would allow to come. But of late they have left coming altogether. Those that belong to Quaker masters, they will allow them no instruction. Some Presbyterians will allow their servants to be taught, but are unwilling they should be baptized. And those of the church are not much better, so that *there is but one negro in the parish baptized.* I had two of my own, which I baptized, but I have lately sold them out of the parish: and I have another, which I have instructed, and design to baptize very speedily.'[5]

[1] New York Colonial MSS., Instructions, etc. 1660, vol. iii. p. 36.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 415.
[3] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 180.
[4] *Ibid.* p. 228.
[5] *Ibid.* p. 250.

The difficulties attending the religious instruction of the slaves are dwelt upon by another of the Society's missionaries.

'The state of the negroes being servitude and bondage, all the week they are held to hard work, but only Sundays excepted, when they fish or fowl, or some other way provide for themselves. Their scattered position up and down the country, some distance from the church, but above all the prejudices of the masters, conceiving [them to be] the worse for being taught and more apt to rebel, ... are almost an invincible bar to their Christian instruction.'[1]

Some of our inhabitants well remember the times when slavery still prevailed in Rye. At the beginning of the present century, nearly every family owned one negro 'hand,' or more. Generally, they were such as had been born and brought up in these households, and in many cases the attachment between master and servant was mutually strong. As a rule, the slaves were kindly treated; but there were instances of inhumanity, here as everywhere, under this atrocious system. One such instance an old inhabitant relates as having 'made an abolitionist of him,' from his youth up. The negroes of that day were greatly given to the observance of festivals and frolics. The state of morals among them was much the same as in slave communities elsewhere; and as to their religious interests, they were little cared for.

MANUMISSION OF SLAVES.

For several years following the period of the Revolution, the pages of our town records are occupied with certificates relating to the manumission of slaves.[2] These declarations were made in

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, pp. 62, 63.

[2] Rye Records, vol. D. The following is a list of these acts of manumission: — In 1793, the executors of Miss Anna Maria Jay liberate her slave Hannah, aged 28 years.

1799 James Pine liberates *Cæsar* aged 27.
1800 Samuel Deall " *Jacob* " 34.
1801 Joseph Wilson " *Cato* " 24.
" " " " *Kate* " 22.
" William Lyon " *Patty*
" " " " *Tamar*
" Thomas Brown " *Mike* " 50.
1804 Ezekiel Halsted " *Duke* " 40.
" Rachel Sniffin " *Cuff* " 56.
1805 Andrew Lyon " *Sylvia* " 46.
1807 Samuel Armour " *Jacob*
" " " " *Kate*
1808 Thomas Theall " *Andrew* " 40.
1809 Phil[n] Halsted jr. " *Rose* " 36.
" Gilbert Brown " *Thomas* " 27.
1809 Mos. Crooker liberates *Jack* aged 30.
1810 Wm. T. Provoost " *Lew* " 28.
" William Bush " *Jack*
" James Hart " *Nan* " 28.
" Drake Seymour " *Dinah* " 34.
" John Guion " *Sib*
" Ezekiel Halsted " *Jerry* " 28.
" John Brown " " 29.
1811 Roger Purdy " *Sylvia* " 35.
" Barth[w] Hadden " *Gin* " 22.
1812 William Bush " *Harry* " 30.
" Neh[h] Brown jr. " *Henry* " 26.
" William Lyon " *Phila* " 19.
" Joseph Studwell " *Robert* " 30.
1814 Mrs. Mary Jay " *Peter*

accordance with the terms of an act of the legislature of this State, passed on the twenty-second of February, 1788, and of another passed on the twenty-ninth of March, 1799. The latter act provided for the gradual abolition of slavery. In 1817, another act was passed, declaring all slaves to be free on the fourth of July, 1827.

In 1798 this town contained one hundred and twenty-three slaves.[1] Fifty years ago (in 1820) there were in Rye fourteen slaves, and one hundred and twenty-six free blacks. In Harrison, there were twelve slaves, and one hundred and thirty-six free blacks. And in White Plains, there were eight slaves and sixty-three free blacks.[2] Seven years later (in 1827) slavery expired in the State of New York. At that time there was a considerable negro population in Rye. Irish and German emigration had not yet commenced; and scarcely any other than colored 'help' were employed in the kitchen or the field. Numbers of these were to be seen in the village and along the streets, at nightfall after the day's labor, and on holidays. Every family of means had some humble retainers, once their bond-servants, and still their dependants. Few of them remain at present. The European laborer has almost completely supplanted the African; and whether by death or by removal to other places, they have been reduced to a mere handful.

The Society of Friends, to its immortal honor, has always been the consistent and earnest opponent of negro slavery. The Friends of Harrison have a record on this subject not unworthy of that of their brethren elsewhere. It appears that about the time of the Revolution some individuals belonging to their body were owners of slaves. The following facts are gathered from the Society's books: —

'Twelfth of Ninth month, 1776. This meeting appoints' certain persons 'a Committee to visit those that keep negroes as slaves — agreeably to directions of the Yearly Meeting — and report to a future meeting.'

'Tenth of Fourth month, 1777.' The Committee report, 'We have according to appointment visited nearly all those within the

1818 T.M'Collum liberates *Henry* aged 27.
" Henry Purdy " *Sall* " 26.
1819 William Lyon " *James* " 21.
1821 Thomas Theall " *Lew* " 22.
1822 Thos Theall liberates *Maria* aged 25.
1824 Mrs. Mary Jay " *Cæsar*
1825 James Hart " *Jack* " 28.

[1] *American Gazetteer*, by Dr. Jedidiah Morse. 2d edit. Boston, 1798.

[2] *A Gazetteer of the State of New York*, by Horatio Gates Spafford, LL. D. Albany: 1824.

verge of this Monthly Meeting that hold slaves, and hereby inform' the meeting 'that a considerable number have been declared free under hand and seal since last year, and we have encouragement to hope that if the practice is kept up of treating with them that still hold them, that the good effect of such sincere labour will not be lost, but turn to the satisfaction and comfort of others as well as of ourselves.'

A committee was appointed to examine acts of manumission, and have them recorded if authentic.

'Fourteenth of Fifth month, 1778.' It was resolved that 'Friends continuing to hold slaves,' and 'who still refuse to free them, *shall be dealt with as disorderly members.*'

'Ninth of Twelfth month, 1779.' Three Friends were disowned for not setting their slaves free.

'Seventh of Eighth month, 1781.' It appears by the yearly meeting extracts [Flushing] that the state of negroes set free by Friends was taken into consideration; 'whether Friends who had had their services during the prime of their lives, should not do something for their compensation and support; and also investigating into their temporal and spiritual condition, and the education of youth.'

'Twelfth of Fourth month, 1782.' The committee appointed to make these inquiries [in Harrison] reported that the condition of most of the negroes set free was satisfactory; but there was 'great shortness in regard to instructing youth, though some appear careful on that account.' [1]

[1] Records of the Society of Friends in Harrison; in the possession of Mellis S. Tilton, Recorder.

Rye Beach.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE INDIANS.

'And their mouldering cairns alone
Tell the tale of races gone.'

L. J. B. Case, *The Indian Relic.*

THERE is a painful interest in gathering up the scanty knowledge that has come down to us, about the aboriginal inhabitants of this region. Here as elsewhere throughout our land, they have faded away from sight and memory, leaving but few and faint traces of their sad history.

It was sad enough before the coming of New England men to these shores. 'When the Dutch began the settlement of this country,' wrote William Smith in 1762, 'all the Indians on Long Island and *the north shore of the Sound*, on the banks of the Connecticut, Hudson, Delaware and Susquehanna rivers, were in subjection to the Five Nations; and within the memory of persons now living,' he adds, 'acknowledged it by the payment of an annual tribute.'[1]

[1] *History of New York*, by William Smith, vol. i. p. 224. 'A little tribe settled at the Sugar Loaf Mountain, in Orange County to this day,' adds Mr. Smith, writing about the year 1762, 'make a yearly payment of about £20 to the Mohawks.' (*Ibid. note.*)

The Dutch, it is well known, treated them with little kindness. They do not seem to have fared much better at the hands of the Connecticut people. The laws of the General Court for the regulation of the Indians appear harsh, perhaps not more so than the fears and dangers of the settlers warranted. Complaint is made in 1640 that 'our lenity and gentlenes toward Indeans hath made them growe bold and insolent.'[1] No town, it was ordered in 1660, 'shall suffer any Indians to dwel within a quarter of a mile of it, nor shal any strange Indians be entertained in any Town.'[2] An Indian 'found walking up and down in any Towne, after the day light shutting in, except he giue sufficient reason,' shall be fined — in 1663 — 'or else be seuerly whipt six stripes at least.'[3] Orders increasingly strict were made to arrest the growing evil of drunkenness among the Indians. White men were guilty, then as now, of selling liquor to the natives, an evil which the Court endeavored to repress. The laws for the Pequots, in 1675, provided that 'whosoever shall *powow* or use witchcraft or any worship to the devil or any fals god shall be convented and punished. Whosoever shall prophane the holy Saboth day by servill worke or play, such as chopping or fetching home of wood, fishing, fowleing, hunting, &c., shall pay as a fine tenn shillings . . . . or be sharply whipt for euery such offence.'[4] Some persons were complained of in 1678 as 'frequenting the meetings of the Indians at theire meetings and dances, and joining with them in their plays by wagering of their sides.' This, it is declared, 'doth too much encourage them in their devil worship. For some acquainted with their customes doe say their exercises at such times is a principal part of the worship they attend.' A heavy fine was laid on any who should be present at these meetings.[5]

Our old friend, Madam Knight, gives us her observations upon the state of the Indians in Connecticut in the year 1704: —

'There are everywhere in the Towns as I passed a Number of Indians the Natives of the Country, and are the most salvage of all the salvages of that kind that I had ever seen; little or no care taken (as I heard upon enquiry) to make them otherwise. They have in some places Landes of their owne, and Govern'd by Laws of their own making. If the natives committ any crime on their own precincts among themselves, y^e^ English take no Cognizance of it. But if on the English

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. i. p. 52.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 350.
[3] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 408.
[4] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 575.
[5] *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 23.

ground, they are punishable by our Laws. They trade most for Rum, for which they hazard their very lives.'

What we learn of the Indians at Rye, after the settlement of the town, agrees only too well with all this. The fullest account of their condition is that given by the Rev. Mr. Muirson, the second English missionary appointed to this place. In January, 1708, he writes to the Gospel Propagation Society which sent him: —

'As to the Indians, the natives of the country, they are a decaying people. We have not now in all this parish twenty families; whereas, not many years ago, there were several hundreds. I have frequently conversed with some of them, and been at their great meetings of *powowing*, as they call it. I have taken some pains to teach some of them, but to no purpose, for they seem regardless of instruction. And when I have told them of the evil consequences of their hard drinking, etc., they replied that Englishmen do the same; and that it is not so great a sin in an Indian as in an Englishman, because the Englishman's religion forbids it, but an Indian's does not. They further say they will not be Christians, nor do they see the necessity for so being, because we do not live according to the precepts of our religion. In such ways do most of the Indians that I have conversed with, either here or elsewhere, express themselves. I am heartily sorry that we should give them such a bad example, and fill their mouths with such objections against our blessed religion.'[1]

Long after the settlement of this town there were Indians living within its bounds; some of them quite near to the village,[2] but the greater number back in the 'wilderness' that still overspread the northern part of Rye. This was the case in most of the Connecticut towns. 'The laws obliged the inhabitants,' says Dr. Trumbull, 'to reserve unto the natives a sufficient quantity of planting ground. They were allowed to hunt and fish upon all the lands, no less than the English. The colonies made laws for their protection from insult, fraud, and violence. The inhabitants suffered them to erect wigwams, and to live on the very lands which they had purchased of them; and to cut their fire-wood on

[1] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Westchester County*, pp. 180, 181.

[2] In the neighborhood of a spring on Mr. Thomas Peck's grounds, it is said that two Indian families lived, perhaps not long before the Revolution. East of this spot, a field of twelve or fourteen acres was once pointed out to me by Mr. Josiah Purdy, as 'the Gammon Lot,' so called when he was a boy, because an Indian who claimed to own the land sold it to a white man for a leg of bacon.

their uninclosed lands for more than a whole century after the settlements began.'[1]

The twenty families of whom Mr. Muirson speaks were reduced by the year 1720 to 'four or five;' 'families,' writes Mr. Bridge, 'of Indians that often abide in this parish, but are frequently removing, almost every month or six weeks.'[2] After this date, we hear little more of Indians at Rye, except, shameful to say, *as slaves*. In 1724, Mr. Jenney reports, 'There are a few negro *and Indian* slaves in my parish, but no free infidels' or heathen.[3] In 1734, Mr. Wetmore mentions the baptism of 'one adult, an Indian slave.'[4]

In our town records there is a copy of a decision of the Court of Sessions held at Rye, September 22, 1761, when one Freelove, an Indian woman, an apprentice to Dennis Hicks of the Manor of Philipsburgh was brought before the court. 'It appearing upon oath to us,' say the magistrates, 'that the said Dennis hath beaten his said apprentice Freelove, and otherwise abused her, we do therefore discharge the said Freelove from her apprenticeship, and do hereby under our respective hands and seals pronounce and declare that the said Freelove is discharged from being any longer an apprentice to her said master.'[5]

Tradition states that in old times a band of Indians used to visit Rye once a year, resorting to the Beach, where they had a 'frolic' which lasted several days. According to my informant, they approached the village from the north, rushing down the road with a whoop which could be heard by the whole neighborhood. It is possible that their visit to the Beach had some connection with 'Burying Hill,' where former generations of red men are supposed to have been interred.

Another place which they frequented, as late certainly as the middle of the last century,[6] was a spot on Grace Church Street, at

[1] *History of Connecticut*, by Benjamin Trumbull, D. D., vol. i. p. 117.

[2] Bolton, *History*, etc., p. 196.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 228.

[4] *Ibid.* p. 264.

[5] Records, B. xii.

The Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors for 1773 contain the following charge: —

'John Doughty, Constable of Rye, for Transporting Mary Gordon and child, and William Francis, an Indian, 9*s.* 6*d.*'

[6] About 1744, says Dunlap, 'the Indians, still residing in the lower parts of the State, at particular seasons of the year came to the city, and took up their residence' — in the neighborhood of a wind-mill which then stood between what is now called Liberty Street and Courtlandt Street — 'until they had disposed of their peltry, their brooms and shovels, trays and baskets. Dr. Abeel says, I have seen, in 1744, and

the corner of the road now called Kirby Avenue, and nearly in front of the present residence of Mr. James M. Titus. Here, says one of our oldest inhabitants, a troop of Indians would come every year and spend the night in a *powwow*, during which their cries and yells would keep the whole neighborhood awake and in terror for their lives. These drunken frolics, however, are said not to have been attended by any serious consequences. The next day the savages would go quietly back into the country, and be heard of no more for months.[1]

Many interesting relics of the Indian race have been found along our shores. Heaps of clam-shells, as usual, indicate the spots where their villages or solitary wigwams stood. These occur in great abundance on Manussing Island, on Parsonage Point, in the vicinity of the Beach, and near Blind Brook[2] and the creek into which it empties. Indian graves have also been frequently discovered. 'The former existence of Indian habitations on the great neck of Poningo,' says Mr. Bolton, 'is amply proved by the number of hunting and warlike weapons found in that neighborhood. The site of the principal Mohegan village was on or near Parsonage Point. In the same vicinity is situated Burying Hill, their place of sepulture. The remains of six Indians were

afterwards, several Indian canoes come down the East and North Rivers, and land their cargoes in the basin near the long bridge,' at the foot of Broad Street. 'They took up their residence in the yard and store-house of Adolph Phillips; there they generally made up their baskets and brooms, as they could better bring the rough material with them than the ready-made articles. When the Indians came from Long Island, they brought with them a quantity of dried clams, strung on sea-grass, or straw, which they sold, or kept for their own use, besides the flesh of animals, etc. Clams and oysters, and other fish, must have formed the principal food, together with squashes and pumpkins, of the natives of the lower part of the State.' (*History of the New Netherlands, Province of New York, and State of New York*, etc., in two vols. By William Dunlap. New York, 1839: vol. i. p. 353.)

[1] Mrs. Kirby, widow of David Kirby, who related these facts to me, had them from her grandmother, Mrs. James Bird, then a young married woman, living where the cottage on the northeast corner of Kirby Avenue and Grace Church Street stands. Mrs. Bird used to say that she had often sat up all night with her infant in her arms, her husband being away at sea, prepared to fly for refuge to one of the neighbors, should her house be attacked.

[2] On the property of Dr. J. H. T. Cockey the remains of seven or eight human skeletons were discovered in a sand-bank in 1855. A great quantity of oyster and clam-shells were found. In clearing out a spring on the same land an Indian pestle came to light. Among other implements, a spear-head six inches in length, and of unusually perfect form, was found. Several bodies were discovered in 1867, near the opposite bank of the creek, in the garden attached to one of Mr. Mathews's houses. The posture, as elsewhere, showed that they were the bodies of Indians.

discovered on excavating the present foundations for Newberry Halsted's residence.'[1]

Manussing Island was undoubtedly the site of an Indian village. A few years ago some laborers, excavating the ground on the east side of Mr. Van Rensselaer's garden, uncovered the skeleton of a body which had been buried in the manner customary with the Indians, in a slanting or sitting posture. The remains were of extraordinary size, and in a very perfect state; but when exposed to the air soon crumbled to dust.

In July, 1870, I went with Mr. Underhill Halsted to examine the traditionary sites of the Indian villages on Peningo Neck. The chief of these was in a field about seventy-five rods south of the road to Rye Beach. Here, about two hundred feet from high-water mark, there is a spring which is said to be unfailing. Near it is a flat rock, around which the soil for the extent of half an acre abounds in fragments of shells. The supposition that this was an abode of the Indians is favored by the situation of the spot, its exposure to the south, and proximity to the Beach. It is based moreover upon the statements of old men, who have had it from their fathers.

'Samp Mortar Rock,' near by, is pointed out as the place where the Indian women used to pound their corn. It is on the south side of a clump of rocks, near what is known as 'Steep Rock,' at the south end of the Beach, on a line with the north side of Mr. Cornell's lane. Here are the remains of a circular basin cut in the rock, two feet and a half in diameter, and about as deep. One side of this basin is still perfect, but on the other the rock has been worn or broken away.[2]

Another 'Indian mortar,' more perfect but smaller, is to be seen on the shore of a cove called 'Ware's Cove,' on Mr. Gideon Reynolds' land, opposite the north end of Pine Island.

Another spot, believed to have been the site of an Indian village, is in a field in the rear of Mr. Underhill Halsted's house. And a third, where still more abundant traces have been found, is in the neighborhood of 'Bullock's Landing' and 'Galpin's Cove,' on the opposite side of the creek, upon Mr. Genin's grounds.

[1] *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 17.

[2] Mr. Halsted had in his possession, forty-two years ago, an Indian pestle, two feet and a half in length, and about three inches thick. It had been carefully preserved in his family for a long time.

CHAPTER XXIV.

CEMETERIES.

'Where heaves the turf in many a mouldering heap,
Each in his narrow cell forever laid,
The rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep.'

THE visitor on his way to our Beach may notice at the turn of the road above Milton, the little burying-ground by Blind Brook; not as differing from other country grave-yards in its aspect of seclusion and neglect, but for the quiet beauty of the scene in which it lies. Just here the outlet of the stream, whose meanderings have proceeded through the low meadow lands, becomes visible toward the south, and the waters of the Sound appear beyond the higher banks that skirt the creek. It is a spot well chosen for its suggestions of rest and of hereafter.

The oldest legible inscription in this cemetery is to be found on a tombstone near the entrance. It reads thus: —

'Here Lyeth the Body of
NEHEMIAH WEBB,
Son to the Rev^d^ Mr. Joseph Webb of Fairfield
Who Dyed at Rye April y^e^ 24 1722 in the
28^th^ Year . . . .'

The preservation of this epitaph for so long a time is doubtless due to the fact that the face of the tombstone has become much inclined, so as to be sheltered from the weather. There are many time-worn slabs around it that are probably much less ancient, but their records cannot be deciphered.

The oldest inscriptions that are legible on other graves in the Blind Brook Cemetery, are these: —

'In Memory of M^r^ Elisha Budd, who died Sept. y^e^ 21^st^ 1765 in the 60th year of his age.'

'In Memory of M^rs^ Anne Budd, wife of Mr. Elisha Budd, who died Dec. 6th, 1760.'

'Mr. Joseph Lyon, who died Feb. 21, 1761, in the 84th year of his age.'

'Sarah Lyon, wife of Joseph Lyon, died Jan. 26, 1769.'

'In Memory of Godfrey Hains who departed this Life July 22, 1768, aged 93 years.'

'In Memory of Anne wife of Godfrey Hains who departed this Life Febʳʸ 19, 1758, aged 68 years.'

'In Memory of Jonathan Brown, who deceased June 15, 1768, aged 62 years.'

Four tombstones in this grave-yard bear the name of Ezekiel Halsted: —

'In Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who Deseased in Rye 30th October 1757 in the 49th year of his Age.'

'In Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who departed this life Febʳʸ 20th 1805 in the 67th year of his Age.'

'Sacred to the Memory of Ezekiel Halsted who died April 18 1829 aged 68 years 2 months and 13 days.'

'Sacred to the memory of Ezekiel Halsted jr. who died August 26, 1828, aged 41 years and 13 days. Having been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church 22 years.'

One of the tombs in this cemetery was erected —

'In Memory of Martha wife of Dʳ David Rogers and daughter of the Revᵈ Charles Tennent, who died April 12, 1813, aged 62 years.'

Two of the rectors of Christ Church lie buried here. Their graves are near the entrance of the grave-yard. The Reverend Evan Rogers, who died January 25, 1809, in his forty-second year; and the Reverend William Thompson, who died August 26, 1830.

The earliest mention of this burying-ground in our Town Records, occurs in a deed dated 1753. It speaks of 'yᵉ boring [burying] place in Rye neck,' opposite a certain tract of land on the west side of the mill creek, which Samuel Purdy conveyed to his sons, Samuel and Caleb.[1]

In 1761, 'Jonathan Brown iuner is aloud' [allowed] by the town 'the priviledge of pastring the Buring yard upon the Conditions that he mackes a Geat and Cuts the Brush and Keeps it Clear.'[2] This permission was renewed yearly until 1770.

It seems likely that the Blind Brook Cemetery was laid out about the year 1750. An aged person has informed me that the land was given to the town for this purpose by Joseph Lyon, who lies buried here, and who died in 1761. The fact that older inscriptions, like that of Mr. Webb, are to be found, may be accounted for by the supposition that bodies were removed to this

[1] Town Records, vol. D. p. 88.

[2] Records of Town Meetings, April 7, 1761.

place from other localities, after the opening of a common burying-ground.

For it is quite certain that in early times the practice of maintaining private or family places of interment prevailed here, as it did elsewhere. Fifteen or twenty of these cemeteries are still to be seen, and many others have doubtless been obliterated in the course of manifold changes and improvements.

The earliest allusion in our records to a family burying-ground is in a deed of 1741, from JOSHUA BRUNDIGE to Gilbert Bloomer, conveying his house and farm of thirty acres, on the corner of the Ridge Road and the road to Bloomer's mill. This property is now owned by Mr. Thomas Lyon. The deed in question excepts and reserves —

'The liberty of a burying place at the southwesterly corner of said premises for the burying of my family, where some persons are already buried.' [1]

This plot was to be two rods square. It lies on the north side of the road, nearly opposite Park's mill, and contains a number of graves, with dilapidated head-stones, upon most of which only here and there a letter can be made out. One half-buried slab bears the inscription: —

'R. B.
1771.'

This was probably Robert Bloomer, the third of that name, who lived in this neighborhood about the year 1765. Members of the Merrit family are known to have been buried here, and many others. One well-preserved inscription is —

'In memory of Nathaniel Brown, who departed this life April 10th 1801 in the 70th year of his age.'

The burial-place of a portion of the KNIFFIN family was a plot of ground by the road-side, on the land now owned by Mr. Quintard. This property, a century ago, belonged to Jonathan Kniffin. A few years since some graves could be distinguished from the road at the top of the hill south of Mr. Quintard's gate. They have been removed in order to the grading of the land.

The principal place of interment of the MERRITT family was on Lyon's Point, now a part of Port Chester. This spot is on the north side of the street across the point, and near the bridge. Only the more recent names and dates in this cemetery are now

[1] Town Records, vol. C. p. 208; vol. D. pp. 130, 161.

decipherable. The tomb of John Merritt, who died in 1759, is the oldest of those that can be read.

The cemeteries of the Lyon family are situated on Byram Point, and in the neighborhood of Byram Bridge.

The Theall burying-ground is on the property of Mr. Abraham Theall.

The Purdy family have a burying-ground on the western bank of Blind Brook Creek, opposite the public cemetery. This is probably one of the oldest places of interment in Rye. It contains many antique memorials of past generations; but the imperfect records of their names have been worn away by time, and none prior to the present century are now legible.

The principal burying-ground of the Budd family is said to be situated near the shore of the creek, on the Jay property, which they formerly owned. Some members of this family are interred in a small plot of ground on the farm of Mr. J. Griffin, North Street. This spot is on the west side of the road, a short distance from the Mamaroneck River.

There are several family burial-places on King Street. Members of the Haight, Merritt, Anderson, and other families, are interred here. Another branch of the Anderson family have a burying-ground in Harrison, on the cross-road to White Plains.

The small cemetery on the west side of Blind Brook, opposite Christ Church in Rye, is well known as the spot where several of the rectors of that church lie buried. This, however, as we have already seen, was not one of the more ancient places of sepulture in the town, having been set apart for the purpose probably about the year 1760. Previous to that time, the rectors who died while in charge of this parish were buried underneath the church.

The Gedney burying-place is near Mamaroneck, on the west side of the river. It contains the graves of some of the oldest inhabitants of this town. Here lies Eleazar Gedney, the ancestor, we presume, of that family in Rye, 'born in Boston Goverment,' and deceased October 27, 1722.

Interments were formerly made, it is said, to some extent in the grounds adjacent to the Episcopal Church. Mr. Bolton gives an inscription 'taken from a tombstone found in the wall on the west side of the church,' to the memory of 'Mrs. Martha Marven, late consort of Mr. Lewis Marven, of Rye,' who died February 5, 1767, in her thirty-ninth year. It is not probable that many persons were buried here, as the nature of the soil would render it unsuitable for this use.

One of the most beautiful and interesting localities in Rye is the cemetery of the JAY family, on their estate. To this spot, in 1807, the remains of various members of that family were removed from their vault in New York. Here a monument stands 'to the memory of JOHN JAY.'

The burying-ground known as THE UNION CEMETERY OF RYE, originated in 1837. In that year, James Barker and David Brooks, of Rye, bought from Benjamin Mead three acres of land, which they gave to the authorities of Christ Church, Rye, 'with a view to secure to the said Church a suitable burial place.' This gift included the front part of the ground on North Street or the White Plains Road. In conveying this property to the church, the donors stipulated that certain plots should be reserved as burial-places for the ministers of the three churches of Rye, and their families; and also that two strips on the eastern and western sides of the ground should be appropriated as a public cemetery.[1] In January, 1855, the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Rye bought eight acres contiguous to this tract; and in 1864–68, they added more than six acres, making fourteen and a quarter in all. The grounds thus owned by the two congregations have been graded, inclosed, and laid out uniformly, with no visible separation between them; and they form one of the most beautiful cemeteries in this part of the country. To this spot many of our families have brought the remains of relatives buried in other localities; and here, too, many a stranger is borne from the city. Among these graves, one that will long be visited with interest is that of Alice B. Havens, whose home for the last few years of her short life was in a pleasant cottage on Rye Neck. Her monument, a cross, has the inscription: —

'Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.'

To the southwest of the Union Cemetery lies the 'Colored Cemetery;' a plot of one acre, the title of which is vested in the Trustees of Public Lands. In olden times the colored people of Rye had a place of interment in the Town Field, on the property now owned by Mr. Anderson; and another on Budd's Neck, nearly opposite the house of Mr. Benjamin Mead. The latter spot is no longer recognizable as a place of sepulture, having been for years ploughed over with the surrounding field. The former contains a number of humble, unchronicled graves.

[1] 'A copy of the Deed of the New Cemetery,' etc.

CHAPTER XXV.

TAXES AND IMPOSTS.

1704–1725.

THE revolt of Rye and Bedford from New York in 1697 has been represented as a step taken to avoid the payment of taxes. We have already seen that this was by no means the only nor indeed the chief reason for that step. In the case of this town at least it was due, more than to any other cause, to the oppressive course of the Governor and Council, in alienating from the inhabitants of Rye a large part of their public lands.

But the dread of excessive taxation may well have quickened the people's desire to escape from the government of the province. Under the laws of Connecticut, they had felt no inconvenience in this respect. With a frugal and honest administration, the public charges were light. Each man was taxed according to his ability, and each had a voice in the regulation of public affairs. When transferred against their wishes to New York, from 1683 to 1697, the inhabitants learned something of the exactions to which that province was subject from rapacious and unprincipled rulers. Under Dongan, Nicolson, and Fletcher, they might in a measure anticipate the way in which public business would be conducted by a succession almost unbroken of worthless or incompetent men.[1]

The refractory towns were brought back just in time to come under the sway of one of the worst of these, Lord Cornbury. Of this individual it has been said that he 'did more to bring disgrace upon the administration of the province than all his predecessors together.' 'We never had,' wrote William Smith, 'a governor so universally detested, nor any who so richly deserved the public abhorrence.'[2] Part of this odium was incurred by a shameless appropriation of the public funds. As one of the towns taxed

[1] 'We know,' writes an Englishman in our own day, 'how our American colonies were governed 100 years ago. Their highest posts were a refuge for the needy hangers-on or decayed footmen of great noblemen. There was no person so slow or base as might not hope to be appointed an American governor, if he happened to possess a patron in high station.' (*London Press*, June 28, 1856.)

[2] *History of New York*, vol. i. p. 194.

for his benefit, Rye has some interest in the history of these spoliations.

In the office of the County Clerk at White Plains there is a manuscript volume entitled 'The New Receipt Book.' Its contents are tolerably dry reading; for they consist of nothing more than the acquittances of county and other treasurers for sums paid to them by the town collectors early in the last century. Some of these receipts, however, are significant enough when collated with certain historic facts. And by way of illustrating the state of public affairs in which our town was concerned during the period preceding the Revolution, we propose to take a text for some historic reminiscences from this once 'New,' now old, 'Receipt Book.'

'Rec^{d} of Joſeph Budd Coll^{r} of Rye in Weſt-Cheſter County y^{e} Sum of two pounds on account of y^{e} £1800 Tax witneſs my hand this 18th March 1703–4 THOMAS BYERLEY *Coll^{r}*

'NEW YORK *May y^{e}* 21 1703

'Rec^{d} of Joſeph Budd y^{e} ſum̃e of twenty pounds ſeaventeen ſhillings ninepence of y^{e} eighteen hundred pounds Tax for y^{e} town of Rye I ſay rec^{d} *p* THO: WENHAM.'

'NEW YORK, *Decemb$_{r}$* 10th, 1703

'Rec^{d} from Joſeph Budd Coll^{r} of Rye in y^{e} County of Weſt-Cheſter in full of both payments for y^{e} £2000 Tax y^{e} ſum̃ of twenty one pound ten ſhillings witness my hand THOM^{s} BYERLEY *Coll^{r}*'

Lord Cornbury, 'a reckless adventurer, profligate and unprincipled, who had fled from England to escape the demands of his creditors,' came to New York in May, 1702. He was, however, a near kinsman of Queen Anne, who had just succeeded to the British throne; and he was received by her subjects in America with demonstrations of loyal respect. Shortly after his arrival, he made an address to the Assembly which greatly pleased them; and at his recommendation they made several grants of money for various purposes. The sum of £1,800 was voted for the support of one hundred and eighty men to defend the frontiers. Another appropriation was made to fortify the harbor of New York. And as a special token of their regard, the Assembly voted £2,000 as a present to their new governor, to defray the expenses of his voyage.

Lord Cornbury must have been delighted with the easy citizens among whom he had come to dwell. He took the £2,000 awarded to him as a present, and the other appropriations too.

All went into his own private purse. The fortifications were not commenced; and as war, though proclaimed by England against France and Spain, had not yet broken out on the frontiers of Canada, the province continued in a state of peace. But Rye, like the other towns, paid its quota of the £2,000 and the £1,800 tax.

It was not made up without difficulty, we may well suppose. The town cannot have numbered many more than sixty families. Here were £44 to be raised for special purposes, besides the regular county tax, which that year was £25 10*s*. This was a heavy burden. Several town meetings were held with reference to it. The first meeting called was in view of the £1,800 tax.

'Ordered that the aſſeſſors of the town of Rye doe call a towne meeting to aſſeſs their proportion in what the ſaid towne ſhall agree upon to their ſatisfaction in the eighteen hundred pounds which is 144 pounds for this county.

'February the 18 day 1702–3.

by order Beniamin Collier *Clark*.'

'At a lawfull towne meeting held in Rye Feb. 21, 1702–3, the towne doth agree to raiſe this aſſeſſment as followeth that is to ſay that every man that hath a ſon or more than one 16 years old and not rateable eſteate to make up twelve pounds for himſelf and ſon or ſons that is under his command ſhall be aſſeſſed ſo as to make the value of each a perſon accordingly and alſo every perſon that is free from his parent whether forgerans [sojourners?] or other that hath not 12 pounds rateable eſteate in the liſt ſhall likewiſe be aſſeſſed twelve pounds for the raiſing of all the rates for this year inſuing.'[1]

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. 3 or C. p. 23. The following action was taken a few months later. What the assessment referred to included, does not appear. But the rate list is curious in itself, and deserves a place here.

'At a lawfull towne meeting held in Rye April the 2 day 1703, the towne hath agreed to raise the assessment for this year insuing as followeth

		Pounds
all cristaine male persons from 16 years old and upwards	per head	12 00 00
all Lands and medow improved	per eaker	00 10 00
all pasture land clered within fence		00 06 00
all wood Land pasture within fence		00 03 00
an ox	per head	03 00 00
a cowe		02 00 00
a 3 year old		02 00 00
a 2 year old		01 10 00
a horse		03 00 00
a mare		02 00 00
swine at		00 06 00
sheepe		00 03 00
all slaves from 16 years old and upwards		12 00 00
all mills at		30 00 00'

'New York *Decembr* 10th 1703

'Rec[d] from Joſeph Budd Coll[r] of Rye in y[e] County of Weſt-Cheſter being y[e] portion due from ſaid Town on y[e] £1500 Tax y[e] ſum of four pounds nine ſhillings having allowed himſelf y[e] nine pences as directed in ſaid Act witneſs my hand THOM[s] BYERLEY *Coll[r]*'

When the Assembly next met, in 1703, the governor had new demands to make. War was now imminent, and the necessity of preparation for defence was apparent to all. The Assembly voted an appropriation of £1,500 for the erection of two batteries at the Narrows. They took care, however, to stipulate that the money must be used for no other purpose whatever. The amount was raised; but Lord Cornbury paid no regard to the condition. He used it for his own personal expenses, and declined to account to the Assembly. Indignant at such treatment, they declared that they would in future make no appropriations until a person of their own choice should be appointed to receive and disburse the moneys raised.

This sum of £1,500 was levied in a peculiar manner. A poll-tax was imposed, and according to the terms of the act it was graduated as follows: Every member of the Council was to pay forty shillings; an Assembly man, twenty shillings; a lawyer in practice, twenty shillings; every man wearing a periwig, five shillings and sixpence; a bachelor of twenty-five years and upwards, two shillings and threepence; every freeman between the age of sixteen and sixty, ninepence; the owners of slaves, for each one shilling.

'New York June 20, 1723. Rec[d] from Sam[l] Wilſon Coll[r] of Rey in Weſt-Cheſter County y[e] ſum of £13. 13. 3½ purſuant an Act of Aſſembly for raiſing y[e] quantity of £3000 oz. Plate for the effectual ſinking & cancelling bills of credit to that value I ſay rec[d] by me

A D PEYSTER Ju[r] *Treasurer*'

'New York June 20 1723. Rec[d] from Sam[ll] Wilſon Coll[r] of Rey in Weſt-Cheſter County sixteen ſhillings and seven pence tax and for y[e] treaſurer's ſalary five pence being upon y[e] Arrears of y[e] two Expedition taxes I ſay rec[d] by me A D PEYSTER Ju[r] *Treasurer*'

Lord Cornbury was succeeded as governor of New York in 1708 by Lord Lovelace, who died within five months after his arrival. The government devolved, until a new appointment, upon Major Ingoldsby, who had been lieutenant-governor under Lovelace. During his short administration, an expedition was

gotten up against Canada. A certain Colonel Vetch, who had been in Canada, projected the enterprise. His plans were approved by the ministry. The New England colonies were persuaded to join. The design was to penetrate into Canada by way of Lake Champlain. Though the province was greatly impoverished, the Assembly entered heartily into the plan. 'It was at this juncture,' says Smith, 'that our first act for issuing bills of credit was passed — an expedient without which we could not have contributed to the expedition, the treasury being then totally exhausted.' There were high anticipations of success. A body of four hundred and eighty-seven men, besides independent companies, was sent to Albany and thence to the 'wood creek.' Three forts were built there; one hundred bateaux and as many birch canoes were constructed, and six hundred Indians were maintained. This force remained encamped throughout the summer, but broke up in the fall without effecting anything. The whole enterprise fell through, and the expense to the province amounted to £20,000. This sum was not raised until many years after. The receipts which we have quoted above are dated June 20, 1723, when, as it seems, measures were taken for 'sinking and cancelling' the bills of credit which had been issued for the amount.

'New York, June 13: 1715. Then Receiv'd of Samuel Hunt Collecto^{r} of Rye by y^{e} Hands of Joſiah Hunt Eſq^{r} for y^{e} Town of Rey in Weſt-Cheſter County y^{e} ſum of five Pounds nine ſhillings and two pence halfpenny and for y^{e} Treaſurer's ſalary two ſhillings and ninepence halfpenny being on y^{e} firſt Paym't of y^{e} £10,000 Tax w^{ch} was Payable the Laſt Day of May 1714, I ſay Received by me

A. D Peyster, *Treasurer.*'

The next English governor, Robert Hunter, was a better man than most of those who had been sent over to rule the province. But though personally liked, he was regarded with much of the distrust that the people had learned to feel toward the agents of a government jealous of their liberties. Between the Assembly and himself a bitter controversy was waged as to the public revenues. They would make no appropriations for the support of the government except year by year. The public debt, however, had increased to such a degree as to demand some action. A whole session of the Assembly was devoted to its consideration. 'Incredible were the numbers of the public creditors: new demands were made every day. Their amount was nearly £28,000.' To

pay this large sum, recourse was had again to the circulation of bills of credit. The receipt given above has reference to the first payment on this charge. Ten payments were made in all, the last of which was made by 'Jonathan Haight, collector of Rye,' in July, 1723, amounting to £14 6*s.* 9*d.*

'New York 12 *Jan*^{y} 1715-16

'Then Rec^{d} of M^{r} Joſeph Budd Commiſſ^{r} of Weſt-Cheſter County for letting y^{e} Accys [Excise] y^{e} Sum of ſixteen pounds two ſhillings and twopence farthing being in full of laſt Years Accys w^{ch} was ſeaventeen pound eighteen ſhillings and ninepence three farthing I ſay rec^{d} as above by mee A D: Peyster *treasurer*'

'New York 12 June 1722. Received from M^{r} John Stevenſon for acc^{t} of M^{r} Joſeph Budd Deceaſed late Commiſſ^{r} of Weſtcheſter County y^{e} Sume of thirty pounds three ſhillings and eight pence, being on account of y^{e} Exciſe beginning from primo November 1720 to primo November 1721 I ſay received by me

A D Peyster Jun^{r} *treasurer*'

The quarrel between the Assembly and the governor continued; the latter insisting on the appropriation of a permanent revenue, the former refusing to grant money for a longer period than a year. In 1715 Governor Hunter achieved a partial victory over the popular branch of the government. He prevailed on the Assembly to grant a revenue for a term of three years. This measure made the administration, for the time being, independent of the people, an object which the English governors kept in view with unswerving pertinacity. At the same session the Assembly passed 'an Excise bill on strong liquors,' which continued in force until the Revolution, and which was said in 1762 to bring into the public treasury an annual sum of about one thousand pounds. Mr. Joseph Budd of Rye, the patentee of Budd's Neck, and grandson of the original purchaser of that tract, was commissioner of the excise for the county of Westchester.

'New York 2 April 1723 Received from Benjamin Heaviland Coll^{r} of Ry in Weſt-Cheſter County y^{e} ſum of nine pounds ſeven ſhillings and one penny purſuant an act of y^{e} General Aſſembly of this Province entituled an act for Raiſing y^{e} sum of five hundred pounds to Encourage and promote a trade with y^{e} remote Nations of Indians and for ſecuring y^{e} five Nations in his M^{ties} Intreſt As alſo y^{e} ſum of three hundred and twenty pounds three ſhilling two pence farthing advanced by y^{e} ſeveral perſons therein named for repairing y^{e} fortifica^{ns} on y^{e} Frontiers I ſay received by me A D Peyster ju^{r} *Treas*^{r} [1]

Governor Burnet, who succeeded Hunter, was by far the best of the governors assigned to this province. And the measures referred to in the above receipt are among the most honorable of his administration. 'Of all our governors, none,' says the historian William Smith, 'had such extensive and just views of our Indian affairs. He gave attention to this subject from the first, endeavoring to alarm the fears of the Assembly in view of the daily advances of the French, their possessing the main passes, seducing our Indian allies,' etc. To counteract their influence, he recommended the establishment of trading-posts along the northern frontier; a measure that led to the opening of the fur traffic, which became a source of such vast wealth to the city and the State of New York. The appropriation of five hundred pounds above referred to, was another measure procured by this sagacious governor.

We have not room to continue our extracts from the 'New Receipt Book,' nor to extend our notices of old provincial times.[2] The contest of which we have had glimpses, between the Assembly or the people and the British governors, was waged from time to time until within a few years of the Revolution; the governors seeking to control the public revenues, the people, more and more watchful against all attempts to curtail their liberties, persisting in their refusal.

[1] A previous payment of £4 4*s*. 2*d* on this tax is acknowledged in 1722.

[2] In the single year 1725, Rye paid £8 19*s*. 6*d*. on the first payment, and £8 18*s*. 0*d*. on the second payment of 'the 5350 Ounces of Plate tax.' Also £16 16*s*. 4*d*. on the first payment of 'the £6630 tax.' The county rate paid for the same year was £13 19*s*. 0*d*. In all £48 12*s*. 10*d*.

From 1721 to 1724 the town paid in addition to other taxes £43 19*s*. 4½*d*. in five instalments, 'toward building a Court house and Gaol [at Westchester] for the County of Westchester.'

The county rate was generally much higher than the above. In 1721 it amounted to £62 6*s*. 9¾*d*.

Rye Ferry.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A HUNDRED YEARS AGO. — RYE IN 1770-71.

ABOUT One of the Clock in the Morning of Sunday the firſt of April Inſtant, the Dwelling Houſe of Major Hachaliah Brown in Rye, took Fire, and burnt down; the Family being aſleep, before they awaked the Fire was ſo advanced, that their Lives were endangered, and had not Time to ſave but a very few Articles above Stairs, and a Part of the Goods below. Major Brown had the Misfortune to have his Houſe, and almoſt all his Furniture burnt about ten Years ago; at which Time his Loſs was judged to be upwards of One Thouſand Pounds. Altho' his ſecond Loſs is not ſo great as the firſt, being about Five Hundred Pounds, a Circumſtance attending it makes it more melancholly, viz. His ſuppoſing, and there being little or no Reaſon to doubt, its being ſet on Fire by ſome wicked Perſon, who ſeemed to have a particular Malice at the Major, the Fire being ſet to the Corner of the Houſe where he ſlept; but had not the Smoke awoke him as it did, his two Sons and two Grand Children, and a young Woman in the Chamber, who were all in a ſound Sleep in that

> dead Time of Night, and with ſome Difficulty, awaked by him, in a few Minuets must have all periſhed in the flames, with a Number of Servants. It is a dreadful Conſideration not only to him, but to the Neighbourhood, that there ſhou'd be a Perſon in it, undiſcovered, ſo utterly loſt to all Humanity, as to be guilty of an Attempt to deſtroy not only the Eſtate but the lives of Men, Women and innocent Children.[1]

This sad event was undoubtedly the great theme of comment for months in our village a hundred years ago. Major Brown's house stood on the site of the house where his grandson, the late Hachaliah Brown, died in 1861. The present building, now the residence of C. V. Anderson, Esq., is said to have been erected four years after the fire — in 1774.

Roger Park was one of the notabilities of this place a century ago. His farm of two hundred and forty acres lay north of Major Brown's, in the old Town Field. Part of it is now owned by Mr. Greacen, and a portion of his house is still standing in the rear of Mr. Greacen's residence. Mrs. Park was a daughter of John Disbrow, and brought her husband a considerable fortune. She is said to have owned one of the only two carriages — it was a two-wheeled chaise — that had yet been seen in Rye.

Next to these gentlemen, perhaps the largest proprietor on Peningo Neck at this time, was Philemon Halsted. He lived in the house which is still standing on the corner of the Milton Road and the road to the Beach, and owned the farm on both sides of the latter road, now the Newberry Halsted estate. His nephew Ezekiel, who had lately sold this property to Philemon, bought in 1771 the land further south, now Mr. George L. Cornell's and Mr. Underhill Halsted's. South of this, the greater part of the Neck was owned by David Brown, third son of Hachaliah. The little village of Milton had not yet sprung up. Lyon's mill had probably ceased to exist, and not more than two or three houses stood along the creek below. Sloops landed on the opposite side of the Neck from the present dock, at 'Kniffin's Cove,' where there was still a dock, and where formerly there had been a 'warehouse' or store.

Another large proprietor, Josiah Purdy, had now been dead some years. His son, Seth Purdy, had succeeded to his estate. He owned the lands on both sides of the post-road, above the vil-

[1] *The New York Journal, or the General Advertiser.* Printed and published by John Holt, near the Exchange, Thursday, April 19, 1770.

lage, from 'the Cedars' to Blind Brook. Josiah Purdy's house stood a few rods north of the Park Institute, close upon the road.

Jonathan Kniffin's farm in 1770 bordered upon the post-road above Regent Street, and extended northward to Purchase Avenue. Regent Street was then called 'Kniffin's lane.' It led to his house, which stood on the west side of the lane, opposite Mrs. A. Sherwood's barn; the old well still remains. This farm included the land now owned by Mr. Quintard. It was Jonathan Kniffin's daughter who was so cruelly murdered on the highway near Rye, in 1777.

Mr. Peter Jay was living at this time on the estate which he had bought twenty-five years before, at Rye, from John Budd's grandson. The Jay mansion stood nearly on the site of the present house. It was a long, low building, but one room deep, and eighty feet in width, having attained this size by repeated additions to suit the wants of a numerous family. Here John Jay, now a young man of twenty-five, had spent his childhood; going from this pleasant home when eight years old to school at New Rochelle, and when fourteen to King's College, in New York. He was now a rising young lawyer in the city, having been admitted to the bar two years before, in 1768. John was the eighth of ten children. Two of these, an older brother and sister, were blind, having been deprived of their sight by the small-pox. It was for the benefit of these children that Mr. Jay had removed to the country. Here Peter and his blind sister spent their days. She died in 1791;[1] her brother in 1813. When Dr. Dwight visited Rye in 1810 he saw this gentleman, of whom, in his published Travels, he has given a most interesting account.[2] Some of our aged people retain vivid recollections of the wonderful ingenuity and sagacity which he displayed, notwithstanding his blindness.

Mr. Jay, the father, must have exerted a marked influence in our little community. He is said to have been a man of sincere and fervent piety, of cheerful temper and warm affections, and of

[1] The following appeared in the *New York Daily Advertiser*, September 9, 1791: 'On Sunday evening last (Sept. 4.), departed this life, in the 54th year of her age, at her brother Peter Jay's seat at Rye, Miss Anne M. Jay, a Lady whose excellent understanding, and uniform beneficence and piety rendered her very estimable. Altho' she enjoyed a handsome income, far beyond her wants, and was frugal; yet she never added to her estate, but constantly employed the residue in doing good. Among other legacies dictated by humanity and benevolence, she has bequeathed one hundred pounds to the Episcopal Church at Rye.'

[2] *Travels in New England and New York*, by Timothy Dwight, S. T. D., LL. D. New Haven, 1822: vol. iii. p. 487.

strong good sense; 'a shrewd observer and admirable judge of men; resolute, persevering, and prudent; an affectionate father, a kind master, but governing all under his control with mild but absolute sway.' Mrs. Jay was a lady of cultivated mind. 'Mild and affectionate, she took delight in the duties as well as the pleasures of domestic life; while a cheerful resignation to the will of Providence, during many years of sickness and suffering, bore witness to the strength of her religious faith.'[1]

The upper part of Budd's Neck was owned, a century ago, chiefly by the Purdys and Thealls. Captain Joshua Purdy lived in the house now owned by Mr. William Purdy. He was highly esteemed by his fellow-townsmen. Like many of them, he adhered to the government side in the great struggle which soon followed; and in 1776 was a prisoner at the White Plains. The chairman of the Committee of Safety wrote, August 20, recommending his release, as 'a man of influence, toward whom lenity would be advisable,' though he had 'never been friendly to the American cause.'[2] Mr. Purdy lived until near the close of the last century. At his funeral, the brief eulogy was pronounced over him, 'A kind husband, a faithful master, a father to the poor, a pillar to the Church.'

Charles Theall was living at the time in the house now Mr. B. Mead's, where probably his grandfather, Captain Joseph Theall, had lived eighty years before. Charles owned a farm said to have measured 'a mile square.' This he divided, before his death eight years later, among his four sons. Gilbert, the eldest, was living on the west side of the brook, opposite the house where Mr. Corning resides. North of his farm lay the new parsonage land, a part of the late Rev. James Wetmore's farm, which he had left eleven years earlier for this use. James Wetmore, his son, lived north of this, where Mrs. Buckley lives; and Timothy Wetmore, now a leading man in Rye, lived in the old Square House.

In Harrison's Precinct, as it was called, on the border of Budd's Neck, Mr. David Haight, one of the largest proprietors, was living in 1770. His house stood, its gable close to the road-side, on North Street, by the gate to Mr. Josiah Macy's place. He was now almost seventy, and lived to be nearly a hundred years old.

In the northern part of the town, Judge Thomas was the most prominent personage. His estate in 'Rye Woods' was large,

[1] *The Life of John Jay*, by his son, William Jay. In two volumes. New York, 1833: vol. i. pp. 10, 11.

[2] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1524.

and furnished with a goodly number of slaves. His eldest son, John Thomas, junior, was at this time supervisor of the town, as well as justice of the peace, and farmer of the excise for the county. The dwelling of Judge Thomas — from which a few years after the venerable proprietor was to be dragged by a party of British troops, to die in prison in New York — was a home of comfort and hospitality. This family, with the Jays in the lower part of the town, held a commanding position among the inhabitants of Rye. Both families espoused the patriotic side in the contest of the Revolution ; and during the earlier years of the war, at least, their influence was greatly felt in its behalf.

Among the topics of village talk in 1770, perhaps the chief was the plan for establishing a FAIR at Rye. We have a striking proof of the change that a century has wrought in men and manners, in the interest which this scheme awakened. An old English custom, of which we know scarcely anything at present, was so highly appreciated by the Browns and Halsteds, the Parks and Purdys of those days, that they joined with many others in a petition on the subject, addressed, 'To his Excellency the Right Hon^ble^ John Earl of Dunmore, Commander in Chief in and over the Province of New York.' This petition purports to come from 'a great Number of the Principal *and other* Inhabitants in the Town of Rye ;' and it 'humbly shows' that by an act of the Assembly passed many years before, Rye had been declared entitled to the benefit of holding a fair once in every year. It was to be held in the month of October, and the object was 'for selling of all Country Produce and other effects whatsoever.' The inhabitants represent that they have never before applied to have the fair held, as they had a right ; 'but now, believing the keeping of a Fair as aforesaid in said Town of Rye would be of general service to said Town,' they humbly pray his Excellency that he 'would please to appoint DOCTOR EBENEZER HAVILAND of said Rye to be Governor, and to have full power according to said Act of Assembly, to keep and hold a Fair in said Rye in the month of October next.' This petition was signed by *fifty-seven* inhabitants, and was duly presented to Governor Dunmore in April, 1771. His Excellency graciously appointed Dr. Haviland to be governor of such a fair, to be kept at Rye on the second Tuesday in October, yearly, and to end the Friday next following, being in all four days, and no longer.

The act to which the petitioners referred was passed in 1692,

and was entitled 'an act for settling Fairs and Markets in each respective City and County throughout the province.' It provided that in the county of Westchester there should be held and kept two fairs yearly; the one in the town of Westchester on the second Tuesday in May, and the other at Rye on the second Tuesday in October. Such fairs had been held from time immemorial in England, as in other countries; indeed they are still maintained to some extent. We do not know how far the English custom was carried out here; but there is reason to suppose that a considerable amount of traffic was carried on at these times.

A hundred years have wrought great changes in the outward appearance of our town. But in the character of the population, their manners and customs, their habits, ideas, and convictions, a far greater change has taken place. A century ago the inhabitants of Rye had few interests that reached beyond the limits of their own town. Most of them, probably, had never extended their travels further than the city of New York. The first stage-coach had not as yet made its appearance on our post-road upon its way to Boston, though doubtless the proposal to run such a vehicle next year was already the talk of the neighborhood. Rye Ferry was still in operation. The road leading to it past Strang's tavern, and up the hill by the church, was more frequented than any other. Oyster Bay and other towns on Long Island were in easy and frequent communication by this route. 'Friends' from Harrison, and other farmers from King Street and the Plains, made use of it not unfrequently; and the store kept at the House by the Ferry seems to have been the resort of their wives and daughters as well, in pursuit of 'Calicoes, Ribbands, Fans, Gloves, Necklaces, Looking Glasses,' etc., which were kept there for sale.

A century ago, Rye Beach was a favorite resort for pleasure-seekers of a different class from those who mostly congregate there at present. A New York paper of April 6th, 1775, contains the following item of news:—

> 'On the 11th day of March laſt, there came on, before Peter Guion, Eſq; at Beſley's Tavern, at New Rochelle, a trial about a diſputed Horſe race that had been run on Rye Flats; one of the parties demanded a Jury, and the Juſtice accordingly iſſued a Proceſs for the Purpoſe — A number of the inhab-

> itants were ſummoned and appeared, but unanimouſly refuſed to be ſworn, declaring, that as Horſe racing was contrary to the Aſſociation of the Congreſs, they would never ſerve as Jurors in any ſuch cauſe, and that if the Juſtice thought proper to commit them, they would go to gaol. — In ſhort, the Juſtice was obliged to try the cauſe himſelf.'[1]

A hundred years ago the events of the French and Indian War were fresh in the recollection of our people. That struggle had closed only ten years before. A number of persons from this town had served in it. The muster-rolls of companies raised in Westchester County in 1758 and 1759,[2] contain the names of thirty-four or thirty-five men whose 'place of birth' was Rye.[3] Most of these were very young men, some of them mere boys. Undoubtedly, many others went from this town in the course of that war; but the muster-rolls for the earlier campaigns do not specify the place where the recruits belonged. Not a few of the returned soldiers afterwards settled in the neighborhood of Lake Champlain and Lake George. The conquest of Canada in 1760 was followed by a considerable emigration, encouraged by the large grants of land which the government made to parties applying for them. Among these applicants were some eighty families, mostly from Westchester County, New York. Dr. William Hooker Smith, son of the venerable Presbyterian minister of Rye, was among the leaders of the enterprise; and several others were from Rye.[4] How many of these petitioners actually removed 'to the northern frontier,' we do not know; but it is a matter of tradition that several families from this town emigrated 'after the French war' to

[1] Holt's *New York Journal*, April 6, 1775. The Continental Congress had discountenanced horse-racing and gambling, with other practices conducive to extravagance and dissipation.

[2] Communicated by Dr. O'Callaghan.

[3] These were Ezekiel Brundage, aged 27; Abr. Lyon, 22; Jonath. Merrit, 23; Ezekiel Merrit, 23; Arnold Slaughter, 17; John Taylor, junior, 21; Thomas Taylor, 21; Sam. Lane, 22; Peter Rickey, 28; Arthur Veal, 20; Isaac Brigg, 19; Silas Sherwood, 36; Jos. Dickens, 19; Jon. Loundsbury, 20; Val. Loundsbury, 21; Jas. Gue, junior, 31; Jacob Rock, 23; John Budd, 27; Thos. Daniels, 29; Abr. Hoight, 17; Peter Dusenberry, 19; Reuben Lane, 16; Nath. Hair, 17; Thos. Paldin, 20; Jer. Ricker, 28; Caleb Sherwood, 19; Jos. Haight, 20; Elisha Merrit, 18; Cato Thomas, 21; Jon. Merrit, 48; Peter Merrit, 19; David Kniffen, 44; Jos. Williams, 18; Amos Quarters, 16; Jos. Merrit, 24.

[4] Petition of Wm. Hooker Smith and others for a grant of 51,000 acres near Lake Champlain, March 5, 1760. (Land Papers in Office of Secretary of State, Albany, vol. xv. p. 163.)

that region. An old inhabitant remembers hearing in his youth that 'a good many went from Rye as recruits at the time of the French war, and afterwards settled about Lake Champlain.' He tells me also that when a boy he once accompanied a relative upon a journey on horseback, 'all the way up to Warren County,' to obtain the interest upon certain mortgages which he held on property there.

The French War constituted a memorable period in the history of our land. It brought upon the colonies a burden of debt which would seem to be one of the heaviest calamities that a new and poor country could experience. And the very exertions put forth by the Americans to carry on that war, and to meet their liabilities for its support, led the British government to impose still heavier burdens on a people whose resources appeared to be so great. But this contest also taught the colonies a most salutary and indispensable lesson. It inured many of our people to the scenes, and gave many of them some knowledge of the science of warfare, which proved invaluable to them in a time of need, now near at hand.

Sniffen's Hill.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE REVOLUTION.

1774–1776.

'The hearts
Of all his people shall revolt from him,
And kiss the lips of unacquainted change.'
King John.

THE revolutionary history of Rye deserves to be written. Not a few events of interest occurred here and in the region round about. At several periods in the course of the war this place was occupied by British or American forces, while at other times it lay between the opposing armies encamped 'above' or 'below.' And from the fact of its proximity to New York, and its position on the highway to Connecticut, Rye was exposed throughout the whole war to inconveniences of which we can but faintly conceive at the present day.

It is well known that no part of our country suffered more during the Revolution than the southern portion of Westchester County: 'the Neutral Ground, as it was called, but subjected,' says Mr. Irving, 'from its vicinity to the city, to be foraged by the royal forces, and plundered and insulted by refugees and

tories.' 'No region,' he adds, 'was more harried and trampled down by friend and foe,' than this debatable ground.[1]

These troublous times ought to be remembered. Perhaps it is within the narrow scope of a local history, giving particulars for which the general historian cannot find room, that we may gain some of the most definite views of those hardships which were a part of the 'great sum' with which our fathers obtained their freedom.

The policy of England with reference to the American colonies had long been of a nature to produce uneasiness in the minds of the more intelligent classes. The English who came hither were from the first unwilling to be considered as having lost any of the rights they had possessed at home. One of the privileges regarding which they were most tenacious, was that of taking part in framing the laws by which they were to be governed. It was held at an early day that 'no law of England ought to be binding' upon the people of the colonies 'without their own consent;' and as they were not allowed a representation in the British Parliament, they claimed that all enactments of Parliament for the colonies were without force until assented to by the colonial Assemblies. This claim was especially insisted upon in regard to measures for their taxation. Money, according to the American view, could not be raised on English subjects without their consent. 'The sole right,' declared the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1764, 'of giving and granting the money of the people of that province, was vested in them as their legal representatives.'[2]

Little account, however, was made in England of the pretensions of the colonists to an equality of rights as subjects of the crown. It became necessary to increase the revenue of the kingdom; and the British ministry determined to do this by means of a tax on the people of America. The French War had left the colonies heavily burdened. Their Assemblies had voted the large sums of money, as well as the large forces of men, required to carry it on. In 1762 the public debt of New York was £300,000 and the population of the province was taxed £40,000 per annum to discharge it; yet the Assembly granted a new appropriation demanded by England for the support of the army.[3] But the gov-

[1] *Life of Washington*, vol. iv. p. 10.

[2] *History of the Rise, Progress, and Establishment of the Independence of the United States of America.* In four volumes. By William Gordon, D. D. London, 1788: vol. i. p. 148.

[3] *History of the New Netherlands, Province of New York, and State of New York, to the Adoption of the Federal Constitution.* In two volumes. By William Dunlap. New York, 1839: vol. i. p. 408.

ernment was not satisfied with the willingness of the colonies to tax themselves. The power of Great Britain to tax them without their consent, must be asserted and maintained.[1] In March, 1765, Parliament passed the Stamp Act. This law, which provided for the raising of a revenue in the colonies by requiring the use of paper bearing a government stamp for every legal or commercial instrument in writing, produced so much disturbance, and awakened so much opposition both in England and in America, that it was repealed the next year. But the determination to tax the Americans was by no means abandoned. In 1767 a bill was passed imposing duties upon tea and certain other articles imported from Great Britain into the colonies. This law, more directly than any other measure, led to the outbreak of the Revolution. A passive resistance was offered throughout the country, to the designs of the government, by an agreement of the people not to import the articles upon which this tax had been laid. The first meeting held for the purpose of entering into such an agreement took place in Boston, October 28, 1767, and was followed by similar meetings in the towns of Connecticut and in New York. The firmness and self-denial with which these resolutions were very generally carried out, tended greatly to increase a spirit of self-reliance and independence in the popular mind.

Other measures of the British government excited the colonists to more violent resistance. The Stamp Act, which was received with riotous demonstrations in various places, had been accompanied by another bill quite as offensive, which remained in force when the former act was repealed. This bill obliged the several Assemblies of the provinces to provide quarters for the British troops maintained in America, and to furnish them with sundry supplies, at the expense of each province. New York refused to make any appropriation for this purpose; and Parliament, to punish the refractory colonists, passed a law depriving the province of New York of all powers of legislation until its orders should have been complied with. This was an infringement of their liberties which greatly alarmed the colonists. About the same time, their irritation was increased by the stringent measures taken with a view to the enforcement of the revenue laws. Under the oppressive and arbitrary system of duties which had been established, smuggling had come to be considered as a matter of course. The colonists, denied all participation in the making of laws which affected their interests, thought it no wrong to evade those which

[1] Dunlap's *History of New York*, vol. i. p. 408.

were manifestly unreasonable and injurious. The attempt at this moment to enforce them led to repeated disturbances, especially in Boston and New York. These various acts of the British government tended to one result, which every deed of violence and bloodshed hastened — the union of the colonies in a pronounced opposition to the control of the mother country.

We can imagine with what interest the news of public events at this period must have been received by the inhabitants of Rye. The doings of Parliament; the meetings of the Colonial Congress; the proceedings of the 'sons of Liberty;' the outrages of the British soldiery; the risings of the exasperated people,— these and other tidings came from week to week to our quiet neighborhood, in the columns of the small weekly gazettes, whose dingy pages now wear such an old-fashioned look to us as we open their treasured files, but which to them were so full of fresh and lively import. Of course the progress of affairs was watched with various feelings. There were warm partisans of the British cause at Rye; and there were also those who earnestly espoused the people's side. The prevailing mood, however, was one of uncertainty. Most of the inhabitants stood as yet in doubt with reference to the growing dispute. Many, whilst they disapproved of the 'ministerial' policy, and regretted the acts which were exciting so much opposition, looked with even more displeasure upon the course pursued by the majority. The thought of resistance to law, and revolt from the mother country, was abhorrent to their minds.[1]

In 1774 the first recorded action of our inhabitants took place, at a patriotic meeting held on the tenth of August. The occasion of this meeting was the closing of the port of Boston. The British government persisting in the determination to tax the colonies, the people had now combined very generally to resist taxation by pledging themselves not only to refrain from buying or selling the taxed article of tea, but also as far as possible to prevent its importation. The famous 'tea-party' occurred in Boston on the sixteenth of December, 1773; and in punishment of that daring act the government declared the port of Boston to be closed. Upon this, public meetings were held throughout the colonies, renewing the agreement against the use of tea, and expressing sympathy with the people of that town. Such a meeting

[1] The hard case of one of our inhabitants may illustrate a bewilderment which must have prevailed in many minds. In July, 1776, 'Alexander Stewart, mariner, late of Dundee in North Britain, at present of Rye in Westchester County,' having been drafted as one of the militia of that county, claims exemption as *a subject of the King of Great Britain.* 'He is exempted — but is taken into custody as such.' (*American Archives,* 4th series, vol. i. p. 1456.)

was held in New York on the evening of July 6th, 1774; and on the tenth of August, —

'The Freeholders and Inhabitants of the township of Rye' met and 'made choice of John Thomas jun., Esq., James Horton jun., Esq., Robert Bloomer, Zeno Carpenter, and Ebenezer Haviland, for a Committee to consult and determine with the Committees of the other Towns and Districts in the County of Westchester, upon the Expediency of sending one or more Delegates to the Congress to be held in Philadelphia on the first Day of September next. The Committee after making Choice of Ebenezer Haviland, Chairman, expressed their Sentiments and Resolutions in the following Manner, which were unanimously approved of: —

'This Meeting being greatly alarmed at the late Proceedings of the British Parliament, in order to raise a Revenue in America, and considering their late most cruel, unjust, and unwarrantable Act for blocking up the Port of Boston, having a direct Tendency to deprive a free People of their most valuable Rights and Privileges, an Introduction to subjugate the Inhabitants of the English Colonies, and render them Vassals to the British House of Commons,

'Resolve first. That they think it their greatest Happiness to live under the illustrious House of Hanover, and that they will stedfastly and uniformly bear true and faithful Allegiance to his Majesty King George the Third, under the Enjoyments of their constitutional Rights and Privileges, as fellow Subjects with those in England.

'Second. That we conceive it a fundamental Part of the British Constitution, that no Man shall be taxed but by his own Consent, or that of his Representative in Parliament; and as we are by no Means represented, we consider all Acts of Parliament imposing Taxes on the Colonies, an undue exertion of Power, and subversive of one of the most valuable Privileges of the English Constitution.

'Third. That it is the Opinion of this Meeting, that the Act of Parliament for shutting up the Port of Boston, and divesting some of the Inhabitants of private Property, is a most unparalelled, rigorous and unjust Piece of Cruelty and Despotism.

'Fourth. That Unanimity and firmness of Measures in the Colonies, are the most effectual Means to secure the invaded Rights and Privileges of America, and to avoid the impending Ruin which now threatens this once happy Country.

'Fifth. That the most effectual Mode of redressing our Grievances, will be by General Congress of Delegates from the different Colonies, and that we are willing to abide by such Measures as they in their Wisdom shall think most conducive upon such an important Occasion.

'*By Order of the Committee,*

Ebenezer Haviland, *Chairman.*'[1]

[1] *New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury*, Monday, August 15, 1774. The

We do not learn where this meeting was held in Rye, nor how numerously it was attended. Possibly it took place at Dr. Haviland's, the 'noted tavern,' which was the favorite resort of our citizens in those days; the small green in front of which would offer them a convenient place of concourse.

But the action of this meeting made no small stir among the people of Rye. Opinions were divided as to the wisdom of the resolutions passed. They were moderate enough certainly, but there was danger lest they might be misunderstood. To prevent this, a paper was gotten up, six weeks after the meeting of August 10th, and signed by a large proportion of the inhabitants, whose names appear attached to it in Rivington's 'New York Gazetteer' of October 13th, 1774: —

'Rye, *September* 24, 1774.

'We the subscribers, freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Rye, in the County of Westchester, being much concerned with the unhappy situation of public affairs think it our duty to our King and country to declare, that we have not been concerned in any resolutions entered into, or measures taken, with regard to the disputes at present subsisting with the mother country: we also testify our dislike to many hot and furious proceedings, in consequence of said disputes, which we think are more likely to ruin this once happy country, than remove grievances, if any there are.

'We also declare our great desire and full resolution to live and die peaceable subjects to our gracious sovereign King George the third, and his laws.' [1]

same paper contains the following item: 'We hear from Harrison's Purchase, in Westchester County, that on the 2nd Instant, the Inhabitants of that Precinct met, enter'd into spirited Resolves, which include a Non-importation Agreement, and are similar to those of the other Colonies.'

[1] (Signed) Isaac Gidney, Daniel Erwin, Philemon Halsted, Abraham Wetmore, Roger Park, James Budd, John Collum, Roger Kniffen, Thomas Kniffen, Henry Bird, John Hawkins, Gilbert Merritt Esq^{r}, Robert Merrit, Andrew Merrit, John Carhart, Roger Merrit, Archibald Tilford, Israel Seaman, Isaac Anderson, Adam Seaman, William Hall, John Willis, Rievers Morrel, Capt. Abraham Bush, Nehemiah Sherwood, Abraham Miller, Andrew Lion, William Crooker, Jonathan Kniffen, James Jamison, Andrew Carhart, John Buvelot, Thomas Brown, Seth Purdy, Gilbert Thaell, Gilbert Thaell Jun^{r}, Dishbury Park, Isaac Brown, Joseph Merrit Jun^{r}, Major James Horton, Peter Florence, Jonathan Gedney, Nathaniel Sniffen, William Armstrong, John Guion, Sol. Gidney, James Hains, Elijah Hains, Bartholomew Hains, Thomas Thaell, John Affrey, Gilbert Hains, Dennis Lary, Hack. Purdy, Joshua Purdy, Roger Purdy, Charles Thaell Esq^{r}, James Wetmore, Gilbert Brundidge, John Kniffen, William Brown, Joseph Clark, John Park, Joseph Purdy, James Gedney, Joshua Gedney, Jonathan Budd, James Purdy, Ebenezer Brown, Ebenezer Brown Jun^{r}, John Adee, John Slater, Henry Slater, Nathaniel Purdy, Benjamin Kniffen, Andrew Kniffen, Joseph Wilson, Nehemiah Wilson, Thomas Wilson, Benjamin Wilson, Gilbert Morris Jun^{r}, Timothy Wetmore Esq^{r}, James Hart.

This publication only increased the trouble. Some of the signers seem to have been grievously disturbed at the sight of their own names in print. Forthwith the following explanatory statement appears, emanating from fifteen of the number: —

'Rye, *October* 17, 1774.[1]

'We the subscribers, having been suddenly and unwarily drawn in to sign a certain paper published in Mr. *Rivington's Gazetteer*, of the 13th instant; and being now, after mature deliberation, fully convinced that we acted preposterously, and without adverting properly to the matter in dispute between the mother country and her Colonies, are therefore sorry that we ever had any concern in said paper, and we do by these presents utterly disclaim every part thereof, except our expression of loyalty to the King, and obedience to the constitutional laws of the Realm.'[2]

Mr. Timothy Wetmore, a son of the late rector of Rye, and a man of considerable influence in the place, explained his views in a statement of his own shortly after: —

THE DECLARATION OF LOYALTY, SEPT. 24.

'The above paper like many others, being liable to misconstruction and having been understood by many to import a recognition of a right in the Parliament of Great Britain to bind America in all cases whatsoever, and to signify that the Colonies laboured under no grievances, which is not the sense I meant to convey — I think it my duty to explain my sentiments upon the subject, and thereby prevent future mistakes — It is my opinion that the Parliament have no right to tax America, tho' they have a right to regulate the Trade of the empire — I am further of opinion, that several acts of Parliament are grievances, and that the execution of them ought to be opposed in such manner as may be consistent with the duty of a subject to our sovereign: tho' I cannot help expressing my disapprobation of many violent proceedings in some of the colonies. Dated the 3d of November 1774.

Timothy Wetmore.'

The next appearance in print is that of a furious patriot of Rye, who issues an address, of which we give a part in spite of its coarseness, as a sample of the violence of the times: —

'*Americana*, No. 1. To the *Knaves* and *Fools* in the Town of *Rye, and first to the Fools.* — What in the world could have put it in your heads, that it was better to have your faces *blacked* and be *Negroes and*

[1] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. i. p. 803.

[2] (Signed) Abraham Miller, William Crooker, James Jameson, Andrew Carehart, John Buflot, William Brown, Gilbert Brundige, Israel Seaman, John Willis, Adam Seaman, Andrew Lyon, Gilbert Merritt, John Carehart, John Slater, Isaac Anderson.

beasts of burden for people in England, than to live and die like your *forefathers* in a state of freedom? I really could not have believed that there had been so many *asses* in all America, as there appears to be in your little paltry Town. Instead of *Rye Town*, let it hereafter be called *Simple Town*. It seems you are such *geese* as not to know when you are *oppressed*, and when you are not. . . . .

'And upon whose *anvil* pray, was that *wise* scheme of yours hammered out? — a blundering politician of a blacksmith, they say, was your *nursing Father* upon this occasion. If king George was to make a Law, that he should [shoe] all your horses gratis, this dunce of a blacksmith, I suppose would have no objection; and there certainly is just as much reason for obliging this blacksmith to find shoes for your horses, as there is in obliging you to find bread and butter for the great men in England.

'And are you really *silly* enough now to plough like a parcel of *Oxen* for your *masters*, and let slavery and wretchedness go down upon your children, and give your latest posterity reason to wish you had been all to the Devil before you set your names to the *death warrant* of their rights and liberties? If you had got three grains of sense, you would have done as one of the most sensible men among you did, I mean Mr. Wetmore. For shame! for shame! fye upon ye, fye upon ye!'

Such arguments were not convincing. We are apt to suppose that the language of abuse and violence was peculiar to the tories of the Revolution. A perusal of the newspapers of the day would show that both parties could deal in this species of warfare.

But the time of indecision with reference to the great dispute was now hastening to an end. On the fifth of September, 1774, the Colonial Congress met in Philadelphia, and adopted a Declaration of Rights, setting forth the just claims of the Americans, and petitioning for the redress of their grievances. These representations were unheeded in England. The government was resolved to compel obedience, if necessary, by military force. The people began to prepare for the approaching contest.

The battle of Lexington occurred on the nineteenth of April, 1775. On the tenth of May, the second Continental Congress met in Philadelphia. Among the delegates to that body was John Thomas, junior, Esq., of Rye. Congress took measures at once to raise an army, and Washington was appointed commander-in-chief.

New York was required by the Continental Congress to contribute her quota of three thousand men. Four regiments were raised in the province.

The call for soldiers was promptly responded to in this town. Three companies were formed, mostly within the limits of Rye, which as yet included Harrison and the White Plains. These companies were embraced in the 'South Battalion of Westchester County.' The officers chosen were the following:[1] —

'1. Mamaroneck and Rye, except the upper end of King Street: Robert Bloomer, captain; Alexander Hunt, first lieutenant; Ezekiel Halsted, second lieutenant; Daniel Horton, ensign.

'2. Scarsdale, White Plains, and Brown's Point: Joshua Hatfield, captain; James Verrian, first lieutenant; Anthony Miller, second lieutenant; John Falconer, ensign.

'3. Harrison's Precinct[2] and the upper end of King Street: Henry Dusinberry, captain; Lyon Miller, first lieutenant; Caleb Paulding Horton, second lieutenant; Gilbert Dusinberry, ensign.'

One of the first of those who offered their services to the country was Frederick de Weissenfels, our old acquaintance of Rye Ferry.[3] He applied, with Marinus Willett, Gershom Mott, and five others, on the sixth of June, 1775, for a commission in the service. 'Gentlemen,' they write to Congress, 'as we have ever been heartily attached to the cause of our country, so we are now ready to engage in the defence of its rights. And as we understand troops are soon to be raised in this Province, we think it a duty incumbent upon us to offer our service.'[4] Weissenfels was appointed captain of company 1, First Regiment, New York Continental Troops.[5] He was soon after made colonel, and was in command of a regiment at the battle of the White Plains. In October, 1780, he was in command under General Heath, at Albany.[6] Conceiving that his services were not properly appreciated, he left the army before the close of the war, but bore a high character

[1] New York Revolutionary Papers, vol. i. p. 159.

[2] The Committee of Safety for Harrison's Precinct, February 20, 1776, report the officers elected in a company of minute-men in Colonel Drake's regiment. They are Hezekiah Gray, captain; Cornelius Clark, first lieutenant; James Miller, second lieutenant; Isaac Titus, ensign.

In the same month, 'At a meeting of the Troop of Westchester County, held at the house of Wilsey Dusenbery in Harrison's Precinct, the following gentlemen were elected officers, to wit: Samuel Tredwell, captain; Thaddeus Avery, lieutenant, chosen unanimously; Abraham Hatfield was chosen cornet, and Uytendall Ailaire quartermaster, each by a majority.' Commissions were ordered for these gentlemen. (*American Archives*, fourth series, vol. v. pp. 290, 295.)

[3] See p. 79.

[4] *Journals of the Provincial Congress, etc., of New York*, vol. ii. p. 27.

[5] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. iii. p. 23.

[6] *Memoirs of Major-General Heath*, written by himself. Boston, 1798: pp. 258, 305.

as an officer and a patriot. Weissenfels was one of the original members of the New York State Society of the Cincinnati. He died May 14, 1806.[1]

There were others from the town of Rye who embarked early in the country's cause, and of whom we shall have occasion to speak elsewhere. Among these were Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, Dr. William Hooker Smith, and Colonel Thomas Thomas. Colonel Gilbert Budd, though a resident of Mamaroneck, should not be omitted, for he belonged to one of the oldest families of this place.

Our people now begin to see something of 'the pomp and circumstance of war.' June 12, 1775, the Connecticut forces encamped near Greenwich are reviewed by General Wooster. 'A great number of Gentlemen and Ladies, and a prodigious Concourse of the Inhabitants' of the surrounding country, have gathered to witness the review. The troops 'are an exceeding fine Body of Men,' and perform their exercises and evolutions 'with Spirit and Exactness, much to the satisfaction of their Officers,' and of the spectators also.[2] On the twenty-seventh instant, these troops, or a portion of them, pass through Rye on their way to New York, where they are to encamp, at a short distance from the city. 'General Wooster with 7 Companies of his Regiment, and Col. Waterbury, with his Regiment compleat,' constitute this force. 'They appear to be a healthy, hearty Body of Men;' about 1,800 in number; and some of them at least were destined to become well acquainted with Rye, for General Wooster afterward had his headquarters here for a considerable length of time.

The Connecticut troops came to New York at the invitation of the Provincial Congress. News had arrived from England that a large body of troops, embarked at Cork, were on their way hither, and they were now hourly expected. The city was alive with apprehensions, and the authorities betrayed a strange timidity and indecision. General Wooster at first encamped within two miles of New York; on the twenty-second of July he removed to Harlem, and in August, by request of the Provincial Congress, he embarked with four hundred and fifty men for Oyster Pond, to protect that part of Long Island from the attacks of 'the regulars.' He was ordered back September 2, by General Washington, who intimated his disapproval of the conduct of the New York Congress.[3]

[1] *Records of the Revolutionary War*, by W. T. R. Saffell. New York, 1858: pp. 484, 545.

[2] Hugh Gaine's *New York Gazette*, June 19, 1775.

[3] *American Archives*, vol. ii. pp. 1000–2; 1025, 6; 1665; 1789; vol. iii. pp. 73,

Only the day before the passage of the Connecticut troops, General Washington had passed through Rye, on his way to the camp at Boston, where he was about to take command of the Continental troops. The General was attended as far as King's Bridge by a troop of gentlemen of the Philadelphia Light Horse, and a number of the inhabitants of the city of New York.[1]

Frequent outrages and depredations at this period betoken a state of affairs already unsettled. At Rye several daring robberies occur. From the White Plains we hear, August 14th, of 'an atrocious murder by one Nathaniel Adams, who has long been suspected of being a tory.' His victim was John M'Donald, one of the Provincial recruits.[2]

The friends of Congress here complain that 'the tories are getting the upper hand of them, and threaten them daily.' Some patriots have had their private property injured by the destruction of fences and cropping of horses' tails and manes. The tories are equipped and constantly in arms, walking about at night, six, eight, and ten at a time. Some of them do not hesitate to say that they are determined to defend themselves, and would fire upon any one who should come to their houses and attempt to take away their arms.[3]

One Godfrey Hains, of Rye Neck, is the most defiant of these tories. He gives great offence by his contemptuous speeches about Congress and the Committee of Safety. He has been heard to say that there would be bad times here soon; some of the people of the place would be taken off and carried to General Gage's army. One, he declares, will be had at all events, and that is Judge Thomas, who must be caught if it cost the lives of fifty men. Other persons have been secretly warned to keep out of the way, as there is a scheme to seize them in their houses and carry them off.

November, 1775. — A plot has been discovered at Rye for the capture of several zealous friends of their country. Godfrey Hains

632. August 24, Wooster writes from Oyster Ponds to Governor Trumbull of Connecticut, that he expects to sail by next Monday for New York, but begs to be no longer under the direction of the Provincial Congress of New York, having no faith in their honesty to the cause. (*American Archives*, fourth series, vol. iii. p. 263.)

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, July 3, 1775.

[2] *Ibid.* August 14, 1775.

[3] *Journals of the Provincial Congress, Provincial Convention, Committee of Safety and Council of Safety of the State of New York*, 1775, 1776, 1777. Albany, 1842: vol. i. pp. 192–194.

was arrested in September last for speaking disrespectfully of Congress, but broke jail, and is now on board the man-of-war in New York harbor. He is said to be bent on revenge. A number of his neighbors and associates on Rye Neck lately formed a plan for taking Judge Thomas at his house in Rye Woods. A tender of the British man-of-war was to appear off Mamaroneck at a certain time, and barges were to be sent on shore to receive Thomas and others. The plot fortunately came to the knowledge of Captain Gilbert Budd, of Mamaroneck, who was privately warned by a neighbor; and upon his information William Lounsberry and several others have been arrested, and bound over to keep the peace.

December, 1775. — The tories of Westchester are unceasing in their efforts to furnish supplies, to be sent to the army at Boston. Between Byram River and King's Bridge, there are about two thousand barrels of pork, chiefly in the hands of tories, besides what has been sent off. At the house of William Sutton, of 'Maroneck,' about twenty head of fat cattle have been barrelled within a few days past; it is supposed that they are to be sent off for the ministerial army. 'In the same neighbourhood, for three and four miles around, there are not more than eight or ten Whigs to 120 Tories. On the fifteenth instant, a large yawl from the *Asia*, with about twenty-four men armed, came in the night into Maroneck harbour; and the inimical inhabitants loaded it with poultry and small stock for said ship. The friends of liberty were so few, that they were not able to collect a sufficient force to make any timely opposition.'[1]

January, 1776. — A daring outrage was committed on the night of the seventeenth instant, near King's Bridge. Some cannon,[2] which had been placed there for the purpose of defending the approaches to the city in that direction, were discovered the next morning to have been spiked and rendered useless. The Committee of Safety in New York took measures immediately to discover the perpetrators, who proved to be none other than William Lounsberry and his tory confederates at Rye Neck and Mamaroneck. Lounsberry was apprehended on the twenty-third by Lieutenant Allen with a guard of twelve men. He appeared to be 'struck with guilt' when arrested, but made no confession. Several other arrests have been made, and a full examination of the

[1] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. iv. p. 591.

[2] Dr. Church, in his 'traitorous letter to an Officer in Boston,' dated July 23, 1775, had written, 'I counted 280 pieces of Cannon, from 24 to 3 pounders, at Kingsbridge, which the Committee had secured for the use of the colonies.'

parties before the Committee of Safety has brought out the following facts: —

The plan originated with the British governor, Tryon, who was now on board the *Asia*, man-of-war, in the harbor of New York. The city was held by the Continental troops; but the presence of the king's ships, on one of which he had taken refuge, enabled Tryon to carry on intrigues with disaffected persons in the surrounding country. Congress had given stringent orders for the apprehension and punishment of any who might be found engaging in such plots; and local committees were on the watch. Early in January, Lounsberry and Josiah Burrell, of Rye Neck, had been on board the man-of-war in the North River, and had seen the governor, who said 'It must be done, to render the cannon useless.' On the evening of the seventeenth instant, about nine or ten o'clock, Lounsberry had been seen, with five other men, all on foot, in New Rochelle, going towards New York; they appeared to have handkerchiefs about their heads, and belts around their waists over their coats. Lounsberry has finally confessed that he and others had gone to disarm the guns with sledges; but when they came near to a house in the neighborhood they heard people at work at them. They waited awhile, and then upon coming to the cannon found them spiked, and the touchholes turned downwards. The guns lay a few hundred yards from Isaac Valentine's house.

The ringleaders in this plot have been ordered to be 'shackled and manacled, and kept in close confinement.' Godfrey Hains too has been arrested again. This irrepressible tory, after 'breaking jail by breaking six grates out of a window,' stole a boat in the night, and got on board a British man-of-war. He remained there until the vessel sailed, and then having purchased a small sloop, the *Polly and Ann*, set off for Boston with a load of beef, pork, and other provisions to supply the British army and navy, then blockaded in that port by the American forces under General Washington's command. The sloop sailed on the twentieth of January, and on the twenty-third was 'stranded on the Jersey shore.' Hains is sent to New York by the Committee of Safety of New Jersey. The New York Committee are of opinion that 'his many and mischievous machinations are so dangerous, that he ought to be kept in safe custody and close jail.' He is sent 'fettered and manacled,' to Ulster County jail, there to be confined securely until further orders.

The British troops evacuated Boston on the seventeenth of

March, 1776. It was now fully believed that New York would be the principal point of attack. The friends of England were secretly maturing plans for an effectual coöperation with the royal forces when they should arrive. It was understood that Governor Tryon had held out strong inducements to any who would enter the king's service and stand prepared to act with the government at the proper moment. 'Many Enemies to America are daily travelling through this County in Disguise, and under divers Pretences, though in reality for the purpose of aiding the Ministerial Troops when they shall arrive in this Colony;' so the committee for Westchester County, in session at the White Plains, wrote on the eleventh of June. In view of this fact, the sub-committees in the several towns, and the militia officers, are empowered to examine all transient persons; and boatmen and others are charged on no account to carry any passengers from this county to New York, Long Island, or elsewhere, without certificates from one or more of the members of this committee, or of the committees of the districts in which they reside.[1]

The Committee of Safety for Rye, chosen to serve for one year from May, 1776, consisted of the following persons: —

Samuel Townsend,	Samuel Lyon,
Isaac Seaman,	Gilbert Lyon,
Frederick Jay,	John Thomas, junior.[2]

In Harrison, the Committee of Safety was composed of —

William Miller, *Deputy Chairman.*

Lewis M'Donald,	Peter Fleming,
James Raymond,	Marcus Mosenell.[3]

These committees needed to keep a vigilant eye upon the tories on Rye Neck. Lounsberry was again active, this time endeavoring to obtain recruits for the royal army. Jacob Scureman, called up for examination at the White Plains, testified that he was going over from New Rochelle to Rye, when he came across three or four men with Lounsberry in the woods. He talked with him, but was not shown the enlistment paper, nor asked to put his name to it. Bloomer Neilson, who was with Lounsberry at the place aforesaid, confessed that his name was put to the enlistment paper; Lounsberry overpersuaded him. Joseph Turner, whose name is on the list, says that Lounsberry asked him to sign it, and put his name down; he was to have three pounds bounty. Stephen

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, June 7, 1776.

[2] New York Revolutionary Papers, vol. i. p. 632.

[3] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. v. p. 290.

Hains promised Lounsberry last spring to enlist with him; he did enlist a few days before he was taken. Complaint is made also that Jonathan Purdy, junior, 'a young fellow,' and Gilbert Horton of the White Plains, have called themselves subjects of King George, and claim the privileges of prisoners of war.[1]

The arrival of the British fleet was now imminent. Washington was in New York, making every preparation within his means for the defence of the city. The New York Convention was in session at the White Plains, receiving information and issuing orders respecting the movements of the tories in Westchester County. June 5th, several persons disaffected to the American cause are ordered to be arrested. Among these are William Sutton, Joseph Purdy, and James Horton, junior. Others, 'considered in a suspicious light,' are to appear when summoned, Solomon Fowler among them. On the twenty-second, a levy of fifty men is ordered to serve in this county, in consequence of annoyances suffered from sundry disaffected and dangerous persons. Frequent meetings are now held in different parts of the county at private houses, by 'many persons unfriendly to the liberties of the United States.' The Committee of Safety issue a warning to any who 'allow such meetings to be held at their houses, that they are to be treated as enemies to their country.'[2] July 16th, one fourth of the militia of the county were called out.[3] The enemy's ships were now in the bay of New York; on one of them was General Howe, fully expecting that 'a numerous body of the inhabitants,' who were waiting only for the opportunity, would soon join his army. There were reasons for this expectation. The tories here grow more insolent and boastful. William Sutton and his son John are at last arrested, and ordered to be confined, 'because of inimical declarations and threats.' The Committee of Safety at the White Plains ask to have Captain Townsend's company, now at the North River, recalled, inasmuch as the people of this county greatly need their presence.[4] Several of our Rye farmers have been for some time past detained at the White Plains as disaffected persons. The Committee of Safety apply to the Convention, August 24th, for orders respecting them. 'They are chiefly considerable farmers, and this present season loudly calls upon them to attend to the putting of their seed in the ground, if they can be released with safety to

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. ii. p. 221.
[2] *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. i. p. 354.
[3] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 525.
[4] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 289.

our country.' Among these persons are Monmouth Hart, John McCullum, Joseph and John Gedney, Joseph Purdy, Gilbert Horton, Captain Joshua Purdy, Josiah and Isaac Brown, Bartholomew Hains, Joseph Haviland, Adam Seaman, Samuel Merritt, and Jeremiah Travis. They were probably permitted to return to their homes.[1]

With the arrival of the British fleet, the waters of Long Island Sound became for the first time a scene of hostilities. July 23d, Governor Trumbull of Connecticut wrote to General Washington that 'many of the enemy's frigates and ships' had 'been stationed between Montauk Point and Block Island, to intercept trade from the Sound. They have been but too successful,' he adds, 'in taking several provision vessels;' indeed, it is impossible that any should escape falling into their hands. The armed vessels in the service of Connecticut were ordered to stop and detain all vessels going down the Sound with provisions, until further orders. Washington requests the governors of Connecticut and Rhode Island to send some of their *row-galleys*, which he thinks may be of service in attempting something against the enemy's ships. One has arrived, and three or four others are expected.

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., p. 291. One of the persons concerned in the spiking of cannon at King's Bridge was Isaac Gedney, of Rye. He was for some time detained as a prisoner in the city of New York; and on the twenty-seventh of March was transferred to the White Plains. From this place he addressed the following petition to the New York Committee of Safety: —

'White Plains Jail, *April* 20, 1776.

'Gentlemen: I am to acknowledge your kindness in removing me from the *New York* Jail to this place, but am still unhappy in being detained from my family, who at this season, want my assistance very much. It is not only the aid I might give, in keeping my interest together, (all of which has been earned by the sweat of my brow,) but adding happiness to my family, and saving a large family of children from running into many vices. You, gentlemen, who have families, know the difficulty of keeping youth within bounds, when with them; much less can it be done by a mother.

'I have been in confinement near three months. There surely ought to be some period, some end to a man's sufferings. If you, gentlemen, think that giving you good bail for my appearance, as well as for my peaceable behaviour, will answer the intention of the law, I can, and shall with pleasure, give it, in any sum which may be asked; but to lie here confined in a jail, and know my interest daily sinking, without one single advantage to the publick that I can conceive, renders me more unhappy than the bare suffering of being confined.

'If you, gentlemen, can with propriety give me enlargement, you will relieve a distressed family of a wife and seven children, and lay under obligations your unhappy and very humble servant, Isaac Gedney.'

The Committee of Safety granted this application May 2, and permitted Isaac Gedney to go at large, under promise not to bear arms against the American colonies. (*American Archives*, fourth series, vol. v. pp. 990, 991, 1484, 1485.)

'Two men of war are now anchored,' writes Colonel Drake from New Rochelle, August 27th, 'between Hart and City Islands; one more has just gone past Frog's Neck.' He has rallied as many of the militia as possible. The Committee of Safety, upon hearing this, 'orders the militia to be called out with five days' provisions, to watch the motions of the enemy on the Sound. August 28th, a party is to guard from Rye Neck to Rodman's Neck. Colonel Budd commands it. They are in great want of powder. The enemy as yet 'have not been able to plunder much.'[1]

[1] *American Archives*, fourth series, vol. i. pp. 1544–1552.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE REVOLUTION.

1776.

'A voice went forth throughout the land,
And an answering voice replied,
From the rock-piled mountain fastnesses
To the surging ocean tide.

And the hill-men left their grass-grown steeps,
And their flocks and herds unkept;
And the ploughshare of the husbandman
In the half-turned furrow slept.'

MARY E. HEWITT.

THE troubles in Westchester County were only beginning, as long as the American forces remained in possession of the city of New York. Their presence checked the demonstrations which the British commanders expected from the rural population whose sympathies were very generally with them. Opposition to Congress displayed itself chiefly in plots such as we have seen occurring at Rye and in the neighborhood. But on the fourteenth of September, 1776, Washington abandoned the city, and withdrew his army to the upper part of the island. A month later (October 21–26) he retreated to the White Plains. The operations of the two armies for the next few weeks were conducted at no great distance from Rye. Indeed, the most important of them occurred within the limits of this town, which then included the White Plains. The period therefore of real danger and suffering to our inhabitants begins with these events.

General Howe had landed his forces, on the twelfth of October, upon Throgg's Neck, twelve miles below Rye. On the twenty-first, he took his position upon the heights about a mile north of New Rochelle. The enemy, writes Washington the same day from the White Plains, are advancing by parties from their main body now at New Rochelle. They are seeking to take possession of posts on the Sound, to cut off our supplies from the eastward by water.[1]

[1] 'In one of the churches at New Rochelle was stored more than 2,000 bushels of

Active efforts were now making to prepare the population of Westchester County for a general rising in favor of the government. Information had reached General Heath at King's Bridge, October 2d, that several companies were forming to join Howe's army.[1] To thwart these measures, small bodies of troops were stationed at various points. As early as September 11th, Governor Trumbull had appointed Major Backus with a troop of light horse at or near Westchester. September 21st, General Heath directed him to order a part of this troop to be posted at 'Mareneck,' and places below.[2]

At Mamaroneck, Howe posted Lieutenant-colonel Rogers, in command of the Queen's Rangers, a body of loyalist volunteers recently raised. This was the first introduction of the inhabitants to this officer and his corps, at whose hands they suffered cruelly in after days. Rogers was attacked at Mamaroneck, on the night of his arrival, by a detachment of American troops, who killed or captured some forty of his men. This engagement took place on Nelson Hill and in the vicinity; and the bodies of the killed were buried on the southeast side of the hill. The day after this affair another division of General Howe's army, under General Knyphausen, arrived and encamped upon the land between Mamaroneck and New Rochelle. This division consisted of Germans, principally Hessians, who had landed but a few days before in New York. The site of their encampment was on the land recently owned by E. K. Collins, Esq.

Rye was occupied at this moment by a small American force. Early in October, 1776,[3] the twentieth regiment of the Connecticut militia had been ordered to take position here, for the defence of that State. The regiment was far from complete, numbering only one hundred and seventy-six men, commanded by Major Zabdiel Rogers of Connecticut;[4] it had been sent to this point by Gov-

salt, which has fallen into the hands of the enemy. It was owned by the State of New York.' (Letter quoted in *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 1209.) 'We have lately made a prize,' writes a British officer from New York, October 30, to a friend in London, 'that must distress them [the Rebels] exceedingly, no less than a *church full of salt*; so that the poor Yankees literally won't have salt to their porridge.' (*Ibid.* p. 1294.)

[1] *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 845.

[2] *Ibid.* pp. 295, 439.

[3] October 2, General Heath at King's Bridge, sends orders to the officers commanding guards between his posts at Westchester and the '*Saw-pits*,' particularly to Major Rogers, etc. (*American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 845.)

[4] The following order from General Washington, at the White Plains, October 21, to this officer, at Rye, warns him of the approach of the Rangers: —

'Sir: You are hereby requested to make the best stand you can with the Troops

ernor Trumbull of Connecticut, at the earnest request of the Committee of Safety for New York. On the tenth of October, they wrote to him from Fishkill, begging that he would have his militia in readiness in the event of an insurrection. 'No reliance can be placed,' they write the same day to Washington, 'on the Westchester County militia.'[1] The officers, in many cases, oppose the measures of Congress.[2]

The battle of the White Plains was fought on the twenty-eighth. By the twenty-sixth the American army had been moved from King's Bridge to the White Plains, and ranged on the high grounds to the northeast and northwest of the village, and on the lower ground between. It extended from the Bronx River on the right, to Horton's Pond, now called St. Mary's Lake, on the left. Here, upon the left of the line, General Heath's division was posted. To the east of his position lay 'a deep hollow, through which ran a small brook, which came from a mill-pond, a little above.' A high hill rose on the opposite side of this hollow, the top of which was covered with wood. On the south brow of this hill, in the skirt of the wood, General Heath placed Colonel Malcolm, and his regiment of New York troops, with a field-piece.

The American line thus formed ran from northeast to southwest, across the town of the White Plains, a little above the village; and in front of this line some intrenchments were thrown up. To the west of this position and on the other side of the Bronx River was the height known as Chatterton's Hill. The possession of this hill was important, to protect the right flank of the army; and General McDougal's brigade, numbering about fourteen hundred and fifty men, was ordered to occupy it. Meanwhile the enemy had advanced from Scarsdale, and after a skirmish near the present village of Hart's Corners, a little over a mile south of the lines, had arrived in view of the American forces. At once, upon seeing the advantageous position occupied by the force under McDougal, General Howe decided that this force must be dislodged before an attack should be made upon the main lines of the American army.

under your command against the Enemy, who I am informed are advancing this morning on Mamaronek, and I will as soon as possible order a party to attack them in flank, of which you shall be fully informed in proper time.'

The success of this attack rendered this precaution needless, and the Rangers did not as yet visit our town. (*History of Norwich, Connecticut*, by F. M. Caulkins, 1866, p. 382.)

[1] *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 991.

[2] *Ibid.*, fourth series, vol. iii. p. 1604.

A heavy fire was opened on McDougal's command. The cannonade continued for more than an hour, whilst the main body of both armies remained inactive spectators of the scene. Two brigades of the enemy then crossed the Bronx, and marching along the western bank of the river at the foot of the hill, on the line of what is now known as the *Mill Lane*, came opposite to the left of McDougal's line, when they halted, and facing to the left, ascended the rocky face of the hill with great steadiness, notwithstanding the opposition of the American troops.

On every part of the hill the ground was obstinately contested, and the advancing columns of the enemy were more than once thrown into disorder. But the unequal contest could not continue long, and General McDougal's troops were compelled to give way. They moved off with sullenness, however, 'in a great body,' as an eye-witness describes it, neither 'running' nor yet 'observing the best order,' and the enemy made no attempt whatever to pursue them.

The American force that participated in this contest was very small. Not more than twelve hundred men, it would appear, occupied the hill. The British force engaged consisted of thirteen regiments of healthy, well-appointed troops. The American loss was fifty-nine killed and sixty-five wounded; four officers and thirty-five privates were taken prisoners. The enemy lost seventy-four Hessians, and one hundred and fifty-seven British officers and privates killed, wounded, and missing.

After retiring from the hill, General McDougal led his troops over the bridge west from the present railroad station, and marched into the lines east of the Bronx, without interruption from the enemy.

During the night after the battle, General Washington drew back his lines and strengthened his works to so great an extent that General Howe considered an attack too hazardous, and ordered reinforcements from Mamaroneck and New York. Meanwhile, on the night of October 31st, General Washington silently evacuated his lines and fell back to the hills, a very strong position, about two miles north from the White Plains, where the enemy could not approach him without certain defeat.[1]

The action on Chatterton's Hill took place just outside of the

[1] *Battles of the United States, by Sea and Land*, by Henry B. Dawson. In two volumes. New York, Johnson, Fry & Co.: chapter xiv. *The Battle of the White Plains*, vol. i. pp. 176–187. In the above narration I have simply abridged Mr. Dawson's admirable account of this battle, founded upon a most careful and accurate collation of authentic documents.

limits of our town, in Greenburg, west of the Bronx River. But on the day after Washington's withdrawal to the hills, an affair occurred within our limits, of which we have a very graphic account. The division under General Heath's command remained in the position first taken, on the extreme left of the American line, throughout the operations which took place on the right of the army, from October 22d to November 9th. Its line extended from the village of the White Plains, eastward to the hollow already spoken of, in the neighborhood of Horton's Pond. A letter of General George Clinton, who was with this division, describes the state of the troops. He writes, October 31st, after the affair on Chatterton's Hill: —

'We are exactly in the same situation in which we were when I wrote you yesterday. The enemy seem still to be endeavouring to outflank us, especially our right wing. Our advanced guards, I hear, are a little south of *Young's* tavern, on the road leading to *White-Plains*. Where the main body is I can't say, as I am so closely confined to my post on the left of the whole as not to have been a quarter mile west from this for four days past. Near three thousand of the enemy yesterday and the evening before filed off to the left, and were seen advancing towards *King's* street and the *Purchase* road, from which it appears they intend to flank our left as well as right wing. We had reason to apprehend an attack last night or by daybreak this morning. Our lines were manned all night in consequence of this; and a most horrid night it was to lay in cold trenches. Uncovered as we are, daily on fatigue, making redoubts, flèches, abattis, and lines, and retreating from them and the little temporary huts made for our comfort before they are well finished, I fear will ultimately destroy our army without fighting. This I am sure of, that I am likely to lose more in my brigade by sickness occasioned by extra fatigue and want of covering than in the course of an active campaign is ordinarily lost in the most severe actions.'[1]

While thus encamped near Horton's Pond, General Heath's division was attacked by the enemy, after the main body of the American army had fallen back to their position on the hills. The following is Heath's account of the affair: —

'*November 1st.* — In the morning the British advanced with a number

[1] *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 1312. 'Last night Captain Townsend with a detachment of my brigade, consisting of about thirty, brought in prisoner a certain Mr. *Wentworth*, late of Boston, and now a Commissary in the regular service, which they took prisoner near Rye. . . . . I am with usual health, though in no better lodging than a soldier's tent.'

of field-pieces, to the north of the road, near late Head-Quarters, (a heavy column appearing behind on the hill, ready to move forward) and commenced a furious cannonade on our General's division, which was nobly returned by Capt. Lieut. Bryant and Lieut. Jackson, of the artillery. Our General's first anxiety, was for Col. Malcolm's regiment on the hill, to the east of the hollow on the left, lest the enemy should push a column into the hollow, and cut the regiment off from the division. He therefore ordered Maj. Keith, one of his Aids, to gallop over, and order Col. Malcolm to come off immediately, with Lieut. Fenno's artillery. But, upon a more critical view of the ground in the hollow, (at the head of which there was a heavy stone wall, well situated to cover a body of troops to throw a heavy fire directly down it, while an oblique fire could be thrown in on both sides) he ordered Maj. Pollard, his other aid, to gallop after Keith, and countermand the first order, and direct the Colonel to remain at his post, and he should be supported. A strong regiment was ordered to the head of the hollow, to occupy the wall. The cannonade was brisk on both sides, through which the two Aids-de-camp passed, in going and returning. At this instant, Gen. Washington rode up to the hill. His first question to our General, was, "How is your division?" He was answered, "They are all in order." "Have you," said the Commander in Chief, "any troops on the hill over the hollow?" He was answered, "Malcolm's regiment is there." "If you do not call them off immediately," says the General, "you may lose them, if the enemy push a column up the hollow." He was answered, that even in that case, their retreat should be made safe; that a strong regiment was posted at the head of the hollow, behind the wall; that this regiment, with the oblique fire of the division, would so check the enemy, as to allow Malcolm to make a safe retreat. The Commander in Chief concluded by saying, "Take care that you do not lose them." The artillery of the division was so well directed, as to throw the British artillery-men several times into confusion; and finding that they could not here make any impression, drew back their pieces, the column not advancing. The British artillery now made a circuitous movement, and came down toward the American right. Here, unknown to them, were some 12 pounders; upon the discharge of which, they made off with their field-pieces as fast as their horses could draw them. A shot from the American cannon, at this place, took off the head of a Hessian artillery-man. They also left one of the artillery horses dead on the field. What other loss they sustained was not known. Of our General's division, one man only, belonging to Col. Paulding's regiment of New York troops, was killed.

'The British made no other attempt on the Americans, while they remained at White Plains. The two armies lay looking at each other, and within long cannon-shot. In the night time, the British lighted up a vast number of fires, the weather growing pretty cold. These fires,

some on the level ground, some at the foot of the hills, and at all distances to their brows, some of which were lofty, seemed to the eye to mix with the stars, and to be of different magnitudes. The American side, doubtless, exhibited to them a similar appearance. On this day our General ordered three redoubts, with a line in front, to be thrown up on the summit of his post, so constructed, that the whole of them could make a defence, and support each other at the same time, if attacked. These, to the enemy, in whose view they fully were, must have appeared very formidable, although they were designed principally for defence against small-arms; and perhaps works were never raised quicker. There were the stalks of a large corn-field at the spot: the pulling these up in hills, took up a large lump of earth with each. The roots of the stalks and earth on them placed in the face of the works, answered the purpose of sods, or facines. The tops being placed inwards, as the loose earth was thrown upon them, became as so many ties to the work, which was carried up with a dispatch scarcely conceivable.

'The British, as they say, had meditated an attack on the Americans, which was only prevented by the wetness of the night. Be this as it may, our General had ordered his division, at evening roll-call, to be at their alarm-posts, (which they every morning manned, whilst at this place) half an hour sooner than usual. He had then no other reason for doing this, than the near position of the enemy, and the probability that they would soon make an attack. But the Commander in Chief must have made some other discovery; for, after our General was in bed, Col. Carey, who was one of the Aids-de-camp of Gen. Washington, came to the door of his marque, and calling to him, informed him that the whole army were to be at their alarm-posts, the next morning, half an hour sooner than usual, and that he was to govern himself accordingly. Our General replied, that he had fortunately given such orders to his division, at evening roll-call. He therefore neither got up himself, nor disturbed any other of his division.

'*3d.* — The centinels reported, that, during the preceding night, they heard the rumbling of carriages to the south-eastward: and it was apprehended that the British were changing their position.

'*5th.* — The British centinels were withdrawn from their advanced posts. It was apprehended that they meant a movement. The American army was immediately ordered under arms. At 2 o'clock, P. M., the enemy appeared, formed on Chaderton's Hill, and on several hills, to the westward of it. Several reconnoitring parties, who were sent out, reported that the enemy were withdrawing. About 12 o'clock, this night, a party of the Americans wantonly set fire to the court-house, Dr. Graham's house, and several other private houses, which stood between the two armies. This gave great disgust to the whole American army.

'The British were moving down towards Dobb's Ferry. A detachment from the American army was sent out in the morning to harass their rear, but could not come up with them.

'The division moved from near White Plains, and the same night halted at North-Castle.'[1]

Rye was only seven miles distant from the field of this engagement. The roar of the cannon must have been heard here distinctly, throughout that eventful day. Many of the inhabitants, doubtless, were interested spectators of the affair, from the surrounding hills. But more anxious times were near at hand for them. On the fourth of November, General Howe withdrew his forces from the White Plains. That night, our inhabitants saw against the northern sky the glare of a conflagration, the locality of which they could scarcely doubt. The Court House, the Presbyterian Church, and several other buildings at the White Plains, had been set on fire. This outrage was committed by some American soldiers, but without orders, and against the wishes of their superior officers. It incurred the severest condemnation from Washington, who declared his purpose to bring the perpetrators to condign punishment if discovered.

Scenes like this soon became familiar enough to our people. Many a night, the reddened horizon or the visible flames betokened the ruin of some unhappy family, whose barns or houses were consuming within the region of the 'Debatable Land.'

Some of the unavoidable discomforts of war had already begun to be felt. The American army, while encamped near King's Bridge, drew its supplies from the neighboring country. Commissaries were authorized to purchase all the cattle that were fit for the use of the army, and drive them down to King's Bridge, leaving only as many as might be absolutely necessary for the support of families. Should any persons refuse to part with their property at reasonable prices, the cattle were to be driven down to the army, and the owners were to be paid whatever sums the cattle might be sold for, deducting expenses. 'Gil Budd Horton' with others, are appointed agents for the army, to drive all the horses, hogs, sheep and cattle, from those parts of Westchester County that lie along the Sound and the Hudson River, and which are most exposed to the enemy, and billet them out upon the farms in the interior part of the county, until they can be otherwise disposed of. Most of the cattle from Rye are driven to Bedford,

[1] *Memoirs of Major General Heath,* written by himself. Published according to Act of Congress. Boston, 1798: pp. 75–83.

where they are kept in the pastures of Colonel McDaniel. The army greatly needing straw, the farmers of this county are ordered immediately to thresh out all their grain. Those who do not comply with this requisition are liable to have their grain taken for army use, even though it should not have been threshed. The commander-in-chief is empowered to order any straw in Westchester County to be taken, paying the owner a reasonable compensation, 'providing always so much be left as should be sufficient to support the families of the owners for nine months, *and fatten hogs*.'

These foraging parties had probably left our farmers little to spare. But until now they had been visited by only one of the contending armies. The first appearance of 'the King's troops' at Rye was in the last days of October, 1776. Just before General Howe withdrew his army from the White Plains, a brigade under the command of General Agnew 'pushed forward about two miles beyond Rye,' in hopes of bringing a 'large detachment of the American army, which was stationed at Saw Pit, to an engagement.'[1] Not being able to come up with them, they returned on Sunday afternoon, November 3d, to join the royal forces near the White Plains. It was a great day for the loyalists at Rye. 'Many of them showed particular marks of joy' upon the passage of the king's troops. Conspicuous among these was the Rev. Mr. Avery, the rector of the parish, who had been in correspondence with Governor Tryon before the arrival of the British army in New York, and had been very outspoken in his professions of sympathy with the British cause. The American troops reached Rye on the same evening; and by the loyalist account which we have of the matter, 'showed their resentment' toward the tory sympathizers 'by plundering their houses, driving off their cattle, taking away their grain, and imprisoning some of them.' Among the rest, Mr. Avery was a sufferer, and lost his cattle, horses, etc. Two days later he was found dead in the neighborhood of his house. 'Many people,' writes Mr. Seabury, from New York, to the Secretary of the Gospel Propagation Society in England, 'are very confident that he was murdered by the rebels. Others suppose that his late repeated losses and disappointments,

[1] 'We have just received intelligence,' writes Colonel Harrison, Washington's secretary at White Plains, November 3, 'from General Parsons, who is still stationed with his brigade at the *Saw-Pits*, that a large body of the enemy have advanced within a mile of him. He is on his march to meet 'em, and requested some troops to be sent to maintain the lines he has thrown up.' (*American Archives*, fifth series, vol. iii. p. 493.)

the insults and threats of the rebels, and the absence of his best friends, who had the day before gone off for fear of the rebels, drove him into a state of desperation too severe for his strength of mind. . . . . He has left five or six helpless orphans, I fear in great distress; indeed, I know not what is to become of them; I have only heard that the rebels had humanity enough to permit them to be carried to Mr. Avery's friends at Norwalk in Connecticut.' [1]

This melancholy incident gives us a glimpse of a state of things which was now commencing, and was to last throughout the dreary years of the Revolutionary War: the inhabitants, according as they had espoused the one cause or the other, leaving the place with all haste upon the approach of the enemy's forces, or remaining to suffer abuse and depredation.

These injuries were not inflicted solely by the regular troops of either side. Lawless bands of marauders — Cow Boys and Skinners — infested the 'Neutral Ground,' ravaging the whole country between the British and American lines, a region some thirty miles in extent, embracing nearly the whole of Westchester County.

'The party called *Cow-boys* were mostly refugees belonging to the British side, and engaged in plundering the people near the lines of their cattle, and driving them to New York. Their vocation suggested their name. The *Skinners* generally professed attachment to the American cause, and lived chiefly within the American lines; but they were of easy virtue, and were really more detested by the Americans than their avowed enemies the Cow-boys. They were treacherous, rapacious, and often brutal. One day they would be engaged in broils and skirmishes with the Cow-boys; the next day they would be in league with them in plundering their own friends as well as enemies. Often a sham skirmish would take place between them near the British lines; the Skinners were always victorious, and then they would go boldly into the interior with their booty, pretending it had been captured from the enemy while attempting to smuggle it across the lines. The proceeds of sales were divided between the parties. The inhabitants of the Neutral Ground were sure to be plundered and abused by the one party or the other. If they took the oath of fidelity to the American cause, the Cow-boys were sure to plunder them. If they did not, the Skinners would call them tories, seize their property, and have it confiscated by the State.' [2]

Fifteen or twenty years ago, there were some aged persons with us who could recollect the opening scenes of the Revolution.

[1] *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in the County of Westchester*, by Robert Bolton, pp. 322, 323.

[2] *Pictorial Field-Book of the Revolution*, by Benson J. Lossing: vol. ii. p. 185, *note*.

They have now all passed away; but many incidents are still remembered, which they were accustomed to relate, in the long winter evenings, of those eventful times. One such account I am permitted to give, as it was taken down shortly before her death by the daughters of an excellent lady who lived to enter upon her ninety-fourth year.

'Mother was a school-girl between nine and ten years old at the beginning of the war. She well remembers running all the way home from school one morning, when it was announced that the British army were encamped upon Sniffen's Hill, within a mile of her father's house. A part of the army came up by the way of the White Plains, and were most of the day marching down to join those on the hill. In the mean time a large party of Hessians left the camp to plunder the neighborhood, and coming to her father's, robbed the house of all the meat, bread, butter, milk, and cheese, even taking one from the press; drove away the cattle, and killed the poultry, a hog and a cow, from which they cut such pieces as they liked, and left the rest unskinned. Her mother made a cake of a little flour they left, and cooked a piece of the cow for dinner. The Hessians took the horses to carry away their plunder; but by going to some of the officers whom he knew at the camp, her father recovered them as well as his cattle. While the army were marching down [to New York, after leaving Sniffen's Hill], some of the soldiers would leave their ranks, and run in for food, but seeing how stripped and frightened they were, would say there were others coming much worse than the Hessians.

'Her father was sometimes abused and beaten for his money, but being a remarkably peaceable man, did not fare as badly as many others. At one time when they were striking him with their guns, so that the blood ran down his face, mother's sister S. stood before him, and holding up her arms to ward off the blows, was very much bruised herself. Her mother once met a band of plunderers in the road, who demanded her money, searched her pockets, and used abusive language, but let her pass without further molestation. On several other occasions she met with similar treatment.

'While the British had possession of New York and the neighborhood, the inhabitants of this vicinity were said to live "between the lines." Those who joined the British were called the "lower party," or "refugees," and those who favored the American cause, the "upper party." Among the militia of the latter, the very lowest class bore the name of "Skinners," and the inhabitants living between the lines often suffered exceedingly from the depredations of both the refugees and the Skinners, who would frequently rob their defenceless neighbors of all the money, food, and clothing they could find, or could extort from them by wanton cruelty. Mother says that some of the neighbors used to

disguise themselves by blackening their faces and then go from house to house, robbing, stealing and abusing the inmates. They came to her father's house one night, and as they were breaking down the front door, grandmother dared them to come in. They swore they would shoot her if she did not leave the entry, thrusting their guns through the sidelights; but she replied, Fire if you dare, I know you!'

This grandmother seems to have been one of the model 'women of the Revolution,' high-spirited and determined as any soldier. One of the lesser inconveniences to which our farmers were exposed in those days was the necessity of entertaining the officers quartered upon them. These were generally of the American army, and this family, at least, appear to have been fortunate in the character of their guests. The following incident is given, as an instance of the good lady's independent way: —

'Among the officers quartered at her father's, mother well remembers General Schuyler and his suite; but they did not stay long. One morning the General sent a servant for her mother's tea-kettle; but her reply, that when she and her family should have done using it, he might have it, gave great offence.'

Rye was still protected in a measure by the presence of some American troops. General Parsons[1] was at Saw Pit, early in November, with a portion of his brigade.[2] He had a post, also, 'near the head of Rye Pond,' October 29th, securing the communications of the army at the White Plains, in that direction.[3] A month later, in December, 1776, General Wooster, commanding the Connecticut militia, had his headquarters at 'the Sawpitts.'[4] Complaint, however, was made that some of his men dis-

[1] Brigadier-General Samuel Holden Parsons, of Connecticut, was a distinguished officer, who served through the war. Washington's secretary, Colonel Harrison, pronounced him, in 1776, 'a very judicious and good officer.' He died November 17, 1789, being drowned in the Ohio, near Pittsburg. (*Records of the Revolutionary War*, by W. T. R. Saffell. New York, 1858: p. 534.)

[2] The return of General S. H. Parsons's brigade is made November 3, 1776. Colonels Prescott, with 211 men fit for duty; Tyler, 231; Huntington, 136; Ward, 176; M'Intosh, 259; Carpenter, 130; Cogswell, 287; Major Rogers, 108; Lieut.-Colonels Throop, 104; Horsford, 106; Smith, 62. Total, 1,810 fit for duty, besides 708 sick, etc. The whole brigade numbers 3,192 men. Major Zabdiel Rogers, at *Saw Pit*, November 1, 1776, makes a return of his command. He has ten companies; total, rank and file, 172 men, of whom 53 are sick. The same day, Washington's secretary sends to the President of Congress a letter just received from General S. H. Parsons 'who is stationed near the *Saw Pits*,' complaining of a 'most scandalous' practice of 'desertion and return home,' by which 'the number of our troops is every day decreasing.' (*American Archives*, fifth series, vol. iii. pp. 475, 493, 499.)

[3] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 1285.

[4] December 11, Governor Trumbull writes, 'Major General Wooster is now at Saw-Pits, with about 750 men from this State.'

tressed the inhabitants of Westchester County even 'more than the very enemy themselves: taking off with them our stock, household furniture, and even our farming utensils.' It is to be hoped that such grievances were not frequent. But it appears that these Connecticut troops thought themselves bound to act only for the defence of their own State. 'General Wooster,' say the inhabitants, 'affords us no assistance, and we have been informed that some of his officers have said that they would not defend this State, and that if the enemy should make their appearance, they would retreat to the borders of Connecticut, and there make a stand.'[1] This statement receives some confirmation from the incident of November 3d, already related.

December 8th, 1776, General Wooster wrote from Saw Pit to the President of Congress: 'On the 5th inst. a fleet of about eighty transports and eight large ships of war anchored off New London, and were there on the 6th, being the last accounts from them. They passed this place on the 4th, in the evening. I learn from deserters from Long Island, who left the fleet, that they had about 8,000 men on board, — a bad situation for our eastern people, and not a general officer in that part of the country; but I hope Providence will work deliverance for us.'[2]

Ill-used as they thought themselves, however, our inhabitants fared worse before long, when these forces were removed from their neighborhood, and they were left entirely exposed to the incursions of the enemy. This occurred early in 1777. The time of service of many of the Connecticut troops, who hitherto had protected the border, now expired. November 3d, General Washington, while at the White Plains, had ordered the discharge of the light horse under Major Backus, of whom he spoke in high praise. 'Their conduct,' he said, 'has been extremely good, and the services they have rendered of great advantage to their country.'[3] February 17, 1777, General Wooster wrote from Rye Neck, that a regiment of volunteers from Connecticut was to be discharged on the twenty-second, when he would be left with not more than eight hundred men in his department.[4] A few weeks later, the country was deprived of the services of this excellent man, who died May 2, 1777, in consequence of

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress, etc., of New York*, vol. ii. p. 259; Petition of the Committee for Westchester County to the Convention for relief, December 23, 1776.

[2] *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. iii. p. 1129.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 484.

[4] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 816.

wounds received during the expedition of the British to destroy the magazines at Danbury, Connecticut.[1]

One of the principal terrors to the inhabitants of the Neutral Ground, at this period, was the body of troops known as 'The Queen's Rangers.' We have noticed their first visit to our neighborhood, at Mamaroneck, just before the battle of the White Plains. After that battle, when the lower part of the county lay open to the incursions of the enemy, they soon became the scourge of the population. The Rangers were a partisan corps, raised originally in Connecticut and the vicinity of New York, and numbering about five hundred men, all Americans and loyalists. At this time they were commanded by one Robert Rogers, of New Hampshire, 'one of the most odious of all Americans of note' who had enlisted under the royal standard. As early as December 12, 1776, the inhabitants of Westchester County complain bitterly to the Convention, through Judge Thomas, Frederick Jay and others, of their exposure and suffering from this source. They are in continual danger of being made prisoners, and having their farms and habitations plundered by Robert Rogers's party. These men make daily excursions in divers parts of said county, taking with them by force of arms many good inhabitants; also their stock, grain, and everything else that falls in their way, and laying waste and destroying all that they cannot take with them. 'The suffering inhabitants of Westchester County are ravaged without restraint or remorse.'[2]

The presence of an American force at Saw Pit[3] did not prevent the enemy from making an occasional dash into this neighborhood. 'Between thirty and forty Head of fat Cattle belonging to the

[1] David Wooster, born in Stratford, Conn., March 2, 1710, graduated at Yale College, 1738, served in the expedition against Louisburg, 1745, and in the French War, 1756 to 1763. He was engaged in mercantile pursuits till May, 1775, when he planned the expedition from Connecticut to capture Fort Ticonderoga. He was appointed one of eight brigadier-generals by Congress, June 22, 1775, being third in rank. During the campaign of 1776 he was principally employed in Canada. On his return home he was appointed first major-general of the militia of his State, and during the whole winter, 1776–77, he was employed in protecting that State against the enemy.

[2] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 749.

[3] It may have been about this time that the following incident occurred: Several American soldiers, gathered at 'Simmons' [Silvanus Seaman's] tavern,' in Saw Pit, were bantering one Jabez Hobby, a 'tory'; one of them asked him what the letters U. S. A. on his military cap, meant. 'Useless, Scandalous, Army,' answered Hobby: whereupon the enraged patriots took him and hung him by the neck to a tree near by. He was taken down before life became extinct, and lived for some years after the war. His brother Hezekiah Hobby was a whig. (Communicated by Seth Lyon.)

Rebel Army, were drove into this City last Tuesday,' says Gaine's 'New York Gazette,' of March 31, 1777, 'from Rye, in Connecticut.' 'Last Sunday week, Colonel James De Lancey, with 60 of his West Chester Light horse, went from King's Bridge to the White Plains, where they took from the Rebels forty-four Barrels of Flour and two Ox Teams, near one hundred Head of Black Cattle, and 3 hundred Fat Sheep and Hogs; on this Service Mr. Purdy, a very respectable Inhabitant of West Chester County, was killed; there were also Five Horses shot by the Rebels.'[1]

On one of these occasions, Thomas Kniffen, a lad of fourteen or fifteen, was passing through 'Steep Hollow,'[2] between Rye and Saw Pit, driving his father's cows home from pasture. As he approached the post-road, a party 'from below' came along the road, and took him prisoner, making him drive the cows down to New York island, where he remained in camp with them for several weeks. By this time the cattle had been butchered, and his captors set forth on a new marauding tour, taking him with them as guide. They took their course northward in the direction of the White Plains, but finding little spoil, crossed over into the town of Rye, and concealed themselves in the Great Swamp which still existed, between Regent and Ridge streets. Kniffen was ordered to go to some of the neighboring houses and find out where they could obtain food. He went to the house of Caleb Sniffen, on the old road near Mr. Peyton's, told the family what his errand was, and who were hiding in the swamp, and then starting across the fields toward the American lines, ran for his life to Byram Bridge, where he went into camp, and told his story, and enlisted in the army. Just then whale-boats were being fitted out for service on the Sound. Kniffen engaged as a whale-boat man, and served through the war in this capacity. He cruised most of the time along the coast from 'Horseneck' to Throg's Point, making occasional dashes across to Long Island, or annoying the British boats and vessels in the Sound.[3] In this sort of warfare, not a few of our inhabitants were likewise engaged; but little is known at present of their exploits.

'Sniffen's Hill,' according to our old inhabitants, was the place where an American force encamped in Rye, at various times

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury*, October 13, 1777.

[2] The ravine on the south side of Mr. Quintard's property, terminating at the post-road, below Port Chester.

[3] Thomas Kniffen was the grandfather of Jonathan Sniffen, of Rye, from whom I have these particulars.

in the course of the war.[1] The more modern name of this locality is 'Bloomer's Hill.' It overlooks the village of Port Chester, formerly Saw Pit, and commands an extensive view of the surrounding country. This is the only spot, in the lower part of our town, which I have been able to identify as permanently occupied by the troops of either side. Here, I am led to think, the Connecticut troops were encamped from the early part of October, 1776, till the following spring. The commanding officers date their letters sometimes from Saw Pit and sometimes from 'Rye Neck.' The latter name was commonly given at that time to *Peningo Neck*, rather than to the portion of the town which lies west of it toward Mamaroneck. Probably the same spot was meant by both designations.

In the summer of the year 1778, Washington was again for several weeks at the White Plains. The British, after the battle of Monmouth, had retreated to New York, and the Americans, from their former post on the hills of Westchester, awaited further movements on the enemy's part. During this period a detachment of French troops, it is said, was stationed near Saw Pit. The spot pointed out as their camping ground is on the west side of King Street, opposite the Misses Merrit's house.

[1] See vignette, p. 215.

Byram Bridge.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE REVOLUTION.

1777–1783.

IN the northern part of our town, an American force had been stationed, as we have seen, 'near the head of Rye Pond,' in October, 1776, while the army was still at the White Plains. In January, 1777, General Heath, who was at Peekskill with his division, received orders from Washington, then in New Jersey, to move down with a considerable force toward New York, as if he had a design on the city. This was after the attack on Princeton; and the object of the proposed manœuvre was, to compel the enemy to withdraw their forces from New Jersey for the defence of New York. Heath's journal relates the movements of his troops in this neighborhood as follows: —

'*Jan.* 8*th*, 1777. — General Parsons went down to King-street.

'*Jan.* 13*th*. — Our General [Heath himself] moved to the Southward, and reached North-Castle just before sunset.

'14*th*. — Our General moved to King-street to *Mr. Clap's* — about 3,000 militia had arrived, and Gen. Lincoln's division marched to Tarrytown on this day.

'15*th*. — The Connecticut volunteers marched from King-street to New Rochelle, and Gen. Scott's brigade to Stephen Ward's. Plenty

of provisions now arriving. A deserter came in from the enemy, and gave an account of their situation and numbers.

'17*th.* — At night the three divisions began to move towards Kingsbridge — Gen. Lincoln's from Tarrytown, on the Albany road; Generals Wooster and Parsons from New Rochelle and East Chester, and Gen. Scott's in the centre from below White Plains.'

29*th.* — These operations were ended, and the troops fell back. It was 'considered a very hazardous expedition,' the more remarkable because 'performed entirely by inexperienced militia.'

January 31*st.* — A cordon of troops was formed from Dobb's Ferry to Mamaroneck.

'*February* 1*st.* — Foraging being now the object, a large number of teams were sent out towards Mamaroneck, and upwards of eighty loads of forage were brought off.' On the third, and again on the eighth, 'another grand forage' took place.[1]

A number of loyalists from Rye and Mamaroneck were now with the British army in New York or on Long Island, while their families remained here, within the American lines. General Wooster announced his intention to require these families immediately to remove from the place and 'go below,' unless the men should return and pledge themselves to stay quietly at home, in which case they should be protected, and should not be disturbed nor imprisoned.[2] Measures of this character were doubtless necessary, though in many cases they must have caused much suffering. Commissioners were now appointed, with authority to 'seize the personal property of such of the late inhabitants of Westchester County as have gone over to the enemy, and dispose of it at public sale.'[3] We soon hear complaints of 'over-zeal' on the part of

[1] *Memoirs of Major-General Heath*, written by himself. Published according to Act of Congress. Boston, 1798: pp. 106 *seq.* The movement failed to accomplish the object proposed.

[2] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, Monday, February 17, 1777.

'The Copy of an intercepted Letter from a Rebel Officer to a Person in Long-Island.

'HEAD-QUARTERS, January 3, 1777. Sir At the Reqst of Yr Friends You have here Present'd an Invitation of Your Returning Home. The General has ordered all the Wives and Families in Rye and Marrinack whose Husbands or Males are at New York or Long Island immediately to Move to New York or the Island, Unless their Husbands or Males will Return Home and if they Return home, the General Promises Protection which I Here Inclose to Gether with Your Parole which You must Sign and upon Your signing it the General on his Part Promises that he will Protect You as long as a brave People inspired with a Love of Liberty is able to Protect You. You Nead not Fear any Danger of being Moved or imprisoned for You have the Generals Honnor Pledge, Signed By order of Major Genl Wooster Stephen K. Bradley Aid De Camp.'

[3] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 811.

the agents thus empowered. The Committee of Safety, upon representations made by General Putnam, remonstrate with the commissioners for sequestration. 'We are sorry to hear that many of the women and children of tories gone over to the enemy are in a suffering condition. . . . . Several complaints have been made to us that many families have been stripped of almost everything, even of a little pasture and hay for a cow, and in some instances, not left a cow itself, by which means they are reduced to almost a starving condition.' Large families where there are small children have been left without the means of subsistence. 'It was not the sense of Convention to deprive such families of the necessaries of life.' The commissioners are cautioned to proceed with less harshness.[1]

Soon after the withdrawal of the American army from New York, great numbers of poor persons were sent into Westchester County from the poor-house of that city and from elsewhere.[2] Rye, Mamaroneck, and New Rochelle are the places appointed for their reception.[3] Judge Thomas has distributed them as well as he could in the several districts of the county. Among the accounts sent in to the Committee of Safety for the support of these indigent people, is that of Ezekiel Halsted, who has provided for fifty-one of them. The sum of £21 16*s.* 4*d.* is allowed him for this service. The presence of so many helpless persons must have added to the trials of our inhabitants already overburdened.

The sufferings of the people in the lower part of Westchester County now attract much attention, and excite deep sympathy. 'Unless it is the intention of the State to abandon this quarter to the enemy,' writes William Duer, Esq., chairman of the Committee of Convention, 'and to sacrifice those who have stood firm in their country's cause in the worst of times, a proper force must be sent immediately unto the lower parts of this county, under command of active and vigilant officers.' General Wooster is still at Rye Neck, February 17, 1777, but a regiment from Connecti-

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. pp. 812, 813; vol. ii. p. 218.

[2] The Vestry of the city of New York, May 30, 1776, represent to the Provincial Congress, that there are about four hundred poor in the almshouse and adjoining buildings — blind and lame, helpless, children, and old people, etc. They ask for £5,000 or other relief. (*American Archives*, fourth series, vol. vi. p. 627.) August 25, the Convention took action relative to the support of the indigent persons who must be driven from their abodes; they are to be quartered upon the inhabitants, at various places, who are to be paid moderate prices for their support. One thousand pounds are appropriated to remove these people out of the city of New York. (*Ibid.* pp. 1539–1541.)

[3] Some were sent also to New Windsor, in Ulster County. (*Ibid.* p. 1545.)

cut is to be discharged on the twenty-second, when he will not have more than eight hundred men in this department, 'a number very insufficient for the purpose of protecting or maintaining the allegiance of this county, and particularly of securing the important article of forage.' The frequent calls for the services of the militia have greatly distressed the inhabitants of Westchester County; taken the husbandmen from their occupations; and prevented them from threshing and manufacturing their wheat. Colonel Humphreys is directed, March 3, to proceed with all the men he has raised immediately to Westchester County, for the protection of the well affected; and if the troops prove insufficient, volunteers are to be raised, not exceeding three hundred in number. The Provincial Congress appoints a committee of three to devise ways and means for the permanent defence of the inhabitants from the ravages of the enemy.[1]

Little was done for them, however, save to express sympathy and to promise help. Indeed, it was not the design of the American leaders to keep a strong military force in this neighborhood for the protection of the inhabitants of the Neutral Ground. Washington himself, we learn, at an earlier stage of the war, held that upon grounds of military expediency the whole southern part of Westchester County ought to have been desolated, and the army stationed in the Highlands west of the Hudson.[2] At present, the chief anxiety of the leaders was to remove from this region the forage and other stores which might otherwise fall into the hands of the enemy. A number of teamsters were employed, in the spring of 1777, for this purpose, as well as for the removal of 'well-affected inhabitants.' Among these teamsters we recognize the names of Daniel Horton, Stephen Field, John Cromwell, and others, of Rye.

Every week now brings reports of inroads by parties from the British lines, penetrating far into the interior of the county: —

'We have daily accounts of cattle being stole and drove downwards to support our cruel, merciless and inveterate enemies, by our more than savage neighbours, the tories, who have of late become so insulting as to hiss at men passing; and several have been fired at in the road. Isaac Oakley, at the Plains, has been robbed of thirty-six head of cattle.'[3]

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. pp. 808, 816, 821.

[2] *Irving's Life of Washington*, vol. ii. p. 372. *American Archives*, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 921.

[3] Letter of Israel Honeywell, junior, Philip's Manor, March 28, 1777. (*Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 856.)

In one of these raids, the enemy succeeded in effecting the capture of a person whom they had long been seeking to take, Judge Thomas, of this town. On Sunday morning, March the 22d, 1777, a party of British troops seized him at his house in 'Rye Woods,' and carried him to New York, where he was committed to prison. The site of this house is on the west side of King Street, about four miles from the village of Port Chester, and a little beyond the residence of Daniel Brooks, Esq. The kitchen attached to it is still standing, at the end of a short lane. A Mr. Miller was taken at the same time with Judge Thomas; probably William Miller, who was deputy chairman of the Committee of Safety for Westchester County, of which Thomas was chairman. Tradition reports that a certain Hachaliah Carhart, an officer in the British service, belonging to De Lancy's corps of refugees, was one of the company who made this capture. He was well acquainted with Miller, and was like him a member of the Society of Friends. It is said that when the band surrounded the house, Carhart called out to his old acquaintance, Friend Miller, dost thou not know me? The question was repeated three times, and finally the answer came, I knew thee once, but I know thee no more.[1] Judge Thomas died in New York soon after his arrest, and was buried in Trinity churchyard.[2] He had long been prominent as a public man, and was particularly obnoxious to the enemy on account of the active part he took in the early events of the Revolution.

A sad affair occurred at Rye just after this. We quote the account of it which appeared in Gaine's 'New York Gazette,' which had now become a tory organ, April 14, 1777: —

'Some Days ago the Daughter of Mr. Jonathan Kniffin of Rye in Connecticut, was murdered by a Party of Rebels near or upon Budd's Neck. She was carrying some Cloaths to her Father, in Company of two Men who had the Charge of a Herd of Cattle. They were fired upon by the Rebels from behind a Stone-Wall. The poor young woman received a Ball in her Head, of which she instantly died. The Men escaped unhurt. They plundered her dead Body of its Cloaths, cut one of her Fingers almost off in order to take a Ring, and left the Corpse most indecently exposed in the Highway. Such are the Advocates of this cursed Rebellion! Yet the Officer (so called) who commanded the Party, and is said to be a Colonel among the Rebels, gloried in the Exploit, and swore it was better to kill one Woman than two Men, adding moreover, that he would put both Man and Woman

[1] Information from Mr. Nehemiah Purdy, King Street.

[2] Bolton's *History of Westchester County*, vol. i. p. 255.

to death, who should presume to cultivate their Farms or their Gardens in the Neighbourhood of Rye in this Spring.' [1]

This account differs in several particulars from that which has been preserved by tradition. The perpetrators of the outrage, it is said, were not American soldiers, but a party of three 'Cow Boys,' whose names are well remembered. They lived in this vicinity,[1] and were fit specimens of the class of vile and lawless men to which they belonged. The murder is said to have occurred, not on Budd's Neck, but on the post-road a short distance above the village of Rye, near the entrance to Mr. Hunt's late residence. Jonathan Kniffin lived on Regent Street. His daughter was the sister of Andrew Lyon's wife. Her father, it is said, was a 'tory,' and had gone to New York, where he was taken with the small-pox, and eventually died. The daughter, hearing of his sickness, started to go to New York on horseback, but was waylaid and killed in the manner which has been described.

The following item of news appeared in Gaine's 'New York Gazette' of Monday, February 17, 1777: —

'A few Evenings ago, four Boats full of Men came over from Rye to the opposite Shore on Long Island, and carried off a Sloop laden with Poultry and other Things for the New York Market. The Fog was so thick, that the Guard, which is constantly kept upon the Shore, did not perceive them. One Man was taken in the Sloop.'

This is one of the earliest notices of a kind of warfare which was now beginning to assume considerable importance. Small boats, resembling those used by whalers, about thirty feet long, and propelled with oars, from four to twenty in number, were fitted up in the harbors along the northern shore of the Sound, and employed in harassing the enemy in various ways. They would dart across the Sound, under cover of the night, and run into the inlets of the Long Island shore, landing near the house of a tory family, sometimes to plunder and sometimes to take prisoners. Small British vessels, cruising in the Sound, were occasionally captured by these nimble privateers. Market sloops, loaded with provisions for the British army in New York, were their favorite prey. Great quantities of forage and other stores belonging to the enemy were destroyed by these parties. The newspapers from 1777 to the close of the war contain numberless accounts of these exploits, which were a source of no little uneasiness and inconvenience to

[1] One of them in West Street, another in the Purchase.

the British army, while they spread consternation among the loyalists of the surrounding country, and served greatly to cheer the spirits of the friends of the country. Notices like the following appear almost every week : —

'*Oct.* 20, 1777. — Yesterday Sen' night, a Whale Boat, with about ten Men, from Byram River, went into Hempstead Harbour, Long Island, and took out a Wood Boat, carried her into the Sound, and was returning for two others that lay there ready loaded, but a few of the Militia getting together, prevented their Design from being put in Execution, and obliged them to row off with speed.[1]

'*May* 4, 1778. — Last Monday Evening two Row-Gallies and an armed Vessel crossed from Connecticut to Lloyd's Neck, on Long Island, where a Party of loyal Refugees were cutting Wood, who, upon being attacked by the Rebels, retreated to a House, in which they defended themselves with great Bravery and Resolution upwards of six Hours: but their Ammunition being expended, they were obliged to submit to superior Force. Next Morning the Rebels carried their Prisoners, 18 in Number, over to Connecticut. The House in which the Refugees fought and surrendered, is perforated in many Places by the shot of the Rebels.[2]

'*May* 18. — Other parties have been over to Long Island. Thirteen Boats have been taken within twenty Days.[3]

'*May* 25. — Sunday Evening the 16th inst., with Up-sun, a Boat from Connecticut, with a Number of Men and a 4 Pounder, came to Sand's Point, on the North side of Long Island, and stripped a Boat that lay there of all her Sails and Rigging, and went off unmolested.[4]

'*June* 29. — Last Wednesday a Number of whale Boats well manned, from Connecticut, convoyed by the Wild Cat Galley, and a little Sloop, formerly the Raven's Tender, made their Appearance at Lloyd's Neck, in order to harrass his Majesty's Wood Cutters at that Place, and soon took a Boat then going out of the Harbour, which they endeavoured to carry off, but they were immediately pursued and attacked by a Number of Boats from the Ships, when the Wild Cat, the Raven's Tender, and the Wood Boat were taken, as also some of the Whale Boats. Thirty Men were made prisoners, and two killed, without any Loss on our side.[5]

'*Sept.* 7. — A *great abundance* of armed Whale Boats are cruising in many parts of the Sound, and 'tis feared will much interrupt our Market Boats.[6]

Jan. 1779. — 'Three Whale Boats that came over from Connecticut to plunder the inhabitants of Long Island last Week, were taken as

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, October 20, 1777.
[2] *Ibid.* May 4, 1778.
[3] *Ibid.* May 18, 1778.
[4] *Ibid.* May 25.
[5] *Ibid.* June 29.
[6] *Ibid.* September 7.

soon as they landed, by a Party of the King's Troops that were in the Neighbourhood, and were brought to town last Thursday.'[1]

'*June* 30. — Yesterday morning about one o'clock a Party of Rebels from Connecticut landed on Long Island, surprized and carried off Mr. Abraham Walton, Dr. Brooks, and eight more very respectable and loyal inhabitants from Musketo Cove.[2]

'*July* 5. — Last Thursday night a party of about thirty Rebels came over from Connecticut in three whale Boats to Cow Neck, Long Island; they plundered the house of Mr. Stephen Thorne of many valuable articles, and at the same time part of them surrounded the house of Mr. Edward Thorne, his son, which they likewise rifled; fortunately both these gentlemen were that night abroad, which prevented them from being carried into captivity. In the house of Mr. Edward Thorne they found Captain Lewis M'Donald, a gentleman banished by the rebel legislatures from Bedford, West Chester county; him they robbed of such effects as their demagogues had permitted him to bring with him.'[3]

These extracts, to which we might add many, suffice to show what were the dangers as well as the successes of the whale-boat service. It had now become an organized system, under military authority, and conducted in harmony with the general plans of the war. It was pursued with the greatest activity in the years 1780 and 1781. Whale-boats from Connecticut were constantly plying the waters of the Sound, and landing at Setauket, Smithtown, Huntington, Hempstead; on Lloyd's Neck, Cow Neck, Sand's Point; in Oyster Bay, in Mosquito Cove, and other localities along the northern shore of Long Island. We have seen that some of these parties were from Rye and Byram River. Many others doubtless were from the same neighborhood, for in the newspapers of the day, Rye was generally designated as 'in Connecticut.' Some of our inhabitants were engaged during the war in these expeditions, and the scenes of many of them were in full view of our shores.

Operations of this nature were not confined to the American side. The loyalist refugees on Long Island would often retaliate upon their active assailants by similar whale-boat expeditions, starting from the opposite shore, and landing at Fairfield, Stamford, and other points in Connecticut, and in Westchester County. Many a night, doubtless, after some bold foray across the water, did our inhabitants keep watch for the arrival of the enemy's boats upon Rye Neck or in Byram harbor.

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, January 11, 1779.
[2] *Ibid.* July 5, 1779.
[3] *Ibid.*

But their dangers from this source were insignificant compared with those that threatened them on other sides. 'The greater part of this county' was in 1778 'almost entirely undefended, exposed to the incursions of the enemy.' It was infested too with villains 'who daily commit murders, robberies, and other outrages.' The situation of affairs is truly deplorable. 'Unless measures are immediately taken for the defence and security' of this region, 'many of the inhabitants will be obliged to move off.'[1]

Foraging parties of the enemy continued to scour the country. Among the most dreaded of these were the Queen's Rangers, now commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe. On Wednesday, October 7, 1778, they visited this place, and captured, on King Street, 'six light dragoons belonging to Seldon's Regiment,' at the same time burning a store with a considerable quantity of merchandise.[2] But on Friday, November 13, a more important seizure took place. The house of Colonel Thomas, at 'Rye Woods,' was again surprised, this time by a party of the Rangers under Simcoe. Colonel Thomas, the son of Judge Thomas, who had been captured in the same way the year before, was like his father very active and fearless in his support of the American cause, and was bitterly hated by the enemy. A circumstantial account of his capture is given in Simcoe's 'Military Journal.' The Rangers marched all night, and surrounded the house by daybreak. Colonel Thomas had not for some time passed the night at home, but now as the British troops were reported to have gone into winter quarters, thought himself comparatively safe. As the party approached the house, a shot was fired from a window, killing a man by Simcoe's side. The house was immediately forced, and the person who fired the shot was killed. This person, as we learn from local tradition, was James Brundage, a son of Gilbert Brundage, of Rye; a young man of fine character and high promise, whose cruel death was long vividly remembered here. He was killed 'while on his knees, begging for his life.' Thomas Carpenter, another young man who was also in the house at the time, came near losing his life, being stabbed in many places by the soldiers' bayonets, while hidden under a bed.[3] Colonel Thomas leaped out of a window, and came near escaping, but was taken by one of the hussars. The British cavalry proceeded to the American picket, about a mile further,

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress*, etc., vol. i. p. 1107.

[2] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, October 12, 1778.

[3] The step-mother of James Brundage lived to the age of eighty-six years, and died in 1823 at the house of Aaron Field, King Street. I have these facts from her nieces.

hoping to surprise a party of light horse who were stationed there. But the sound of musketry had alarmed them, and after firing their carbines, and wounding one of the enemy's officers, they retreated. Colonel Thomas was taken to General Tryon, who was then at 'Ward's house' in East Chester, and who 'was much pleased at this mischievous partizan's being taken.'[1]

The spot occupied by the American force whose picket guard Simcoe had hoped to surprise, was probably 'at the head of King Street, near Rye-pond.' Here, three regiments of General Parsons's brigade had been posted on the twenty-third of October, 1776, a few days before the battle of the White Plains. General Heath writes from King Street in the following February. Early in 1780, there were 'near 300 Continental Troops stationed at a Place called King Street, their Advance Guard being at the House of John Crom, near the Quaker Meeting House, in Harrison's Purchase.' This was John *Cromwell*, whose homestead is still standing, 'on the south-east side of Rye Pond, on the road leading from the Purchase to North Castle.' The main body of these troops was probably encamped near the intersection of King Street and the road running east from the meeting-house.

It was near Merritt's tavern, at the upper part of King Street, that one of the most notable incidents of the war occurred, on Sunday, December 2d, 1781. Captain Sackett was stationed here in command of 'the New York levies near Harrison purchase.' A party of De Lancey's loyal refugee cavalry, commanded by Captain Kipp, making an incursion as far as King Street, fell in with Captain Sackett, who had gone a short distance from his men, and took him prisoner, together with an ensign and a private. The command of the American party then devolved on Lieutenant Mosher, who retreated with them to a spot near Merritt's tavern, where he 'formed his Men in a solid Body, with fixed Bayonets.' They were ordered not to fire a shot, but to receive the enemy's charge in silence, until further instructions. At the first charge, the tory officer, finding himself repulsed, called to Mosher to surrender, or he would cut his party to pieces. Mosher's reply was one of defiance; and another charge was made and sustained in the same manner. But after the third attack, the Americans were ordered to fire on the retiring troops, which they did with terrible effect, killing one man and dangerously wounding eight others,

[1] *A Journal of the Operations of the Queen's Rangers, from 1777 to the Conclusion of the late American War.* By Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe. New York: Bartlett and Welford, 1844.

among them Captain Kipp. Two of the British officers had their horses killed under them. 'Mosher's men, taking advantage of the discomfiture of their assailants, escaped to a neighboring piece of woods, not having a man even wounded. This is said to have been the most astonishing feat, on the part of both the officers and men, that was enacted during the whole war. General Washington often spoke of the affair, and it was reported all over Europe, to show the utility of the bayonet, and that a small party of infantry thus armed may successfully resist a strong body of cavalry.'[1]

Several engagements took place in 1779 and 1780 below this point, at Sherwood's Bridge (Glenville) and at Byram Bridge. On Thursday night, February 27, 1779, a small party sent from the American lines at Horseneck or Greenwich towards New York, discovered a British force at New Rochelle, advancing toward Rye. The party, composed of a captain and thirty men, retired before them undiscovered as far as Rye Neck; but here, as it was growing light, the enemy perceived and attacked them. They defended themselves as best they could, but were soon defeated by superior numbers, and several were killed. The party now scattered; some of them were driven by the enemy from the post-road down into Milton,[2] where they managed to keep away from their pursuers, crossing the heads of the creeks, and hiding in the swamps; while others made their way to Saw Pit, where they took advantage of an elevated piece of ground, and made some stand; but the superior force of the enemy compelled them to retire over Byram Bridge, which they took up, and by this means were enabled to reach Horseneck in safety. The British troops, consisting of several regiments, a body of dragoons, and a detachment of artillery, were on their way to Greenwich, for the purpose of destroying the salt works at that place. This they accomplished, while General Putnam, who had observed their approach, went to Stamford to collect a body of militia and other troops which were there. Upon his return, the enemy retreated, and 'got over Byram river before dusk, the rebels,' by a tory paper's account, 'annoying the rear with a considerable fire.'[3] According to Putnam's report, a number of pris-

[1] *History of Greenwich, Conn.*, by D. M. Mead, pp. 179–181. Hugh Gaine's *New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury*, Monday, December 10, 1781.

[2] So states Mr. Mead, in his *History of the Town of Greenwich* (p. 166), probably on traditional authority, as the fact is not mentioned in Putnam's account.

[3] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, March 3, 1779. A party of militia, it is said, numbering one hundred and fifty or two hundred, occupied the brow of the hill on the right of the road, east of Byram Bridge, where they were protected by some rocks or boulders. From this vantage-ground they fired down upon the British soldiery as they crossed the bridge, and killed several. (Local tradition.)

oners were taken, and two of the enemy's baggage and ammunition wagons were captured, the former containing a portion of the plunder, which Putnam restored to the inhabitants.[1]

It was on this occasion that General Putnam met with the famous adventure, near Horseneck, which has given his name to the hill east of the Congregational Church.[2]

May and June of the same year were rendered memorable to the people of Rye by several visits of the enemy's troops, dashing through the town on their way to the Connecticut border. May 5th, 'a Party of Lieutenant Colonel De Lancey's Refugees made an Excursion to Horseneck, where they took a Captain and five Privates; and on Wednesday the 10th, near Byron [Byram] River, they took nine Privates.' On the twenty-second, the same corps made 'a successful Incursion upon the enemy' at Horseneck, 'of whom they killed ten, took 37 Continental and Militia Troops Prisoners, and Trophies, consisting, as is said, of one hundred Head of Cattle. But this cost the Colonel the Loss of a brave Officer, Captain [Solomon] Fowler, who was killed by the Enemy's Fire from a Window, which, it is said, occasioned a severe Retribution — The House was immediately consumed to Ashes.'[3]

June 4th, a party of Refugees 'surprised a Party of the Rebels, that were stationed at Byram River; killed three, wounded some, and brought off four Prisoners, with some Stock, etc.'

June 16th, 'a Party of Lieutenant Colonel Emmerick's Dragoons, consisting of a Sargeant and twelve Privates, under the Command of Lieutenant Muirson, with Cornet Merrit, took part of two Rebel Pickets, at Byrom and Sherrard's Bridges, and brought off 18 Prisoners.' Sherwood's Bridge is the ancient name of the bridge crossing the Byram River at Glenville. Some of the old inhabitants in that neighborhood remember hearing of this affair. It is said that the picket guard heard the sound of the horses' feet as the British approached, and succeeded in making their escape.

The alarms and sufferings produced by these frequent forays among the people may be faintly imagined. But tradition represents the state of things in Rye, at this period, as one which could

[1] *Diary of the Revolution*, by Frank Moore: vol. ii. p. 138.

[2] Several of the popular accounts of this adventure place it a month later — in March, 1779. Mr. Lossing (*Field-Book of the Revolution*, i. 411, 412) states that it occurred on March 26. General Putnam's own account is confirmed by the New York papers of the period, which assign the event to the day mentioned above.

[3] Gaine's *New York Gazette*.

scarcely be made worse by any new infliction. The inhabitants, say our old men, 'were pillaged on both sides.' 'Very many had moved away; those who stayed, had to be *milk-and-water* men.' The place was considered particularly unsafe, because 'the scouting parties would generally go as near as they could to the lines' of either army. 'The fences were all down. The farmers could not cultivate the lands.' Many of the owners of property were killed, or were never heard from, and in some cases the lands for this reason became lost to the families who had a right to them. The opinion prevails among those who cherish recollections of the old times, that there was no part of the Neutral Ground where the inhabitants suffered more than in the town of Rye.

Besides the British soldiery, and the Cow Boys, their humble allies, there was a class of men during the war whom the people dreaded perhaps equally or more — lawless characters, who, as it commonly happens in such times, would take advantage of the troubled state of the community to plunder, outrage, and murder the peaceable part of the population without mercy, on their own account. One such individual there was, among others, in Rye, whose very name was a constant terror. Shubael Merritt was neither Cow Boy nor Skinner; but he was a man whom everybody feared; one who, as it was said, 'would shoot a man for the pleasure of it.' An incident of his bloody career is still remembered, and told at the firesides of some of our farmers. Two Frenchmen, 'forage-masters' or commissaries, were on their way toward Saw Pit, in the lower part of King Street, carrying a large sum of money in gold. They were followed by Merritt; and alarmed by his suspicious appearance, fled across a field, when he fired and killed one of them. Whilst he was engaged in robbing his victim of the gold which he had about him, the other made his escape, and rushing into the house of Mr. Samuel Brown, on King Street, near Regent, entreated the family with gestures and in broken language to conceal him. They had seen Merritt pass by with his gun, and suspected that he was the pursuer. They had scarcely succeeded in hiding the Frenchman in the cellar, when Merritt came in, furious with disappointment, and demanded with an oath, 'what had become of that Frenchman?' The family professed entire ignorance, and prevailed upon him to join them at dinner; during which, however, he started up repeatedly in a rage, vowing that he would yet catch the man. When he had left the house, the terrified stranger was released from his hiding-place, and shown whither to flee, in the direction opposite to that which Merritt had taken.

At another time, Merritt and one of his fellow-ruffians were sitting by the road-side, near the village of Rye, engaged in a game of cards, while in a field adjoining an old man accompanied by his little boy was busy ploughing. As they watched his movements, the outlaw proposed to his companion that they should play a game, the loser of which should shoot the old man. The lot fell upon Merritt, who, as the unsuspecting farmer next approached the spot, slowly guiding his team along the furrow, deliberately raised his gun and shot him though the heart. The little boy who witnessed the murderous deed lived to avenge his father's death. Some time after the close of the war, when a young man, he met Shubael Merritt at New Rochelle, and reminding him of the act, killed him on the spot. Such was the fear and detestation in which this man was held that no steps were taken to punish the slayer.[1]

Several of the old houses in our village are known to have been the scenes of thrilling though common events during the Revolutionary War. In almost every family long resident here there linger yet traditions that vividly illustrate the perils and privations of the period.[2] No better description of the men and the times has ever been furnished than that written by the eminent

[1] I have these facts from an aged resident of King Street, and find the latter incident confirmed by Mr. Mead, in his *History of Greenwich* (p. 155). Mr. Mead, however, states that Merritt was killed at White Plains; and a tradition exists in Harrison that he was buried on the south side of an orchard on the place now Mr. Holliday's, nearly opposite the main entrance to his grounds.

[2] Here are a few, not more remarkable, doubtless, than those that linger about many another village in the Neutral Ground, but which may serve as illustrations: —

The father of two ladies now living in Rye used to relate that during the war he once happened to be in the house now Mr. Joseph Kirby's tenement house, when a party of scouts came in, and he concealed himself under a bed. In searching for him the men pierced the bed with their bayonets. When they left the room he escaped through a window and hid in some currant bushes; and he had barely done so when they returned and thrust their bayonets under the bed where he had taken refuge.

A young couple were living at one time in the house where Mr. Josiah Purdy now resides. One night they heard the firing of musketry near by, followed by groans. In their terror they did not dare to open the door; and next morning they found the dead body of a man lying on their door-step, whither he had dragged himself.

On the front stoop of the old Halsted house, on the corner of the road to the Beach, a man was shot dead by a party of Cow Boys or Skinners passing by.

The old Square House on the post-road (now the Misses Mead's) bears many marks of revolutionary times, in its ancient walls, perforated by numerous bullet-holes.

It is said that a British officer was concealed for three months, during the war, in 'Toby's Hole,' a remarkable cave on the land now Mrs. Buckley's, on Locust Avenue. Food was brought to him every day by the family of Gilbert Brundage, who lived near the spot where the railroad crosses Blind Brook; and his military coat, which he gave them when he left, was long preserved as a memorial.

Dr. Dwight.[1] Nor was there any locality in the region described, to which this vivid picture more faithfully applied.

'In the autumn of 1777, I resided for some time in this County. The lines of the British were then in the neighbourhood of King's Bridge; and those of the Americans at Byram river. These unhappy people were, therefore, exposed to the depredations of both. Often they were actually plundered; and always were liable to this calamity. They feared everybody whom they saw; and loved nobody. It was a curious fact to a philosopher, and a melancholy one to a moralist, to hear their conversation. To every question they gave such an answer, as would please the enquirer; or, if they despaired of pleasing, such an one as would not provoke him. Fear was, apparently, the only passion by which they were animated. The power of volition seemed to have deserted them. They were not civil, but obsequious; not obliging, but subservient. They yielded with a kind of apathy, and very quietly, what you asked, and what they supposed it impossible for them to retain. If you treated them kindly, they received it coldly; not as a kindness, but as a compensation for injuries done them by others. When you spoke to them, they answered you without either good or ill-nature, and without any appearance of reluctance or hesitation; but they subjoined neither questions nor remarks of their own; proving to your full conviction, that they felt no interest either in the conversation or in yourself. Both their countenances and their motions had lost every trace of animation and of feeling. Their features were smoothed, not into serenity but apathy; and instead of being settled in the attitude of quiet thinking, strongly indicated that all thought beyond what was merely instinctive had fled their minds for ever.

'Their houses, in the mean time, were in a great measure scenes of desolation. Their furniture was extensively plundered, or broken to pieces. The walls, floors and windows were injured both by violence and decay; and were not repaired, because they had not the means of repairing them, and because they were exposed to the repetition of the same injuries. Their cattle were gone. Their enclosures were burnt, where they were capable of becoming fuel; and in many cases thrown down where they were not. Their fields were covered with a rank growth of weeds and wild grass.

'Amid all this appearance of desolation, nothing struck my own eye more forcibly than the sight of this great road, the passage from New York to Boston. Where I had heretofore seen a continual succession of horses and carriages, and life and bustle lent a sprightliness to all the environing objects, not a single, solitary traveller was visible, from week to week, or from month to month. The world was motionless and silent;

[1] *Travels in New England and New York*, by Timothy Dwight, S. T. D., LL. D., late President of Yale College, vol. iii. pp. 491, 492.

except when one of these unhappy people ventured upon a rare and lonely excursion to the house of a neighbour no less unhappy; or a scouting party, traversing the country in quest of enemies, alarmed the inhabitants with expectations of new injuries and sufferings. The very tracks of the carriages were grown over and obliterated; and where they were discernible, resembled the faint impressions of chariot wheels said to be left on the pavements of Herculaneum. The grass was of full height for the scythe: and strongly realized to my own mind, for the first time, the proper import of that picturesque declaration in the Song of Deborah: *In the days of Shamgar, the son of Anath, in the days of Jael, the highways were unoccupied, and the travellers walked through by-paths. The inhabitants of the villages ceased; they ceased in Israel.*'

CHAPTER XXX.

AFTER THE WAR.

1783.

THE Revolution virtually closed with the surrender of Cornwallis, on the nineteenth of October, 1781. New York, however, was held by the British until November 25, 1783, though hostilities had ceased nearly two years before. In the mean time, great changes were going on in the population, both of city and of country. Families that had fled from their homes during the war, were returning; and persons who had rendered themselves particularly obnoxious to the new powers, were removing from the place. Connecticut had been the refuge of many of our inhabitants, as of those in other localities exposed to the enemy's visits during the war. Worthy Colonel Gilbert Budd brought his family back from New Milford to the homestead in Mamaroneck. Dr. Ebenezer Haviland's widow, with her three children, returned from Wallingford, where her husband had died during their absence from Rye, to dwell again in the 'Square House' on the post-road. Not a few of our people, on the other hand, were obliged to leave. They were the 'loyalists,' now the 'refugees,' who had clung to the British cause through the war. Many of them were thoroughly conscientious in this adherence. They sided with the parent country because principled against rebellion, and unable to approve the course which the colonies were taking. They were men to be respected for their consistency and fidelity to their own convictions. Others there were, however, who well deserved the reprobation of public sentiment, and the infliction of political disabilities. They had been active partisans of the British cause, carrying the miseries of war into the midst of neighborhoods and families, abetting, and often excelling the British troops in acts of vindictive cruelty.

Numbers went from this place to New Brunswick and Nova Scotia. The western counties of the latter province are peopled chiefly by the descendants of loyalists from the United States, who went thither at the close of the war. The remaining inhabitants

of Rye must have read with interest the following items, which appeared in the New York papers of April and May, 1783: —

'The number of inhabitants going to Nova Scotia, in the present fleet [April 26], consists of upwards of nine thousand souls; exceeding by more than one thousand the largest town in Connecticut.'

'Yesterday [May 18], arrived a vessel from Halifax, by which we learn that the fleet with about six thousand Refugees, which lately left this City, were safely landed at Cape Roseway, after a six days passage.'[1]

Many of our people had neighbors and relatives among this company of emigrants. Some of these returned after a few months' absence, and quietly settled down in the place. Others were expatriated for life.

There were painful circumstances connected with these social changes. The families that returned to their homes after a long absence found their farms and houses in a deplorable condition. The cultivation of the soil had long ago ceased, except so far as was required for the bare subsistence of those who remained in the town. Many of the dwellings were in decay. The churches had both been burned; the 'old ruins' of the church on the hill were a conspicuous memorial of the fact for many years. Some estates had been forfeited by reason of the 'tory' character of their owners. Others had been preserved from confiscation by the care of neighbors, who held them for this purpose during the war. But the saddest feature of those times was undoubtedly the return of the Continental soldiers to their homes. Some of them came back to find their families beggared, or dispersed, parents and friends dead and buried. Many returned with habits of idleness and dissipation, that rendered them useless to society. And many came back in want and misery, discharged from the army without their full pay, and suffering from disease and wounds. These are said to have been the most pitiable scenes after the war. Persons who had become so hardened by the sight of misery as to shed no tear when pillaged and abused by marauding troops, were overcome at the sight of the wretched bands of ten and twenty or more, that came straggling along our highway, stopping at night in some barn, where in the morning two or three perhaps would be left who had expired during the night from exhaustion or disease.

The effects of the war were felt for years in the distracted and demoralized state of the community. Frequent outrages were committed in our neighborhood, sometimes from motives of revenge, or to gratify party animosities, and sometimes for mere purposes of

[1] Gaine's *New York Gazette*, April 26, May 19, 1783.

plunder. Occurrences of this kind are still remembered with a painful interest as great as that surrounding the memories of the war itself.

Our Town Records show a blank from April 7th, 1772, to April 1st, 1783. This long interruption, for the space of eleven years, is explained by the following statement which precedes the record of the first town meeting after the close of the war: —

'It may be thought strange why a Town Meeting in the Town of Rye has not been held for so many years. The war coming on and put the Town in such great confusion, and Many of the principal People left their Habitations that no Law could take Place amongst them untill this time.'

At this first meeting John Thomas, Esq., was chosen supervisor of the town.

The people of Rye had held that part of their lands known as Peningo Neck — or the tract between Blind Brook and Byram River — by a charter from the British crown, granted in the year 1720. For this tract, estimated at four thousand five hundred acres, they were required, according to the terms of the charter, to pay a *Quit Rent* of 2*s.* 6*d.* per hundred acres, every year to the State. In 1787, the arrears of this rent, which were claimed by the government of New York, were paid by Mr. Jesse Hunt, supervisor of the town, to the public receiver. They amounted to £99 3*s.* 5*d.* The whole system of quitrents was soon after abolished.

The territory of the town was reduced to its present size by an act of the legislature, March 7, 1788. White Plains and Harrison, which had previously formed a part of Rye, as 'precincts,' or districts of the town, were then constituted as distinct towns.

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE VILLAGE OF SAW PIT.

THE settlement at the mouth of Byram River was known as Saw Pit early in the last century. This name sprang from the fact that a spot on Lyon's Point, now a part of the village of Port Chester, was anciently occupied for the building of boats. There was a landing here, known as the 'Saw pitt landing,' as early as 1732;[1] and in 1741, we hear of 'some small lots lately laid out at the Saw pits so called.' These lots, it seems, were distributed among 'the ancient Proprietors of Peningo Neck,' and the apportionment was one of the last that took place under the proprietary system. But until near the period of the Revolution it can scarcely be said that a village existed here. The farmers of King Street and Hog-pen Ridge brought their produce down to the market sloops which made their weekly passage from this point to the city, and a tavern or two, with a few boatmen's houses, were built in the course of time. Abraham Bush, who for many years sailed from this port, had his father's home-lot 'near Saw-pit landing,' in 1745. Isaac Anderson and Samuel Lyon, 'mariners,' lived here some years earlier. But the maps of a century ago indicate no more than half a dozen houses between Regent Street and Byram Bridge; and even twenty years later, there were not more than sixteen or eighteen.

Lewis Marvin's house was the most noted of these. It is now the residence of Mrs. Moseman, on Willett Street, near the railroad arch, and remains a good specimen of the solid and comfortable dwellings of the better sort in olden times. The old country road ran along the northern side of this house, where a lane is yet to be seen. Lewis Marvin, 'merchant,' lived here as early as 1758, and his house appears on the military map of 1778. He died in the latter part of the war, and was buried, with his wife Martha, near the Episcopal Church at Rye. The house passed into the possession of Samuel Marvin, who kept a tavern here for

[1] Records of a highway opened in 1732, in Book of Records at White Plains.

some years. Reuben Coe, father of Mrs. Moseman the present occupant, bought this place early in the present century.[1]

At the outbreak of the Revolution there was one ISRAEL SEAMAN, who kept a tavern on the southeast corner of Main Street and the street leading to Lyon's Point. This was a noted resort of the farmers and boatmen in ancient days. Seaman, like many others, sided with the British in the war, and went away. In 1779 the tavern was known as LAWRENCE'S.

Across the road from Seaman's stood the house of GILBERT BUSH. It was a stone building, on the site of the house where Mr. Gershom Bulkley now lives. This spot has been in the possession of one family for no fewer than six generations. It was the 'house-lot' of JUSTUS BUSH, 'merchant, of the city of New York,' who in 1726 purchased proprietary rights in Rye. His will is dated 1737. His widow, Anne Bush, in 1745, gave to her youngest son Abraham 'one half of the home-lot near Saw-pit landing,' bounded on the east by the country road, and on the west by the road leading from Saw Pit landing towards Bloomer's mill.

Within the memory of Gilbert Bush, whose daughter, Mrs. Bulkley, is still living, there were Indian wigwams on Lyon's Point, now a part of Port Chester; and several Indians used to resort thither, at certain seasons of the year, for the purpose of fishing in Byram River, and along the neighboring shores.

The Westchester turnpike road, which was laid out in the year 1800, made a considerable change in the aspect of the village of Saw Pit. A particular account of the alteration has been given in our chapter on 'The Boston Road.'

ADAM SEAMAN'S grist-mill, formerly Richard Ogden's, stood in 1743 near the point where the railroad bridge now crosses Byram River. This was the wading-place known as the '*lower going over*.' Adam's farm of fifty acres lay between this and King Street, above the country road, including much of what is now covered by the village of Port Chester. This property may very likely have been confiscated after the Revolution; for Adam, like Israel Seaman, was a 'tory.' In 1776 he appears as one of the 'disaffected persons,' whom the Committee of Safety at the White

[1] In 1806 Reuben Coe built the house on Main Street, long known as The Pavilion. It was first kept by a Dr. Brewster, who was succeeded by Richard Willis. During the war of 1812, Willett Moseman took charge of this hotel, and kept it for many years. He was succeeded by Alexander Ennis. ('Saw-pit: a Sketch of Port Chester Sixty Years Ago, by Caleb Dunn;' an article in the *Portchester Monitor*, October 29, 1864.)

Plains are concerned to know what they should do with, and ask permission to release, as they are mostly 'considerable farmers,' whose services are much needed at home. At the close of the war, we find this land in the possession of three brothers named Bowne. Thomas, who was justice of the peace in 1793, lived in the house now Mr. Leander Horton's, at the railroad crossing. His farm of one hundred acres stretched from King Street to the river on the south and east, and northward to the farm now owned by the Misses Merritt. Jacob Bowne's house stood on the east side of the road, near the railroad embankment, and Daniel's directly above. The old mill, known as Squire Bowne's, was still standing in 1800.

Between the old country road and the water there were no houses in 1800. Opposite Mr. Gershom Bulkley's the tide came up to the road-side. Where Adee Street intersects Main Street, there was a channel which Moses Crooker's sloop used to sail up; and the fields beyond this were often overflowed at high water.

The Saw Pit school-house stood anciently on the west side of King Street, about forty rods from the railroad. There was but one other building on that street, south of the Merritt farm. This was Gilbert Miller's house, which is still standing, close by the railroad, on the west side of the arch. On the other side of the country road was the house of Dr. Jonathan Coe, the father of Reuben. The only house on Purchase Street, near the village, stood on the site of Mrs. Moore's dwelling, a few rods from the railroad, on the west side of the street. On Main Street, nearly opposite Seaman's tavern, was a house anciently known as the 'old stone end.' Here Roger Merritt lived in revolutionary times. Jonathan F. Vickers, who taught school at Saw Pit toward the close of the last century, and was something of a lawyer also, lived in a house which stands on Fountain Street, east of the rear end of J. Lounsbery's store, and opposite was the house of Samuel Morrill, a boatman.

Between Seaman's tavern and the western end of the village there were three or four small houses, one of which stood directly in front of the present residence of Mr. Drumgold, and belonged to Israel Seaman.

Robert Merritt lived in the house recently Isaac Carpenter's; Sylvanus Merritt, where Dr. Sands now lives; Samuel Merritt, where the Union Free School stands.

On the triangular lot west of the school-house, and near the Roman Catholic Church, stood, anciently, a building known as

'the Haunted House.' It was torn down some forty years ago. Here a certain Captain Flood, who is said to have 'sailed the first market sloop out of Saw-pit,' lived at the time of the Revolution. 'John Flood the boatman' was one of the persons examined by the Committee of Safety in 1776, in connection with the trial of certain tories concerned in the spiking of cannon at King's Bridge. In this house, tradition states, a daughter of Captain Flood was murdered; and the neighborhood was thought to be haunted by her ghost.[1] Timid persons were long unwilling to pass over the road approaching this house after dark; and there were stories afloat of strange flickering lights that had been seen moving over the meadows near by in the night. Wiser heads, however, knew of the 'Will o' the wisp' or the 'Jack o' lantern,' which frequents low marshy grounds like those around this spot; for here, just in front of the Haunted House, were the 'upper hassocky meadows,' now comparatively dry and salubrious, but once, doubtless, a dismal and unwholesome swamp.

We have spoken in a previous chapter, of 'Saw-pit' as a scene of Revolutionary events. Bloomer's Hill, then called Sniffen's Hill, is the spot around which most of the associations of that period cluster. Doubtless there are many other localities in this neighborhood which were invested with a similar interest, to the minds of generations that have now passed away.

[1] Flood was an active patriot. His 'spirited conduct in apprehending William Lounsbery, a notorious enemy to the cause of America,' was mentioned approvingly by the New York Convention, August 29, 1776. (*American Archives*, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1555.) Lounsbery, a tory of Rye Neck, was taken, with four others whom he had persuaded to enlist in the British service as Rangers. The militia 'were under the necessity of killing him, as he would not surrender.' (*Ibid.*) The murder of Flood's daughter may have been a retaliation for this affair.

Halsted House.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE CHURCHES: WITHOUT A MINISTER.

1660–1674.

THE foregoing chapters have recounted some of the social and political changes incidental to the position of a 'border town.' It is much more, however, in the religious history of our community, as we observed at the outset, that the effects of such a position may be marked. Rye was the latest and remotest plantation of Connecticut. It remained longer than any other plantation of that colony without the benefits of a settled ministry and a well constituted church. And when these benefits had been secured in a measure, the transfer of the town from the government of Connecticut to that of New York was followed by religious differences and divisions that could not but be greatly prejudicial to the highest interests of the people. These facts, whilst they infer a low state of religion compared with that which existed in other and more favored towns, render the history of the churches here all the more instructive and worthy of record and remembrance.

The settlers of Connecticut were English Puritans. Their doctrinal belief was Calvinistic, and their ecclesiastical system was a

modified Presbyterianism. A large proportion of those who came over from England were avowed Presbyterians; the principal friends and patrons of the colony in England belonged to that religious persuasion; and the standards of faith and practice to which the Connecticut churches held were much more nearly akin to those of the Presbyterians of Great Britain than to the ways of the Independents. They were therefore with propriety called, and were accustomed to designate themselves, not unfrequently, by this denominational name.[1]

The first care of the founders of Connecticut was to provide every town with religious ordinances and a competent ministry. Indeed, 'the General Court' of the colony 'would not suffer any plantation to be made which would not support an able orthodox preacher.'[2] And if they saw anything like indifference or neglect with regard to this matter, they were not slow to speak in terms of decided rebuke.

Nine years have passed since the commencement of a plantation at Rye; and in October, 1669, the General Court are 'informed that the people of Rye are yet destitute of an orthodox minister.'

[1] 'Our people in this Colony are, some strict Congregationall men, others more large Congregationall men, and some moderate Presbeterians; and take the Congregationall men of both sorts, they are the greatest part of people in this Colony.' W. Leete, Governor, Hartford, July 15, 1680. (*Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 299.)

'The Puritans were not all Congregationalists. The contrary impression has indeed become very general, from the fact that the Puritans settled New England, and that Congregationalism there became the prevalent form of church discipline. . . . It is commonly taken for granted that all who, as Puritans, emigrated to this country to avoid the persecutions which they suffered at home, were Congregationalists. The truth, however, is that as the great majority of Puritans in England were Presbyterians, so no inconsiderable proportion of those who came to America preferred the Presbyterian form of church government. . . . Many of' the Puritan emigrants who came to New England during the reigns of James I. and Charles I. brought with them 'a preference for Presbyterianism. . . . The colony of Connecticut, in writing at an early period to the lords of trade and plantations, tell them "the people here are Congregationalists, large Congregationalists, and moderate Presbyterians, the two former being the most numerous." This form of expression evidently implies that the latter class bore a large proportion to the former. The principal friends and patrons of this colony in England were Presbyterians, particularly lord Say, an original patentee of the colony, to whom they often express their obligations, and to whose influence, and to that of the earl of Manchester, another leader of the Presbyterian party, they were in a great measure indebted for the restoration of their charter.' — 'The churches of Connecticut appear to have had, from the beginning, more of a Presbyterian influence among them than those of Massachusetts.' — *The Constitutional History of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America.* By Charles Hodge, Professor in the Theological Seminary, Princeton, New Jersey. Philadelphia: 1839. Part I. pp. 22, 30, 31, 33, 34, 38.

[2] *History of Connecticut*, by Benjamin Trumbull, D. D.: vol. i. p. 287.

It appears too that 'they doe not take due care to procure such a one as might carry on the work of the Lord on the Sabboth.' This is not owing solely to the weakness of the settlement. Rye now numbers some fifty families, and is considerably stronger than Greenwich, its neighbor. In some of the new plantations, says Trumbull, thirty families supported a minister, and commonly there were not more than forty when they called and settled one.[1] What is the matter with the planters at Rye? They do not show an utter indifference to religion, but they are getting into loose and disorderly ways. 'John Coe and Marmaduke Smith,' persons who are 'represented to this Court as unsownd and heterodox in their judgments if not scandolous in their liues,' are undertaking to teach or to conduct religious services among them. Their labors too are acceptable, it would appear; for the people 'seem to rest satisfyed without' a lawful pastor, 'in the approuement' of these teachers; who are thus 'put in a capacity more to prejudice then farther the edification of the people there.' The court, therefore, 'upon these considerations, doe authorize and impower Mr. Nathan Gold and any three of the Commissioners' of Fairfield County, 'to require the aforesaid persons, John Coe & Marmaduke Smith, or any others of that towne to appeare before them, and if upon examination things doe appeare to them as they are represented to this Court, they are desired to take effectuall course that the persons afoarsayd may have no oppertunety afforded them to sowe the seeds of eror among the people there; and allso they are to informe the people of Rye that this Court are resolued, if the sayd people's prudent considerations do not moue them to make such prouisions of a suitable person, sownd & orthodox in his principles and apt to teach, (so approued by Mr. Bishop, Mr. Handford, Mr. Wakeman & Mr. Eliphalet Joanes,) the Court will themselues procure and setle a preaching minister amongst them, and take sufficient order that he be mayntained by them, at their next session.'[2]

Who Marmaduke Smith was, we have been unable to learn. One *Arthur* Smith, of Southold, L. I., had been dealt with a few years before by the magistrates of New Haven, for teaching 'the opinions of the Quakers.'[3] John Coe, as we have seen, was one of the founders of the town of Rye. He came from Newtown, L. I., where the Society of Friends counted a number of adherents at an

[1] *History of Connecticut*, by Benjamin Trumbull, D. D.: vol. i. p. 287.

[2] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. pp. 120, 121.

[3] *Ibid.* pp. 291, 292.

early day. It is possible therefore that these persons may have been of the Quaker persuasion, and that for want of a settled pastor, the inhabitants may have listened with favor to their teachings.

This order of the General Court was followed by another, the next October, more stringent and definite. The matter of the religious destitution at Rye is referred to the county court of Fairfield. The magistrates there are recommended 'to take an effectuall course to setle an able and orthodox minister in the towne of Rye, and to order due and competent mayntenance for such minister in a proportionable way among all the inhabitants, with coertion of payment according to lawe, upon complaynt and evidence against any that shall neglect: and the well affected of the sayd towne to a setlement of such a mercy among them, are appoynted to adres themselues to the sayd County Court at Fayrefield to that end.'[1]

This measure seems to have had the desired effect. At a town meeting held in Rye, November 17, 1670, the inhabitants made choice of Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown, and John Brondig, 'who are to do their endeavour to procure a minister.' It was also agreed to allow 'two-pence in the pound for the maintenance of a minister amongst us; that is to say, an *orthodox* minister.'

A minister, however, it was not easy to get in those days. Either the committee met with poor success, or the people showed no great alacrity in 'making out a call.' Six months pass, and in May, 1671, the General Court appoints certain persons to go to Rye, and besides other business, 'to lend their endeavoures in the procuring of an able and orthodox minister to setle in that place.' 'If the people of Rye shall not concur with their endeauoures in procuring a minister, and comfortably setleing of him' among them, then these persons are empowered 'to agree with a suitable man for that worke in that place;' and they are to 'insure to him a mayntenance to the value of forty pownds p^r^ annum, which the treasurer, by warrant to the constable of sayd Rye, shall order the gathering and payment thereof, with the Country Rate.'[2]

Three years more pass by, making fourteen in all, during which Rye seems to have been without a stated ministry. It does not follow that the Gospel was never preached here throughout that period. Trumbull says that Rye and Greenwich 'had *occasional*

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. pp. 142, 143. Oct. 13, 1670.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 150.

preaching only, for a considerable time.' They 'were but just come under the jurisdiction of Connecticut, and not in circumstances for the support of ministers.'[1] The probability is that the pastors of neighboring churches preached here from time to time, during this period, as they did at a later day. Indeed we have Colonel Heathcote's statement to this effect. Speaking of the care that the people of Rye took to provide a parsonage house, 'at such times as they were *destitute of a minister*,' he mentions the adjoining towns of Greenwich and Stamford, as places '*where they were always supplied.*'[2] Stamford, Norwalk, and Fairfield had ministers; and we have seen that as early as 1669 the people of Rye were commended to their watch and care. Mr. Bishop was minister of Stamford, Mr. Handford of Norwalk; Mr. Wakeman and Mr. Jones were ministers of Fairfield. And undoubtedly also they took pains, according to the General Court's injunction, to seek out and recommend suitable persons for the vacancy at Rye.

A pretty strong proof that the people generally were far from indifferent with regard to a settled ministry, may be seen in the care they took at a very early day to provide a home for their future pastor. On this subject we shall speak fully in another chapter. Eighteen or twenty acres were appropriated, from the foundation of the town, for the benefit of the ministry. This fact speaks well for the early settlers of Rye. It shows that whatever evil reports may have reached the ears of the magistrates at Hartford, and however true those reports may have been concerning some of the people, the greater number sincerely desired the advantages of a competent religious instruction.

[1] *History of Connecticut*, vol. i. p. 287.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Westchester County*, p. 158.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

THE CHURCHES: EARLY MINISTRY.

1674–1700.

'THIS Court desires Mr. ELIPHALET JOANES to take the paynes to dispence the word of God to the people of Rye once a fortnight on the Lord's Day, till the Court, October next, and then this Court will take further order concerning them and for Mr. Joanes' sattisfaction.'[1]

This gentleman was the first who is known to have officiated for any length of time in the ministry of the Gospel at Rye. And it so happens that we are able to glean fuller information concerning him than about any of his immediate successors. Eliphalet Jones was the son of the Rev. John Jones, a man of some note in the early history of the New England churches. He came to this country from England, in 1635, a clergyman of the Established Church; and was first settled at Concord, Massachusetts, and afterwards at Fairfield, Connecticut, where he became pastor of the church organized there by his efforts. Eliphalet was born at Concord in 1641. He received his education under the care of the learned and pious Peter Bulkley, who had been his father's colleague at Concord, and studied at Harvard College, but did not graduate. In 1669, we find him admitted to the privileges of a freeman of Connecticut.[2] He was at Greenwich in 1674, when the above order was given; not however as the settled pastor of that town, but as a missionary or evangelist. It would seem that he continued in this neighborhood for about three years, preaching at Rye, probably, from time to time, as occasion appeared.[3] In 1677, Mr. Jones accepted a call to Huntington, Long Island, where he remained and labored for more than fifty years, dying in 1731 at the good old age of ninety. He was never married. He is said to have been 'a man of great purity and simplicity of life and manners, and a faithful and successful preacher.'[4]

[1] May 14, 1674. *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 232.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 106.

[3] Mr. Savage (*Gen. Dict. of the First Settlers of N. E.*) speaks of him as 'having preached at Rye *some years*' (vol. ii. p. 561). I find no confirmation of this statement.

[4] Thompson's *History of Long Island*, vol. i. p. 481.

Having thus provided for their occasional supply, the General Court still urged upon the people the necessity of securing a regular pastor. October 8th, 1674, a committee is appointed 'to endeavour the obteyning and setling of a minister at Rye.'[1] This effort appears to have met with partial success; for in the spring of 1675 we find the people making some arrangements for the settlement of a pastor. The Rev. PETER PRUDDEN was called, and preached here apparently with a view to a permanent charge. The General Court strongly recommended him. A committee was appointed, May 17th, to visit Rye, and 'treat with the inhabitants — so that there may be suiteable encouragement for Mr. Prudden to setle there.' If they find 'any aversness or difficulty with the inhabitants or proprietors in so just and necessary publique good of the towne, they are impowered to doe what they see meet.' For the support of the ministry, the Court grants for this year 'a penny upon the pownd upon all the rateable estate of their towne.'[2]

Mr. Prudden must have preached at Rye for some months, as in 1678 the Court allowed him ten pounds for his former services there.[3] But he did not remain as pastor; and the obstacle to his settlement seems to have related to the parsonage house and lands. The people had set apart a lot for the minister's house, and certain other lands for a glebe. The house-lot was situated in the village 'by the Blind Brook.' It would appear that Mr. Prudden objected to the location; for on the twenty-seventh of May, 1675, the town exchanged this lot for the home-lot of Peter Disbrow, which Mr. Prudden was to have 'for a pasonage lot' if he remained. A building was commenced on this new site for the minister. But in 1676 the agreement for the exchange of lots was cancelled, and next year the 'frame intended for a parsonage house' was ordered to be sold.[4] This doubtless was owing to the fact that the negotia-

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 240.

[2] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 252.

[3] *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 121.

[4] Rye Records, vol. A (now lost), quoted by Bolton, *Hist. of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 133. 'Upon the 27th May, 1675, the town ordered that the home lot of Peter Disbrow, adjoining Timothy Knapp, be taken by the town in exchange for the land by the Blind brook, south of Jacob Bridge's. The above lot to be for Mr. Peter Prudden for a parsonage lot: if not thus disposed of, this agreement to be void. February 26th, 1676. The town released Peter Disbrow's lot and cancelled the above agreement. February 26th, 1677. John Brundige and John Purdy were empowered to sell the frame intended for a parsonage house.'

The name Jacob Bridge is evidently a clerical mistake. It should be Jacob *Pearce*, one of the first settlers, whose lands were located near this spot.

tions with Mr. Prudden had failed. We hear nothing more of him, except that in 1681 the people of Bedford called him to be their minister.[1]

The Rev. Thomas Denham followed. He was the first minister actually settled at Rye. He came in the year 1677, and remained with the people until 1684, perhaps longer. He was a man past the meridian of life, highly esteemed by the ministers of Fairfield and Stamford, and recommended by the General Court of the colony. Mr. Denham appears to have come but lately into Connecticut. He had sustained losses during the recent war,[2] — that of King Philip, in 1675, — a fact which, with other considerations, leads us to conjecture that he came from Massachusetts, where the chief sufferings in that war were felt.[3]

The first mention of Mr. Denham in our Town Records occurs on the fifteenth of June, 1677. This was probably before his arrival here. A house-lot is appropriated to the new minister.[4] On the twenty-second of November, he is admitted an inhabitant of Rye. June 21st, 1678, 'Mr. Thomas Denham is to have all the grass on the highway, at the old town, besides *an equal share with the proprietors of Peningo neck.*' March 5th, 1679, 'Fifty poles of land lying before his door, toward the brook, are granted to Mr. Thomas Denham.' His salary, concerning which orders are given from year to year, was to be thirty pounds, 'to be gathered, annually in the way of rate, provided' he 'continue amongst us and preach the Gospel.' The same provision, granting him 'all the moveable grass in the highway, lying by the old town,' is repeated, to stand 'so long as the said Mr. Denham shall continue a preacher of the Gospel amongst us.'[5]

These provisions for the minister's support were not very ample,

[1] Rye Records: Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, vol. i. p 20.

[2] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. pp. 321, 322. 'This Court being informed that Mr. Thomas Denham is likely to settle at Rye as minister there, who is declared to be a suitable person for that worke by the ministers of Fayrefield and Standford, for his incouragement to setle there, and in regard to his late loss by the war, this Court haue granted him the sume of ten pownds to be payd out of that towne's rate this yeare.'

[3] See note at the end of this chapter.

[4] This allotment was not designed for a parsonage, but as a special gift to Mr. Denham himself. In 1696, Isaac and Mary Denham sell to Stephen Sherwood, junior, a two-acre lot, 'which formerly did belong to our honoured father, Mr. Thomas Denham.' (Rye Records, vol. B. p. 62.)

[5] Rye Records: Bolton, *Hist. of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 53; *Prot. Episc. Church*, pp. 133, 134.

but doubtless they were all that the inhabitants could afford to make. The grant of proprietary rights especially testified the esteem in which Mr. Denham was held. These rights descended to his son, Isaac Denham, and proved valuable.[1]

No record remains of the labors of this first minister of Rye. His home, as we have seen, was the parsonage house in the village, 'at the south-east corner' of the parsonage lot.[2] Here we may picture him, in the 'small framed' dwelling,[3] which must have afforded very narrow accommodations for the minister's family — his wife and six children — when all gathered together. One of the two rooms below stairs must have been the pastor's study as well as the family 'living room.' Here good Mr. Denham had his 'Library of Bookes,' the treasures perhaps which he had saved with the utmost pains in his 'late loss by the war:' particularly prized among which were his 'Commentary upon the Revelalations,' and his 'Epistle upon the Romans.' And here, doubtless, suspended from the walls, were the trusty weapons of the pioneer pastor, his 'musquett,' and his 'longe Gunn,' and his 'two-edged sword.'

Not far from the parsonage house, on the opposite side of the post-road, was the house of Timothy Knapp, where, for want of a church, the little community were accustomed to meet on Sabbath days for public worship. They were called to the meeting by the sound of the drum.[4] The service began early, and lasted several hours. Evening meetings were unknown. The Sabbath was observed from sunset to sunset. The ordinance of the Lord's Supper was rarely celebrated, but baptism was administered very generally.[5]

Mr. Denham's ministry ended about the year 1684. He removed to Bedford, and became pastor of the church in that place.

[1] Other grants of land seem to have been made to Mr. Denham, which did not so descend. In 1683, Peter Disbrow sold to Stephen Sherwood a tract in the field at Rye, with the following reservation: 'It is to be noted that the said Stephen is not to take possession of a bit of salt meadow lying in this above said land until the decease of Mr. Thomas Denham.' (Records, vol. B. p. 53.)

[2] 'The house-lot having the house at the south-east corner, contains a little above two acres.' (Letter of Rev. Mr. Jenney, Dec. 15, 1722; Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 221.)

[3] *Ibid.* pp. 205, 229, 245.

[4] *Ibid.* p. 134, *note.*

[5] 'The greatest part of them,' says Mr. Bridge, 'were baptized before the Church [of England] was settled here.' (*Ibid.* p. 196.) Several of the 'Dissenters' as he calls them, 'are serious people.' 'Some still Presbyterians or Independents in their judgment, but are persons well disposed and willing to partake of the Sacrament in what way they can, rather than not at all.'

He died there in 1688, at the age of sixty-seven years.[1] Various allusions to him in our records lead us to believe that his memory was cherished by the people here with peculiar veneration.

The Rev. John Woodbridge succeeded Mr. Denham as pastor of Rye in 1684. He appears to have preached here for several years, with interruptions, during which the place was without a minister. In 1690 and 1693, persons were appointed to procure one; and in 1697 a committee was chosen 'to discourse [with] Mr. Woodbridge concerning his settling amongst us.'[2] We know

[1] His will is on record in the office of the County Clerk at White Plains. (Vol. B. p. 184.) We give it in full as a curious memento of this our first minister.

'*May the* 2*d* 1688.

'The Last Will and Testament of me Thomas Denham Minister of the Gospell of our Lord Jesus Christ in Bedford. I doe bequeath my soul to God, and my body to a decent buriall, my goods and chattels as followeth.

'In the first place I do give unto my Sonn Isaac Denham all my Lands and Right in Lands that I have in Rye. And my . . . .

'2ly I do give unto my sonn Nathaniell Dunham the westermost of my Plaine Lotts and my 12 acre lott and that Meadow lott that was layd out in the Last Division of meadows; and my musquett and my Commentary upon the Revelations.

'3ly I doe giue unto my son Josiah Dunham at my Decease the eastermost of my plaine lotts, and my 8 acre lott in the east Field, and my Epistle upon the Romans, and my longe Gunn, and my white horse and my Read heafer yeareling, and my two-edged sword, and after his mother's decease I do giue him thats to say my sonn Josiah all my houseing that I have here with my home lott and the rest of my meadows, and lands that I have here in Bedford or shall have, and my tooles that I have for manageing my farme.

'4ly All my right that I have in houseing and land and meadow and what els may be found that is mine in . . . . I do give unto my sonn and daughter Simon and Rebecca Hinckson, that is to say my Land and Meadows and housing with any other part or parts of my Estate in Sheep's Gutt

'5ly I doe give unto my Daughter Sarah Palmer my black two years old heafer.

'6ly I do give unto my Daughter Hannah Dunham a heafer calf. Further my household moveables I doe give to my two youngest daughters Sarah & Hannah, that is to say after my Wife's Decease.

'Further the rest of my Books I doe will that they be as equally divided into several parts according to their worth and divided to my wife and six children by lott, the rest of my Estate I do leave with my Wife for to dispose as God shall direct her. This in my right and perfect sences through God's goodness, is my last Will and Testam[t]. Thomas Denham.

'*Witness* Joseph Theale.'

The inventory of his estate, appended to the above, mentions 'A Library of Bookes,' valued at six pounds. The whole estate is estimated at eighty-seven pounds twelve shillings sixpence.

In 1691, Sarah, widow of the Rev. Thomas Denham, had become the wife of John Hendrickson (Co. Rec., B. 184).

In 1693, Hannah Dunham, perhaps the daughter mentioned above, married Samuel Clason, of Stamford. (*History of Stamford*, p. 157.)

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 136.

nothing more about him save through the following statements in the Town Records, from which it seems that a difficulty respecting his salary remained unadjusted many years after his departure from the place.

'At a town meting in Ry Feberawary 14, 1699–1700, the towne hath given the townsmen full power to gather the Remainder of the mony which is due to M^r^ wood Bridg from the several persons which are behind in their dues to M^r^ woodbridg and also to constitute an atturny to sue any that shall neglect or refuse to make payment of their just dues.'

'At a towne meting in Rye March 1, 1699–1700, the towne hath past a vote that they will not stand tryal with Mr. Woodbridg. At the same towne meting the towne hath by vote agreed that what shall be waiting of the mony that is due to M^r^ Woodbridg from the several persons that hath not yet paid the Remainder of the mony the town will make it up by way of supply in the next towne rate.'[1]

He was followed by the Rev. NATHANAEL BOWERS,[2] who came to Rye in 1697, and remained until 1700. He was called from this place to Greenwich. A committee from that town was appointed, July 23, 1700, 'to enquire of the townsmen of Rye whether the town of Rye intended to settle Mr. Bowers, and if not to make known to him the town's desire to have him settle at Greenwich.' He accepted the invitation, and continued with that people until some time in the year 1709.[3] He appears to have

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, No. C. pp. 6, 11.

[2] A singular mistake has occurred with reference to this minister. Cotton Mather, in his famous *Magnalia Christi Americana,* mentions among the ministers of New England in 1696, 'Mr. Bowers, H. C.,' [graduate of Harvard College] as then settled at Rye. Dr. Trumbull, in his *History of Connecticut,* written about the close of the last century, names '*John* Bowers' as minister of Rye, and adds this statement: 'Mr. Bowers removed from Derby and settled at Rye about the year 1688.' (Vol. i. p. 494.) Mr. Bolton, probably following Trumbull, speaks of him as John Bowers. Mr. Savage (*Gen. Dict. of First Settlers of N. E.*) does the same, and supposes that he was a son of the Rev. John Bowers of Derby, who could not have removed to Rye in 1688, as Trumbull states, for he died at Derby the year before. Of this son Mr. Savage says: 'He may have gone to Derby where his death is recorded 23 Sept. 1708; or the Rye minister may be another man, though it is not probable.' (*Ibid.* i. 223.) He *was,* however, a different man, and not John, but Nathanael. The *full* name occurs three times in our extant records, twice as the signature of a witness. The mistake probably arose with Dr. Trumbull, hastily inferring that the 'Mr. Bowers' mentioned by Mather as at Rye must have been the same with the well known John Bowers of Derby. It is singular that this error should wait so long to be corrected, inasmuch as though we know nothing of Nathanael's antecedents, he comes distinctly to view after leaving Rye, in connection with the history of the church of Greenwich. (See Dr. Linsley's *Historical Discourse,* p. 22. Also, *Public Records of Connecticut,* vol. iii. p. 508.)

[3] Town Records of Greenwich.

enjoyed their confidence and esteem. A letter from the church of Greenwich to his successor in the pastorate, dated September 13th, 1709, speaks of him as 'Y^e^ Respected and worthy Mr. Bowers, who had seen cause to Desert us.'[1]

The period of his stay at Rye was an eventful one to our people. It was the season of their 'revolt' from the government of New York. From January 19, 1697, till October 10, 1700, they claimed to belong to the colony of Connecticut. During these four years they appear to have put forth more earnest efforts to improve their religious condition. This may have been due, in great part, to the influence of Mr. Bowers; in part, also, doubtless, to the new and satisfactory relations into which they had been brought back.[2]

The inhabitants now, at last, undertake the work of building a church. 'At a towne meeting in Ry September 20, 1697, Capt. Theall, John Horton, Joseph Purdy, Hacaliah Browne, John Lyon, Thomas Merit, Isaac Denham, are chosen as a Commity for the management and carrying on the worke of building of a meting house for the town of Ry and also for the appointing of a place where it shall set and the above said meting house shall not acsed [exceed] above thirty foot square.' In November, 1698, another committee is chosen 'for the building of a house for minester.' January 25th, 1698 [1699], the town resolves that 'whereas a commity was appointed at a former town meting for the Build-

[1] Ecclesiastical Records of Connecticut (MS.), Hartford, vol. ii. p. 25.

[2] Mr. Bolton conceives that the renewed zeal of our inhabitants in the pursuit of a minister was occasioned by the Act of the New York Assembly in 1693, 'for settling a Ministry.' 'The people doubtless were becoming alarmed,' he observes, 'lest the Governor should nominate under the new act.' (*History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 135.) This remark follows an account of the town's proceedings on the twenty-seventh of June, 1693, appointing a committee 'to procure a minister as soon as possible.' The Act of the Assembly *was not passed* till the twenty-second of September in that year. So that unless gifted with prophetic vision, our inhabitants could not well anticipate its provisions. Still less could they foresee what the bill when passed *did not contain*. For, as we shall find, it gave the governor no such right as he claimed, to present and install ministers in vacant parishes. His proposed amendment to this effect was rejected by the Assembly, who passed the bill without it. Governor Fletcher's intrigues to secure an ecclesiastical establishment in the province of New York appear highly praiseworthy to Mr. Bolton. But they were as yet scarcely suspected. And they were not very successful after all.

Besides, the people of Rye were at this time eagerly looking to be received back into Connecticut. Their zeal in matters of religion revived as this hope gained strength. Neighboring ministers and churches, too, were doubtless the more diligent in those efforts which they continued so many years to put forth for the spiritual good of this community.

ing of a towne house for the yose of the minestere, and the towne hath further impowered the above-said commity to proceed in the building of y^e^ house with all speed, — the above said house is to be as followeth thirty foot in length and twenty foot in breadth, and two story in haith and a Leanto joyning to it.' In the same year, February 27th, 'the Proprietors of Peningo neck grant unto the towne of Rye a parcell of land of four rods square for the said towne [to] set a house upon lying as convenient as may be on that lot where the town house now stands.'[1]

The 'town house' in the parlance of our settlers, meant sometimes the parsonage or minister's dwelling, and sometimes the 'meeting house' or place of worship. The above orders evidently relate to the building of the latter. Other action was taken with a view to the raising of money for this purpose. August 30th, 1700, Isaac Denham and Joseph Budd were 'chosen collectors for the gathering of the monys which is due for the building of the towne house — Isaac for the east side of Blind brook and Joseph for the west side.' May 30th, 1701, the persons appointed to build the town house are authorized 'to call those collectors to an account which was chosen to collect the monys for the building of the above said house;' should they refuse to give an account, they are to be presented to the next court. June 3d, in the same year, Isaac Denham, who 'was formerly chosen collector for the east side of Blind brook,' is to be 'collector for the whole towne of Rye for the gathering of the monys which is due for the building of the towne house.'[2]

This money was to be raised in the customary way, — by a tax levied on the inhabitants of the town. Thus it was that all expenses for the support of public worship were then provided for in New England. At first, indeed, the ministry had been maintained through *voluntary contributions*. The people of each plantation were to be called upon to 'set down' what they were 'willing to allow for the encouragement of the ministers.' Any, however, who should refuse 'to pay a meet proportion,' were 'to be rated by authority in some just and equal way;' and if after this any man should withhold or delay due payment, 'the civil power' was 'to be exercised as in any other just debts.'[3] But this method

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book, C. pp. 2, 6, 8.

[2] *Ibid.* pp. 10, 13, 14.

[3] Order of the United Colonies concerning the Maintenance of Ministers, September 5, 1644; adopted by Connecticut in the same year: *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. i. pp. 111, 112.

had long since been simplified, very generally, by the practice of raising money for religious uses by *taxation*. In Rye, we have seen, the government of Connecticut ordered this to be done as early as the year 1671. A minister was to be engaged at a salary of 'forty pownds per annum.' This sum was to be gathered by the constable, 'with the country rate.'[1] Subsequently, the General Court allowed this expense to be met by a deduction from the country rate, of 'a penny of the pownd upon all the rateable estate' of the town.[2] Mr. Denham's salary was but thirty pounds, perhaps in view of the greatly impoverished state of the town at that time.[3] The Court ordered that this sum should 'be gathered by the constable with the country rate, in the same speciæ and price as the country rate, and by him to be payd to the sayd minister.'[4] The order was unusually explicit, but it was not carried out; for in 1682 the town directs the salary to be paid '*in provisions*.'[5] Mr. Bowers's salary was fifty pounds. We find the following orders concerning it: —

'At a towne meting in Ry September 20 1697 the towne doth give by a voat unto M^r^ Bowers the som of fifty pounds for his yere salere for his carrying on the work of a minster amongst us.' 'At the above said meting Thomas Merrit and John Frost are chosen collectors for the yere insuing for the gathering of the above said mony.'

August 5, 1698. 'The towne doth give by a vote unto Mr. Bowers the som of fifty pounds for his yere salore for preaching the Gospel amongst us for the yere ensuing.'

February 14, 1699. 'The towne doth give by a vote unto M^r^ Bowers the iust sum of fifty pounds for his yere sallary for his caring on the worke of the menestry amongst us in spaci as followeth wheat at five shillings per bushel indian corn two shillings six pence p^r^ bushel, and all other provision pay equivalent.'

January 31, 1700. 'The towne hath made choice of Samuel Kniffin and Richard Ogden to be Collectors to gather the next Rate insuing that is payable to M^r^ Nathnal Bowers.'[6]

How far the movement for the building of a church proceeded at this period, we are unable to learn. It would appear that moneys were granted, and some portion of them gathered for

[1] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. ii. p. 150. [2] *Ibid.* vol. ii. p. 252.

[3] In 1676 Rye numbered only thirty-two families: the same number as in the second year of the town. Seven years before, it had risen to fifty. The decrease was doubtless owing to the troubled state of the colony during the Indian War.

[4] *Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 71.

[5] Rye Records, quoted by Bolton, *Church History*, p. 134.

[6] Town Meeting Book, C. pp. 2, 5, 8, 10.

this purpose. A site for the house seems also to have been chosen, 'on that lot where the town house now stands.' This was the parsonage house, and the spot must have been on the same narrow strip of land, in the village, between the post-road and Blind Brook. But there is no evidence that such a building was actually erected there.

About the same time that these measures were in contemplation, an effort was made to secure more ground for the minister's use. December 29, 1698, the town appoints John Lyon and Isaac Denham 'as a committy for the laying out of land for a parsonage not exceding forty akers where they may see it convenient and so to rem[ain] a parsonage.'[1] The committee are directed to enter into

[1] Town Meeting Book, C. p. 5.

Rev. Thomas Denham. — The name is sometimes spelt *Dun*ham; indeed, he so writes it three times in his will. Mr. Savage mentions no Denham except our Rye minister, but he finds several early settlers by the name of Dunham. Among these is 'Thomas' of Plymouth, 'perhaps a son of John Dunham,' also of Plymouth, who was representative in 1639 and often after, and deacon among the first purchasers of Dartmouth, and died March 2, 1669, aged eighty. (*Genealogical Dictionary*, vol. ii. p. 81.) Thomas was 'fit to bear arms in 1643;' this agrees with the single statement Mr. Savage makes about our Thomas Denham; that in 1681 he was sixty years of age. (*Ibid.* p. 36.) Dunham married 'Martha, daughter of George Knott, I think.' (*Ibid.*) Our minister mentions his wife Sarah in his will, not unlikely a second and younger wife, for she soon marries again. (*Westchester County Records*, vol. B. p. 189 *seq.*) I conjecture that Isaac, to whom he left the bulk of his landed estate, may have been his son by the former marriage.

But other and more interesting facts confirm the belief that Mr. Denham was none else than Thomas Dunham, formerly of Plymouth. His will speaks of lands which he owned in 'Sheep's Gut,' undoubtedly Sheepscott, a locality on the coast of Maine, then part of Massachusetts. This settlement was on a peninsula or neck, upon the eastern side of the Sheepscott River proper, immediately below what is now called Sheepscott Bridge. The settlers first laid out a street which they called the King's highway, running the whole length of the peninsula. This street was 'lined with houses and other buildings, on both sides.' The settlement was probably begun as early as 1623, only three years after the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth. In 1630, there were fifty families on the Sheepscott Farms. Mr. Denham, not improbably, was laboring here as pastor or missionary in 1675, at the time of the outbreak of King Philip's War.

'In that fearful conflict, the first attack was made upon Plymouth, Mass., June 24th. The flame quickly spread throughout New England. Maine was completely overrun by the enemy. Falmouth, with almost every habitation east of it, was burnt, and their occupants were either driven off, murdered, or sold into merciless captivity.' The savages fell first upon a trader's settlement at Stimson's Point, near Woolwich. From that place the alarm was carried by 'a young maid,' who, frightened by their looks and conduct, 'escaped and travelled over land fifteen miles to *Sheepscot Plantation*, where she gave the alarm, and the terrified inhabitants immediately fled, leaving all their possessions behind them. They had only fairly got away from them when the savage warriors arrived, set up their fiendish war-whoop, then set fire to the buildings, killed the sheep and the cattle, and thus destroyed the labour and care of years.' The inhabitants fled on board a vessel that was building in the harbor, and

negotiation with Humphrey Underhill for his land, and lay it out if he and they can agree. It does not appear that they succeeded.

thus saved themselves. The enemy left nothing remaining, and the land lay desolate many years. In process of time, some returned to their former homes, and were invested with rights to the lands. (*Ancient Settlement of Sheepscot*, by Rev. David Cushman. In the collections of the Maine Historical Society, vol. iv. Portland: 1856.)

Such, not improbably, was the calamitous event, under the shadow of which the first pastor of Rye began his ministry here, and in view of which the General Court granted him a special benevolence of ten pounds, 'in regard to his late loss by the war.'

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE CHURCHES: PARISH AND VESTRY OF RYE.

1693–1703.

WE come now to the period when Rye became a 'parish,' and its Puritan population found themselves under the pastoral care of a clergyman of the Church of England. And here it may be in place to give some account of ecclesiastical matters in the province of New York, to which our town had just been re-annexed.[1] All the different denominations of Christians in that province had enjoyed perfect liberty, and had stood upon equal ground, under the English laws, for thirty years. The 'Protestant Religion' was recognized, but no one Protestant Church was invested with rights superior to others. At the same time, provision was made by law for the support of the Gospel ministry. Ministers were elected in every town by a majority of the inhabitants who were householders, and were maintained, as in New England, by a tax levied on them: the town being held responsible for the payment of the salary agreed upon at the time of the minister's call. As in New England, also, pains were taken to induce each town to call and support a minister. In 1675, it was ordered that besides the usual country rate, a double rate should be levied on all those towns in which there was not already a sufficient maintenance for a minister. Inquiry was made as to any towns that had failed to make this provision, and those that proved to be remiss were urged to the performance of the duty.

All the churches of the province were then supported in this way, with but a single exception. A chaplain of the Established Church of England officiated within the walls of the fort in New

[1] 'Work and Materials for American History — Notes on the Maintenance of the Ministry and Poor in New York — The Colonial Ministry Acts — The Vestry of the City of New York,' etc. By George H. Moore. Two articles in the *Historical Magazine* [Henry B. Dawson, editor], new series, vols. i., ii. From these valuable papers, by the learned librarian of the New York Historical Society, I have drawn much of the information given in the present chapter. Where no other authority is adduced, the statements made are based upon that of Mr. Moore.

York, where the governor resided. He received his allowance from the government. The adherents of that Church were as yet but few. Most of the people were Dutch and English Calvinists. 'There are Religions of all sorts,' writes Governor Andros in 1678, 'one Church of England, several Presbiterians and Independants, Quakers and Anabaptists, of several sects, some Jews, but Presbiterians and Independants most numerous and substantial. The Duke [of York] maintains a chapline w^{ch} is all the certain allowance or Chirch of England, but peoples free gifts to y^{e} ministry, And all places oblidged to build Churches and provide for a minister, in w^{ch} most very wanting, but presbiterians and Independents desirous to have and maintaine them if to be had. There are about 20 churches or Meeting-places of which above halfe vacant theire allowance like to be from 40^{li} to 70^{li} a yeare and a house and garden.'

This method of providing for the support of public worship was set forth very distinctly in the charter which the Duke of York gave to the province in 1684. Liberty of conscience was secured by this instrument to all Christians. All the churches then existing in that province were recognized and confirmed in all their rights, for all time to come. The ministry of all Christian churches was to be duly maintained; the moneys assessed and subscribed for this purpose, were to be collected by warrant from the justice of the county, wherever towns or individuals should fail to meet their engagements for its support. This law was carried out by Governor Dongan, with praiseworthy diligence. He takes care, says a New England governor in 1687, 'that all the people in each town do their duty in maintaining the minister of the place, though himself of a different persuasion from their way.'

But religious toleration was not to the mind of his successors. In 1692, Colonel Benjamin Fletcher arrived as the newly appointed governor of New York. His aim from the first was 'to make the Church of England the established church of the land.' At his first meeting with the Assembly of the province, he recommended a provision 'for the support and encouragement of an able Ministry.' The Assembly reported a bill for this purpose on the nineteenth of September, 1693. It was entitled —

'*An Act for Settling a Ministry, and Raising a Maintenance for them, in the City of* New York, *County of* Richmond, Westchester, *and* Queen's-County.'

This act provided that in each of certain localities named, there

should be called, inducted, and established, within one year, 'a good, sufficient Protestant Minister, to officiate, and have the care of souls.' In the city of New York, there was to be one such minister; in the county of Richmond, one; in the county of Westchester, two, — one to have the care of Westchester, Eastchester, Yonkers, and Pelham, the other to have the care of Rye, Mamaroneck, and Bedford; and in Queen's County, two, — one for Jamaica and the adjacent towns and farms, and the other for Hempstead, and the next adjacent towns and farms.

For the maintenance of these ministers, the act provided that in each of these localities a certain sum should be levied annually, by a tax on the inhabitants. The amount to be raised in Westchester County was fifty pounds for each of the two precincts.

To carry out this provision, the freeholders of each city, county, and precinct were to be summoned by their justices, to meet on the second Tuesday of January, in each year, for the purpose of choosing ten vestrymen and two churchwardens; and the justices and vestrymen were empowered to lay a tax on the inhabitants of the place for the maintenance of the minister and the relief of the poor. Various penalties were annexed to this order, in case of failure to perform these requirements.

Finally, the act provided that the ministers who should be settled in these respective places should be called to officiate by the vestrymen and churchwardens aforesaid. All former agreements, however, made with ministers throughout the province, were to continue and remain in their full force, notwithstanding anything contained in this act.

The act said nothing of any particular religious denomination. 'A good sufficient Protestant Minister,' was the description of the ministry to be maintained. What the Assembly meant in passing this law, is easily ascertained. They were all, with one exception, 'Dissenters' from the Church of England. Of the population for whose benefit the law was framed, but a very small minority belonged to that church. In Westchester County particularly, which was to be favored with two ministers, there were 'scarcely six in the whole county,' a credible witness states, 'who so much as inclined to the Church.'[1] In the whole province, says another, 'there was no face of the Church of England till about the year 1693.' The laws previously passed had contemplated the support of a ministry acceptable to the various bodies of Christians who were most numerous in the land. It is obvious that the present

[1] Bolton's *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church*, etc., p. 25.

act was framed with the same design. Under the circumstances, it could bear no other meaning without a manifest perversion of language, and violation of justice.

The governor's intention, however, in promoting this measure, was very different. He knew that no persuasions would induce the Assembly to provide for the establishment of the English Church in the province. He therefore sought to have the act so worded as to admit of a construction especially favorable to it. When the bill was presented to him for signature he returned it to the Assembly, with one amendment. This related to the last section of the act, which, thus altered, would provide that the ministers to be settled in the several places named should be called to officiate in those places by the respective vestrymen and churchwardens, *and presented to the governor to be approved and collated.* But this amendment the Assembly utterly refused to accept. The bill was passed without it, to the great disgust of Colonel Fletcher, who nevertheless claimed that he possessed by virtue of his office the power which the legislature thus declined to recognize, of inducting or suspending any minister within his government.

Taking this view, the English governors of New York asserted their right, under the act of 1693, to control the choice of ministers; and the English clergy claimed the same prerogatives, under an Established Church, as in England. The people of the province were liable to be taxed for their support; even though, in great majority, of different religious persuasions. And in obscure places, where it could be done without public scandal, they were put in possession of all the property which had been set apart for ecclesiastical purposes by the town. The attempt to carry out these pretensions was not always successful. But it succeeded here at Rye, as it did at Jamaica, Hempstead, and elsewhere. The parsonage house and lands, by order of Governor Cornbury, were surrendered to the newly arrived rector. The inhabitants, who had kept them hitherto for the use of a ministry of their own choice, were dispossessed of this property, without form of law or shadow of right.

In obedience to the Act of 1693, the people of Rye were summoned by their justice, Joseph Theall, to meet for the election of churchwardens and vestrymen. This meeting took place on the twenty-eighth of February, 1694–95. John Lane and John Brondig were elected churchwardens, and Jonathan Hart, Joseph Horton, Joseph Purdy, Timothy Knapp, Hachaliah Brown, Thomas

Merritt, Deliverance Brown, and Isaac Denham, vestrymen. The duty of these functionaries, we have seen, was for the present simply to 'lay a tax' on the parish for the maintenance of a 'good sufficient Protestant Minister.' Their election seems to have been a matter of form, to meet the requirements of the law, which imposed a heavy fine upon the justices in case of neglect to call such a meeting. We hear nothing more of Vestry or churchwardens for nearly nine years. Meantime the town, as formerly, appoints committees to prosecute the search for a minister. Finally, 'at a town meeting held in Rye, December 19, 1702, the towne hath by a vote chosen Capt. Theall and George Lane, sen., to goe to New Rochel, and there to meet those men which shall be chosen in the other parts of the county, and there to consult concerning the ministry as the warrant directs.' And on the twelfth of January following, 'at a lawful towne meeting, the *precinct* of Rye' choose Colonel Caleb Heathcote and Justice Theall churchwardens, and Justice Purdy, Justice Mott, Capt. Horton, Deliverance Brown, Hachaliah Brown, George Lane, sen., Thomas Purdy, Thomas Disbrow, Isaac Denham, and Samuel Lane 'vestri men for the year ensuing.'[1]

The names of 'vestrymen' and 'churchwardens' seem strangely chosen to designate the officers appointed by the Act of 1693. These names were used in England to signify persons chosen by parishioners of the Established Church to take care of ecclesiastical property and manage parochial affairs. There can be no doubt that they were introduced designedly into this bill. It was prepared, we learn, by the only member of the Assembly which passed it who belonged to the Church of England, Mr. James Grahame, the Speaker of the House. He took pains to word it 'so that it would not do well for the Dissenters,' but with the help of the governor would do, though 'but lamely,' for the church. 'It was the most,' says one, 'that could be got through at that time, for had more been attempted, the Assembly had *seen through the artifice*, — the most of them being Dissenters, — and all had been lost.' The use of these terms was a part of 'the artifice.' The Assembly probably thought it of little consequence by what name the officers appointed should be called. Of course, these persons at the first were almost without exception 'Dissenters.' The Vestry of the city of New York, at their first meeting, February 12th, 1694, decided by a majority of votes that 'it is the opinion of y^e^ board that a Dissenting Minister be called to

[1] Town Records.

officiate and have the Cure of Souls for this City.' In January, 1695, they proceeded to call such a minister, by a unanimous vote.[1] And in the same year the Assembly of the province itself declared 'that the Vestrymen and Church Wardens *have power* to call a Protestant Dissenting Minister, and that he is to be paid and maintained according as the Act directs.'

These facts are stated in order to explain the character and complexion of the Vestry of Rye. From its name, it would be natural to suppose that it consisted of persons belonging to the Church of England; and that the body so constituted was a purely ecclesiastical body. This would be far from correct. Probably not one of those who were first chosen to the office 'so much as inclined' to that church. And although many of their successors were members of its communion, the Vestry would appear to have been composed largely of 'Dissenters,' down to the period of the Revolution.[2] It was indeed rather a secular than an ecclesiastical body. It was chosen by the freeholders at large. Its chief business — besides providing for the collection of the minister's salary — was, as we have seen, to look after the poor.

The Act of 1693 was well meant. It harmonized with the previous legislation of the province relative to the support of religion. That legislation was eminently liberal and judicious. It approached more nearly to a perfect system of religious toleration than was known in most other colonies, or in any country of Europe. It allowed each denomination of Christians to choose and support a ministry of their own preference — providing only that it should be a 'Protestant' ministry. But as wrested from its proper design, and 'made to answer the purpose of the English Church party, which was a very small minority of the people,'[3] the act could not fail to work mischief. It tended to aggravate the rankling sense of injustice and oppression which had been produced under other wrongs. And it operated to the serious disadvantage of the church in whose favor it was sought to be construed. This could not but be obvious even at the time to intelligent and

[1] The Rev. Mr. Vesey was at this moment a minister of the Congregational order.

[2] ''Tis our great misfortune here,' says Mr. Bridge, in 1717, 'that our vestries are made up of such persons' ('Quakers and such others as have never showed any regard to religion'). Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 206.

'The Vestry are chosen by all sects in the Parish,' says Mr. Wetmore, in 1761. 'Several of the Vestry are not of the Church, and not one of them a communicant in the Church.' (*Ibid.* pp 292, 293.)

[3] *Work and Materials*, etc., by George H. Moore.

candid men. 'I believe at this day,' wrote Colonel Morris in 1711, 'the Church had been in a much better condition had there been no Act in her favour.'[1] And like every other attempt to interfere with the liberty of conscience and of worship, this course proved only detrimental to the interests of true religion.

[1] *History of the Presbyterian Church, Jamaica, L. I.*, by Rev. James M. Macdonald, D.D., p. 139.

CHAPTER XXXV.

ECCLESIASTICAL LANDS.

SOON after the settlement of the town, three tracts of land were appropriated, according to New England custom, as 'parsonage lots.' One of these was situated at the lower end of Peningo Neck, on what is still known as Parsonage Point; another was in the Town Field; and the third lay in the village proper, on the bank of Blind Brook.

1. The Parson's Point, or Parsonage Point. This must have been the very earliest reservation of land for the minister's use. It comprised three acres;[1] and the location indicates that it was set apart by the inhabitants of 'Hastings,' or while the settlers still lingered near Manussing Island, — about the year 1662. Parsonage Point forms the southeastern extremity of Peningo Neck, and lies about a mile below Rye Beach. It was too remote, therefore, from the houses in that vicinity to be intended for the minister's home-lot, and could serve only as a glebe or meadow-lot. As such doubtless Mr. Denham, Mr. Woodbridge, and Mr. Bowers — the early ministers of Rye — enjoyed it; and it was a part of the ecclesiastical property which the rectors of the Church of England assumed on their 'induction' by order of the colonial governor. This tract, however, was soon diverted from any ecclesiastical possession, by one of its occupants — why, we are not informed. Our only account of the matter is found in a letter from Rev. Mr. Jenney of Rye, December 15, 1722, to the Secretary of the Gospel Propagation Society. 'When I first examined,' he writes, 'into the glebe, I found one lot called the *Parsonage Point*, containing about five acres, as I am informed, alienated from the Church by patent to my predecessor Mr. Bridge and his family forever, and is now possessed by his executrix, for the use of his children.'[2]

[1] So stated in Mr. Bridge's patent. Mr. Jenney, in 1722, called it *five* acres.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 221: *History of Westchester County*, vol. ii. p. 32.

This lot is described in Mr. Bridge's patent as follows: 'Also no. 19 a point of land commonly called Parsons point containing three acres lying on the south east of

It is remarkable that though a century and a half have passed since this occurrence, the name which intimates its ancient destination, of which the above statement is the only explanation we find, still clings to this spot. PARSONAGE POINT is laid down upon the maps to this day, and is a familiar name to our villagers, and the fishermen who frequent our shores. It is now the site of one of our most beautiful residences — that of G. H. Van Wagenen, Esq.

2. A second reservation for the minister took place when the village was permanently laid out, at the upper end of Peningo Neck — about the year 1665. This lot was located in the TOWN FIELD — the tract of land, about a mile square, lying east of the Milton Road or the village street, and south of Grace Church Street. The inhabitants, however, seem to have found some difficulty in deciding precisely where, in this territory, to put the parsonage lot. Two or three different spots are so designated within the first forty years. The earliest mention occurs in 1682, when Hachaliah Brown sells to James Wright a certain parcel of land bounded on the south by 'the parson's land.' The same lot, apparently, is described the next year in another deed as 'land which was formerly Parsonidg land.'

That which was finally devoted to this purpose was a lot, probably of ten acres originally, which had been 'laid out to John Ogden.' It lay in the Town Field, at some distance from any public road, but accessible by means of a lane or cart-way leading from Grace Church Street.

In 1698, when Rye had 'revolted back' to Connecticut, some steps were taken to provide a larger glebe for the minister. The following account appears on our Records: 'At a towne meting in Rye desember: 29: 1698 the towne hath made choise of John Lyon and Isack Denham as a committy for the Laying out of Land for a parsonage not exceding forty akers where they may see it convanant and so to Remain a parsonage.' The same persons were authorized 'to agree with umpray undrall [Humphrey Underhill] conserning his Land and to Lay it out if the sayd undrall and they can agree.' There is no evidence that the purchase was effected.

After this we find frequent allusions in the Town Records to 'the parsonage lot' in the Field. Mr. Bridge, indeed, writing to the Secretary, July 30th, 1717, makes no mention of this land,

the town neck between the lands of John Hoight, the salt water and undivided Land.' (Grant to Rev. Christopher Bridge of 20 small parcels in Rye: Book of Patents, Secretary of State's Office, Albany, vol. xiii. p. 182.)

nor of that on Parsonage Point.[1] But his successor, Mr. Jenney, in the letter already quoted, sends 'a draft of the *two* lots of land which make up the glebe, with a copy of the survey[2] which the violent opposition of some dissenters have obliged me to obtain.' One of these contains 'about seven acres and a half, and is about a mile off, but is so encompassed with other men's land that the road to it is about two miles, so that I fear I shall have little or no use of it. — The lots of land are wholly out of fence.'[3]

Mr. Jenney's object in having these lands surveyed was to ecure them beyond further dispute to his successors in office as the property of the parish church.[4] To this the proprietors of the town, 'being the most part such as were desirous of having a dissenting teacher settled here,'[5] were much averse. The rector complains that upon his arrival they gave him great trouble; and 'had not His Excellency been so kind as to grant his warrant to the Surveyor General to survey, it is believed they would have kept me by force from taking possession.' The measures he took to overcome this opposition do not seem to have propitiated them greatly.

Mr. Wetmore, who succeeded Mr. Jenney in 1727, enjoyed the use of the parsonage lands which had thus been confirmed to the Church. He describes the lot of which we are speaking as containing 'about eight acres, a mile distant, lying in such a form as to be of very little use, but at present rented for three bushels of wheat per annum, for seven years.' But the opposition which the

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, p. 205.

[2] The following is the portion of this survey that relates to the parsonage lot in the Town Field: —

'Pursuant to a warrant from his Excellency bearing date the fifth day of July 1722 I have by Mr. William Forster one of my deputys run out and ascertained the Limits and Boundaries of such Parcels of Land as have been formerly possessed and enjoyed by the Minister of the Parish of Rhye in the County of West Chester as the same were shown to my said deputy by the Church wardens of the said Parish viz.

'One Parcell scituate in the Town field beginning at a white oak bush near the fence of Ebenezer Kniffin and runs thence South seventy-four degrees thirty minutes east twenty-three chains seventy-eight links to a heap of stones thence South twenty-three degrees twenty minutes west three chains seventy links to a wallnut stump Thence north seventy two degrees twenty minutes west twenty four chains twenty links to a stone set in the ground, and thence northeast and by north very near dirt [direct ?] two chains and seventy links to the place where it began and contains seven acres and about half an acre.' (Land Papers, in Secretary of State's Office, Albany, vol. viii. p. 192.)

[3] Bolton, *Ibid.* p. 221.

[4] *Ibid.* p. 222. 'I have taken all possible care to prevent my successor from the like oppositions,' etc.

[5] *Ibid.* p. 221.

former rector had experienced grew in strength. 'The Dissenters,' writes Mr. Wetmore, September 29th, 1748, 'are now endeavouring to get into their possession the small glebe belonging to our Church, which is scarcely worth the charge of a lawsuit; yet I have commenced a suit to defend it, which I believe the wealthiest of my parishioners will not assist me with a farthing to support.' The Society's Secretary, in the following June, wrote at Mr. Wetmore's suggestion to the churchwardens and Vestry, expressing the Society's concern upon hearing that the church and parsonage were very much out of repair, 'and that even the possession of the glebe is disputed against' their 'very worthy pastor.' They are urged to give orders for the full repair of the buildings, and to 'defend Mr. Wetmore in the maintenance of all his just rights,' as they desire his longer continuance among them. On the ninth of October, 1749, Mr. Wetmore informs the Secretary, —

'The tryal with the Dissenters, concerning the parsonage lot, is to be the 24th of this month, according to notice of tryal given. The lot is of no great value, being but seven and a half acres, yet I have thought it my duty not to give it up without tryal, altho' I am threatened by the same persons to have an ejectment served upon me for the poor house and two acres of land upon which I live, unless I will agree to some terms whereby the Presbyterians may have a share of what was *anciently* designed for a parsonage; but as there is no more than two small lots, (which have been long in the possession of the Church,) I think to show no concession unless obliged to it.'

We have no account of the result of this lawsuit. It appears to have been brought by the Presbyterian congregation, for the purpose of recovering at least a part of the old ecclesiastical lands. They claimed, it seems, that this property was theirs originally, having been appropriated by the early settlers for the use of a ministry of their persuasion, and that it had been so enjoyed for a number of years. They asked for a *division* of the lands — consenting that the parish church should retain the minister's house and home-lot, if the parsonage lot or glebe were surrendered to them.

This plea would have met with little consideration from the governor of the province, who lost no opportunity to assert the exclusive claims of the Church of England as by law established, to all such property in the province. But before a civil court, it was more likely to be heard. At least one case of this kind had already come before the courts. In 1727, the Presbyterians of Jamaica, L. I., after great expense, by due course of law

recovered their church, parsonage, and lands, which had been wrested from them many years before.[1] At Hempstead, the Rev. Mr. Jenney, who went to that place in 1726 from Rye, was 'often threatened with an ejectment' from the church property, which had been seized about the same time in a similar way; 'the Presbyterians' pleading 'from the purchase having been made by them, before any church was settled here, and from their ministers having been long in possession of it, that it belongs to them.'[2] It does not appear that they ever carried these threats into execution. Thirty years after the seizure, Governor Cosby gave the church and parsonage at Hempstead, by royal charter, to those who detained them from the lawful owners.[3]

Soon after the date of the trial, as mentioned by Mr. Wetmore, we find that the land in question had passed out of the hands of the 'rector, churchwardens and vestry of the parish of Rye,' and was held by certain individuals, most of whom were members of the Presbyterian congregation, and who were presumably the trustees of that body. On the fourteenth of April, 1753 — three years and a half from the time of the trial — these persons sold to Roger Park, junior, of Rye, a 'certain tract of land . . . . containing seven acres and a half, it being the lot commonly called the *Parsonage Lott.*'[4] This tract is now included in the farm owned by John Greacen, Esq., of Rye, who bought it from the descendant of Roger Park in 1863. No subsequent allusion to the trial occurs in Mr. Wetmore's published correspondence, nor is any mention made of the 'parsonage lot' in question as a part of the church lands, by the succeeding rectors, or in the parish books. *A new 'glebe'* was afterwards secured to the church after this trial, through the efforts of Mr. Wetmore, in place, it is to be supposed, of the land which had been lost.

3. The third tract appropriated by the town for the minister's use, was the 'home-lot' in the village. This contained between two and three acres, and lay 'by the Blind brook.' The site seems to have been chosen previous to the year 1675, when the Rev. Peter Prudden commenced his labors at Rye. Probably it was set apart at the same time with the 'parsonage lot' in the

[1] Thompson's *History of Long Island*, vol. ii. p. 107. Macdonald's *History of the Presbyterian Church, Jamaica*, pp. 148, 149.

[2] Thompson's *History of Long Island*, vol. ii. p. 30, *note*.

[3] Webster's *History of the Presbyterian Church*, p. 88.

[4] Deeds in the possession of Mr. Greacen, Rye. The grantors are Benjamin Brown, Cornelius Flaman, Jonathan Brown, Ebenezer Knitten, Joseph Knitten, Thomas Lyon, Samuel Brown, Ezekiel Halsted, and Gilbert Bloomer, all of Rye.

Field — when the village was first laid out. Here the minister's house was built, before a settled pastor had been obtained; and here Mr. Denham, Mr. Woodbridge, and Mr. Bowers lived before the arrival of the English missionaries. The house-lot was a part of the property claimed by the rectors by virtue of their induction. Mr. Pritchard preached here, in the 'town-house' as it was called; and so probably did Mr. Muirson, until the building of the church in 1706. Mr. Bridge, the next rector, found upon his arrival 'a small parsonage house,' with three acres of land; 'the house so much decayed that it was scarce habitable.' His successor, Mr. Jenney, obtained a survey of this lot,[1] as he did of the larger glebe in the Town Field. By that time — in 1722 — the house, which stood at the southeast corner of the lot, and was built of timber, was 'so much out of repair that nothing but the frame stands good.' Mr. Wetmore describes the parsonage, in 1728, as 'a small, old house with three acres of land lying near the church.' The house, he adds, 'was first built by the town for a Presbyterian minister, before there was a church in town, but never any particular settlement of it upon any. When a minister of the Church came, and they had no Presbyterian minister, the house was put into his possession and enjoyed successively with the glebe by the minister of the Church; but the Presbyterian party threatening to give trouble about it in Mr. Jenney's time, he procured a survey of it for the Church, and got it entered upon the public records of the province. He also repaired the house, which was almost fallen down, being neglected by Mr. Bridge, who thought it not worth repairing.'[2]

Mr. Wetmore himself, though he owned a large farm in the immediate vicinity, continued to occupy the parsonage house, which he 'enlarged and repaired' at his own charge. 'It is now grown so old and decayed,' however, he writes in 1748, 'that it is

[1] The survey quoted on page 296 continues as follows: —

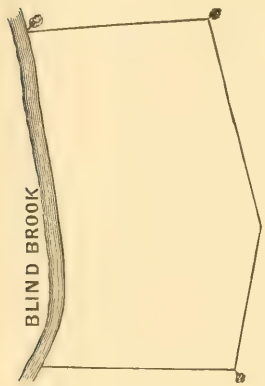
'Another parcel called the Home Lot in which the Town house or Parsonage house stands, Begining at a heap of stones near the said house and runs thence north nine degrees forty five minutes east three chains Thence north twelve degrees west four chains fifty links to stones near Peter Brown's house. Thence South eighty seven degrees west four chains to a Maple by Blind Brook Then along the said Brook South eight degrees east five chains fifty links and South seventeen degrees west one chain fifty four links and thence from the Brook South eighty six degrees east four chains twenty links to the stones where we began. Containing two acres three roods and thirty six Poles. Given under my hand this twenty fourth day of September in the ninth year of his Majesties Reign Anno Dom. 1722.

CADWALLADER COLDEN *Surv^r Gen^l.*'

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County*, pp. 245, 246.

scarce worth repairing.' At the instance of the Gospel Propagation Society, the people appear to have done something toward the improvement of the building. The next rector, Mr. Punderson, 'expressed his satisfaction with the parsonage house and lot.' He had probably removed to the new dwelling and glebe which Mr. Wetmore had secured for his successors, on the west side of Blind Brook.

I have been curious to ascertain the exact spot where so many of the old ministers of Rye, of both denominations, lived. Fortunately, Mr. Jenney's survey of the lot, in 1722, has enabled me to do this with much precision. I find that it occupied the grounds now owned by Mr. Halsted, Miss Bush, and Mr. Thomas Peck, between the post-road and Blind Brook, in the village. The diagram here given is a copy of that which accompanies the survey obtained by Mr. Jenney. Peter Brown's house, mentioned in the surveyor's description, is the lot lately owned by Mr. D. H. Mead.[1] The lot is described as lying south of that house and east of Blind Brook.



When the turnpike road was laid out in 1800 through the village of Rye, it deviated slightly at this point from the line of the old Boston Road, approaching nearer to Blind Brook, and thus cutting off a portion of the parsonage lot, which formerly extended quite across the present road. The negotiations of the Vestry on this subject with the Turnpike Company, show us how these matters were conducted in the days when land was cheap and time moved slowly. January 16, 1802, it is stated to the Vestry that 'the Glebe Lands belonging to this Church have been damaged by the new Turnpike.' May 21, 1803, the Vestry resolve

[1] In 1738, the executors of Peter Brown sold his 'lot with house and mill erected thereon,' bounded on the south 'by the *parsonage* and Blind brook; on the west by Blind brook; on the east by the highway into Harrison's purchase; and on the north by land of Samuel Lane.' (Town Records, vol. C. p. 146.) This lot of five acres had formerly belonged to Jacob Pierce, whose widow Mary, then wife of Isaac Denham, sold it in 1695 to Peter Brown. (Records, vol. B. p. 67.) The minister's lot mentioned in 1675 lay 'south of Jacob Pierce's' (not Jacob *Bridge's*, as Mr. Bolton gives the name — undoubtedly by a clerical error). Peter Brown's house was subsequently bought by Mr. Wetmore. Its ownership can thus be traced with scarcely a break from the foundation of the town to the present day.

to go and view the land intended to make a part of the Turnpike road, which will cut off parts of the parsonage land. On the same day it was 'resolved, that the real value of the land belonging to the parsonage as marked out and intended for the Turnpike road to come, is sixty-two dollars and fifty cents; and that the clerk shall give notice of this resolution immediately to John Peter Delancey, President of the Turnpike Corporation.' August 9, 1803, Mr. Nathanael Penfield is authorized to receive said sum and give a receipt in full.[1]

South of this lot by the brook, there was a narrow strip of land lying between the brook and the Boston Road, which was eventually incorporated with the parsonage land. On the fifth of March, 1679, the town of Rye had granted to the Rev. Mr. Denham 'fifty poles of land lying before his door, toward the brook.' This tract became the property of Isaac Denham, son of the minister, upon his father's death; and in 1723, he conveyed it by gift to the Rev. Mr. Jenney, then rector of the parish church. 'There is a small present,' writes Mr. Jenney, July 1st, 'made to our church, by Mr. Isaac Denham, of this place, of a piece of land containing about fifty square rods, lying before the front of the parsonage house, which though a small spot is of great use to the house; and the donor shows himself on all occasions a hearty promoter of the Church's interest. He is a constant attendant at the ordinances and a communicant. He hath given me a deed of gift for the land, and possession, according to the forms of law, for my use and my successors, the ministers of Rye.'[2] This deed is on record at White Plains. It describes the land conveyed as lying south of the parsonage lot, and between the highway and Blind Brook. It extended as far down as the junction of Rectory Street, as it is now called, with the post-road. '*Mr. Jannis* [Jenney's] *garden*' is designated in 1723 as opposite the path that 'now leads from y^e^ Church into the Country Road.'[3]

This property remained in the possession of the Episcopal Church of Rye until comparatively recent times. An old inhabitant, Mr. Josiah Purdy, remembers the house, which was still standing when he was a boy, about the beginning of this century, near the site of the present residence of Miss Bush. It was then quite dilapidated, but was still known as the 'old parsonage.' After the Revolution all the parsonage lands were, for a while,

[1] Records of the Vestry of Christ Church, Rye.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 226.

[3] Entering of Highways, etc., in County Clerk's Office, White Plains, p. 7.

hired out to various persons for a small rent. May 2d, 1785, 'Mrs. Tamar Haviland hired the Land called the Old Parsenige this year for fifty five shillings, she to put it in fence and to be allow'd for fencing.' June 14, 1792, the Vestry resolved 'that some repairs be made on the old glebe House so as to make it tenantable *for a year or two*.' It does not appear, however, that it was ever again occupied.

The parsonage lot, however, remained intact until about forty years ago. In 1837, Mr. David H. Mead already owned the lower part, which he occupied as a garden. In that year, the rector and Vestry of Christ Church conveyed to Mr. William Smith a piece of land fifty-five feet wide, lying north of Mr. Mead's garden, and in 1847 they sold the remainder of the tract, then estimated to contain four acres.

These were all the lands originally given by the town for the support of the ministry in Rye. The parish church, however, some time before the Revolution, acquired another and much more valuable glebe, situated, not on Peningo Neck, but upon the west side of Blind Brook, opposite the village. This occurred, we have said, a few years subsequent to the lawsuit, and, as there is reason to believe, in consequence of the loss of the old parsonage land in the Field. The first allusion we find to this property is contained in the Abstracts of the Gospel Propagation Society's proceedings for 1759. They state: —

'The Rev. Mr. Wetmore, the Society's missionary at Rye in the Colony of New York, has the pleasure of acquainting the Society by his letter, dated April 7th, 1759, that a very worthy person, a native of England [St. George Talbot, Esq.] but now living in New York, has put into his hands £600 of that currency, of which he reserves to himself the interest during his life, and hath left by his will £400 more to be added to it after his death, to purchase a convenient glebe for the use of the Society's missionary at Rye, for ever.'

Mr. Wetmore himself lived but a little more than a year after this time, but from his will, dated August 6th, 1759, it appears that he had made provision for the accomplishment of Mr. Talbot's design, by setting apart a portion of his own farm for the purpose of a glebe. His farm lay chiefly on the *west* side of Blind Brook, including lands which lately belonged to Mr. James Halsted and Mr. D. H. Mead. In his will,[1] Mr. Wetmore mentions

[1] Surrogate's Office, New York, lib. xxiv. 125, 126.

'*the land I have sequestered for a glebe*, which at the upper end by the stone fence is to be half the width of my lot.'[1] A deed of the year 1768, relating to some property north of this, mentions 'the *new Parsonage* sequestered by the Reverend James Wetmore,' and speaks of it as lying across the brook from 'the *old* Parsonage.' It contained about twenty acres.

A small plot of ground, in this new glebe, was devoted to the purpose of a burial-place for the rectors of the parish church. Mr. Wetmore himself was the first whose remains were laid here, those of his predecessors who died at Rye having been interred beneath the church. The graves of several of the later rectors occupy this plot, which lies directly opposite the rear of Mr. Daniel Strang's store.

A few rods south of the burying-ground, on the other side of a small knoll, there was formerly a house, which probably stood on the glebe at the time when Mr. Wetmore owned it, as there is no record of its erection by the parish. If so, it of course became the property of the parish when the land was set apart for a glebe; and after the Revolution it was occupied, for a while, both as a parsonage house and as a place of worship. Some persons who were yet living a few years ago could remember crossing the brook, when children, to attend divine service here, and one old inhabitant who is still with us, Mr. Josiah Purdy, aged eighty-five, remembers seeing the building destroyed by fire in the year 1794. The impression, however, that this house 'across the brook' was the *ancient* rectory of Rye, is certainly a mistaken one. The 'old parsonage' is the spot of chief interest in the history of our churches before the Revolution.

The Vestry of Christ Church retained possession of the glebe sequestered by Mr. Wetmore, until the year 1846, when they sold it.

After the fire of 1794, the Vestry purchased the RECTORY GROUNDS now owned by Christ Church, for the sum of four hundred pounds. This beautiful tract of land was then in the possession of Mr. Isaac Doughty, a son of John, and grandson of Francis,

[1] From the connection it is evident that the parsonage land across the brook is intended. 'I give and bequeath to my loving son Timothy that house, barn and improvements, bought of Mr. Jacobs, lying in the town of Rye, with all the land on the west side of the road which formerly belonged to Peter Brown; and also that part of my land bought of Joseph Haight, *on the west side of Blind Brook*, running from said brook north-westerly to the stone fence that now runs cross my land near Abraham Brundige's, and to extend *southerly* to the land I have sequestered for a glebe,' etc. The word 'southerly' is misprinted 'northerly' in the will as given by Mr. Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., pp. 289, 290.

who, kept the tavern in the old stone house lately known as Van Sicklin's. The rectory grounds, containing four acres, were anciently a part of the village plot, known as 'The Plains.' Here, as we saw in a former chapter, were some of the choicest 'home-lots' of the first settlers. Two such lots, perhaps, were included within the space now occupied by these grounds. They had been joined in one by the middle of the last century, when Samuel Purdy, schoolmaster of Rye, in 1753 sold his home-lot for one hundred and seventy pounds to his sons Samuel and Caleb. It was bounded on the north by the street leading from the post-road towards the church; on the east by the street leading towards Lyon's mill; on the south by Francis Doughty's home-lot; and on the west by the post-road. This describes the present property of the church, which was conveyed, by deed in 1794 from Isaac Doughty, in fee-simple, without any restrictions or conditions. There is no evidence that it had ever before constituted a part of the glebe. The rectory stood, until within a few years, near the post-road, toward the northern line of the grounds.

Christ Church owns also the narrow strip of land directly opposite the rectory grounds, between the post-road and the brook. In 1832, the trustees of the town of Rye conveyed to the wardens and Vestry for thirty-seven dollars, the tract containing one rood, 'beginning at the south side of the road leading across the brook to the parsonage land, near a poplar tree adjoining the turnpike road, thence south by the turnpike road twenty nine degrees west three chains fifty links, thence west to the brook,' etc. The large willow-tree which stands upon this piece of ground is said to have been planted by the Rev. Evan Rogers, who was rector from 1801 to 1809.

Of the parsonage lands now owned by the other village congregations, we shall speak elsewhere. They have been acquired much more recently, and form no part of the old ecclesiastical lands. These we have described at large because so little has been known, hitherto, of their history and location.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

THE CHURCHES: GRACE CHURCH BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

1705–1776.

THE Honorable Caleb Heathcote was living in Mamaroneck, near Rye, early in the last century. He had removed from England to this country about the year 1692. He held at different times several important positions under the government of the province; and by his wealth, and rank, and personal merits, became one of the leading men of his day. In the county of Westchester, especially, where he resided most of the time, Colonel Heathcote's influence was very great. There was probably no one who approached him in the esteem of our rustic population. He owned a vast landed estate in the neighborhood, which had been constituted by royal charter a 'lordship or manor,' under the name of the Manor of Scarsdale, besides a considerable tract of land within the town of Mamaroneck. He took an active part in the affairs of the county, and was the earnest advocate of various measures for the public good.

To Colonel Heathcote, undoubtedly, more than to any one else, is due the credit of having founded and fostered the Church of England in this country, and particularly at Rye. He was a devoted member of that church, and gave the whole weight of his influence to its promotion here. At his instance, the Society in England 'for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts,' formed in 1701, sent one of its first missionaries to officiate at Rye. The Act of 1693, it will be remembered, had provided that two ministers should be maintained in the county of Westchester, one of whom was to have the care of Rye, Mamaroneck, and Bedford. The governor of the province claimed the right to induct a minister into this charge, upon his being called by the Vestry and churchwardens of the parish. And as the people of Rye had lately chosen Colonel Heathcote himself to be one of their church-

wardens, — the other being Captain Joseph Theall, — there was no difficulty in the way of settling any minister whom the Society might send to this field.

In April, 1704, the Rev. Thomas Pritchard, A. M., arrived in New York, having been appointed by the Bishop of London and sent by the Gospel Propagation Society, to officiate in the parish of Rye. Governor Cornbury forthwith issued his mandate for Mr. Pritchard's induction ; and in May the new minister entered upon his duties. He soon proved, however, to be an unsuitable person, and remained but a few months.[1] His successor, who may be regarded as the first rector of Rye, was the

REV. GEORGE MUIRSON, A. M.

Mr. Muirson was a native of Scotland, and came to this country in 1703, as a schoolmaster of the Gospel Propagation Society. While laboring in this capacity he won the esteem and affection of many persons, and was soon sent back to England strongly recommended as a candidate for orders. He returned to New York in the summer of 1705, having received ordination from the Bishop of London ; and on the thirty-first of July, Governor Cornbury signed the mandate for his induction as 'Rector of the Parish Church of Rye, Mamerenock and Bedford.'

The 'Parish Church,' however, was yet in the future. Our people had been accustomed to worship in the 'town-house,' during the ministry of their former pastors, as well as when supplied by the neighboring ministers of Connecticut while without a pastor. The 'meeting-house' which they had talked of building in 1697, was not yet completed, if indeed begun. Mr. Muirson's first work was to gather a congregation ; for the people were all 'Dissenters,' 'who never were in a Church of England congregation before.' He soon reports a very large attendance of 'constant hearers,' many of whom he has been enabled to admit into the church by baptism. In May, 1706, he writes, —

'I have baptized about two hundred, young and old, but most adult persons, and am in hopes of initiating many more into the Church of Christ, after I have examined, taught, and find them qualified. This is a large parish ; the towns are far distant ; the people were some Quakers, some Anabaptists, but chiefly Presbyterians and Independents ; they were violently set against our Church, but now, blessed be God,

[1] Bolton, *Church History*, pp. 137–146, 156. Mr. Pritchard, it seems, stayed at New Rochelle, and scarcely visited Rye at all.

they comply heartily, for I have now above forty communicants, and only six when I first administered that holy sacrament.'[1]

The Society was certainly fortunate in the selection of its first missionary at Rye. Mr. Muirson was a man of amiable and genial nature, well qualified to ingratiate himself among the people. He had also 'a very happy way of delivery' in the pulpit; making little use of his notes in preaching, a rare practice among the clergy of the Established Church in those times, and 'extremely taking,' says Colonel Heathcote, with his hearers in these parts. 'For argument,' he adds, 'few of his years exceed him.'[2]

The new rector was all activity, catechising on week-days in the remote towns, preaching at Bedford every fourth Sunday, and soon undertaking missionary work in Connecticut colony, where he met with great encouragement. At Rye he is constant in parochial work. 'Catechising . . . . and frequent visiting is of great service, and I am sure I have made twice more proselytes by proceeding after that method, than by public preaching.' His 'congregations are very great;' the people 'seem to like the ways of the Church very well, but, as in all other places, there are some stubborn, ill-natured persons among 'em,' whom nevertheless he hopes in time to bring over to a better opinion.

'By the aid and assistance of y^e^ good Colonel Heathcote,' Mr. Muirson soon persuaded the people to engage anew in the effort to build a house of worship. This was to be done by the act of the town of Rye.[3] Our records contain a full account of the initiatory steps in the matter, which we give as follows: —

'At a Lawfull town meeting held in Rye September the 26, 1705, Coll. Heathcote apears at this meeting and declears that in casse that this town of Rye doe goe on in boulding of a Church that he will give towards boulding the same all the nails for shingling of the rouf and for the church doors and making of windows shutt with all the hooks and hinges thereunto belonging. Caleb Heathcote.

'At this above said meeting the towne hath agreed by voat to bould a church for the worship of God.

''Tis voated and agreed that this above said church shall be boult thirty three foots within the said church to be boult four square.

'At this above said meeting the town hath by a voat agreed to bould the walls of the said church with stones and to be 16 foots in height above ground up to the pleats.

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church in the County of Westchester*, pp. 151, 166.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 159.

[3] *Ibid.* 'Tis only the town of Rye, and not the parish which hath built it.' (Letter of Col. Heathcote, Dec. 18, 1707, in Bolton, p. 178.)

'At this above said meeting the town hath agreed by a voat to put in Cap. Horton Jus. Purdy Isaac Denham and Samuell Lane with the townsmen to have the management and the oversight of boulding the above said Church.

'At the above said meeting the town hath by a voat agreed to sett this above said Church at the east end of the Lot which was formerly M[r] Collers in the street.'[1]

At a subsequent meeting, a tax was laid upon the inhabitants, to raise funds for this purpose. February 18, 1706, it was agreed that 'all male persons from sixteen years and upward be assessed at twelve pound per head in all charges for the building of a Church.' 'Liberty is given for to get stone and timber upon any particular men's land, provided you get not within a fence, for the building of a Church.'[2]

The people did not show as great alacrity in assuming some other burdens. The parsonage was old, and sadly in need of repairs. This, they thought, was the proper business of the parish, and not of the town. At a meeting held February 25th, 1706, they agreed 'that *the parish* of Rye shall repeare the towne house fit for a minister to Live in and to keep the said house in repeare for the use of the ministree.'[3] Six years after this, we read that 'the town hath past a voat that they will not repeare the house which Mr. Bridge now dwells in.'[4] This seems to have been a cause of frequent contention between the town and the rectors.[5] We shall see what the dispute led to in the end.

The church 'will be finished next spring,' writes Mr. Muirson, November 21, 1705, to the Society's Secretary in London: 'so that we shall want pulpit cloaths and furniture for y[e] communion table.' The work, however, did not go on so fast. In April, some preparations had been made by carting stone, and most of the timber had been brought. In October, the stone-work was finished and the building covered. 'But the winter approaching and the people being extremely poor and having exhausted what little money they had on what is done already, we cannot proceed any further this fall,' writes Mr. Muirson, 'but hope next year to finish all, with a steeple, which when completed will make a large

[1] Town Meeting Book, No. G., p. 10. [2] *Ibid.* p. 13.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 17. [4] Records of Town Meetings, p. 4.

[5] 'There is no care taken to preserve the house in good repair. . . . . We cannot hope that where the Dissenters so much prevail, any persons would be chosen who would repair either the church or the house, so that if I will live in the house I must keep it in repair myself.' (Rev. R. Jenney, 1724. Bolton, *Church History*, p. 229. See also pp. 246, 279.)

and beautiful Building.' It is fifty feet long and thirty-six feet wide, and twenty feet high — 'a very fine church,' writes Colonel Morris, in 1708. But the sanguine hopes entertained for its speedy completion were sadly disappointed. Indeed, neither Mr. Muirson nor his successor lived to see it finished. Eleven years later — in 1717 — Mr. Bridge reports, 'In the year 1706, some extraordinary methods were used to induce the town to raise a tax for building a Church, and they raised a handsome outside, and covered and glazed it, but found nothing done to the inside, not so much as a floor laid. When I had for a year or two preached upon the ground, I got subscriptions for about £50, among the inhabitants towards finishing the inside.'[1] And in 1722, Mr. Jenney states, 'The Church, though built in Mr. Muirson's time, is not yet finished; the roof decays, but if not quickly fitted up, is not likely to stand long.' It was finished about the year 1727.[2]

This building was placed where Christ Church in our village now stands. As usual then, it stood 'in the street' — at the junction of Grace Church Street and what is now called Rectory Street. It was known as Grace Church in 1736,[3] and probably many years before. This, however, was not a corporate name, but one in popular use. The legal designation was 'The Parish Church of Rye.'[4]

Mr. Muirson's ministry was short. He died Tuesday, October 12th, 1708, but a little more than three years from the commencement of his labors in Rye. He was only thirty-three years of age; and it appears highly probable that his course was shortened by the fatigues and privations he underwent while here. 'He was a very industrious and successful missionary,' says Colonel Heathcote, his brother-in-law, 'and had it pleased God to have preserved his life, would have been able to have given a wonderful account of his labours. By his constant journeys in the service of the Church, and the necessary supply of his family, he expended every farthing he got here and of the Society.'[5]

His removal was a great loss to the people of Rye. A large proportion of them had been drawn by his efforts, and those of Colonel Heathcote, to attend upon his ministry. 'Though they

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, pp. 151–205. [2] *Ibid.* p. 244

[3] The name of 'Gracious' or Grace Church *Street* first occurs in a deed of this date. (Rye Records, vol. C. p. 136.)

[4] The earliest document in which the church is otherwise described, is one relating to the presentation of Mr. Punderson for induction, in 1763. It mentions 'the Parish Church of Rye, called Grace Church.' (Bolton, *History Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 300.)

[5] *Ibid.* p. 187.

were generally Presbyterians,' says Mr. Wetmore in 1728, 'by Colonel Heathcote's influence, and Mr. Muirson's industry and good behaviour, and the Governor of the province being zealous to encourage the Church, they all united in building the Church, and frequented the worship in it, as long as Mr. Muirson lived.'[1]

His successor was the Rev. Mr. Reynolds, who came to Rye in October, 1709. He had officiated but a few times, however, when orders came from the Society, removing him from his post, and forbidding him to preach. The reasons for this proceeding are not known. Mr. Reynolds was superseded by the

REV. CHRISTOPHER BRIDGE, M. A.,

an English clergyman, who had previously been settled in Boston as assistant minister of King's Chapel, and afterwards in Narragansett. He came to Rye in January, 1710.[2]

The records of the Vestry of this parish commence soon after the beginning of Mr. Bridge's ministry, January 9, 1710–11. It does not appear that any account of the proceedings of that body had been kept until then. The opening pages show how its affairs were conducted, and there seems to have been little deviation from the method down to the Revolution.[3]

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 246.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 191.

[3] 'At a Lawfull meeting of the Parishioners at their Parish Church in Rye To Elect & Choose Churchwardens & Vestry men ffor the Year Ensuing, were Elected & Chosen'

Capt Joseph Theall
Capt Jonathan Hartt } *Churchwardens.*
Cornelius Seely

Andrew Coe
John Merritt Senr
Daniel Purdy Cordwr } *Vestrymen*
Thomas Purdy
Thomas Merritt Junr

George Lane Junr
Joseph Lyon
George Kniffin
John Disbrow . . . Mamark
John Miller . . . Bedford

and Joseph Cleator Clerk of the Vestry for this Year.'

The officers thus elected next meet with the Justices of the Peace for the transaction of business.

'May the Seventh Anno Domi 1711.

'At a meeting of the Justices and Vestrymen at the Church this Day were present

the Honrble Coll. Heath Coate
Deliverance Brown
Joseph Budd } Esqrs
Isaac Denham

Andrew Coe
John Merritt Senr
Thomas Merritt Junr } *Vestrymen*
Thomas Purdy

George Lane Junr
George Kniffin
John Miller

Until Mr. Bridge's time it would appear that the Justices and Vestry held their sessions without the presence of the minister. An order now came — July 29, 1712 — from the government, directing that 'every orthodox minister be one of the vestry in his parish.'[1]

The number of communicants varied little from that reported by Mr. Muirson. In 1710 there were forty-three; in 1711, forty-four; in 1712, forty-two. The 'number of those who professed themselves of the Church of England,' in the same year, was three hundred and thirteen; the Presbyterians numbered four hundred and sixty-six. There were some twenty 'heathens that are servants of families.' The number of inhabitants in the parish was seven hundred and ninety-nine. 'Many of the Dissenters come sometimes to church.'[2]

Much of Mr. Bridge's attention appears to have been given to the Friends, who were now quite numerous, especially in 'the Purchase.' From his own account, he met with marked success in a disputation, held in the year 1712, with some whom he calls 'ranting Quakers.' A preacher among them was convinced by the rector's arguments, and came sometimes to church; 'but it pleased God, soon after, to take him out of the world.' In 1717, he writes, 'It is my constant care to watch the motions of the Quakers, to prevent their seducing any of my parishioners — for they come frequently in great numbers from Long Island and other places, to hold their meeting of the out parts of my parish. — I take all occasions in my public discourses, and my private exhorta-

'Voted and agreed by the Above said Justices and Vestrymen, the Sum of fifty five pounds five Shillings to be Levyed on the Parish.

'That is to say — ffor the Minister	£50. 0. 0
For Beating the Drum	1. 0. 0
For the Clark	1. 0. 0
For Charge of Express to Bedford	0. 10. 0
For ye Constable for Collecting	2. 12. 6
	£55. 2. 6

'Voted also on ye other side that Warrants be Issued out for half the Above said Sum to be paid on the Tenth Day of July next Ensuing, and for ye other half, one moiety thereof, which is one fourth part of said Sum, be paid on the Tenth day of October next, and the fourth part to be paid on the Tenth day of January next — and that the moyety payable on the Tenth day of July be Laid in proportion to the Last Quota — That is to say

Rye	£17. 6. 6
Mamaroneck	3. 13. 6
Scarsdale	1. 11. 6
Bedford	5. 5. 0

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 203.

[2] *Ibid.* pp. 196, 199, 202.

tions, to show the great enormity and dangerous consequences' of their practices.[1]

Mr. Bridge also took an active part in the temporal concerns of the town. He became one of the Proprietors of Peningo Neck as early as 1713;[2] and shortly before his death obtained a patent for two hundred and eighty-one acres, 'in twenty small parcels,' situated in different parts of the town of Rye.[3]

Mr. Bridge died at Rye on Friday, May 22, 1719, and, like his excellent predecessor, was buried in the parish church. He was forty-eight years of age. The memory of these first rectors well deserves to be cherished. There is reason to believe that they were faithful, conscientious, and earnest ministers of the Gospel, and were successful in promoting the religious welfare of the people.

The good feeling that prevailed while Mr. Muirson lived, continued during Mr. Bridge's ministry. The people of other denominations 'frequented the worship in the Church,' propitiated by the friendly ways and the upright character of the rector, who 'though a strict Churchman in his principles' was 'yet of great respect and charity to Dissenters, and much esteemed of them.'[4]

But this harmony was now interrupted. A vacancy of three years occurred between the death of Mr. Bridge and the induction of his successor. For the first few months the church was supplied by clergymen from New York and other places, under the direction of the Rev. Mr. Vesey; but after this, it appears to have been occupied by the Presbyterian congregation.

The Gospel Propagation Society, in 1722, appointed the Rev. Henry Barclay as their missionary at Rye. Meanwhile, however, the churchwardens and Vestry had called the —

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 202.

[2] This was either by purchase or by gift from the heirs of Jacob Pearce, one of the early proprietors. In a list dated September 7, 1713, we find the name of Christopher Bridge 'for Daniel Pierce in right of Jacob Pierce deceased.' (Town Meeting Book, G. 20.) Jacob Pearce (see page 48) left Rye about the year 1689, and was never heard from. His widow married Isaac Denham. In 1694, the Court of Sessions of Westchester County confirmed her in the possession of her first husband's lands, etc., 'till the right heir appears.' The mention of *Daniel* Pearce in the list above quoted, is the only allusion to such an heir, that we have met with.

[3] *Book of Patents*, Albany, vol. viii. p. 182. Mr. Bridge's patent must not be confounded with that given in 1708 to Mrs. Anne Bridges, widow of Dr. Bridges of New York, which formed a part of the Middle Patent, now included in the town of North Castle. (Bolton, *History of Westchester County*, pp. 454, 455.)

[4] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church*, etc., p. 207.

REV. ROBERT JENNEY, A. M.,

at that time chaplain to the royal forces in New York. The Society confirmed the call, and Mr. Jenney was inducted as rector of Rye, by an order from Governor Burnet, dated June 7th, 1722. He found the congregation very much weakened. The communicants were 'but few,' and the temporalities of the church were in no flourishing condition. A portion of the church lands had been alienated by patent to his predecessor Mr. Bridge, and was now possessed by his family. This was 'the lot called Parsonage Point, containing about five acres.' The other lands, the 'home-lot' in the village, and the glebe in the Town Field, were held by the proprietors of the town, most of whom desired a dissenting minister; and but for the governor's intervention, they would have prevented the rector from taking possession. The parsonage house was much out of repair; the lands needed fencing; and the church was likely to fall into ruin if not speedily fitted up. The people were not willing to contribute for these purposes; and Mr. Jenney was 'forced to demand of the Vestry to raise for that use so much of the salary' as had fallen due since the death of Mr. Bridge. The Vestry refused, and Mr. Jenney resorted to the law, for a writ requiring them to raise and pay into the hands of the churchwardens all arrearages since the year 1719. These measures did not tend to conciliate the people. 'Many that before came to the church, and some who had been communicants in Mr. Bridge's time, now became 'disaffected.' The money, however, was raised, and spent in repairing the house and glebe; and Mr. Jenney also succeeded in obtaining a survey of the remaining parsonage lands, with a view to prevent any further encroachments upon them.

On the whole, Mr. Jenney's ministry in Rye appears to have been less happy than that of either of his predecessors. The circumstances were unfavorable; at his coming he found the people much divided; the Presbyterian congregation had gained strength during the vacancy since Mr. Bridge's death, and the church property was in jeopardy. His course, under these disadvantages, was perhaps not the most judicious; dissatisfaction and alienation increased; 'the greatest part of the town' frequented the services of the other congregation. Mr. Jenney finally left Rye in 1726, having been minister here four years. He removed to Hempstead, Long Island, and afterwards to Philadelphia, where he became rector of Christ Church, and died in 1762, at the age of seventy-five. The

REV. JAMES WETMORE, A. M.,

the fourth rector of the parish, was called on the seventh of June, 1726, but a few days after Mr. Jenney's resignation. He was a native of Middletown, Connecticut. He graduated in 1714 at Yale College, and in November 1718 was ordained and settled at North Haven, as the first pastor of the Congregational Church in that place. Within four years of that time, however, he relinquished his charge, and soon after went to England, where he was ordained to the ministry of the Established Church. His induction by order of Governor Burnet, to the rectorship of Rye, took place soon after the call of the Vestry, which was approved by the Gospel Propagation Society, who in due time appointed him their missionary at Rye. In acquainting the Society with their action, the Vestry express the hope, 'now we are once more peaceably settled,' 'to see religion revive among us, which by contentions and divisions is sunk to a very low ebb. As Mr. Wetmore has been born in this country,' they add, 'and long known among us, ... we doubt not but y^e^ people of this Parish will continue their affection to him.'[1]

Mr. Wetmore soon reports several converts from the 'Dissenters.' He continues the services maintained by his predecessors, in the remote parts of the parish; preaching 'three Sundays in the church of Rye; then one at North Castle; then three again at Rye; then one at White Plains.' Besides these services, he has a lecture the first Wednesday in each month at Bedford, and preaches occasionally in the neighboring towns of Connecticut. At White Plains, in 1739, for want of a house large enough to receive the people, he preaches in the open fields; and at Rye, 'if the congregation increases as it has done the year past, we must be forced to enlarge the parish church.' In 1748, he adds to these Sunday services a monthly lecture at North Castle, and an occasional lecture at Mamaroneck. The church, however, 'the only one in the parish, is much out of repair, which after several years' endeavouring to bring my people to a scheme to make decent and ornamental, I am yet unable to effect.' The parsonage house he had enlarged and repaired at his own expense some years before; it is now grown so old and decayed, as to be scarcely worth repairing.[2]

It was during Mr. Wetmore's ministry at Rye that the famous George Whitefield visited this place in 1740, on his way to

[1] Bolton, *Hist. Prot. Episc. Church*, p. 241. [2] *Ibid.* pp. 253, 266, 268, 278, 269.

New York after a tour through New England. His journal contains the following mention of this circumstance, on Wednesday, October 29th : —

'*Rye in New York Province.* Being kindly invited by a Minister of the Church of England after dinner I went to Rye, about eleven Miles from Stamford. I read Prayers and preached to a small Congregation. Was civilly entertained by the Minister, and then rode Ten Miles further to East Chester.'[1]

Mr. Wetmore's ministry in Rye extended over nearly thirty-four years. He died of the small-pox, in 1760, at the age of sixty-five. His last years appear to have been saddened by increased dissensions in his parish, obstructing, as he complained, the success of his labors ; but his activity seems to have continued undiminished to the close. Tradition states that the disease of which he died was contracted at Mamaroneck, whither he went in the discharge of pastoral duty. The cares of a large parish did not prevent him from engaging in authorship. His published writings are of a controversial nature, and exhibit traits of decision and severity which were probably prominent characteristics of the man. Mr. Wetmore was an American by birth, and in his early life and ministry belonged to the Congregational body. But in zeal for the Church of England, as well as for the royal prerogative, he was not excelled by any writer of his day. He was a strenuous advocate of the dogma that the Church of England was the established church of the colonies, as well as of the mother country ; and asserted it in a manner scarcely fitted to conciliate the masses of a population, nineteen twentieths of whom were of a different way of thinking.

The parish remained vacant more than two years after Mr. Wetmore's death. The people found difficulty in agreeing on a successor, and finally called the Rev. Ebenezer Punderson, of New Haven, who commenced his labors here on the first of July, 1762. The Society in London, meanwhile, had appointed the Rev. Solomon Palmer, of Litchfield, to be their missionary at Rye, but consented to the choice of the congregation ; and on the twenty-first of November, 1763, Mr. Punderson was inducted as rector. He had been engaged in the service of the Gospel Propagation Society for more than thirty years; and in a letter to the Secretary, after his arrival here, states the remarkable fact that, notwithstanding 'many infirmities,' he had 'been enabled to perform divine service

[1] The two first parts of his Life, with his Journals [from 1714 to 1741], revised, corrected, and abridged, by George Whitefield, A. B. London, 1756, p. 419.

every Sunday save one, during that long term.' His ministry in Rye was short. He died September 22, 1764, a little more than two years from the time of his coming.[1]

The parish church was now 'greatly decayed,' and in need of speedy repairs. In view of this necessity, a number of the inhabitants united in a petition, which was presented to the lieutenant-governor of the province, on the sixteenth of November, 1764, asking for an act of incorporation. They allege, that the interests of the church are suffering for the want of 'some persons legally authorized to manage' its affairs, and that they and others who are disposed to provide funds for its support and for the better maintenance of the ministry, are discouraged from contributing to the repair of the church, lest the moneys given for that purpose may be misapplied.[2] This petition was granted on the nineteenth of December, 1764. The petitioners, and the rest of the inhabitants of the parish of Rye in communion with the Church of England, and their successors, with the rector of the said parish for the time being, were constituted by royal charter a 'body corporate and politick,' by the name of the rector and inhabitants of the parish of Rye, in communion with the Church of England. The charter provides that they shall meet at the church on Tuesday in Easter week in every year, and choose two of their members to be churchwardens, and eight others to be vestrymen for the ensuing year.[3]

Mr. Punderson's successor, — the last rector of the parish before the Revolution, — was the

REV. EPHRAIM AVERY, A. M.,

who was called by the Vestry on the twenty-seventh of August,

[1] *New York Journal or the General Advertiser*, 1771, April 4. 'We hear from Poughkeepsie, that on Tuesday the 26 ult. died there, Mrs. Beardsley, wife of the Rev[d] Mr. John Beardsley: she was the youngest daughter of the late Rev[d] Mr. Punderson, Episcopal minister at Rye, a lady of uncommon attainments in Literature, and a most amiable character. We hear she had lately been delivered of Twins, one of whom is still living.'

[2] The Petition of the Rector and Inhabitants of the Parish of Rye in Communion of the Church of England as by law Established To be Incorporated, 16th Nov[r] 1764. Warrant to the Attorney General issued dated the 17 November, 1764. (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. xciii. p. 4.) The petition is signed by

Peter Jay	H. Purdy	Thomas Sawyer
Elisha Budd	John Guion	E. H. [Ebenezer?] Brundige
Christopher Trughart [Szenhart?]	Joseph Purdy	John Thomas
Timothy Wetmore	Gilbert Willet	William Sutton
Caleb Purdy	Jno. Carhartt	Anthony Miller
	John Adee.	

[3] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., pp. 307–311.

1765. Mr. Avery was a native of Connecticut, the son of a Congregational pastor, and, like his predecessors Wetmore and Punderson, was a graduate of Yale College. He came to Rye, his first pastoral charge, at the age of twenty-four, having just returned from England, whither he had gone to be ordained by the Bishop of London. He received the Society's appointment, and was duly inducted by order of Lieutenant-Governor Colden, issued September 9th, 1765. Mr. Avery's first letter to the Society is hopeful. 'The people of my parish seem to be under very peaceable circumstances, an entire harmony subsisting between them and myself, especially those who are professors of the Church of England, and indeed the other party are very quiet.' The present number of communicants is about forty, and others seem disposed to join.

But the young pastor had commenced his labors in troublous times, and among a people already excited and divided upon the great political questions before the country. He found his own flock 'in general much more calm with respect to the Stamp Act than the most of others.' 'Tis true, they esteem the Act rather aggressive,' he adds; 'but to resist the higher powers in a rebellious manner they think not only unlawful but unchristian.' Like all the Society's missionaries, Mr. Avery sympathized strongly with the British side in the growing differences between the government and the colonies. In February, 1776, we hear of him as in correspondence with the commander of the British fleet in the harbor of New York.[1] His undisguised opinions upon the subject of the war drew on him the special displeasure of the whigs, and he was one of the first at Rye to suffer the injuries which in after years were experienced by so many on both sides. Our pity is deeply moved as we read of his extreme poverty, his failing health and spirits, and finally of his irreparable loss in the death of his wife, 'a prudent and cheerful woman,' upon whom he depended greatly.[2] It 'affected him so much,' writes Mr. Seabury, giving

[1] *Journals of the Provincial Congress, etc., of the State of New York.* Albany, 1842. Vol. i. p. 280.

[2] Mrs. Avery was older than her husband by several years. She was buried beside him in the little cemetery by Blind Brook. The following obituary notice of this lady appeared in the *New York Gazette and Mercury*, May 27, 1776: —

'On Monday the 13th Instant died at Rye, in the 39th Year of her Age, MRS. AVERY, the Wife of the Revd. Mr. Avery, Rector of that Parish. She endured a most distressing Illness of six Weeks, with the greatest Patience, sustaining the most excruciating Pains without one repining Expression, and submitted to her Dissolution with the most placid Resignation to the Will of her heavenly Father, exhibiting a most striking Instance of that Fortitude in the most trying Scene, that human Nature is exposed to, which nothing but a well spent Life, and a firm Trust in the Mercies of God

an account of these facts to the Society, 'that when I attended her funeral, I did not think it right to leave him suddenly, but tarried with him several days till he was more composed.'[1] We have related elsewhere the unhappy circumstances connected with the close of Mr. Avery's course. His untimely death ended a ministry of more than eleven years. He was but thirty-five years of age, and left 'five or six helpless orphans.' The parsonage by Blind Brook witnessed its saddest scenes in the trials of this poor minister and his family.

Wetmore, Punderson, and Avery were buried in the small plot of ground on the west side of Blind Brook, nearly opposite the church. The earlier rectors, Muirson and Bridge, were buried underneath the church. Of the six resident rectors of Rye, before the Revolution, all but one ended their days here, and await among the people of their charge a joyful resurrection. They were all, judging from the record of their lives and labors here, blameless and faithful ministers of Christ; laborious and self-denying in the prosecution of a work which was attended with no small difficulty and discouragement; and conscientious in their advocacy of principles which they held to be true and important.

They were undoubtedly mistaken in some of the measures which they employed with this design. The pretence that the Church of England was by law established in this province, and entitled to support by funds levied upon the people, was utterly groundless. And the claim to exclusive rights under the Act of 1693 for the maintenance of an orthodox ministry, was manifestly unjust. These pretensions were supported by the governors of the province, and for that reason were successfully carried out here and elsewhere. But the effect upon the public mind was very unfavorable. The prejudices of the people were deepened by procedures which they regarded as oppressive and unlawful. We hear of resistance to the collection of moneys for the minister's salary and the building of the church; of lawsuits for the recovery of the parsonage lands; and of refusal to contribute voluntarily for needed repairs. And after sixty years' faithful labor, the number of communicants reported by the Society's last missionary at Rye, in 1766, barely equals that which the worthy Mr. Muirson had re-

through the Redeemer of the World can inspire. . . . *Let me die the Death of the Righteous, and let my last End be like* his. By her Death the Husband and five Children are deprived of a most excellent Wife and Mother, and all her Acquaintance of a most sensible, agreeable, and cheerful Companion.'

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 323.

ported in 1706, five months after the beginning of his pastorate.[1] A more striking proof could scarcely be required, of the impolicy of an attempt to sustain religion by means of the forced contributions of a people differing greatly in their religious opinions and preferences. We cannot but agree with Colonel Morris in the belief that the Church of England would have prospered far more in this country, had there been no attempt at special legislation in her favor.

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., pp. 166, 317.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE CHURCHES: PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

FOR many years after Mr. Bowers's removal to Greenwich, in 1700, the Presbyterians of Rye were without a settled pastor. Some of them, during the ministry of Mr. Muirson and Mr. Bridge, conformed to the Church of England. Others, without relinquishing their religious belief and preference, frequented the services of that church, being, as they expressed it, 'in no condition to get a minister according to their own mind.'[1] But much the greater part of the population continued to avow themselves Presbyterians, though conciliated by the judicious conduct of the first rectors, who appear to have been generally and deservedly liked. Neither of them had attempted to use the strenuous measures which their successors freely resorted to, for the raising of their salary. Mr. Muirson, indeed, put up with no little inconvenience rather than pursue such a course. Nearly two years after his arrival, he had received only ten or twelve pounds of the fifty pounds per annum 'settled by Act of Assembly upon Rye parish.' 'It's true,' he writes, 'I could compel 'em by Law to pay the whole, but such proceedings I'm well assured would have been very hurtful to the interests of the Church, in a place especially surrounded with Dissenters of all sorts; and therefore I thought it better to have patience with 'em till they are more able, than that our glorious work should anyways suffer.'[2]

A letter from Mr. Bridge, in 1710, to the Secretary of the Gospel Propagation Society, gives us the first exact information as to the relative strength of the two denominations. The inhabitants then numbered seven hundred and seventy-two, including children, servants, and slaves. Of these, four hundred and forty-one had been baptized, 'the greatest part of them before the Church was settled here.' Those that professed themselves of the Church of England were two hundred and eighty-four, of whom forty-three were communicants, 'some still Presbyterians or Independents in their judgment, but persons well disposed, and willing to partake

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 247. [2] *Ibid.* p. 175.

of the sacrament in what way they can, rather than not at all.' The Dissenters numbered four hundred and sixty-eight, all of whom, except eleven or twelve families of Quakers, were 'Presbyterians or Independents, transplanted out of the Connecticut colony.'[1] Two thirds, then, of the population were still 'Dissenters' in the year 1710, and as the number of communicants of the Church of England never varied greatly from that stated above, we may consider this to have been about the proportion maintained until the period of the Revolution.

The people, however, were too poor to 'maintain two differing ministers.'[2] They saw less occasion for doing so while the incumbents of the English Church were acceptable. They were probably visited from time to time by the ministers of the neighboring towns, as they had been formerly, and had occasional if not regular services of worship according to their own accustomed way.

But upon the death of Mr. Bridge, May 22, 1719, a change took place. The Presbyterians, apparently thinking that it was high time they should have a minister of their own choosing, made the attempt 'to possess themselves of the church.' It had been built by the town, and was doubtless regarded as town property, to the use of which the more numerous body had at least an equal claim. They appear to have succeeded in gaining possession of the church, and during the three years' vacancy that elapsed before another rector was inducted, they probably met here, more or less regularly, under the teaching of a minister whom they invited to labor among them. This was the

REV. STEPHEN BUCKINGHAM,

of Norwalk, Connecticut. This gentleman was called to Rye in February, 1720; 'most of the inhabitants, some communicants,' uniting in the call. As the 'proprietors of the town' were 'for the most part such as were desirous of having a dissenting teacher' among them, we cannot doubt that they readily gave Mr. Buckingham possession of the parsonage house and glebe, as well as of the church. Indeed, we infer as much from the statement of the Rev. John Thomas, who writes thus elegantly — April 20th, 1722 — to the Gospel Propagation Society: 'The want of a missionary so long at Rye, has introduced [induced?] a dissenter to build his nest there.'[3] Mr. Jenney, too, informs us 'there was a Presbyterian preacher at Rye when I came here,' and complains

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 196. [2] *Ibid.* p. 214.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 213.

that the proprietors of the town endeavored to withhold the parsonage house and glebe after his coming.[1]

Under Mr. Buckingham's ministry the Presbyterian congregation appears to have become consolidated; and thenceforth it maintained a separate worship. The effort to resist taxation for the support of the English rectors, and to regain possession of the parsonage property, dates also from this period. No forcible resistance, however, was offered to Mr. Jenney's induction. The order of the governor overbore all opposition, but it was with a very bad grace that the people yielded to his mandate.

Mr. Buckingham returned to Connecticut in 1722. The congregation, nevertheless, was kept up, and now enjoyed more frequent visits and ministrations from the neighboring clergy. Soon it obtained the services of a settled minister. This was the

REV. JOHN WALTON,

who came to Rye about the year 1723, and continued with the people until 1728. Mr. Walton was a member of the Presbytery of Philadelphia. He was a native of New London, Connecticut, and graduated at Yale College in 1720. He had been preaching for a while at Crosswicks in Burlington County, New Jersey, before he came to Rye. He is said to have been highly gifted as a preacher; but he was erratic and self-willed. He came here, indeed, while under the censure of his Presbytery for imprudence and rashness while in New Jersey.[2] But whatever may have been his defects, Mr. Walton's labors at Rye served greatly to strengthen the Presbyterian congregation. Many who had been drawn over to the parish church, some even who were communicants, returned. The language of the rector, with reference to the new minister, was far from complimentary. 'This Walton, being a bold, noisy fellow, of a volible [voluble] tongue, drew the greatest part of the town after him.'[3]

Mr. Jenney's resort to the law, for the purpose of compelling the people to raise funds to complete the church and repair the parsonage, embittered many of the people who had been friendly to his predecessors. And it was this, together with their failure to retain possession of the church, that doubtless determined the Presbyterians at length to set about building a house of worship.

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 221.

[2] *History of the Presbyterian Church in America*, by Rev. Richard Webster, D. D., pp. 377, 379.

[3] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 246.

Mr. Walton was the promoter of this plan. 'He spurred them forward,' says the rector, in 1728, 'to build one meeting house at the White Plains, about six miles from the Church, and has set them on to build another in the town, within about one hundred rods of the Church: to defray the expenses of which they have obtained briefs from the General Assembly of Connecticut Colony, to beg in all the towns and villages of that colony.'[1]

The following is the 'Humble Memorial of y^e^ Presbyterians of Ry & the white Plains,' 'to the Honourable Govern^r^ & Council assembled at Hartford, May 11th An D 1727.'[2]

This petition 'Humbly Sheweth That y^r^ Hon^rs^ memorialists are under many Difficult Circumstances with Respect of enjoying the Means of Grace according to the Purity of the Gospel, first because we are obliged to pay to y^e^ Church of England, 2^d^ our way of worship is not Established by Law 3^d^ The opposition made by the Church Party not only in Lessening our Number but in too much striving to discourage & hinder us many ways. Yet notwithstanding all this the Love of Gods Honour & y^e^ Peace of our Immortal Souls has excited a Number of us to expose our selves to Considerable Charge and Difficulty to maintain y^e^ Gospel amongst us. We have frequently maintained the Dissenting Ministers & sometimes have had hopes of settling them. Once we got Timber for a Meeting House but too many Discouragements prevented our erecting the same & so after Considerable Charge our Design was Baffled & our Timber Rotted. But again taking Courage we have erected a suitable Meeting House at y^e^ White Plains & covered the same so that we have once met in it. But being in Debt for part of w^t^ we have done, & utterly unable to finish w^t^ we have begun & being desirous to build another Meeting House down in Ry Town (w^ch^ is six miles distant from y^e^ White Plains) therefore the Humble Memorialists of your Honourable House humbly request that there may be a Brief[3] pass through the Colony of Connecticut & the mony thereby collected be transmitted to y^e^ Hands of y^e^ Rev^d^ Mr. Davenport to be laid out for y^e^ Building our s^d^ Meeting Houses. We humbly beg y^r^ Honours to Remember us in y^e^ midst of y^r^ multitude of business. Pray look on us as y^r^ Children — alienated from y^e^ Priviledge of being under y^r^ Protection & Government & all against our

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 246.

[2] Document in the archives of the State of Connecticut, at Hartford.

[3] A 'letter patent, giving license to collect contributions for a specified purpose.' The General Court had ordered, October 13, 1681, 'that no Breife craveing the collection of the good people in these plantations in this colony shall be read or attended in any plantation of the colony, without it have the aloweance of the Governo^r^ and Councill, and be by them directed into what townes or congregations it shall pass, except it be for some speciall occasion for some distressed or afflicted person of their own inhabitants.' (*Public Records of Connecticut*, vol. iii. p. 92.)

will. Pray consider [us] as y^r^ fellow Christians having in our Breasts Souls as Immortal & precious as y^r^ own. Oh pray consider us as under many Discouragements. & that a little of y^r^ help might encourage many that are now Cold & Indifferent. Oh consider y^e^ Indefatigable Industry of y^e^ Church of England to help poor places. Paul also tells us he robbed other Churches that he might not be burdensome to y^e^ weak. . . . . What a noble Enlargement of Christ's Kingdom w^d^ it be to Establish encourage & settle the Gospel amongst us. Is not one soul worth ten thousand worlds; & can you be easy whilst we perish for lack of vision? Surely no: the tokens of y^r^ Christ^n^ kindness to others encourageth us. Honored Gentlemen & Beloved in the Lord 'tis not for a Certain sum we ask, only for an opportunity for our fellow Christians to shew their Liberality; & will not Christ reward you for all y^r^ Labour of Love? (Mat. xxv.) Will not kindness done to us by ye be reckoned to himself?

'We have made up a Competent tho small Yearly Salery for y^e^ maintainance of a minister, & could we obtain some help in Building suitable places for y^e^ Worship of God, we sh^d^ hope to enjoy y^e^ Gospel in a settled way. Therefore in firm constant & steady tho trembling hopes of y^e^ expression of y^r^ Honours tokens of Christian kindness we shall ever pray for y^r^ Hon^rs^ Happyness & Remain y^r^ Hon^rs^ very Humble Serv^ts^'[1]

We can imagine the suspense of the people while waiting for a reply to this memorial. And great must have been their disappointment when at length word came to them that it had been

[1] Signed —

John Walton	Benjamin Brown	David Horton jun^r^
Ebenezer Theall	Thomas Brown	Samuell Horton
Joseph Brondige	Hachliah Brown	Samuell Horton jun^r^
Samuell Lane	Timothy Knap	John Travis
Daniel Purdy	Jonathan Brown	Benjamin Knap
Abraham Brondige	Thail [Israel] Kniffin	Solomon Lane
Samuell Lane iuner	Danjell Purdy	John Hyatt
Hezekiah Lane	Joseph Merritt	Jonathan Linch
Robart Bloomer	Thomas Robeson	Roberd Travis
Joseph Kniffin	Michel Barsit [Michael Basset]	Daniel Lane
Robart Bloomer jr	Joseph Purdy	Roberd Travis
Joseph Sharhod [Sherwood]	Jonathan Haight	John Garison
Andro Sharhod [id.]	Joseph Purdy	Jonathan Lane
Peter Brown	Jonathan Haight	Caleb Hyatt
Samuel Brown	Joseph Purdy	Caleb Hyatt jun^r^
Thomas Lyon junr	Nathan Lane	Nathan Hyatt
Wm Molmath [Monmouth] Hart	John Haight	Moses Knap
	Samuel Hait	Daniell Knap
Joseph Hortton	John Turner	George Lane sen
Andrew Merritt	John Turner iun.	George Lane
Benoney Merritt	David Horton	

refused. The trustees of Yale College, however, became interested in their case, and the following letter, received in the autumn, revived their hopes of success: —

'To our Christian freinds & Brethren at Rye On the representation made of your circumstances to us

'Sirs

'We cannot but encourage you to prosecute your petition to our General Assembly: and we shall be on the spot at the time, and you may expect our countenance in that affair: and wish that you may have an orderly settlement of the worship and ordinances of God among you, and shall be ready as there may be occasion to afford you our help and Assistance; in what may be agreeable to dissenting principles.

'Signed by order of the Trustees

SAM^{LL} WHITMAN, *Scribe*.'

'NEW HAVEN, *Sep*: 15, 1727.

The messengers from Rye carried a letter to the trustees of Yale College, which gives us a further insight into the state and prospects of the congregation. It is dated 'Oct 10th 1727: '—

'Rev^{d} Gentlemen yrs of Septem^{br} 15 we have Received for which Favour we Return our hearty Thanks and hope we shall be laid under further Obligation of Gratitude for y^{e} Continuation of uncommon Kindness loudly called for by our souls necessity. We make no Doubts but you will use y^{r} Interest for our society a society Bordering on your selves and Encompassed by Church men and Quakers. A Society under havey Bonds and taxes to y^{e} Church of England being forced to pay annualy a Considerable Salery and also to help them Build their Church or Rather Rebuild y^{e} same. We want two Meeting Houses tho we are but one Society. The Gentlemen our People have Chosen viz. John Haight and Robert Bloomer will further inform you of our Affairs we hope by the Divine Blessing after a Great Variety of Divine Providences we shall be Encouraged in our Endeavors to have y^{e} Gospel setled amongst us tho hitherto Things and Times have been very Dark and we . . . . strangely Disappointed yet if we might have y^{r} Counsel and assistance it will Raise up the Hands that hang down and putt new Life in us. We Desire that one or more of your number may go for us to the Assembly in y^{e} name of y^{e} Rest and that you will afford all Counsels [and] Directions necessary and that if our Petition be lost that you would assist in Drawing a new one and that we may have a Letter from you by the bearers and in it y^{r} Thoughts on y^{e} whole of our Affairs. — This is Rev^{d} Gentlemen together with a Desire of y^{r} ardent Prayers for us w^{h} offers from y^{r} very humble serv^{ts} and sincere well-wishers

CALEB HYATH

ROBERT BLOOMER'

The trustees of Yale College kept their promise to support the application of our people when it should come before the legislature; and the following is their letter 'To the Hon^ble^ Govern^r^ & Council, & Representatives in Gen^l^ Court assembled.'

'May it please y^r^ Hono^rs^

'Upon the Representation of the Circumstances of Rye laid before us, The Trustees of Yale Colledg now Convened, do app^r^hend it may be for y^e^ Int^r^est of Religion there, that a House for publick Worship to be observed according to the manner of the Churches in New England be erected in the Town of Rye, to be Improved by a Minister of like perswasion with ourselves Capable and without offence, & do therefore by these Express o^r^ willing Countenancing the Petition of Rye-people as we understand now depending before this hon^ble^ Assembly in such a manner as shall seem most meet to the wisdom of yo^r^ hono^rs^

'Signed by order of the Trustees

'SAM^LL^ WHITMAN *scribe*

'The Trustees have desired the Rev^d^ Mr John Davenport to accompany the messengers of Ry to the General Assembly and present this to them. Attest Sam^ll^ Whitman scribe.'

Thus supported, the request of our memorialists obtained a second and a more favorable hearing. A joint committee was appointed by both houses of the Assembly, to consider what might be expedient in the matter. This committee consisted of Matthew Allyn, Roger Wolcott, Major John Burr, Captain Is. Dickerman, and Mr. Caleb Leet. They reported that they were 'of opinion that a breif be ordered by the Assembly to pass throughout this Collony to ask the charitable Contribuceons of the Good people towards the pious Designe of the people of Rye and the white plains in setting up the publick worship of God amongst them according to the way of the churches in New England and what money shall be Raised thereby be put into the Hands of the Rev^d^ Mr Davenport of Stamford to be by him Improved for the use afors^d^ as the asociation of the County of Fairfield shall order.'

This report was adopted, and the following resolution was passed by both houses: —

'At a General Assembly at New Haven October 1727.

'Upon y^e^ Representation of y^e^ Circumstances of some of y^e^ Good people of y^e^ town of Rye (Respecting their pious Desires of Settling a Gospell minister according to y^e^ persuasion and mode of this Colony) by Diverse of y^e^ Reverend trustees of Yale College and praying y^e^ assistance of y^e^ Colony in building two meeting Houses without which the Worship can't be supported, which will be too heavy an undertaking for them

'It is ennacted by this Court that a Contribution of Every Congregation In this Collony to that purpose be desired and it is hereby Desired, and 'tis ordered that the Collections thereof shall be delivered to y^e^ Reverend Mr Davenport of Stanford who shall Give his Receipts y^r^of and shall dispose the same to y^e^ use afors^d^ by the particular Directions of y^e^ Association of y^e^ Rev^rd^ Elders of y^e^ County of Fairfield from time to time as need shall Require and the secretary shall send a breif to the ministers of the severall Congregations accordingly.'

Thus encouraged, our people unite in a fresh application to the colony: —

'Oct^r^ y^e^ 6^th^ 1727 At an orderly Meeting of the Presbyterians of Rye & the white Plains M^r^ John Hoit & M^r^ Robert Bloomer Ju^r^ were Chosen for s^d^ Society to Represent them their Case both to the Honourable General Assembly of Connecticut & to y^e^ Reverend Trustees of Yale Colledge all to be Convened at New Haven this Instant October in witness whereof we have Desired some of the Principal of y^e^ Society to Sign this Certificate And seeing we have no Laws to chuse a Clerk we have also Desired our Justice to Attest the same.' [1]

The Connecticut people, we learn, 'contributed largely.' The Dissenters, writes Mr. Wetmore in 1729, are now 'doing their utmost to build a meeting house.' [2] On the fifteenth of May in that year, they secured a building spot, the deed for which is entered upon our Town Records as follows: [3] —

'Wee whose names are under writen being properiotors of a sartin parcel of undevided Land lying and beeing in Rye beetwen Byrom

[1] Signed Benj. Brown

Robert Bloomer
Joseph Brondag
Danjell Purdy
Peter Brown

Caleb Hyatt
Henry Dusinberre
Jonathan Lynch
George Lane
John Turner
Willi^m^ Anderson
Dan^ll^ Lane
Rob^t^ Travis
Samuel Horton
Joseph Kniffin
Andrew Sherwood
Timothy Knap

Moses Knap
John Traviss
David Horton
David Horton Ju^r^

Peter Hatfield
Samuell Brown
Thomas Lyon
Benoni Merritt
Jonathan Brown
Israel Kniffin
Thomas Brown
Hachaliah Brown
Danjell Purdy

October 9^th^ 1727. These may Certify that Mr John Hoit & Mr Rob^t^ Bloomer Ju^r^ were Chosen as Agents for y^e^ Presbyterian Society in Rye & y^e^ white Plains & that there is no danger of faling in y^e^ matter & that I was at y^e^ Choice

Attested p^r^ me CALEB HYATT *Justice of y^e^ Peace.*

[2] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church*, etc., pp. 247, 253.

[3] Vol. B. p. ii.

River and blind brook within a sartin Patten that was Granted unto Daniel Purdy son of John Purdy desest Samuel Brown and Beniman Brown and others and wee said properiotors do here by give and grant unto the Prisbiteren Sosioty for ever one half acer of land lying on the plain neer unto the hows that wase the late deseas Thomas Meritts juner and is bounded as foloweth that is to say Easterly by the road northerly southerly and westerly by comen or undevided beeing teen Roods in length and eight Rods in breedth with a sartin whit oak tree standing on the north end of the land and wee said properioters as aforesaid do freely give and grant unto the said prsbetereon sosyoty for ever the said half acer of land in witness whereof wee have here unto set our hands the fiftenth day of may in the second year of the Reign of King George the Second onney Domny one thousand seven hundred twenty nine.'[1]

This plot of ground was situated on 'Pulpit Plain,' as it was called; at the northwest corner of the post-road and the 'road to the Cedars subsequently opened.' Here the church was built, and here it stood until the Revolutionary War. Tradition states that it was a plain, frame building, without belfry or spire, but tolerably capacious. The church at the White Plains, which as we have seen belonged to the same 'society,' was built two or three years earlier. It stood upon the site of the present Presbyterian Church in that village.

Mr. Walton left Rye in the beginning of the year 1728, and was followed by the

REV. EDMUND WARD,

a native of Killingworth, Connecticut, and a graduate of Yale College. This change of ministers in the Presbyterian congregation is noticed by the Anglican rector at the time, in his usual style: 'The haughty, insolent behaviour of Walton drew upon him the displeasure of the dissenting teachers, on which account he removed from the parish a few days ago, but introduced a young man to be his successor, who holds forth one Sunday at White

[1] Signed

Robert Bloomer	John Roosevelt	Hachaliah Brown
Daniel Purdy sr.	Charles Leish	Jon. Carhartt
Thomas Purdy	Timothy Knap	S[l] Lane Sr
Nathan Kniffin	John Disbrow	Th. Howell
Benja Brown	Ebenezer Kniffin	John Coe
Daniel Purdy	Joseph Lyon	Jo. Sherwood
Thomas Brown	Joseph Kniffin	John Lyon, jr.
Jonath. Brown	James Roosevelt	Jos. Studwell
Joseph Purdy	Ab Van Wyck	Geo. Kniffin
Nathanel Sherwood	Andro Merrit	Samuel Brown
Justus Bush	Jonath Haight	

Plains, and another in the town of Rye, alternately, for which they give him £50 per annum, which they raise by subscriptions. They have besides given him money to purchase a house and land, but how much I can't tell.'[1] Mr. Walton and Mr. Ward were both graduates of the same institution with Mr. Wetmore; the 'dissenting teachers' were the ministers of 'the reverend Association of Fairfield County,' formerly Mr. Wetmore's honored brethren. The good rector, however, had forgotten some things.

Our little village now had two places of worship. The congregations were about equal in size, numbering some sixty families each. There was no sound as yet of the 'church-going bell' to convoke them; the roll of the drum still announced the hour of service at the parish church, and the same summons probably came from the 'meeting house' on Pulpit Plain. The signatures attached to the two petitions of the 'Presbyterians of Rye and the White Plains' enable us to ascertain who were the families that composed this little flock. These lists embrace nearly seventy names. Some of them belong to the White Plains congregation. Of this number were Caleb Hyatt, Samuel Horton, John Haight or Hoit, Joseph Purdy, John Turner, George and Daniel Lane, Jonathan Linch, Henry Dusinbery, and perhaps others. At Rye, there were the Browns, Benjamin, Peter, Thomas, and Hachaliah, four sons of the early settler who bore that name; and Samuel and Jonathan, sons of Deliverance Brown, their brother, who was now dead. There were the Purdys, Daniel of Rye and his namesake of Budd's Neck, and another Joseph. There were the Sherwoods, Joseph and Andrew; the Merritts, Andrew, Benoni, and Joseph; the Kniffins, Joseph and Israel; the Knaps, Timothy, Benjamin, Moses and Daniel; the Lanes of Rye, Samuel, Hezekiah, Nathan, Solomon, and Jonathan; the Bloomers, father and son, of Hog-pen Ridge; Michael Basset, of the same neighborhood; Monmouth Hart, of Rye Neck; and William Anderson of Harrison, and others. The list of signers does not by any means include all the Presbyterians of Rye; but it shows that they comprised a large and highly respectable portion of the community at that day.

Mr. Ward's ministry at Rye lasted apparently from 1727 to 1729. He removed from this place to Guilford, Connecticut, where he became the pastor of a congregation which had a short time before been formed by a dissatisfied portion of the people belonging to the First Church of that town.[2]

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 249.

[2] *History of Connecticut*, by Benjamin Trumbull, D. D., vol. ii. pp. 115–134.

A vacancy of several years succeeded Mr. Ward's departure. 'The Dissenters,' writes the Church of England missionary in July, 1729, 'have no teacher among them: but the common teachers come once in a while to preach among them, to keep the party alive. Many of them come to church, and bring their children to be baptized, but I cannot depend upon their being so reconciled, but that they will leave the church again, if one Independent teacher comes to town.' Again in 1731, 'My endeavours,' he writes, 'have been so far blessed with success, that the Independents can get no teacher among them. The party I think would soon be at an end, were it not for the teachers in Connecticut, that once in a while come along, and endeavour to keep up the zeal of some few, that instigate others.'[1]

It is not surprising that the period we have now reached should have been one of weakness and decline in the little congregation at Rye. It was so to a great extent throughout the country. For several years preceding the awakening under Whitefield and his apostolic fellow-laborers, religion was at a low ebb in all parts of this land. The spiritual deadness of the churches, and the spread of irreligion and vice in the communities, were a subject of lamentation to all sincere Christians. But this time of darkness was followed by a season of great revival. Thousands under the preaching of Whitefield, Tennent, Dickinson, and others, were converted to God. The Great Awakening, as it has been called, infused a new life into the churches, and its effects were visible long afterwards in many places. Undoubtedly, it is to this extraordinary cause that we are to ascribe, under God, the improved condition of affairs which we now discover in this secluded spot.

A time of better things began in the history of this congregation, — a period of nearly thirty years, covered by the faithful and successful ministry of the

REV. JOHN SMITH.

On the thirtieth day of December, 1742, a Council of the Eastern Consociation of Fairfield County, Connecticut, met at Rye, and ordained Mr. Smith as minister of that place. It has been only by dint of much research that we have been able to gather the few facts regarding this excellent man which are now presented. Strange and sad, that the mantle of forgetfulness should have so shrouded the memory of one, concerning whom this much is evident, that he was an able, earnest, and influential minister of the

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., pp. 253, 256.

Gospel, to whom several churches of this county were indebted for their establishment and early culture.

The Rev. John Smith was a native of England. He was born May 5th, 1702. He came to this country when a boy, with his father, Mr. Thomas Smith, who settled in the city of New York, and who appears to have been engaged in business. His father was a Presbyterian, and a zealous and intelligent Christian; and upon his arrival here, identified himself at once with the effort to establish in New York a church of his own faith and order. Presbyterianism was at that time in its infancy in the city. A little band of Christians met every Sabbath for worship, at first in a private house, and afterward in the City Hall. In 1717 they obtained the pastoral services of the Rev. James Anderson. Mr. Thomas Smith was one of the commissioners to prosecute the call, and was one of the trustees for the purchase of a lot of ground on Wall Street, and the erection of a church in 1719. But difficulties having risen between a part of the congregation and their pastor, Mr. Smith and some others withdrew, and for a time held services by themselves. It was to this little colony that the illustrious Jonathan Edwards preached for about eight months, from August, 1722, to April, 1723. His home in New York was in the house and family of Mr. Thomas Smith. Edwards was then barely nineteen years of age, and John Smith but a little over twenty; and between these two young men there sprang up a friendship the most intimate and ardent, which we have reason to believe lasted for years, and perhaps through life. They used often, Mr. Edwards tells us, to walk together on the banks of the Hudson, to converse on the things of God; 'and our conversation used to turn on the advancement of Christ's Kingdom in the world, and the glorious things that God would accomplish for His Church in the latter days.' He speaks of his separation from this endeared friend and companion, as one of the most bitter trials of his life.

A contrast more striking could scarcely be seen than that which is presented by the subsequent lives of these two ministers. Whilst the one enters upon a career that soon raises him to the highest pinnacle of influence and fame, his friend, congenial in spirit, and devoted to the same cause and Master, passes at once into an almost total obscurity, emerging at the end of twenty years only as the humble pastor of small and feeble congregations, among whom he toils for thirty years more, till 'worn out with various labours,' he falls asleep.

For this incident is nearly all that we know of the early life of Mr. Smith. The year after, he married a daughter of Mr. James Hooker, of Guilford, Connecticut. Mr. Hooker was a grandson of the famous Thomas Hooker, one of the founders of the colony of Connecticut, and one of the most eminent of the Puritan divines. Mr. Smith seems to have prized his connection with this family; for he gave their name to his oldest son, whom he called William Hooker Smith.[1]

Where and at what time Mr. Smith pursued his academic and theological studies, we do not know with certainty. It is on record, however, that he graduated at Yale in 1727. Tradition has it, that he studied medicine also, and it is certain that during his long pastorate at Rye and the White Plains, he practised as a physician, as well as preached. We do not learn where he spent the years preceding his advent to Rye. From the family record in the possession of one of his descendants, we learn that he lost a child in New York in 1729, and another a few weeks after in Guilford.

Of his pastoral labors, the earliest authentic trace is found in the records of the Fairfield Eastern Consociation, from which it appears, as we have seen, that he was ordained as minister of Rye in the year 1742: —

'At a Meeting of a Number of Ministers from the Eastern Association of Fairfield, at Rye, December 30th A. Dom. 1742. Upon the Desire of the People of said Town: where were present the Rev. Messrs. Jedidiah Mills, Benajah Case & Joseph Bellamy.

'Mr. Mills was chosen Moderator; Mr. Bellamy was chosen Scribe.

'The Revd Messrs Abraham Todd, John Eells, Benjamin Strong, were also present & were voted to joyn with us, in what Affairs may come before us, & then Prayer was attended.

'Then were laid before ye Council, ye Call to ye Work of ye Ministry of ye Presbyterian Inhabitants of ye Town of Rye, to Mr. John Smith, & his Answer thereunto, & their Desire of our laying hands upon him was also manifested.

'Then Mr. Smith was examined as to his Qualifications for ye Work of ye Ministry and was approved. Mr. Bellamy was appointed to make ye first Prayer & preach ye publick Lecture. Mr. Mills to lead in ye Ordination, laying open to ye Congregation ye Regularity of ye Proceedings relating thereunto, hitherto made by ye People, & to make Ordination Prayer wth ye Imposition of Hands, & give ye Charge. Mr Bellamy to give ye Right Hand of Fellowship: & Mr. Todd to make the concluding Prayer. And ye Business of ye Day was accordingly attended

[1] See pp. 166, 167, etc.

by the appointed Persons. Met again next Morning & concluded with Prayer. 'Test. JOSEPH BELLAMY, *Scribe*

'A true Copy Recorded & Compared. — pr. S. COOKE *Register*.'[1]

He commenced his labors at once with much energy and zeal; to the great comfort, doubtless, and satisfaction of the people, who had been so long destitute of a regular ministry; but to the no small chagrin and displeasure of the Church of England missionary, who had been so long endeavoring to crush out the Presbyterian element in his parish, and who but lately had been rejoicing over the prospect of success. 'As the dissenting faction,' he writes the following spring, 'have now got one of that sort ordained among them, residing not far from me, it gives me a great deal of trouble and uneasiness. Some that used to frequent the church, and had almost worn off their prejudices against it, now follow those meetings, and are wheedled after them by continual visits and fair pretences.' Nor were matters much bettered by the fall. 'The teacher that holds his meeting near the parish church,' writes the perturbed missionary, 'is much cried up by his party, and indeed is unwearied in his attempts to amuse the people with fair speeches, and prejudice them against the Church, in his private visits from house to house.'[2] In other words, the newly settled pastor was faithfully and wisely pursuing his work, gathering and instructing his little flock, looking up the absent, and winning the affections of all by his friendly intercourse through the week, as well as by his earnest pulpit ministrations on the Sabbath.

A few weeks after his settlement here, Mr. Smith secured a home for his family, in the village of Rye. On the twentieth of February, 1743, he purchased of John Abrahamson a house and six acres of land, for the sum of one hundred and eighty pounds, 'current money of the province of New York,' or about five hundred dollars. Subsequently, he bought another house, with eight acres and a quarter of land, situated in the northern part of the village, and in the neighborhood of his church. The former property was still in his possession ten years later, in 1752.

Ten years of Mr. Smith's ministry at Rye had elapsed when he visited Newark, New Jersey, and there attended the meeting of the Synod of New York, then in session. On this occasion he met his early friend, Jonathan Edwards, who was now at the height

[1] A Book of Records for the Venerable the Eastern Consociation of the County of Fairfield, p. 23.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 271.

of his illustrious career. Both Mr. Edwards and Mr. Smith at this time joined the Synod as corresponding members. Shortly after, Mr. Smith connected himself with the Presbytery of New York, under whose care, it is to be supposed, this congregation then came. In subsequent years he was rarely present at the meetings of the Synod, which were generally held at Philadelphia, the length and difficulty of the journey doubtless preventing his attendance. Notwithstanding this, he appears to have been widely known, and held in high esteem by the Synod. Evidence of this is afforded by the fact that he was on several occasions appointed upon important committees, and in conjunction with eminent ministers of the Presbyterian Church. Thus the records of the Synod show, that in 1755, the Rev. 'John Smith, of Rye,' was one of a committee to visit the church at Jamaica, with reference to the proposed removal of their pastor, Mr. Bostwick, to New York. His associates were President Burr, Gilbert and William Tennent, and other distinguished men. In 1754, when Gilbert Tennent was sent to England, with President Davies, to solicit funds for the college of New Jersey, Mr. Smith was requested by the Synod to supply his pulpit for four Sabbaths. But the most important service, probably, which he was called upon to render to the Church in this way, took place in 1766, when he was appointed one of the commissioners from the Synod of the Presbyterian Church, to meet delegates from the consociated churches of Connecticut, for the purpose of initiating and maintaining a friendly correspondence between those bodies. Mr. Smith's associates in this duty were Dr. Alison, Dr. Rodgers, William Tennent, John Blair, and others.

After some years, Mr. Smith removed his residence from Rye to the White Plains, but continued to preach here, probably on alternate Sabbaths, riding over for the purpose on horseback. The house in which he lived at the White Plains is still pointed out, near the corner of the cross-road leading to the Purchase. In his later years, he owned a farm of about one hundred acres, the cultivation of which, however, was chiefly left to a faithful negro servant. To his other ministerial labors, Mr. Smith added, in 1763, the charge of the Presbyterian Church at Sing Sing, where he preached occasionally for the next five years. But he was now an old man, and no longer fit for such multiplied and arduous labors. In 1768, he united with the congregations whom he was serving, in an application to the Presbytery of Dutchess County, to which he belonged, for the assistance of a colleague. His letter to that

body informs them 'that he is now far advanced in Life, and labours under many infirmities of Age, and Disorders of Body; so his People have been kind eno' to propose him a Colleague, to preach alternately at White Plains and Singsing; to which motion he had heartily complied, and beg'd would advise to some proper Person to come upon Probation with him.' In accordance with this request, the Presbytery, on the eleventh of October, 1769, met at the White Plains, and ordained Mr. Ichabod Lewis, a cousin of the Rev. Isaac Lewis, of Greenwich, as pastor of those churches. It is supposed that Mr. Smith continued to preach more or less frequently at Rye, until within a short time of his death, which took place at the White Plains, on the twenty-sixth of February, 1771. His remains lie in the churchyard, and the inscription upon his tomb designates him as the 'first ordained minister of the Presbyterian persuasion in Rye and the White Plains,' adding that, 'worn out with various labours,' he 'fell asleep in Jesus.'

From all accounts, Mr. Smith was a man of eminent piety, and of a very high order of intellectual capacity. The historian Webster speaks of him as 'an able and useful minister.' And persons who were living but a few years ago, and who had heard him in early life, have testified to his great eloquence as a preacher.

In the Revolutionary War, which began soon after the date of Mr. Smith's death, the Presbyterian Church of Rye was destroyed by fire, as were nearly all the churches of this region. And the congregation, owing to the troubles of the times, was greatly scattered. Its leading members were staunch whigs, and sided with their country against its invaders, and consequently were obliged to remove from this disputed territory in order to escape the depredations of the British troops from New York.

The Presbytery of Dutchess County, 'in the Province of New York,' was 'first erected 27 October 1762 — and established and enlarged by the Reverend Synod of New York & Philadelphia, 28 May 1763.' (Minutes of the Presbytery, etc., MS., in the possession of the Presbyterian Historical Society, Philadelphia.) Previous to the formation of this Presbytery, 'the counties east of the Hudson,' says Dr. Webster, 'looked to the Association of Far field County for candidates, and for assistance in all spiritual and secular affairs of their churches. Bedford, Cronpond (Yorktown), Hanover, in Cortland Manor (Peekskill), and Salem, put themselves under New Brunswick Presbytery in 1743. Rumbout and Fishkill were received by New York Presbytery in 1751. Salem invited the Fairfield ministers to ordain Mead as their pastor, in 1752: about that time, John Smith, of Rye, joined New York Presbytery. Ten years after, [Elisha] Kent,[1] of the First Church in Philipse's patent [South-East], and [Joseph] Peck, of the Second [Carmel], met with Mead, of Salem, ... and resolved to form themselves into a Presbytery.' (*History of the Presbyterian Church in America*, p. 292.) The circumstance which led to this action is worthy of

[1] Grandfather of Chief Justice Kent, of New York.

mention. At a meeting of the Council of the Eastern Consociation of Fairfield County, at Danbury, August 1, 1763, 'the pastors and delegates of the churches in Philippi and West Philippi, N. Y., were objected against, and ruled out of the Council, as having no right in the Consociation according to the platform, which was designed for churches *in the colony of Connecticut.*' (*Historical Sketches, and Rules, of the Fairfield East Association and Consociation:* New Haven, 1859, p. 19.) This incident throws light upon the status of the churches east of the Hudson — that of Rye among the rest — previous to the formation of the Presbyteries, which embraced this territory. They were not formally attached to the ecclesiastical bodies in Connecticut, though recognized as of kindred faith and order. They awaited a complete organization as Presbyterian churches.

'Much of the territory covered by' the congregations belonging to the Presbytery of Dutchess County 'was neutral ground during the Revolution, and was wasted by both parties: the ministers retired,' the houses of worship were burned, 'and the people greatly broken in their circumstances. The Presbytery was much weakened from this cause, and being reduced in numbers by death, received from New York Presbytery the ministers on the west side of the river, and took the style of Hudson Presbytery.' (Webster, *Ibid.* p. 293.)

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

THE CHURCHES: PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH SINCE THE REVOLUTION.

1785–1870.

THE period of the Revolution was everywhere in our country a time of religious decline and destitution. Such it was emphatically in the towns and villages of the 'Neutral Ground.' Nearly every church in this part of Westchester County was desecrated and injured, if not destroyed during the war. At Rye, both the village churches were burned. From the military map of 1779, we infer that Grace Church, the venerable sanctuary where so many generations had worshipped, was still standing in that year. It was probably destroyed soon after. No meeting of the Vestry appears to have been held for nine years, from 1776 to 1785, and no mention is made of any public religious service, after the death of the Rev. Mr. Avery, in the fall of 1776. At the close of the war, the Rev. Andrew Fowler collected the congregation here and at the White Plains, on alternate Sundays, for six months, beginning in April, 1784. Service was held at Rye in the old parsonage house, on the west side of Blind Brook.

On the 27th of April, 1785, 'the Congregation of the Episcopal Church of Rye was call'd to meet at the House of M^rs^ Tamer Haviland in Rye, and being met Together proceeded to the choice of Trustees to take Charge of the Temporalities of the Church.' The trustees hired out the church lands at a very low rent.

In May, 1786, the congregation met, and resolved to send delegates to a convention of the Protestant Episcopal Church, to be held at St. Paul's Church, New York.

September 8th, 1787, the 'trustees and members of Grace Church in the Parish of Rye,' addressed a letter to the Rev. Richard C. Moore, soliciting his acceptance of the rectorship, and offering him a salary of one hundred and twenty pounds.

Mr. Moore, after being for some time engaged in the practice of medicine, had devoted himself to the ministry of the Gospel.

He pursued his studies under the direction of Bishop Provoost, was ordained in July, 1787, as deacon, and was admitted to priest's orders in September following.[1]

He commenced his labors in the ministry at Rye. During the year he spent here, the congregation took steps toward rebuilding their church. They determined to build it 'upon the Hill, at or near the Place where the old ruins were standing.' It was to be built of wood, fifty feet in length, and thirty-eight feet in width, with galleries on the west and south sides, and without a steeple. The contract for the erection of the church was made April 16th, 1788, with James Ford of New York, for one hundred and twenty pounds; 'the timber to be prepared in the Woods.' The corner-stone was laid in June of that year, apparently, and the edifice was probably completed by the first of November, the time fixed in the contract. It is said that 'most of the timber of which it was built came from Captain Joshua Purdy's land.' Meanwhile the congregation continued to worship in the parsonage house on the west side of Blind Brook. In May, 'a sufficient number of benches to accommodate' the people, were to be procured. An aged lady yet living remembers being taken when a child to the service held in this building.

Mr. Moore resigned the charge of this parish on the first of August, 1788, having been called to the rectorship of St. Andrew's Church, Richmond, on Staten Island. At the request of the Vestry, however, he consented to continue his labors here until the first of October. It is probable, therefore, that he officiated in the new church, which must have been completed by this time. Mr. Moore was rector of St. Andrew's Church for twenty-one years. In 1809 he accepted the charge of St. Stephen's Church in the city of New York, and in 1814 he was called to the office of Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Virginia. He died November 11th, 1841, at the age of seventy-nine, after a ministry of fifty-four years, and an episcopate of twenty-seven; in which, with his distinguished abilities and rare excellence and loveliness of character, he was enabled, under the Divine blessing, to accomplish great good.

The congregation remained without a pastor for more than two years. On the fifteenth of December, 1790, the Vestry called the Rev. David Foote, who had been officiating for some weeks, 'to act as Rector of this Parish,' agreeing to pay him a salary of one

[1] *Annals of the American Pulpit*, by Wm. B. Sprague, D. D., vol. v. pp. 367, 368.

hundred pounds with the profits of the glebe,[1] for one year from November 7th. Mr. Foote accepted the office, and was rector for nearly three years. He died here August 1st, 1793, aged thirty-two years. He had but just entered the ministry when he came to Rye, having been ordained by Bishop Seabury of Connecticut, in 1788.

The church, though apparently occupied for Divine service since November, 1788, remained for several years in an unfinished state. At a meeting of the Vestry, May 4th, 1791, a subscription was ordered, 'to raise Money from the Inhabitants of the Parish to finish the Church at Rye.' The floor was to be laid anew, three windows were to be added, one at the north side and two at the west end; and the walls were to be lined with boards as high as the windows, and from thence lathed and plastered to the bottom of the roof, which was supported by four pillars, 'cased with white oak plank.' The money needed for these improvements was raised by subscription, and the subscribers were to be entitled to a choice of pews in the church, 'in proportion to the amount' of their contributions. The highest value set upon a pew was seven pounds. Two square pews were built next to the chancel, the one of which was taken by Mr. Peter Jay; and the other was appropriated to the widow of the late Mr. Josiah Brown, in consideration of his 'forwardness in promoting the building of the Church.'

On the fifth of December, 1793, the Vestry called the Rev. John Jackson Sands to the rectorship. He had been ordained to the ministry the year before by Bishop Provoost, and had officiated for a few months on Long Island. Mr. Sands remained here but two years and a half, resigning his charge May 4th, 1796, in consequence of some dissatisfaction. 'He subsequently abandoned the ministry,' says Mr. Bolton, 'and died in Brooklyn not long since.' It was during his pastorate that the name of the church, for some reason which does not appear, was changed from Grace to Christ Church.[2] Another important event occurred in the parish. In

[1] 'Upon the 14th of June, 1792, Mr. Isaac Purdy and Captain Joshua Purdy were empowered to receive of the executors of Miss Anna Maria Jay, deceased, a legacy of £100, given by her in her last will to the corporation of the church in Rye.' 'Miss Jay, who died on the 4th of September, 1791, was the daughter of Peter Jay, Esq. She had been afflicted from childhood with blindness.

[2] June 7th, 1796, a meeting of the congregation was held in the church, by authority of an act of the legislature of the State of New York 'for the relief of the Protestant Episcopal Church' in that State, passed March 17th, 1795. The object of the meeting was 'to determine what day in the week called Easter week the election of church

the winter of 1794, the parsonage house on the west side of Blind Brook was destroyed by fire. This house had been the residence of the rector since Mr. Wetmore's time. The Vestry, at first, inclined to rebuild the parsonage on its former site. But they concluded to purchase the house and land of Isaac Doughty, near the church; and on the twenty-fourth of May, 1794, this purchase was effected for four hundred pounds. The congregation thus acquired the beautiful and spacious 'rectory grounds' which they now possess.

The Rev. George Ogilvie, of Norwalk, Conn., was called to this parish October 26th, 1796. He came, but was here for less than six months. He died April 3d, 1797, and was buried in the little graveyard opposite the church, on the west side of Blind Brook. Mr. Ogilvie 'was a tall, noble looking man, a pleasant companion, a good reader, and a very respectable preacher.'[1] He was thirty-nine years old when he came to Rye.

The Rev. Samuel Haskell was called August 7th, 1797. He was born near Boston in 1762, served in the American army toward the close of the war; prepared himself for Yale College, where he graduated in 1790, and was ordained to the ministry of the Episcopal Church in 1794. He was rector at Rye for three years and a half, resigning his charge in April, 1801;[2] but he returned to this parish after an interval of eight years, in 1809,[3] and continued here until May, 1823. The intervening period was occupied by the ministry of the Rev. Evan Rogers,[4] a native of Pennsylvania, and for some years a 'zealous and laborious itiner-

wardens and vestrymen shall take place,' and also 'what shall be the Name, Stile and Title by which said Church or Congregation shall from thenceforth be known and recognized in law.' By a majority of votes it was 'resolved that the Stile and Title shall be Christ's Church at the Town of Rye in the County of Westchester and State of New York; and that Monday in Easter Week be observed yearly for the election of officers directed to be elected by the Act.' (Records of the Vestry.)

[1] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church*, etc., p. 337.

[2] April 18th, 1801, the Vestry received a donation of seven hundred and fifty dollars from Trinity Church, New York. In 1813, from the same source they received the sum of five hundred dollars. October 29th, 1818, the thanks of the Vestry and congregation were tendered to Mrs. Mary Jay, for 'a Rich and valuable Donation consisting of three articles of Plate bearing her name.' (Records.)

[3] In calling him back, the Vestry expressed feelings of 'the highest gratitude and affection for' him, 'and on account of' his 'past services' in their church. (Records.)

[4] There are some pleasant memorials of Mr. Rogers. The large willow that stands near Blind Brook, on a part of the Rectory grounds, is said to have been planted by him. His love of trees probably suggested also the following order which appears in the Vestry Records: 'May 2, 1808, Resolved that Mr. Rogers and Mr. Penfield be requested and are authorized to procure and set out around the Church as many forest trees of different kinds as they may think proper the present season.'

ant preacher' of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1798 he connected himself with the Protestant Episcopal Church, and entered its ministry. He was called to Rye from Hebron, Conn., October 18th, 1801, and after eight years of faithful and successful labor in this place, died January 25th, 1809, and was buried in the cemetery near Milton. 'His life,' it is recorded of him, 'was an exemplification of the doctrines he preached. He was endeared' to many friends 'by his deep piety, the mildness of his temper, the profitableness of his conversation, and the purity of his morals.' His death was happy.

It was during the ministry of his successor, Mr. Haskell, that a division took place in the parish. That portion of the people that worshipped at the White Plains, became a distinct congregation. The rectors of Rye had officiated at 'the Plains' since the year 1724. Services were held at first only four times a year; then once in two months; and after the war, as often as once in three weeks. But on the eighth of June, 1815, it was decided that this arrangement should cease, and that 'Divine Service be celebrated every Sabbath day in the church at Rye.' On the eighteenth of March, 1824, the Vestry resolved that the Church 'be opened for Divine service twice every Sabbath, except on the third Sabbath in the afternoon, when service is to be held in the school house at the Saw Pitt.' The 'intermission between morning and evening service' was to be 'but one hour.'

The parish clerk was an important functionary of the congregation in those days. His duty was to give out the psalms to besung, to lead the responses, and sometimes to conduct the singing. This office was extant in Rye as late as the year 1807, when it was resolved that 'Mr. Nathaniel Nelson be employed as an Assistant Clerk to this Church to conduct the singing in public worship, in the absence of the other clerk, and that he be allowed at the rate of ten dollars a year for his services.'

Mr. Haskell was followed by the Rev. William Thompson, a native of Ireland, who had come to this country about the year 1816, entered the ministry, and after a short pastorate at Pittsburg, Penn., commenced his labors in Rye, October 1st, 1823. Here, like so many of his predecessors, he finished his course, and fell asleep August 26th, 1830, having ministered to this people nearly seven years. Mr. Thompson is remembered with peculiarly tender interest by some in this place. 'A more loving spirit,' writes one well acquainted with him, 'I never knew; he loved God, loved his fellow-men, loved his Church, and was willing to spend and be

spent in the service of his Divine Lord. He actually wore himself out in duty.' His ministry here was fruitful of great good. Living and dying, the influence of this devoted servant of Jesus was felt, to the advancement of pure religion in this community for many years.

The Rev. John M. Forbes was rector in 1830, and the Rev. William M. Carmichael in 1832. On the eighth of September, 1834, the Rev. Peter S. Chauncey was called to this parish, where he continued for fifteen years. Mr. Chauncey's memory is cherished warmly, as it should be, by the people among whom he spent so large a part of his able and successful ministry. This, I believe, was his first pastoral charge, and here he was permitted to accomplish an important work, in strengthening and enlarging the church under his care. 'He came,' says the friend whose language I have already quoted, 'in the flush of health and spirits, full of that ardor which was his characteristic; and ready, under God, for every good word and work. He came, to the universal acceptance of his people. His graceful manners and dignified bearing, his accessibility, his vivacity, ever tempered with the gravity which became his sacred office, won upon the old and the young; whilst his impassioned oratory engaged all hearts, more especially those of the young.' Mr. Chauncey's earnest labors were not confined to the congregation at Rye. For the first two years, he had charge also of St. Thomas's Church, Mamaroneck. This he relinquished, by wish of the Vestry, November 14th, 1836; but in December of the same year, he commenced holding services at Saw Pit, soon after called Port Chester. Of this enterprise we shall speak in another chapter. Mr. Chauncey resigned the rectorship of Rye in 1849. He removed to Hartford, Conn., and thence to Yorkville, N. Y.; and died, greatly regretted by many to whom he had ministered, in 1866.

He was followed at Rye by the Rev. Edward C. Bull, whose ministry here began May 13th, 1849, and lasted ten years, — until May 1st, 1859, when the Vestry, in accepting his resignation on account of impaired health, testified to the faithfulness, earnestness, and ability with which he had discharged the duties of his office. During Mr. Bull's incumbency the wooden church, built in 1788, was replaced by a beautiful edifice of stone. The first steps toward this work were taken September 9th, 1852. Plans for the building, by Messrs. Wills & Dudley, architects, of New York, were accepted January 21st, 1854. The church was consecrated Thursday, March 15th, 1855, by Bishop Wainwright.

The cost of the erection — nearly eighteen thousand dollars — was entirely paid by the first day of October, 1857.

The Rev. John Campbell White was called to the rectorship May 5th, 1859. He continued here nearly five years, his resignation taking effect April 1st, 1864. Mr. White died in the city of New York in 1866.

The Rev. Reese F. Alsop, now rector, entered on his duties November 27th, 1864. A neat and convenient Sunday-school room was erected this year, near the church, and soon after the church itself was enlarged and embellished at a considerable expense. But on the evening of December 21st, 1866, a sad calamity befell the congregation and our whole community, in the destruction of this beautiful house of worship by fire. It had been built but a little more than ten years, and the cost of recent improvements, rendering it still more inviting and commodious, had but just been defrayed. Seldom are a people called to so painful a trial, and so heavy a burden. It was endured courageously, however, and within two years a new and larger edifice arose on the same site. The present church was consecrated on the nineteenth day of June, 1869, Bishop Potter officiating.

This ancient parish has had a succession of twenty-one rectors, during a period of one hundred and sixty-six years. Seven of these, however, were here but a short time, — a year at the most, — and there have been intervals, amounting to more than twenty years, the longest of which — eleven years — occurred during and after the Revolution, in which the congregation has been without a pastor. The ministry of fourteen rectors has extended over a term of one hundred and thirty-seven years, the average length of each pastorate being nearly ten years. Of the whole number no fewer that *ten* have finished their course here.

Christ Church, Rye, erected from the designs of Mr. Florentin Pelletier, is built in the early Gothic style, and has ample accommodation for six hundred persons. The ground plan consists of chancel, nave, and aisles, with organ and robing rooms. The chancel is twenty-six feet deep by twenty feet wide, separated from the nave by a bold chancel arch, and raised two feet above the floor of the nave and aisles; these are ninety-three feet long by forty-eight feet wide inside. The extreme length, is one hundred and thirty-five feet. At the southwest angle of the gable and aisle walls is the tower, from which are carried up four buttress piers, forming an open belfry, and surmounted by a stone spire, which is crowned at one hundred feet by an iron cross.

The exterior walls are of rubble stone, quarried on the site, with dressings wrought of Connecticut brown stone. The aisle and gable walls are strengthened with buttresses marking the bays.

The roofs are covered with slates, banded in different shades, and laid alternately plain and pointed; all the ridges are surmounted with ornamental iron cresting. Over the nave the open roof rises forty-five feet, and is divided into six bays by moulded arches, with principals, tie-beams, and open tracery; and between the nave and aisles is a colonnade of short octagonal posts with moulded caps, from which spring moulded arches with pierced quatre-foil circles in the spandrels. There is no clere-story, but the pitch of the roof is broken over these arches. Twelve small trefoil windows light the roof, one in the centre of each bay on either side. These windows are hung to open for ventilation, and filled with stained glass of rich colors, as are all the windows of the church, most of which bear appropriate emblems. At the west end of the nave, overhanging the porch and lobbies, is a gallery carried on strong trusses; this, together with the roof-timbers, is of pine, stained and varnished.

The ceiling between the rafters is plastered and colored a light blue; below the window-sills the side walls are wainscoted with narrow ash; otherwise, the walls are painted a plain light gray color, contrasting with the seats, which are of ash. In the chancel, the furniture, with the reredos and chancel-rail, is of chestnut, oiled. (Architect's description.)

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE CHURCHES: PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF RYE SINCE THE REVOLUTION.

1792–1870.

AT the close of the Revolution, the Presbyterians of Rye were found to be very few and feeble. By death and removal from the place, the flourishing congregation that formerly worshipped in 'the old Meeting house in the Cedars,' had been reduced to a mere handful, and some years elapsed before these could summon courage and strength to rebuild their fallen altars. The church, as we have seen, was destroyed by fire in the course of the war, and the plot of ground upon which it stood had passed into other hands.

The effort to resuscitate the congregation was doubtless due, in a great measure, to the influence of the Rev. Dr. Lewis, of Greenwich. This excellent man had lately become the pastor of the Second Congregational Church in that place, and there were reasons why he should feel a special interest in the cause of religion here. He had known the venerable Dr. Smith, the pastor of Rye and White Plains before the Revolution. His cousin, the Rev. Ichabod Lewis, had been associated with Dr. Smith as colleague for some time. And since the loss of their church the remaining Presbyterians of Rye had frequented public worship at Greenwich, several of them, indeed, connecting themselves with the church under Dr. Lewis's ministry. Nathan Brown, Ezekiel Halsted, Robert Merritt, Isaac Loofborrow, and others who resided in Rye, were members of the church at 'Horseneck,' about the year 1790. Thus the relation which had existed for more than a hundred years between these neighboring congregations continued, and Rye was still indebted, as in the old colonial days, to the fostering care of Greenwich.

The first step toward rebuilding the church was taken in 1792. On the twenty-second of November in that year, Jesse Park and Phœbe, his wife, of the town of Harrison, conveyed to Joseph

Theale, Ezekiel Halsted, junior, and John Merritt, of Rye, as trustees for the Presbyterian Society, a tract of land comprising half an acre. The church was built in the following spring. A considerable part of the money raised for this purpose had been subscribed by the people of Greenwich. It was dedicated to the worship of God, in the course of the year 1793, by the Rev. Isaac Lewis, D. D., who preached here for some months every Sunday, after service in his own church. His son, the Rev. Isaac Lewis, junior, subsequently pastor at New Rochelle, succeeded him for a short time in this duty. But after this, the congregation remained for a long period without a stated ministry. Occasional services were held by ministers visiting the place, and sometimes the building was occupied, on special occasions, by persons of other religious persuasions. For about twenty years, from 1793 to 1812, the congregation had no settled pastor.

It had been incorporated on the fifth of June, 1795, under the name of 'The Presbyterian Church of Rye.' The trustees were Robert Merritt, Ezekiel Halsted, junior, Nathan Brown, John Doughty, James Hunt, and David Rogers. These were among the leading names in the little congregation, as it existed about the beginning of the present century.

Nathan Brown was a son of Thomas Brown. He lived to an advanced age, and in his later years was an active member of the Methodist Church.

Ezekiel Halsted, junior,[1] came of a Presbyterian family, his grandfather's name occurring in 1753, at the head of a list of the trustees of Dr. Smith's congregation. He joined the church of Greenwich, July 26th, 1789. His first wife, a daughter of Andrew Lyon, of Rye, was also a member of that church.

Robert Merritt united with the same church at the same time with Mr. Halsted. He lived near Port Chester, in the house lately owned by Isaac Carpenter. Some of our older inhabitants remember him well, and speak of him as a man of sincere and consistent piety. He lived till the age of seventy years, and was regular in attending the church at Greenwich with his family, when there was no service at Rye.

Dr. David Rogers had come to this place from Greenfield, Connecticut, where he was a member of Dr. Dwight's church. His wife was a daughter of the celebrated Presbyterian minister,

[1] This gentleman was the *father* of the late Ezekiel Halsted *junior*, who was born in 1787, and was the fourth person in successive generations so named.

William Tennent, and is said to have been a woman of remarkable excellence.

John Doughty was the well known innkeeper, of whom we have already made mention. He kept the tavern recently known as Van Sicklin's.

Isaac Loofborrow lived near 'Saw-pit' or Port Chester. He left Rye after some years, and removed to the west.

Mrs. Phebe Park, the wife of Jesse Park, was a Presbyterian, and it was probably owing to her interest in the enterprise that the land for a building site was given. She had been a member of Dr. Smith's congregation before the war, and her recollections of him were vivid and pleasant.

The old church, built in 1793, was a very plain and unpretending structure. Mr. James Purdy, of Milton, now in his eighty-fourth year, remembers seeing it 'raised.' It was a frame building, much smaller than the present church, and stood partly on the same spot, but fronting somewhat nearer to the road. It had neither belfry nor spire. There were two doors on the front. The interior of the building remained unfinished for many years. The walls were not plastered; and instead of pews, there were planks, the ends of which rested upon logs, for seats. In the hard times that followed the Revolution, this was all that the people felt able to do, toward the completion of their sanctuary; and in this condition it remained for eighteen or twenty years.

In the autumn of 1811, Dr. Dwight, passing through this town, noticed the two 'small churches' of Rye, — 'an Episcopal and a Presbyterian.' 'An Episcopal Minister,' he observes, 'has occasionally been established here, but there has been no Presbyterian Minister within my remembrance.' [1]

Soon after Dr. Dwight's visit, the Methodists of Rye obtained possession of the church and occupied it for a period of sixteen years, from 1812 to 1828. This circumstance is explained partly by the fact that the congregation was now greatly reduced in numbers. 'Owing to the death or removal from the place of some of the most prominent individuals, and the apathy of the rest, the society became in a manner extinct.' This was due, however, quite as much to a change in the religious views of some of the surviving members. Mr. Halsted and Mr. Brown had both united a short time before with the Methodist denomination, of which

[1] *Travels in New England and New York*, by Timothy Dwight, S. T. D., LL. D. In four volumes. New Haven, 1822: vol. iii. p. 489.

they became active and earnest members; and at their invitation, the ministers of that church, who had already preached occasionally at Rye, commenced to hold stated services in the Presbyterian house of worship.

It was by the efforts of Mr. Ebenezer Clark, a merchant of New York, who came to Rye in 1821, that the building was recovered to its original use. Ascertaining that a congregation of his own religious faith had formerly existed here, and that the edifice now standing had been built for them, he claimed it in behalf of the Presbyterians of the place. This claim was not admitted without some discussion. The Methodist congregation had now worshipped here for many years. They conceived that so long a possession gave them a right to the property, the original title to which was perhaps by that time somewhat obscure. Mr. Clark, however, was able to show clearly that the land had been given for a Presbyterian church, that a society of that denomination had been incorporated under the law of the State, and that the building had been appropriated from the first to their use.

A service was held by the Presbyterian congregation on the seventh of December, 1828, in the district school-house of Rye, preparatory to the resumption of public worship in the church. The Rev. George Stebbins, of New Rochelle, preached on this occasion. Soon after the occupation of the building, the Rev. Noah C. Saxton began his ministry here as 'stated supply,' and continued until May, 1829. Meanwhile, on the fourth of March, the formal organization of a church took place by order of the Presbytery of New York. A committee of the Presbytery, consisting of the Rev. Samuel H. Cox, D. D., and the Rev. Henry G. Ludlow, performed this duty. A church was organized, with ten members, and Messrs. Ebenezer Clark and William Lester were chosen and ordained as ruling elders. The

REV. WILLIAMS H. WHITTEMORE[1]

was the first minister of the little congregation after the organization of the church. Mr. Whittemore had completed his academic

[1] Graduated at Yale College in 1825, and at the Theological School connected with that institution in 1829: licensed to preach the Gospel, and ordained in 1830 by the Fairfield West Association. After laboring for three years at Rye, Mr. Whittemore preached for three years — 1833 to 1836 — at Charlton, Worcester County, Mass., and was for fourteen years — from 1836 to 1850 — pastor of the Congregational Church at Southbury, Conn. Since then he has resided principally in New Haven and in Brooklyn, engaged, at different times, in ministerial work, advocating the claims of the Freedmen's cause, etc. He married Maria, daughter of Ebenezer Clark, Esq., of Rye.

and theological studies at New Haven just before coming to Rye. His ministry of three years in this place, from May 1829 to April 1832, was very successful. A service had been commenced by Mr. Saxton in the district school-house at 'Saw-pit,' now Port Chester. It was maintained every Sabbath forenoon, the service at Rye being in the afternoon. Sunday-schools also were established in each place. In the summer of 1829, the church at Rye, now somewhat dilapidated, was thoroughly repaired, chiefly at Mr. Clark's expense; and in May, 1830, the congregation commenced building a church at Saw Pit. The fruit of these early efforts appeared in a revival of religion, which resulted in numerous conversions. In the month of October, 1829, the Presbytery of Bedford was formed by the Synod of New York, and the ecclesiastical relation of this church was transferred from the Presbytery of New York to the new Presbytery.

Mr. Whittemore was succeeded by the

REV. DAVID REMINGTON,[1]

who officiated from April, 1832, until the time of his death, January 24th, 1834. Mr. Remington had devoted himself early to missionary work among the Choctaw Indians, but his health failing, he returned to the north, and had been preaching for several years at Upper Greenburg, in this county, when he was called to Rye. During his short stay here he endeared himself greatly to the little flock, among whom he labored with unsparing zeal. Modest and retiring to a remarkable degree, he was a man of no ordinary power, by the fervor of his piety and the strength of his convictions of truth. His death was most sudden, and was felt by his people, and indeed by the whole community, as an appalling visitation.

The Rev. Samuel Irenæus Prime, D. D., has favored me with the following notice of this good man, whom he knew at the time of his ministry in Rye: —

'My recollections of the Rev. Mr. Remington are fragrant and precious. When I was entering the holy ministry, he was in middle life,

[1] Was born in Springfield, Mass., November 7, 1797; married, August 24, 1821, Esther Rutgers, daughter of John Lowe, New York; was appointed by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, in October, 1821, as assistant missionary to the Choctaw Nation, at Mayhew, Miss.; returned to the north in 1823, and pursued a course of study in theology at Buffalo; was ordained by the Presbytery of Buffalo in 1825; was appointed by the Domestic Missionary Society, July, 1825, to labor in Upper Greenburg, Westchester County, New York; became pastor of the united churches of Upper and Lower Greenburg, and from thence was called to Rye.

and full of useful labor. The pallor of his countenance — the result, I now believe, of that disease of which he suddenly died — impressed me when I first saw him with the thought that he was a sad and dying man. The atmosphere seemed solemn when he was present. Though his speech was affable, his face was that of a man who could not smile. This led me to do him injustice in my heart. Those who knew him better knew him to be genial, loving, and pleasant.

'He was a man of God; a man of prayer, of faith; and, as I thought, full of the Spirit. I wish the Church had hundreds of such blessed men as he.'

The Rev. Thomas Payne commenced his labors at Rye a few months after Mr. Remington's death. He remained for two years, — from 1834 to 1836. The Rev. John H. Hunter next officiated for a few months. Until now, the ministers who preached here did so in the capacity of 'stated supplies,' the congregation having not yet secured, or not feeling as yet able to support a settled pastor. But in October, 1836, the Rev. James R. Davenport was ordained and installed as pastor of this church by the Presbytery of Bedford. The relation, however, subsisted but a short time. In April, 1838, Mr. Davenport resigned his charge, and not long after entered another religious denomination. His successor was the

REV. EDWARD D. BRYAN,

a graduate of Princeton College and Seminary, who came here as stated supply, but at the invitation of the people consented to remain with them as pastor. Mr. Bryan was ordained and installed in the sacred office on the ninth of October, 1838. His ministry in Rye lasted until the thirty-first of October, 1860, — a period of twenty-two years.

At the commencement of this pastorate, the congregation was still a small and feeble one. The whole number of communicants was but twenty-two. There had been as yet no considerable increase in the population of the place. Rye was the same quiet and obscure village as for generations past. In 1836 it contained but thirty houses, with less than two hundred inhabitants. The church thus far had been sustained by strenuous exertions on the part of a very few persons, and by aid from the American Home Missionary Society. But during the term of years covered by Mr. Bryan's ministry, a great change came over the face both of the community and of the congregation. In the direction of Port Chester especially, the town increased largely in population and

activity. And the little church, once oppressed with debt, and relying almost solely upon the liberality of one noble Christian man, became not only self-supporting, but able to take part in the promotion of religion elsewhere.

On the fourteenth of September, 1847, this church lost its venerable elder and benefactor, Mr. Ebenezer Clark. He died at the age of seventy-eight years. The following notices of this excellent man have been kindly furnished for this work by the Rev. Richard W. Dickinson, D. D., who knew him well and long: —

'Mr. Clark retired from business to the still life of a country village, at a time when his pecuniary prospects were highly flattering. This was owing as much to those views of life in which he had schooled himself as to his desire of being relieved from constant application to a business which had already begun to wear upon a constitution naturally by no means strong. Nor did he ever regret his removal from the city to the country, or feel the loss of his original employment. He retired not to try the country, but to live in it; not to fit up a great place and then to leave it, if it could be sold at a fair advance; much less to lead a life of self-indulgence; but rather to answer the true ends of life — to secure to himself a home where the interests of his family might be promoted, his own health restored, and the residue of his days be passed in usefulness and peace. Aware of the danger of retiring from business without resources, he had his daily routine of out-door interests — consecrating each day to its Giver. Aware, too, of the greater danger to personal piety, arising from the neglect of church privileges, neither distance nor the state of the weather, nor inconvenience, nor slight indisposition, much less worldly company, could hinder him from availing himself of some religious service on the Lord's day; and as, on removing to Rye, he found the Sabbath generally neglected, and but few, comparatively, who took an interest in religious matters, he felt that it behooved him to be only the more circumspect and active in all matters pertaining to the moral and religious interests of the community.

'To confer the greatest good on all is to bring all within the reach of Sabbath and sanctuary privileges; and hence it was his primary aim to secure the regular ministrations of the Gospel both at Port Chester and at Rye. Having aided the church at the former place for some years, he at last fitted it up at an expense of not less than twenty-five hundred dollars, so that it became comparatively attractive, and the number of attendants increased; but the old church at Rye still remained, rendered more primitive in its aspect by contrast with the other, and the less inviting as it stood opposite the new and spacious mansion which Mr. Clark ultimately built for his own abode.

'In 1841, Mr. Clark took five thousand dollars out of his capital to build the church — leaving a balance of a thousand to be raised, if possible, from the congregation. Trifling sums, it may be thought, in comparison with the sums not unfrequently contributed at the present day to Christian enterprises; but at a time when few gave anything and the many had very little to give, they serve to reveal the spirit that animated the donor.

'But while he felt the incongruity of living in "a ceiled house" and suffering the Lord's house to lie waste, he felt also that the "laborer is worthy of his hire," and never omitted to pay even a supply; while from the first he paid one half of the minister's annual salary.

'Particular in all matters about his premises, he was also exact to the fraction in business. He trenched on no one's rights, and allowed no one to trench on his; never went to law but when clearly in the right, nor declined to accommodate, even at times to his own inconvenience. He was not to be swayed from his convictions of truth and duty, was outspoken in his sentiments, had no patience with idleness and vice, much less with dishonesty; and yet was he kind toward the erring, and ever forward to provide for the deserving poor. There was an honest candor about him, verging on bluntness, at times amusing as it was timely, as when he replied to a minister who expressed himself discouraged in view of the results of his labors: "I should think you would be; the place does not suit you, and you must see by this time that you are not suited to the place." Again, "Are you sure the cars will not be seen on the Sabbath?" said he to some one in charge of the subscription books of the recently incorporated New York & New Haven Railroad Company. "I cannot say," was the reply. "Will the company pledge itself not to desecrate the Lord's day?" "I do not know." "Then I will not subscribe for the stock."'

'Such was Ebenezer Clark, — a true man, with strong points of character, and kindly sentiments; while providing well for his own household, never forgetting the things which are Christ's; retaining to the last the integrity of his faith and the purity of his principles.'

Mr. Bryan was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Charles W. Baird, installed May 9th, 1861.

In 1869, the congregation bought land adjoining the church lot, with a view to the erection of a new church, Sunday-school building, and manse. Upon this tract, which comprises three acres, the Sunday-school building has been erected at the sole expense of William Mathews, Esq. The church is now in process of erection.

Presbyterian Church of Rye. — The corner-stone of the new building was laid with appropriate services on Tuesday, November 29th, 1870. The architect is Mr. R. M. Upjohn. This church is built of the stone of the country, with dressings of red and yellow stone. In plan, it has a nave, north and south aisles, and a transept.

The finish of the interior, for furniture, is of black walnut. The style of the architecture adopted for the building is thirteenth century Gothic. Connected with the church, and arranged for convenience of both buildings, and also for external architectural effect, Mr. William Mathews has erected a memorial chapel to his infant daughter, Bessie, which he gives to the church to be used for Sunday-school and other parochial purposes. It is upwards of fifty feet square, internal dimensions. The main room will accommodate two hundred persons. In connection with this there is a Bible and Infant class room, and a room for the Sunday-school library, besides lobbies, etc.

The tower and spire of the church stand at the west end of the south aisle. The tower is about twenty feet square, and has a turret at one angle which reaches with a staircase to the top of the tower. The tower and spire together are one hundred and fifty feet high, and are entirely built of stone. The tower has three stories; the lower one for entrances, the middle for bell-ringers, and the upper for the belfry. It has double bayed and richly traceried windows, two stories high, and these are filled with appropriate louvers. The spire is octagonal, and has four windows and a corona. There is a stone clere-story, which is supported upon arches which derive their support from richly carved stone capitals on stone columns.

The entrances to the church are by three doorways. The main door in the centre of the west front is double, and has deeply splayed recessed jambs, ornamented with columns and richly foliated capitals. The archway is richly moulded and otherwise ornamented. The tympanum of the arch is left of solid stone designed to be filled with sculpture. The doors to the tower leading to a tiled vestibule are designed to be correspondingly ornate.

The entrance to the Mathews' Memorial is by a richly moulded doorway. Around the arch is an inscription naming the donor, and the age and name of his child, with the text across the transom, 'Who is the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?' Above this in the tympanum of the arch is a bas-relief representing our Saviour blessing little children.

The roofs of the church are open, and their construction has been made in harmony with the surroundings. They rest upon stone corbels, and both interiors it is designed to bring out in color. The whole of the buildings have been designed to meet the conveniences required, and to form a proper, harmonizing, and imposing structure. (Architect's description.)

CHAPTER XL.

THE CHURCHES: METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH OF RYE.

METHODISM[1] was introduced into Westchester County in 1771 by Joseph Pilmoor, stationed at that time in New York. Desiring to extend his labors beyond the city, he visited New Rochelle, and preached at the house of Frederick Deveau, whose wife was converted through his instrumentality. Francis Asbury, afterwards Bishop Asbury, came to New York in November in the same year, and during that month organized a society at New Rochelle, and established appointments at various places, preaching at West Farms, Mamaroneck, Rye, and East Chester. The Revolutionary War compelled the preachers to leave New York, and the societies of this county remained without pastoral care until the return of peace.

In 1784 and the two following years, John Dickens and John Haggerty supplied the Methodist pulpit in New York, and doubtless like their predecessors extended their labors to the country. In 1787, all the societies north of the city were constituted as a separate charge, and called the 'New Rochelle Circuit,' of which S. K. Talbot was the preacher. At the close of the year, Mr. Talbot reported five hundred and twenty-five members in his charge.[2] This circuit was very large, embracing most probably Westchester and Putnam counties, and the societies became so numerous that it required for some years the services of four preachers. In 1803, the circuit, embracing at the time nine hundred and forty members, was divided, so that the southeastern portion of Westchester County formed the New Rochelle Circuit, with four hundred and seventy-three members. The preachers were W. Thatcher and A. Hunt. They were succeeded by J.

[1] I am indebted to the Rev. N. Mead, the present pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Rye, for the information here given. It has been obtained by diligent research for this work.

[2] His successors were P. Moriarty, A. Van Nostrand, L. Smith, W. Phœbus, M. Swain, J. Bush, T. Everard, F. Lovell, J. Bell, B. Fisher, D. Valleau, S. Hutchinson, D. Dennis, Thomas Woolsey, J. Perkins, Joseph Totten, J. Clark, T. Dewey, E. Kibby, D. Brown, J. Wilson, E. Chichester, J. Campbell, W. Picket, W. Thatcher, George Daugherty, H. Clark, and F. Ward.

Coleman and J. Sawyer in 1805, and by Joseph Crawford and H. Redstone in 1806.

Though there had been more or less of Methodist preaching in the town of Rye, and a large and growing society had been organized at White Plains, and possibly another at King Street, yet it does not appear that any permanent society was organized here until 1804 or 1805.[1] According to common report, Methodism was introduced into this part of Rye about the year 1802. The marriage of Esther, widow of John Griffen of Mamaroneck, to Ezekiel Halsted of Rye, in that year, was the occasion of this. About two years before this, Mrs. Griffen had been converted, and had joined the Methodist Episcopal Church. She immediately established family worship, conducting the services herself, and invited all in her employ, though most of them were irreligious men, to be present. Mr. Halsted was an active member of the Congregational Church in Greenwich, and after his marriage was accustomed to hold prayer-meetings with his wife, at various points, as North Street, Saw Pit, now Port Chester, Purchase, and King Street. Not long after his marriage, Mr. Halsted identified himself with the Methodists.

The Presbyterian Church of Rye, which had been rebuilt upon its present site in the year 1793, was at this period occupied but occasionally for public worship by ministers of that denomination. The use of this building was now obtained for the Methodists, who held religious services here more or less regularly for a number of years after this, and made various improvements at their own expense.[2]

In May, 1821, the number of members reported by the preachers of the New Rochelle Circuit was five hundred and eighty-eight. At that time, Upper and Lower New Rochelle, White Plains, Greenburgh, Tuckahoe, East Chester, West Chester, Mamaroneck, *Rye*, Port Chester, King Street, and Mile Square, were numbered as societies in this circuit. The entire salary for the support of two preachers and their families, including house rent and moving

[1] It must have been as early as 1805, from the testimony of Tamar Parker and James Purdy, who both joined the society in 1806. Mr. Underhill Halsted distinctly remembers that his father directed him to inform the families on his way to school that Mr. Redstone from England — 'not Red*field*, nor Red*wood*, but Red*stone*' — would preach that evening at the Rye school-house. Mr. Halsted thinks this was some time previous to Mr. Redstone's appointment to the circuit.

[2] The following preachers succeeded Mr. Redstone on the circuit: B. Hibbard, M. B. Bull, Z. Lyon, E. Canfield, L. Andrus, P. Peck, N. W. Thomas, H. Eames, E. Smith, J. Lyon, S. Arnold, N. Emery, C. Carpenter, D. Ostrander, M. Richardson, and S. Bushnell.

expenses, was eight hundred and twenty-five dollars, a little more than four hundred dollars for each family. The amount raised by Rye society to meet these expenses was sixty dollars.

The work within this circuit had now increased to such a degree, that three preachers were required to fill the appointments. These alternating with each other were able to preach at Rye once every other Sabbath.[1] In 1821, under the labors of E. Woolsey[2] and W. Jewett, there was a revival of religion in Rye, and many were converted and added to the church.

At a quarterly meeting conference held at the 'Rye Meeting House' October 2d, 1824, Stephen Remington was recommended for admission to the New York Annual Conference. The following persons were also recommended for admission: John Lefever, December 27th, 1823; S. U. Fisher, October 1st, 1825; William Gothard, April 8th, 1837; R. C. Putney, March 9th, 1844; and Robert Codling, April, 1845. All of these persons were received into the Conference, and became successful ministers of our Lord Jesus Christ.

At a quarterly meeting conference held at Rye, September 12th, 1829, a constitution was adopted by which the Conference formed itself into a Missionary, Bible, Tract, and Sunday-school Society.

In 1829, the Presbyterian congregation of Rye was reorganized, and now used the church jointly with the Methodists, who alone had occupied the house for sixteen or eighteen years.

In March, 1831, a 'four days' meeting' was held in Rye. Rev. J. N. Maffitt preached. 'Many were converted, of whom about thirty joined the Methodist Church.' 'Mr. Maffitt's labours induced the society to invite his assistance in a four days' meeting, appointed in the spring of the ensuing year.' Differences, how-

[1] From 1821 to 1832 the preachers were the following: E. Woolsey, W. Jewett, R. Seney, H. Bangs, R. Seaman, S. Martindale, L. Andrus, P. Rice, P. P. Sandford, J. Bowen, S. Cochran, E. Hibbard, D. Devinne, E. Washburne, and J. Ferris.

[2] The Rev. Elijah Woolsey was born July 26, 1771, in Marlborough, Ulster County, New York. He entered the itinerant ministry of the M. E. Church in 1794, and volunteered for Canada. Here he labored with diligence and success for two years, enduring privations and fatigues which he recounts with great simplicity in a little volume entitled, *The Supernumerary; or, Lights and Shadows of Itinerancy;* published in New York in 1845. Mr. Woolsey continued in the regular work of the ministry until the year 1829, when his name was placed on the 'supernumerary' list. He came in 1834 to Rye, where his widow still resides. Here 'he endeared himself to the people,' 'preaching when able, assisting in the various social means of grace, and uniting in affectionate Christian intercourse. His decease was preceded by a long and gradual decline, during which he exhibited Christian resignation and cheerfulness.' He was a man of sincere piety, great benevolence of character, and amenity of manners. He died January 24, 1850. (*Minutes of Conference*, 1850; and private information.)

ever, between the two congregations, who had for a while occupied the same house of worship, now led to a separation. From March, 1832, the Methodist Society ceased to meet in the church, and took immediate measures to build for themselves. In May, 1832, Philemon Halsted, Elisha Halsted, and David H. Mead, were appointed a committee to buy a lot and build a church. A lot, comprising half an acre, was bought, and a house of worship erected.

In 1832 the circuit was again divided, so as to embrace in this portion only Upper and Lower New Rochelle, East Chester, Mamaroneck, Rye, Port Chester, and King Street, with two preachers. These divisions, by increasing the amount of ministerial service in each society, involved enlarged contributions from the societies, without materially increasing the salaries. After the division in 1832, the number of members on the circuit was four hundred and twenty-one. In May, 1845, it was five hundred and ten.[1]

In the summer of 1838, under Osborn and Chamberlin, 'a revival commenced in Milton and extended to the centre of Rye.' About thirty were added to the church. In 1843, under Lefever and Andrews,[2] there was an extensive revival at King Street and Port Chester, in which ninety persons were added to the church at the former place. In 1844, under the same pastors, the revival extended to Rye, resulting in the addition of more than fifty persons to the church. In 1845, the circuit was again divided, by making King Street and Port Chester a separate charge, leaving the following societies in the old circuit, namely, New Rochelle, Mamaroneck, Rye, East Chester, and City Island, having three hundred and fifty members.[3] The number of members reported June,

[1] The preachers from 1833 to 1845 were B. Sellick, H. Husted, D. Ostrander, P. L. Hoyt, B. Daniels, P. R. Brown, T. Sparks, E. Osborn, P. Chamberlin, C. Ochampaugh, C. F. Pelton, S. U. Fisher, J. W. Lefever, E. Andrews, and W. Gothard.

[2] The Rev. Elisha Andrews is remembered with peculiar interest at Rye. His ministry here was very successful; and very soon after leaving this place, his earthly labors closed. He was drowned in the Hudson River, September 3d, 1844, when on his way to a camp-meeting at Sing Sing. The year before, his wife, a very estimable lady, died at Rye, in the parsonage on the post-road.

[3] The preachers up to 1852 were H. F. Pease, R. C. Putney, J. Hunt, C. B. Sing, D. Devinne, V. Buck, and W. F. Collins.

One of these, Jesse Hunt, was taken away in the midst of his usefulness by death, after a short illness, November 5th, 1848. He was born in Mamaroneck, July 22d, 1787; joined the itinerancy in 1811; and for thirty-seven years — until the division of the New York Conference in 1848 — labored with fidelity and success within the bounds of that body. In June, 1848, he was appointed to the New Rochelle Circuit, within the bounds of the New York East Conference, and brought his family to Rye, where they resided in the parsonage on the post-road below the village. Mr. Hunt

1852, was three hundred and seventy-six, at which time Rye was made an independent station, and W. F. Collins appointed pastor. There were a number of conversions under his pastorate, and he reported at the close of his term one hundred and four members.

The school-house in Milton had been used for prayer-meetings and occasional services for many years; but as objections had been raised against the use of the property for religious meetings, the Methodists in June, 1852, bought a lot and built a house of worship.

In 1853, a house and four acres of land, situated on the Turnpike, about half a mile from the church, were bought for a parsonage. In January, 1855, the trustees bought eight acres of land for a cemetery. To this nearly seven acres were added by subsequent purchases.

Rev. G. S. Gilbert succeeded to the pastorate in May, 1853. He was followed in May, 1855, by Rev. D. Osborn, 'whose labours were accompanied by a revival in which twenty were received on probation.'[1] George Taylor succeeded him in 1857; in 1859 B. Pillsbury was pastor, and in 1860[2] C. T. Mallory.

In November, 1855, the trustees sold the parsonage, which was too remote from the church; and in April, 1860, they bought land directly opposite the church, where they built a pleasant parsonage. In March 1864, the church was remodelled, at an expense of four thousand dollars.

The next pastors were T. D. Littlewood in 1862, W. Ross in 1864, and L. P. Perry in 1866. During Mr. Perry's term, the property adjoining the church, containing about two and a half acres, was bought for ten thousand dollars. A Sunday-school room

died at Rhinebeck, while on a visit to some friends in that place. He was a man of unfeigned piety, and an earnest, practical preacher. (*Minutes of the Annual Conferences of the M. E. Church, for the Year* 1846; pp. 335, 336.)

[1] Some of the happy effects of this revival were felt in the town of Harrison, where a small M. E. congregation existed. Rev. H. A. Mead, local elder, had begun to preach there as early as 1843, in a school-house and in a private dwelling. A monthly service was maintained in this place for some years; during the revival in question, the work increased; and shortly after, the church near the Purchase post-office was built. This church is connected with the village M. E. Church of White Plains. Mr. Mead continues in charge.

[2] On the twentieth of January, 1861, the Rev. Benjamin Griffen, a venerable minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church, died at Rye. He was born in Mamaroneck in 1792; united with the church at the age of nineteen, and soon after joined the New York Conference, of which he remained a member for nearly fifty years. 'Few men have performed more unrequited labor for the Church. He rendered his services with the strictest fidelity, and without any compensation.' (*Cyclopædia of Bibl. Theol. and Eccl. Literature:* New York, 1870.) Mr. Griffen spent his last days in the old 'Halsted House.' See page 271.

was built, a house on the premises was altered for a parsonage, and other improvements were made, at a cost of about five thousand dollars. To aid in meeting these expenses the former parsonage was sold. In January, 1869, a revival commenced, resulting in the addition of thirty to the church on probation. The present pastor, N. Mead, was appointed to the charge, April, 1869.

CHAPTER XLI.

THE FRIENDS.

'The long, low building,
Gray with the touches of a century,
A house of meditation and of prayer.
There meets the calm community of Friends.'
T. B. Read, *The New Pastoral.*

THE religious community known as Friends, or 'Quakers,' first appeared in England towards the middle of the seventeenth century, and had an early share in the colonization of our own country. Its founder and first preacher, George Fox, visited America, and announced his message, as he himself relates, to a 'willing people.' But the converts to his doctrines, especially if they attempted to spread them, met violent persecution almost everywhere.[1]

Flushing, on Long Island, was the scene of some of their earliest and most successful labors. The first settlers, though not Quakers, — for the society had not risen when that town was founded, in 1645, — entertained views of religion that differed from those held by the New England colonists generally, and that prepared them to receive the tenets that were soon to be proclaimed among them. Francis Doughty, their minister, became a convert to the system of the Friends, upon its introduction in 1657, and with him a number of the inhabitants of Flushing embraced it.[2] These persons, like many of the same persuasion in other Long Island towns, were the subjects of intolerant and cruel treatment at the hands of the Dutch.[3]

From Flushing, probably, the Society of Friends spread at a very early day to this place.[4] Rye was in regular communication with Long Island, almost from the first settlement of the town. Possibly, the individuals whom the Hartford government repri-

[1] *Religion in America,* by Rev. Robert Baird, D. D., Glasgow, 1844 : book vi., chap. xvi.

[2] *History of Long Island,* by Nathaniel S. Prime, D. D. New York, 1845 : p. 297.

[3] *History of Long Island,* by B. F. Thompson. New York, 1843 : vol. ii. pp. 285–297.

[4] It is not likely that they came from Connecticut. 'There are 4 or 5 Seven day men in o^r colony, and about so many more Quakers,' wrote Governor Leete, in 1680. (*Public Records of Connecticut,* vol. iii. p. 299.)

manded in 1669 as 'persons unsownd and heterodox in their judgments,' and 'sowing the seeds of error among the people' at Rye, may have been of this persuasion.[1] In 1706, there were 'some Quakers' in the town.[2] Mr. Muirson, missionary of the Gospel Propagation Society, tried to win them over to his faith, but failed. Mr. Bridge, his successor, reported '7 families of Quakers' in his parish in 1710, 'and 4 or 5 families inclining to them.'[3] One of these, probably, was the family of Captain John Clapp,[4] who came to Rye as early as 1705. In 1718 he was styled '*a reputed Quaker.*'

From Mr. Bridge's account, it seems that in the winter of 1710, an attempt was made by certain persons to 'form themselves into a society' in the neighborhood of his parish. He calls them 'Cates' followers,' or 'ranting Quakers.'[5] They were, doubtless, Keithians, members of a party that separated from the Friends of Pennsylvania in the year 1691, but retained many of their peculiarities. Mr. Bridge, in 1712, records his success in disputing with these people. They 'have never since held a public meeting in these parts.' Five years after, however, he writes, 'The Quakers . . . . come frequently *in great numbers* from Long Island and other places, to hold their meeting in the out parts of my parish. It is my constant care,' he adds, 'to watch' their 'motions, and to prevent their seducing any of my parishioners.'[6]

It was probably in the lower part of Mr. Bridge's parish that these gatherings occurred, — between Mamaroneck and New Rochelle.[7]

Harrison's Purchase, we have seen in a previous chapter, was settled chiefly by members of the Society of Friends. Samuel Haight, of Flushing, one of the five patentees of that tract in 1696, was a Friend. When, after a lapse of twenty years and more, a considerable emigration from Long Island to the Purchase

[1] See *ante*, p. 273.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the County of Westchester*, pp. 166, 175.

[3] *Ibid.* p. 196.

[4] See *ante*, p. 120.

[5] Bolton, *Hist. of the Prot. Episc. Church*, pp. 199, 202.

[6] *Ibid.* p. 205.

[7] The doctrines of the Friends seem to have met with much acceptance at Mamaroneck. The 'people dissenting from the Church' were 'chiefly Quakers' at that place in 1728. (Bolton, p. 249; where, by an error of punctuation, this statement appears to be made respecting Rye.) The Friends' meeting-house at Mamaroneck was built about the year 1739, on land bought from Sylvanus Palmer. It stood nearly opposite the Munro place, where there is still a Friends' burying-ground. About the year 1774 this meeting-house was removed to its present site. (Information from Mellis S. Tilton.)

took place, it consisted mainly, almost wholly, indeed, of families of Friends. 'We have a new settlement amongst us,' writes Mr. Jenney, July 1, 1723, 'in the woods, which began about the time of my predecessor's death, 1719. The inhabitants are very loose in their principals [principles] of religion, inclining rather to the Quakers than any other sect.'[1] This refers evidently[2] to the settlement in Harrison, or '*Rye Woods*,' as it was then frequently called.

The first *Meeting-house* built in Westchester County, existed as early as 1723. In that year, mention is made of 'the Quaker meeting-house in Westchester Village.'[3] A '*Monthly Meeting*'[4] was appointed by the Yearly Meeting of Friends at Flushing, Long Island, to be held at Westchester, N. Y., on the 'ninth day of Fourth Month' (April), 1725. Not long after, we hear of occasional meetings held at Mamaroneck and Rye, in private houses. Such a meeting was appointed, May 13, 1726, to be held every other month, at the house of James Mott. Another, in 1727, was at Robert Sneathing's, apparently in Rye.[5]

The PURCHASE MEETING-HOUSE was built in 1727.[6] It is said that the land upon which it stands was given by Anthony Field, who had removed hither two years before from Flushing, and who owned the adjoining farm.[7] The 'half-year's meeting'[8] of Friends in this region had been held of late at Mamaroneck. A proposition was made, on the eighth day of Twelfth Month (December)

[1] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 225.

[2] The date, 1719, shows that this 'new settlement' was not 'North Castle, a new settlement in the woods' in 1728 (p. 248), nor '*New* Castle, a new settlement in the woods' in 1729 (p. 255).

[3] 'Entering of Highways,' a book of records in the County Clerk's office, White Plains: p. 3.

[4] 'There are four grades of meetings for discipline' among Friends in the United States: 'first, preparative, which prepare discipline for the second or *monthly* meetings, in which the executive power is chiefly lodged; then the *quarterly meetings*, consisting of several monthly meetings, and exercising a supervisory care over them; and lastly the *yearly meetings*, which include the whole society within a prescribed district, possess exclusively the legislative power, and annually investigate the condition of their subordinate meetings.' *New American Cyclopædia*, vol. xiii. app. ('Article prepared under the authority of the Philadelphia Yearly Meeting.')

[5] Records of the Society of Friends in Harrison. For these and other extracts I am indebted to the courteous recorder of that society, Mellis S. Tilton.

[6] 'It was built *last year* by the Quakers, in the township of Rye, about seven miles from the church, towards North Castle.'—Rev. James Wetmore, February 20, 1728. (Bolton, p. 249.)

[7] Rye Records, vol. B. pp. 227, 230.

[8] In new settlements a 'half-year's meeting' sometimes takes the place of the 'quarterly meeting.'

1727, to remove that meeting to 'Rye Meeting House,' and discontinue the meeting at Robert Sneathing's. This was done.[1]

Great excitement seems to have attended the efforts of this religious body to spread their creed here. 'Where any of them settle,' writes Mr. Wetmore, rector of Rye in 1730, 'they spare no pains to infect their neighbourhood.' Where they meet with any encouragement, they hold meetings day after day. Celebrated preachers are procured from a distance; and 'a great fame' is spread before them, 'to invite many curiosities.' 'Our people of credit,' says he, 'will often go to their meetings, especially their great and general meetings,' which, he thinks, are very pernicious, and ought to be suppressed.[2] It is difficult to realize that these things were written concerning 'the calm community of Friends.' Such a stir reminds us of early Methodism, and of the fervid zeal of Makemie and the Tennents, among the Presbyterians. But it is well known that the religious movement which commenced with George Fox was characterized in its earlier phases by great enthusiasm, and by active exertions to propagate the principles of its members. The Friends who settled in Harrison appear to have been of this spirit. 'Swarms of them,' complains the troubled rector, 'make frequent visits hither.' They 'hold their yearly meetings, monthly, quarterly and weekly meetings, *yea, and sometimes daily.*' They scatter books all over the parish; and Mr. Wetmore, who is a ready writer, feels constrained to write and print two letters and three dialogues, in refutation of their arguments. These, he hopes, will be of great service to 'stop the growth of Quakerism in these parts.'[3]

In 1742, on the 'eleventh day of First Month' (January), the Monthly Meeting was transferred from Mamaroneck to the 'Meeting House in *Rye Woods.*' This meeting was now held at three places on the main: alternately, at Westchester, Mamaroneck, and Purchase; and subject to it, meetings had by this time been established at New Milford, the Oblong, and Nine Partners.[4] And in 1744, on the 'eighth day of Ninth Month' (September), a proposition was made to establish a Quarterly Meeting '*on this side*,' *i. e.*, on the main. Accordingly, the Yearly Meeting, still held at

[1] Friends' Records.

[2] Bolton, *History of the Prot. Episc. Church*, etc., p. 254.

[3] *Ibid.* pp. 256, 257. These publications were entitled, *Two Letters in Answer to the Quakers*, 1730; and *Dialogues in Answer to the Quakers*, 1732. *Ibid.* p. 287.

[4] A meeting was commenced at North Castle, in 1764, and was held once a fortnight, in winter. The North Castle meeting-house was built in 1798.

Flushing, on the thirteenth of Fourth Month (April), 1745, appointed a Quarterly Meeting to be held at the Purchase.[1]

Little remains to be said of the external history of this community. In 1745, on the eleventh day of Fifth Month, the Meeting appointed Thomas Franklin 'to get seats to be made rising in the upper part of the Meeting House at y^e^ Purchase.' In 1778, the Monthly Meeting was held in King Street, at the house of Thomas Clapp, on the thirteenth day of Eighth Month (August). The reason for this change was, 'the Meeting House at Purchase being made use of for a hospital for the sick of the Army.' September 10th, 'the Meeting House is not yet to be had.' October 8th, the meeting is held as formerly in the Purchase meeting-house.

On the eleventh of February, 1779, it is represented at the Monthly Meeting, that 'Several young men of the Society are now prisoners, and are likely to be brought under great suffering by refusing to bear arms and do other military service.' 'Those in authority are willing to release them, providing they can make it appear that they are members.' A committee is appointed to assure the authorities of their membership.

In 1782, a record is made concerning the sufferings of Friends connected with this Monthly Meeting, in consequence of their testimony against war. The total amount of loss on this account is stated to be fourteen hundred and forty-five pounds.

In 1784, on the fourteenth of Tenth Month (October), the following action was taken: 'The Meeting House in the Purchase having been used for a *Court of Judicature*, and being likely to be used for that purpose again, a committee is appointed to apply to those in authority to prevent such use.'

In 1797, the meeting-house was enlarged to its present size by an addition on the east side.

In 1827, a separation took place in the Society of Friends in this country. Two distinct bodies were formed, each claiming the name of Friends. The one party, however, became known as the Orthodox, and the other as Hicksites, from Elias Hicks, whose opinions they were understood to approve. In the town of Harrison, the separation occurred the next year, in 1828. The 'Orthodox' Friends erected a meeting-house near the old building, which is held by the other branch. The latter, I believe, is the larger body.

The Friends in Harrison, though not so numerous, probably, as they were a hundred years ago, are still a highly respectable and

[1] Records of the Society in Harrison.

influential community. They have the characteristic traits of this peaceable and quiet people: frugality, simplicity of manners, strictness of morals, care for their poor, and abhorrence of oppression in every form. Of the faithful and noble testimony which they bore against slavery, we have spoken in a former chapter. Many of their families who brought this faith with them into this region, a century and a half since, have removed from the Purchase, and their lands are now owned by persons of other religious persuasions. But a number remain; and the Old Meeting-house itself abides, substantial and unadorned, as when first reared amid the primeval forest, having witnessed the turmoil and suffering of war, as well as the silent worship of a religion of peace. Near by is the graveyard, where the founders of the community and several generations of their descendants rest.

CHAPTER XLII.

CHURCHES OF PORT CHESTER.

THE village of Saw Pit, during the first quarter of the present century, was noted for its religious destitution. There were no churches in the place, and few of the inhabitants resorted habitually either to Rye or to Greenwich for public worship. In the absence of the educating and restraining influences of religion, immorality was rife. Idleness and intemperance, with their attendant evils, prevailed, it is said, even more widely than in other obscure and neglected localities around.

During this period, some efforts were made by the neighboring churches to improve the condition of things in Saw Pit. Religious services were held from time to time in the district school-house, which stood on King Street, and was afterwards removed to the triangular plot of ground near the present railroad arch. These services were generally conducted by Baptist and Methodist ministers. The former came from the

King Street Baptist Church, about three miles from the village. This congregation existed some years before the Revolution. The church was constituted in 1773, with a membership of fifty-four. It was supplied for a period of about eleven years by ministers from Tarrytown, Danbury, Long Island, and New York. After this, the Rev. Nathaniel Finch was settled as pastor, and continued in office until the year 1826.[1] 'Elder Finch,' as he was called, preached occasionally in the school-house at Saw Pit, where some members of his congregation resided.

A Methodist Society existed in Saw Pit as early as 1821, when this place had become one of the 'appointments' of the New Rochelle Circuit. It was visited in turn, among the twelve localities embraced in the circuit, by two preachers, to whom a third was soon after added.

[1] Mr. Finch died August 29th, 1829, in the eighty-fifth year of his age. He was followed by Rev. E. S. Raymond, who became pastor of the King Street Baptist Church in 1826, and remained until 1836. Rev. Mr. Brewer succeeded him from 1836 to 1840. In 1841, Mr. Raymond resumed his former charge, and continued until 1862. Rev. O. C. Kirkham preached for some months; since then the congregation has had no settled pastor.

About the year 1824, services were also held here by the rector of the Episcopal congregation of Rye. The Vestry records show that 'on the third Sabbath afternoon' of the month, Rev. Mr. Thompson was accustomed at that time to officiate 'in the Schoolhouse at the Saw-Pitt.' This arrangement, however, does not appear to have continued long.

Other denominations, too, sometimes occupied the building. Universalist ministers not unfrequently visited the place, and zealously advocated their doctrines. Some of these were men of ability, and met, it is said, with considerable success in their endeavors to gain disciples.

The Presbyterian Church was the first house of worship built in what is now the village of Port Chester. Simultaneously with the effort to revive a Presbyterian organization at Rye, where a flourishing congregation of this order had once existed, and a church was yet standing, religious services were commenced at Saw Pit. On the seventh of December, 1828, Rev. George Stebbins, of New Rochelle, preached in both places. On the next Sunday, Rev. Noah C. Saxton commenced his labors at Rye and at Saw Pit, where he preached occasionally through the winter; and in the following spring, stated services were commenced, which were sustained from that time without interruption. Mr. Saxton was followed at Saw Pit by Mr. Lyman, and in May, 1829, by Rev. Williams H. Whittemore, who then began his ministry in Rye. Mr. Whittemore and three of his successors preached at Rye every Sabbath morning, and at Saw Pit every Sabbath afternoon. Some families belonging to the former congregation attended the afternoon service also, and by their efforts a Sunday-school was started, the first ever established here. Mr. Ebenezer Clark, to whose zeal and liberality the congregation at Rye owed so much, was equally active in the promotion of this enterprise. Though in frail health, he was a constant attendant upon the services, and furnished the greater part of the means required to sustain them.

Soon after Mr. Whittemore's arrival, the present Presbyterian Church at Port Chester was built. On Wednesday, May 26th, 1830, the frame of the edifice was raised upon a plot of ground which had been given for this purpose by Mr. George Adee. Only the basement of the church, however, was occupied at first. The upper part, though enclosed, remained unfinished for some time. The lower portion was dedicated as a place of worship on

the nineteenth of December, 1830, the Rev. Joel Mann, of Greenwich, preaching. The church was completed and dedicated in September, 1833; the sermon on the occasion was by Rev. Dr. Spencer of Brooklyn.[1]

The labors of Mr. Whittemore, and his little band of helpers, at Saw Pit, met with much encouragement. The winter of 1830, when the newly-formed congregation worshipped in the humble basement room of their unfinished church, is especially remembered, as a season of deep religious interest, both there and at Rye. A number of persons were led to begin a Christian life; some of whom united with this church, whilst others connected themselves with other religious bodies.

Mr. Whittemore was followed, at Rye and Saw Pit, by the Rev. David Remington, whose ministry commenced in April, 1832, and was terminated January 24th, 1834, by his sudden death. Rev. Thomas Payne succeeded him, from 1834 to 1836: and Rev. James R. Davenport was pastor from October 13th, 1836, to April, 1838. In July, 1838, the Rev. Edward D. Bryan commenced his labors at Rye. The service at Port Chester, which had hitherto been held in the afternoon, was now transferred to the morning, and an evening service was also maintained. Mr. Bryan resided for several years at Port Chester, as one or two of his predecessors had done, and no small part of his time was devoted to this field. 'In 1839, a season of spiritual refreshing was enjoyed, which resulted in the addition of ten persons to the Church.'

The congregations of Rye and Port Chester remained united for a period of twenty-three years. In 1852 it was found expedient to dissolve this connection, and organize a distinct church at Port Chester. This was done on the fourth of August in that year, by the Presbytery of Bedford. The new church was constituted with forty-one members, all of whom had, until then, been connected with the church of Rye; and with one elder, Mr. Ephraim Sours. Rev. Henry Benedict,[2] the first pastor, began his labors in

[1] Records of the Presbyterian Church of Rye. The building cost about two thousand one hundred dollars.

[2] Rev. Henry Benedict was born in Norwalk, Conn., January 22d, 1796. 'His early years were spent at Norwalk. After preparatory study at Phillips' Academy, Andover, Mass., he entered Yale College, and pursuing the usual course, graduated in 1822. The year following he taught school in Virginia. Although for some years in feeble health, he determined to devote himself to the ministry, and pursued a theological course under private instruction. He commenced the work of the ministry at Waterbury, Conn., in 1826. The following year he preached in Galway, where he received a cordial request from the Congregational Church in Norwalk, Conn., to

June, 1853, and was installed October 9th, 1854. He resigned his charge April 22d, 1863, and was succeeded by the Rev. Valentine A. Lewis, ordained and installed November 1st, 1864. His pastorate ended in October, 1867, and the Rev. Ezra F. Mundy, the present pastor, was installed March 9th, 1868.

The METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH of Port Chester was built about the year 1831. Its erection had been contemplated for several preceding years. The Quarterly Conference, held at 'Rye Meeting House,' September 15th, 1827, 'approved of the people at the Saw-pits using their exertions to build a church in said village;' and appointed David Miller, Daniel Haight, and Elisha Halsted 'a committee to make an estimate of the cost of said building.' It was at the same time recommended 'to the people of the circuit, to contribute to the erection of said church.' Similar resolutions were passed at the meeting of the Quarterly Conference in New Rochelle, January 3d, 1829, when David Miller, William Anderson, and Horace Smith were appointed a committee to estimate the cost of building.[1] The district school-house, however, continued to be used as a place of worship until the period mentioned, when a small church was erected upon the site of the present edifice. Here the ministers of the circuit preached at stated times until the year 1847, when the congregation became a separate charge. The handsome and spacious church in which it now worships was dedicated on Sunday, August 15th, 1858, Bishop Janes officiating. It was erected at a cost of about ten thousand dollars. In 1864 this church took the name of

become their pastor. Accepting the invitation, he was installed August 12th, 1828, and continued there four years, amid scenes of great religious interest and fruitfulness. Impaired health compelled him to resign his charge and visit the South. On his return he labored a short time in the church at Somers, in 1833. In October of that year he accepted a call from Lansingburgh, where he remained two years; after which, declining permanent engagements, he preached (1836, 1837) at Covington, Ky., where he founded a church; afterwards (1838) at Stillwater; then at the Broadway Tabernacle, New York; also, at the Bowery Church (1839). Leaving New York, he accepted a call from the Congregational Church, Westport, Conn. (1840), and remained there twelve years. Resigning this charge, he spent about a year in Europe (1852), and on his return was settled over the Presbyterian Church at Port Chester, where he continued until 1863, when advancing years induced him to lay aside his duties as pastor. He continued to reside at Port Chester, ministering occasionally there, and in neighboring churches, until his decease, which occurred at Saratoga Springs, July 18, 1868. The foregoing is a brief record of a useful life, held in grateful remembrance in many households where the fragrance of his loving words and deeds still lingers.' (*The Genealogy of the Benedicts in America.* By Henry Marvin Benedict. Albany, 1870: pp. 124, 125.)

[1] Communicated by Rev. N. Mead.

'Summerfield Church,' 'from regard for the memory of the sainted John Summerfield, two of whose surviving sisters are members of this charge, — Mrs. James Blackstock, and Miss Summerfield. Mrs. Blackstock gave liberally toward the payment of the cost of erection, and still continues the generous patron of the church.' Rev. Samuel H. Smith is the present pastor.[1]

The King Street Methodist Episcopal Church was built about the same time with that of Saw Pit, though it would appear that the project of its erection was entertained much earlier. At a Quarterly Conference held at New Rochelle, December 27th, 1823, E. Halsted, D. Kirby, and D. H. Mead were 'appointed a committee to consider the propriety of building a church at King Street.'[2] This locality had been one of the appointments of the New Rochelle Circuit for several years.

Protestant Episcopal Church. In December, 1836, the Rev. P. S. Chauncey commenced to officiate in this village. He had just before relinquished the charge of St. Thomas' Church, Mamaroneck, which he had held till then conjointly with that of Christ Church, Rye. 'Mr. Chauncey held services sometimes in the old school-house at the foot of King street hill; sometimes in the Methodist church: and finally in a building now known as Armonck Hall, then called Burger's Chapel.'[3]

The corner-stone of the present church was laid on the twenty-fifth of July, 1843, Bishop Onderdonk officiating. The land was given by the late William Adee. The building was completed at a cost of about six thousand dollars, and on Monday, July 15th, 1844, it was consecrated by Bishop Onderdonk, as 'St. Peter's Chapel in connection with Christ Church, Rye,' and under the pastoral charge of the rector of the parish. Mr. Chauncey continued to perform the duties of this part of his charge until January 30th, 1848, when he resigned the rectorship of Rye. During the ministry of the Rev. Edward C. Bull, who succeeded him, steps were taken to form a distinct parish at Port Chester, and on the twelfth of April, 1852, proceedings were instituted to incorporate St. Peter's Church. The Rev. Isaac Peck was called, May 24th, 1852, as rector; he accepted, and entered upon his duties in

[1] The following have been the ministers in charge since the year 1847: Rev. Messrs. W. B. Hoyt, J. A. Edmonds, Justus O. North, Wm. F. Smith, ——• Cotant, William Porteus, G. S. Gilbert, Otis Saxton, C. T. Mallory, W. F. Hatfield, C. B. Ford, S. H. Smith.

[2] Rev. N. Mead.

[3] Article in the *Eastern State Journal*, White Plains, March 2, 1860.

August. The following summer, the church was enlarged by an addition at the east end. Mr. Peck resigned, June 7th, 1858, and was followed by the Rev. George C. Pennell, rector from July 2d, 1858, till August, 1859. His successor, the Rev. Samuel Hollingsworth, entered upon his duties on the fifth of February, 1860. Dr. Hollingsworth is the present rector.

The rectory of St. Peter's Church was built in 1860; the ground, two acres and three eighths, was given by Read Peck, Esq.

The Baptist Church of Port Chester was dedicated on the second of February, 1865. Its pastors have been Rev. E. S. Raymond, Dr. Byrne, Lawson Stewart, Jonathan Bastow, and A. C. Ferguson.

Roman Catholic Church. In 1834 the few Roman Catholics of this locality congregated for the first time, for religious purposes, in a private house. This they continued to do for several years, visited occasionally by priests from Harlem, Westchester, and New Rochelle. About the year 1846, they purchased a small frame building on Main Street, which they used as a church, until 1852, when the Rev. E. J. O'Reilly became pastor of Port Chester and the adjoining missions — New Rochelle, Mamaroneck, and White Plains. After residing here a few months, he removed to New Rochelle, where he remained until 1853, retaining charge of the above places. In 1852 the old church, which had become too small, was sold, a new site was bought, and the present church — named 'Our Lady of Mercy' — was built upon it. Rev. E. J. O'Reilly was succeeded in 1853 by Rev. Thomas McLoughlin, who remained for one year. In 1854, Rev. Matthew Dowling, the present pastor, was appointed. Connected with this church there is a school for boys and one for girls, and a convent, occupied by the Sisters of Charity who have charge of the female department.[1]

[1] The Roman Catholic Cemetery on Ridge Street was purchased in 1863. It comprises ten acres of land.

CHAPTER XLIII.

LATER TOWN HISTORY: RYE.

IN the year 1788 the town of Rye was reduced to its present size, by an act of the legislature of New York, constituting three towns within the territory previously covered by this. The act provided —

'That all that part of the county of Westchester, bounded easterly by Mamaroneck-River, northerly by North-Castle, westerly by Bronx-River, and southerly by the town of Scarsdale, shall be, and hereby is erected into a town by the name of White-Plains.

'And that all that part of the said county of Westchester called and known by the name of Harrison's-Purchase, shall be, and hereby is erected into a town by the name of Harrison.

'And that all that part of the said county of Westchester, bounded southerly by the Sound, easterly by Connecticut, and westerly by the town of Harrison and Mamaroneck-River, including Captain's-Island, and all the islands in the Sound lying south of the said bounds, shall be, and hereby is erected into a town by the name of Rye.'[1]

For some years after the beginning of this century, there were persons still living in Rye who had taken an active part in the stirring events of the Revolution. A few of these were veteran soldiers of the Continental army. Others there were who had served more humbly but perhaps as usefully in the warfare carried on along the shores of the Sound and across its waters. Several too were at least suspected of having been engaged less creditably in the system of spoliation of which this Debatable Ground had been the scene during the war, as Skinners, or Cow Boys; an intimation not seldom heard in the purlieus of the taverns, and most likely to find expression amidst the excitement of an election, at the polls. Scarcely a family lived in the town of which some member had not been a witness and a sufferer in the perils and privations of those trying times.

[1] *Laws of the State of New York, comprising the Constitution, and the Acts of the Legislature, since the Revolution, from the First to the Fifteenth Session, inclusive.* In two volumes. New York: printed by Thomas Greenleaf, M,DCC,XC,II.: vol. ii. pp. 153, 154.

General Thomas Thomas was the most noted character among the survivors of the Revolutionary struggle here. His seat at 'Rye Woods,' now lay within the newly formed town of Harrison. But his influence in this community was considerable. He died in 1824, at the age of seventy-nine. Robert Kennedy was another person of mark in that day. He and General Thomas are said to have been inseparable friends and boon companions. He died at the age of seventy, in 1826.

In point of population, the town remained nearly stationary for a long series of years. At the close of the last century it contained nine hundred and eighty-six inhabitants, of whom one hundred and fifty-four were qualified electors, and one hundred and twenty-three were slaves.[1] In 1810, the population was twelve hundred and seventy-eight, of whom two hundred and twenty-five were subject to taxation. The taxable property of the town was then valued at $319,871. In 1820, the population had only increased to thirteen hundred and forty-two; and the taxable property was valued at $444,619. At that time — fifty years ago — there were in the town of Rye one hundred and seventy-seven persons employed in agriculture, eighty persons employed in manufactures, and thirty-five engaged in commerce. There were but eight 'foreigners not naturalized.' There were one hundred and twenty-six 'free blacks,' and fourteen slaves. The electors numbered two hundred and eighty-three. The town contained five thousand eight hundred and ninety-two acres of improved land, nine hundred and eighty-one cattle, two hundred and three horses, and three hundred and ninety-four sheep. There were six grist-mills and one saw-mill in Rye; and during the year mentioned, 12,939 yards of cloth were manufactured in the town.[2]

'*Rye* borders upon Mamaroneck, eastward,' observes Dr. Dwight, in 1811; 'and has a much handsomer surface, and a still better soil. On an elevation not far from its western limit, stands the mansion-house of the late Mr. Jay, father of the Hon. John Jay. It is now the property of Mr. Peter Jay, the youngest son of the original proprietor. . . . . There are two villages' in this town, 'one of which is customarily called Rye; consisting of perhaps twenty houses, built on the border of a small mill-stream.'[3]

[1] Dr. Jedidiah Morse's *American Gazetteer*, 2d edition, Boston, 1798.

[2] *A Gazetteer of the State of New York*, by H. G. Spafford, LL. D. Albany, 1813. The same: Albany, 1824.

[3] *Travels in New England and New York*, etc., vol. iii. pp. 487, 489. Peter Jay was the *fourth* — not the youngest — son.

In 1815 or 1816, Rye was visited by Joseph Bonaparte, ex-King of Spain, who was then in search of a suitable place for his future residence in America. It is said that for a time he entertained the purpose of making his home here. The account runs that 'Bonaparte on his arrival in this country was desirous of establishing himself somewhere on the western shore of Long Island Sound; and that the locations which pleased him most were "Theall's Hill"[1] [at Rye] and Hunter's Island. He was unable however to obtain the amount of land in one body, of sufficient area for a Park, in this vicinity; while Mr. Hunter refused the sum of one hundred thousand dollars, which the ex-king offered him.'[2]

The facilities of communication with the city by steamboat afforded between the years 1820 and 1830, opened a new era in the history of the place. A 'considerable improvement in its moral and material aspect' was now seen. 'A higher tone of manners and morals, more of the spirit of inquiry, more of movement and energy,' were observed. Property rose in value; and even as early as 1825, there were schemes for disposing of land, 'in building lots,' at high prices, which foreshadowed the vaster operations of like character in our own day. Rye became, about this time, the home of several intelligent and enterprising men, whose exertions and personal influence greatly promoted the progress of things in the town.

Thirty years ago, this was still a secluded village, separated by a journey of several hours from the stir and thrift of the city. 'The houses number about thirty-five or forty. The Boston mail passes through daily. A steamboat touches every week-day at Rye Port, to and from New York. The boats now running are the *Nimrod*, Capt. John Brooks, and the *Croton*, Capt. Charles Peck: Sloops (Milton and New York), the *John Jay*, Capt. Leander Bishop; (Port Chester and New York), the *Sarah Adee*, Capt. Bird, and the *New York*, Capt. Gilbert Lyon. Rye is much resorted to in summer by citizens of New York. There is no regular hotel, or place of entertainment. The post-office is kept by Daniel H. Mead, in the "Square House," — one of the oldest houses in the place — formerly owned by the Penfield family. It

[1] The property owned until lately by Mr. Abraham Theall, on the post-road, about a mile below the village of Rye.

[2] 'It was also mentioned,' adds my informant, who learned these facts from intelligent persons, 'that Bonaparte would have purchased the Island at Mr. Hunter's own price but for his fear that in the event of a foreign war his property would be exposed to the guns of a hostile fleet: hence he purchased the large tract of land at Bordentown which he improved and embellished as long as he continued to reside there.'

stands on the post-road in the village, at the commencement of the Purchase road, near the 26 mile stone. — The population of the town of Rye [in 1841] is about one thousand eight hundred and twenty.' [1]

A notable improvement in the schools of the place commenced with the period of progress to which we have referred. The district school at Rye had not changed greatly, either in appearance or in grade of instruction. But some attempt was made, between the years 1820 and 1830, to establish an academy of a superior order. In 1831, Mr. Samuel H. Berrian took charge of this institution. He had been associated in New York with the eminent grammarian Goold Brown, and came to Rye from the Livingston County High School, of which he was for a time Principal. Mr. Berrian taught first in a building on the post-road below the bridge, and afterwards in the 'Square House' in the village. In 1834 he opened a boarding-school in the house which he had just erected north of the village. This school, known as the Chrestomathic Institute, was maintained with great success for a number of years.

The construction of the New Haven Railroad was an event of moment for our town, which now came into rapid communication with the city. This road was commenced in March, 1847, and completed in January, 1849. Before this, for several years, stages had been running from Mamaroneck to Williams' Bridge, where passengers were enabled to take the cars of the Harlem Railroad. But this mode of travel was scarcely more expeditious or convenient than that by steamboat from Rye Port.

The population of our town, according to the census of 1870, is seven thousand one hundred and fifty-two.

Captain's Island, according to the act of the legislature of New York, March 7th, 1788, defining the limits of the towns in this State, belongs to the town of Rye. It lies, however, at some distance to the east of the boundary between New York and Connecticut — about a mile and a half from the mouth of Byram River — and but little over a mile south of Horseneck Point, in the town of Greenwich, Conn. There are properly speaking three small islands included under this name. The largest of them — Great, or West Captain's Island — contains sixteen acres and a half; the second, containing two acres and a half, and the third containing half an acre, are called Little Captain's Islands. A boundary dispute in miniature has occurred in relation to these insignificant islets. On the third of September, 1761, John Anderson presented a petition to the government of New York, praying that letters patent might be issued to him for three small islands in the East River, near Byram River, the largest of which is known by the name of the Great Captain's Island, etc. (Land Papers in Office of Secretary of State, N. Y., vol. xvi. p. 87.) A return of survey was made, September 24, 1762 (*Ibid.* p. 123), and on the twenty-sixth of January, 1763,

[1] Communicated.

letters patent were given to Anderson for these islands, lying '*within* our Province.' (Exemplification of Letters Patent to John Anderson, etc.) September 14, 1764, Anderson, then of Oyster Bay, L. I., was sued by Justice Bush and other inhabitants of Greenwich, Conn., for trespass in cutting timber on Great Captain's Island. (English MSS. in Office of Secretary of State, N. Y., vol. xcii. p. 145.) By appeal, the suit came before the Superior Court in Fairfield, February 19, 1765. The parties were at issue on the plea that the island was in the Province of New York, and belonged to it. The jury found 'that the island whereon such facts were done was not at the time of doing the facts complained of, nor is within the Province of New York;' and found a verdict of twenty shillings damages and costs for the plaintiffs. Pending this suit, Lieutenant-governor Colden, of New York, wrote to Governor Fitch, of Connecticut, February 12, 1765, proposing to submit the question of jurisdiction to his Majesty in his Privy Council. This he urged as a method 'attended with little or no expense,' and therefore 'better adapted to a Case in which the public Interest in either Colony is inconsiderable.' (Colden MSS., N. Y. Historical Society.) Governor Fitch replied, February 22, that he would lay the proposal before the General Assembly: adding, 'I must observe a proposal to this government to submit a matter of jurisdiction which it has exercised without controversy for more than one hundred years, founded as we at least suppose on good and legal authority, was unexpected, and that after New York and Connecticut had settled the lines of government with so great precision and certainty, and Connecticut had made such great condescentions therein, I hoped they would have had no occasion to enter into further contests on that head.'

A committee of the Connecticut Assembly, to whom Governor Colden's letter was referred, reported in May, 1765, 'that altho' it relates to the jurisdiction of the governments, yet the estate in controversy appears to be so inconsiderable as scarcely to require or deserve the attention of the governments, or in any degree adequate to the expence which would unavoidably attend the mode of determination proposed by Governor Colden; — and farther that the lines and boundaries between the two Colonies have been so effectually and finally settled by solemn agreements ratified and confirmed by his Majesties royal predecessors that there appears no reasonable foundation for farther controversy relative thereto.'

The ground on which New York at that time claimed that Connecticut was not entitled to these islands, is stated as follows: The south boundary of Connecticut was defined thus by the charter of 1662: 'On the south by the sea, and in longitude as the line of the Massachusetts Colony running from east to west, that is to say, from the said Narragansett Bay on the east to the south sea on the west part; with the islands thereunto adjoining.' According to these terms it was urged, Connecticut could justly claim no lands other than such as were comprehended between the south bounds of Massachusetts and a line *parallel* thereto, running west. Such a line would be coincident with the sea-side for several miles west of Point Judith, until the shore bends in a direction south of a line parallel with the boundary of Massachusetts. The land south of such a line, and particularly the islands in the Sound, would then be cut off from the territory of Connecticut.[1]

Such a plea may remind us of the earlier controversy between the colonies, relative to the 'line north-northwest from the mouth of Mamaroneck River.' We can well believe that the argument taxed the ingenuity of the lawyers to an extraordinary degree. One of these, in 1769, was the celebrated John Jay, who had but lately been admitted to the bar, and already showed great skill in managing intricate cases. He and Benjamin Kissam, with whom he had studied law, were engaged on opposite sides upon 'the cause about Captain's Island.' Mr. Kissam writes to him, November

[1] For the statements in this account relative to the action of the Connecticut government in the controversy, I am indebted to Charles J. Hoadly, Esq., Librarian of the Connecticut State Library, Hartford.

6, 1769, relative to this case, remarking playfully that he does not know 'where to find another into whose head the cause can be infused in the miraculous way of inspiration;' and without this, he adds, 'it would be rather too intricate for any one to manage' without fuller information than he had received. (*Life of John Jay*, etc., vol. i. p. 22.)

The State of New York, as we have seen, adhered to the claim set up by the provincial government to these islands. In 1805, an 'Exemplification' of the letters patent granted to John Anderson was obtained by parties interested, from the Secretary of State's Office. In 1815, Charles Field paid the arrears of quit rent on the patent for the islands. In 1827, they belonged to Jesse Park, junior, who sold them to Samuel Lyon of Greenwich. They are now owned by Captain Gilbert Lyon and his brothers, Port Chester.

In 1829, the United States obtained from Connecticut a cession of jurisdiction of a part of Great Captain's Island, for the site of a light-house; and a few years after a similar cession was obtained from New York. Three acres, on the eastern end of this island, where the light-house now stands, belong to the United States.

The Commissioners appointed in 1856 to ascertain the boundary between New York and Connecticut, 'learned that there is also a controversy respecting the jurisdiction over Captain's Island lying in the Sound, near the mouth of Byram River. 'As the extent of our powers in respect to this matter was quite uncertain, we entered,' they report, 'into no negotiation regarding it. We are, however, satisfied that some decision of the question is urgently required.' (Report, etc., Senate Document No. 165, State of New York: p. 32.)

CHAPTER XLIV.

LATER TOWN HISTORY: PORT CHESTER.

IN a former chapter we have related the humble beginnings of the little settlement near the mouth of Byram River, whose founders were pleased to give it the name of Saw Pit. Despite that name, the place lived and prospered; and in 1837, after the lapse of more than a hundred years, it took its present more elegant and not inappropriate title.[1]

This village has been of slow but steady growth since the close of the Revolution. For the first thirty or forty years of the present century, it possessed a considerable trade, as the port or market of a fine agricultural region. A large amount of produce was brought to this harbor from the farms of the interior, for transportation to the city. The situation of the place was very favorable for this trade. Roads comparatively direct and well graded led to Saw Pit from the hills of King Street, North Castle, and the Purchase. An 'easy descent' was accounted no small advantage by the farmers of those regions, with their heavily freighted wagons.

About the year 1798, Mr. Jared Peck, a man of uncommon energy and tact, came to Saw Pit and entered into business here. To his enterprise, undoubtedly, more than to any other cause, the place owed its development from that period. Mr. Peck engaged in the 'carrying trade,' buying up the grain and other crops brought in from the surrounding country, packing the pork and beef, and transporting these products to the New York market. The inducements which he offered for the sale of these commodities drew an increasing traffic to this point. Four market sloops, running weekly to New York, besides other vessels occasionally employed, were engaged for many years in this trade.

The manufacturing interests of the place were also largely promoted by Mr. Peck's efforts. He became the proprietor of several mills on the Byram River, a stream which affords excellent facilities for this branch of industry. His grist-mill stood near the

[1] Improvements now contemplated, at the mouth of Byram River, will greatly increase the commercial facilities of this place, and make it still more worthy of the name of *the port* of Westchester County.

present railroad bridge, crossing the river. As early as 1820 he was interested in a cotton factory at Glenville, three miles above Port Chester.[1]

Near the beginning of this century, Dr. Clark Sanford had established at Glenville his mill for grinding drugs. It continued in operation until 1830, when it was removed to Saw Pit, thence to New York, and finally to Stamford.[2]

In 1811, Dr. Timothy Dwight described this place as a 'decent village,' containing fifty or sixty houses, 'extended along Byram river.' 'The southern and principal part of this village,' he states, 'is called the Saw-pit; the northern is called Byram.' The latter name, doubtless, he understood to include the houses near and below Byram Bridge.

An episode of 'the last war' with England is remembered with interest by old inhabitants of Port Chester. Three British vessels lay anchored, on one occasion, off Manussing Island, in the middle of the Sound, stationed there for the purpose of intercepting market boats carrying provisions to New York. Several of these boats were taken and set on fire within sight of this place. One of them was a boat belonging to Mamaroneck. The vessels lay becalmed for about a week, during which time they destroyed a great quantity of produce. Meanwhile a number of gunboats, each carrying a swivel in the bow, were sent up from New York to capture the ships. Some men at work on Manussing Island witnessed the approach of these boats, and saw them exchange shot with the enemy. But before they could reach them, a stiff breeze sprung up, which favored the British vessels, and frustrated the design of the gunboats. The ships sailed up the Sound and were seen no more.

The following handbill, which was posted in the village and neighborhood, may have been occasioned by the fears which these vessels produced: —

'NOTICE

Is given that the Inhabitance are requested to meet on Tuesday next at 4 O'clock P. M. at the house of Willet Moseman to consult on some measures to pursue in defence of the village of Sawpitt and its vicinity in case of invasion.

'SAWPITT 16 *June* 1813.'

[1] This establishment was destroyed by fire some years after, and its site is now occupied by a mill for rolling sheet lead.

[2] On the site of Dr. Sanford's mill, there is now a large screw-bolt manufactory, employing several hundred hands, and owned by Messrs. Russell, Birdsell, and Ward. Another large factory, situated above Glenville, is that of Josiah Wilcox, for the manufacture of wagon fixtures.

No injury was experienced by our inhabitants at this time. But the alarm was general. 'The people were afraid to leave their cattle near the shore,' lest the enemy should land and commit depredations.

'Saw Pit' was honored in 1824 by the presence of General La Fayette, on his way from New York to New England. After dining at Penfield's Hotel, Rye, the illustrious guest proceeded to Mr. Moseman's (Port Chester), where 'he was received by a large party of gentlemen on horseback. Two masts were erected here, one on each side of the road, bearing a red and white pendant, and displaying the name of La Fayette over the road. The whole was handsomely decorated with evergreens. Having shaken hands with hundreds, young and old, and received their greetings, he passed on to Byram Bridge, the line of the State of New York, where the General was met by a Connecticut troop of horse. Here a salute was fired by the inhabitants, and the General with the united escort and a large cavalcade of ladies and gentlemen proceeded on to Putnam's Hill at Greenwich or Horseneck.'[1] It is said that on this occasion La Fayette was introduced to the widow of General Thomas Thomas, the soldier of the Revolution, of whom frequent mention has been made in our pages, and who had died a few weeks before this. 'The interview took place on [Friday] the 20th August, 1824,' and the circumstance 'is commemorated by an inscription on a pane of glass, which may still be seen in the side light of the main entrance' to the hotel.[2] Mrs. Thomas died a few months after this occurrence, aged seventy-nine years.

For some time previous to the year 1820, a steamboat ran from New Haven to Byram Cove, on the eastern side of Byram Point. Here passengers westward bound were obliged to land, and perform the remaining part of their journey overland. From Byram Cove stages ran to New York, passing through Saw Pit. This interruption of travel was caused by the fact that the government of the State of New York had given to certain persons the exclusive right to navigate the waters of that State by steam. The act to this effect was passed originally, in 1798, in favor of Robert R. Livingston; the privilege conferred was afterwards extended to Robert Fulton; and for some years after the death of the latter, in 1815, the restriction, which was manifestly unconstitutional, appears to have been continued in behalf of other parties. The inconvenience to which travellers were put, by the necessity of leaving the

[1] *Niles's Register*, August 28, 1824.

[2] *The Port Chester Monitor*, James E. Beers, editor, October 21, 1865.

steamboat for the stage, on reaching the State line, is vividly remembered by some of our old inhabitants. The steamboat *United States* is thought to have been the first that performed the trip between New Haven and Byram Cove.

About the year 1825, the 'steamboat landing,' at 'Rye Port,' between Saw Pit and Rye, became the place of embarkation. The *John Marshall* and the *Governor Wolcot* were the first that touched at this point. These were followed by the *Citizen*, and others. The mail stages between New York and Boston continued to run daily through Saw Pit until 1830 or 1835. But the steamboats were now superseding the slower conveyances by land, as well as the 'packet sloops' on the Sound. The 'steamboat landing' was for a number of years the principal resort of our inhabitants, for communication with the city.

In 1837 Saw Pit became Port Chester. The change was not effected without difficulty. No slight opposition was made to the measure by some, whose attachment to the preposterous name affords an amusing illustration of the power of habit and association.

A change was also going on in the character of the place. The business of exporting the produce of the surrounding country was diminishing, for various reasons. Much of this trade had been diverted into other channels; and with the growth of the village, a considerable part of the produce was needed for consumption here. It is well known too that the products of this region have decreased in quantity of late. The land in the lower part of Westchester County, owing to the proximity of the city, has proved valuable for other than agricultural uses; and as the West has become the great source of supply for the metropolis, our farmers, unable to compete with it, have raised much less for exportation than formerly. Port Chester, instead of sending away provisions to the New York market, now imports largely from the city, for the support of its thriving population.

By an act of the legislature passed on the fourteenth of May, 1868, Port Chester was incorporated as a village, with specified limits, within the town of Rye.[1]

[1] The limits of the village are thus stated in the charter: 'All that part of the town of Rye, in the county of Westchester, contained in the following limits, to wit: Beginning at a rock at the easterly end of Byram bridge, on the boundary line between the States of Connecticut and New York; thence, by said boundary line north 24 degrees and 15 minutes west, 16 chains and 97 links to the boundary line between lands of E. L. Smith and the Misses Merritt; thence by said boundary line and across the land of said Merritts and by the boundary between Mrs. Bush and

According to the returns of the census of 1870, the village now contains three thousand seven hundred and ninety-seven inhabitants, more than one half of the entire population of the town. For the last few years its growth has been rapid, and there are good reasons for believing that it is destined to be an important manufacturing and commercial town.

Port Chester possesses five churches,[1] of which an account has been given elsewhere. The First National Bank of Port Chester was organized May 9, 1864. The Port Chester Savings' Bank was organized June 17, 1865. The principal manufacturing establishment of the place is the Eagle Foundry, owned by Messrs. Abendroth Brothers. A weekly newspaper is now published in Port Chester.[2]

said Merritts, south 75 and ¾ degrees west, 42 chains and 45 links, to the easterly line of King street; thence by the same course, across said King street and lands of the estate of William Bush, Thomas Lyon, the estate of Nehemiah Brown, Alva Slater and E. B. Wesley, 48 chains and 45 links to the boundary line between lands of E. B. Wesley and Jethro Daggett; thence by said boundary line and across lands of William Mathews, south 10 degrees and 10 minutes west, 20 chains and 95 links to the Purchase road; thence, by the same course, across said Purchase road and through lands of Abraham Merritt, Thomas Lyon, Hannah M. Barton, the estate of Philip Duffy, deceased, Elizabeth Merritt, Samuel S. Bent, William P. Abendroth, and Charles T. Goodwin, 56 chains and 70 links to the centre of the road leading from the Boston post road to Ridge street; thence through the centre of the said first mentioned road south 63 and ¾ degrees east, 12 chains and 78 links, south 56 and a half degrees east, 3 chains and 24 links, and south 50 and ¾ degrees east, 5 chains and 62 links, to the westerly line of the Boston post road; thence across said road and through lands of Ezrahiah Wetmore and the estate of Gilbert Bush, deceased, south 61 degrees east, 39 chains and 20 links to the Grace church street road; thence by the same course, across said road and through lands of the estate of William T. Provost, deceased, 24 chains and 75 links to the northerly end of Horse rock at high water mark; thence by the same course through the harbor or bay to the Connecticut State line; thence northerly by said State line and Byram river to the place of beginning; shall be hereafter known and distinguished as the village of Port Chester.' (Charter, etc., Albany, 1868, pp. 3, 4.)

[1] A sixth place of worship, a German Lutheran Church, is situated in *East* Port Chester, within the limits of the town of Greenwich, Conn. It was built in 1867.

[2] The *Port Chester Banner* was the first newspaper published in this town. Its first number appeared on Saturday, October 4, 1844. The editor was Evans Hollis. The *Banner* was a small paper, in politics 'purely Democratic.' It was continued for a little more than one year; the last number being issued at the close of the State election in the fall of 1845.

The next newspaper was the *Nineteenth Century*, edited and published by T. J. Sutherland. The first number was issued on the second of April, 1846. It was discontinued in the fall of the same year.

The Experiment was the title of another paper started by Abraham G. Levy, August 12, 1848. 'Mr. Levy was not a practical printer, but by his industry, aptness and perseverance, he succeeded in getting up his miniature sheet [13×18 inches] without professional aid, setting the type and working the hand-press himself.' *The Experiment* was a success, and appeared in an enlarged form April 21, 1849. It ceased,

however, with the issue of August 25th, in that year; the proprietor having purchased the *Hudson River Chronicle*, and removed to Sing Sing.

The *Port Chester Monitor* appeared for the first time on the thirteenth of February, 1864, Messrs. James E. Beers and George W. Smith, editors. This paper was conducted with considerable ability, and continued to appear until August, 1867.

The *Port Chester Journal*, B. F. Ashley, editor and proprietor, commenced its career November 27th, 1868. It has now entered with fair prospects of success, upon its third year.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE WAR FOR THE UNION.

IT is a pleasant part of our work to put on record the action of this town in the great emergency of our nation's experience, at the outbreak and during the progress of the war for the Union. What we have to say on this subject will not differ materially from that which might be said of many another town and village within our borders. But it may well afford satisfaction to the inhabitants of this place, that Rye, though among the least of the thousands that sent forth their sons to the defence of the country, performed her part nobly, and has her share of the honor that belongs to the loyal and patriotic people of our land.[1]

On the twelfth day of April, 1861, the first gun was fired upon Fort Sumter. President Lincoln's call for seventy-five thousand men, issued immediately after this event, met everywhere with a prompt and hearty response. In Rye, public notice was given forthwith of a meeting to be held on the twenty-ninth of April, to take action in the matter. But meanwhile, and without waiting for any formalities, the business of obtaining recruits was commenced. Thomas Beal, senior, a resident of Port Chester, deserves honorable mention here for his untiring exertions, from the earliest moment, to procure volunteers.[2]

The meeting called was duly held, in the public square in Port Chester, April 29th. Mr. Benjamin Loder presided, and made an

[1] The facts upon which this account is based have been obtained from documents in the possession of the Secretary and the Treasurer of the Union Defence Committee; and from a carefully prepared article which appeared in the *Port Chester Monitor*, February 13th, 1864, for the use of which I am indebted to James E. Beers, Esq., counsellor-at-law, New York, who was at that time editor of the *Monitor*.

[2] Thomas Beal was born in Baltimore, and served in the war of 1812 as a volunteer under a Captain Norman. He fought at Deep Creek, just before the landing of the British at North Point, Md. Afterwards he entered the regular service about the year 1815, and continued in the Fourth Regiment of Artillery, where he was orderly sergeant and quartermaster sergeant, for a period of fourteen years. He was discharged honorably by request of his captain, Joseph L. Gardner, and came to New York, where he lived till 1857. Since then he has lived in Port Chester. Mr. Beal had *five sons* in the war. Two of them — George and Peter — were living at Newark, and entered companies from that place. The other three belonged here.

address. Mr. James H. Titus offered resolutions expressive of the general feeling in view of the situation of affairs. And a committee was appointed, to represent the citizens in the collection of funds and the transaction of such other business in aid of the movements of the government as the public interests might demand. This committee was named, 'The Union Defence Committee of the Town of Rye.' Ten gentlemen were chosen to form this committee, with power to increase the number to fifteen. They were, Messrs.

James H. Titus,	George P. Titus,
Samuel K. Satterlee,	Augustus Van Amringe,
William P. Abendroth,	Noah Tompkins,
John E. Marshall,	William B. Halsted, and
Augustus Wiggin,	Josiah H. Macy.

To these, Messrs. Edward J. Swords, Ephraim Sours, George L. Cornell, William H. Smith, and Augustus M. Halsted were added. Subsequently, Messrs. Macy and Smith, being residents of Harrison, resigned, and Mr. William L. Bush and Mr. John W. Lounsbury were appointed in their place. The Supervisor of the town, Mr. James D. Halsted, united in action with the committee during the war.

The committee met on the next day, and were organized, appointing James H. Titus chairman, George P. Titus secretary, and John E. Marshall treasurer. The following sub-committees were also appointed: —

On Finances: John E. Marshall, Edw. J. Swords, Wm. B. Halsted.

Military Committee: S. K. Satterlee, G. P. Titus, A. Wiggin, A. Van Amringe, W. L. Bush, A. M. Halsted.

Relief Committee: W. P. Abendroth, E. Sours, G. L. Cornell, J. H. Titus, N. Tompkins, J. W. Lounsbury.

At this meeting the following resolution was adopted: —

'*Resolved*, That this committee be authorized to collect funds, to obtain and fit out volunteers, to relieve their families, and also to transact such other business in aid of the movements of the government as the public interests may require.'

This resolution formed the groundwork of the subsequent action of the committee. The fund, which had been commenced on the previous night, was increased by voluntary subscriptions to about five thousand dollars; and from this fund relief was granted during the year to all the families who enlisted from the town of Rye. The number of families thus relieved was at one time *fifty*. The

number of volunteers who were sent to the field, *prior to any enrolment by State authority*, was upwards of two hundred; of which number one hundred and twenty-six were persons from the town of Rye.

In the early part of the year 1862, and when the voluntary fund thus raised in the town was nearly expended, the legislature of the State of New York passed an act authorizing the county to issue bonds to the amount of fifty thousand dollars, for the relief of the families of volunteers. By this act, the Town Auditors were alone authorized to apply the moneys thus provided; and the Defence Committee, supposing their labors were ended, prepared to dissolve.

But on the thirteenth day of August, 1862, Governor Morgan issued a call for additional volunteers, under a new proclamation of the President; and the several towns were directed to fill up the quotas which were assigned to them. In this aspect of affairs, the Defence Committee, in the spirit of their first resolution, determined to continue their efforts, and proceeded to make arrangements for the filling up of the quota of this town, which was one hundred and thirty-eight men.

They then resolved to procure the signatures of a majority of the tax-paying inhabitants of Rye, authorizing the Supervisor to borrow upon the credit of the town a sum sufficient for the payment of a bounty of *one hundred dollars* to each recruit, and also for the expenses of recruiting. The sum of $14,500 was thus raised by the committee, and by an act passed in 1863 this measure was declared legal by the State. Town bonds, payable in one, two, three, four, and five years, were issued in pursuance of the provisions of this act; and in this manner provision was made for the payment of the sum required. Bonds for this amount were accordingly issued. The bonds for the first year were for two thousand five hundred dollars. Those for subsequent years were for three thousand dollars each.

The action of the Union Defence Committee did not stop here. Shortly, an order came for drafting men into the service for the war. The quota of this town was fixed at eighty men. The committee determined to furnish a bounty of three hundred dollars to every man drafted who should go to the war, and also to pay three hundred dollars for each substitute provided. A special town meeting was called, and authority was given to the Supervisor to borrow upon the credit of the town the farther sum of $12,600, and to apply the money thus raised to the payment of

bounty money, and for substitutes. The result of the draft was that forty-two residents of this town were held to perform military service. All of these, but one, were provided with substitutes at three hundred dollars each.

Soon after came the call for three hundred thousand additional troops. The quota of the town of Rye under this last call was forty-five. Again the Defence Committee took the lead, and by their prompt action the funds were raised for filling up this last quota. The sum of $14,625 was borrowed from various individuals, upon the credit of the town. With this fund the committee procured the necessary number of recruits, paying for each recruit the sum of three hundred and twenty-five dollars, which included the expense of recruiting. This quota was filled and completed on the thirtieth of December, 1863; and the statement was made, by authority of the Provost Marshal, that the town of Rye was the first town in this Congressional district that filled its quota under the call for three hundred thousand men.

Rye furnished from the opening of the Rebellion about three hundred and fifty men for the war. Of these, one hundred and twenty-six were residents of the town, and were volunteers under the first call; one hundred and thirty-eight enlisted under Governor Morgan's proclamation of August 13th, 1862: one man was drafted, forty-one substitutes were provided, and forty-five recruits obtained. The town responded promptly to every call made for troops either by National or by State government, and provided bountifully for the families of those that went forth to sustain the honor of the country. It is supposed that in addition to the numbers already stated, as many as fifty persons from this town enlisted in Connecticut regiments.

The work of the Union Defence Committee was admirably done. Their consultations were always marked with harmony and zealous coöperation. Their names should be held in grateful remembrance.

Having thus recounted the measures taken in our town to raise troops for the war, we proceed to give the honorable list of the men who went from Rye to the great conflict.

On the thirtieth of April, 1861, Captain Nelson B. Bartram left the town with the first company of volunteers. They were duly mustered into the service of the United States in the city of New York, as Company B, Seventeenth Regiment New York Volun-

teers. In this company forty-four men, who were residents of this town, served. Their names were —

Nelson B. Bartram,	John Beal,	John Murty,
John Vickers,	Darius Butterfield,	Thomas McKay,
Charles Hilbert,	James Cunningham,	Lafayette Merritt,
James Fox,	Frederick Cross,	Henri Siltz,
Thomas Beal, jun.,	Thomas Donahue,	James Worden,
Louis Neelling,	Benjamin Glawson,	Anthony Warner,
Augustus Dittman,	Conrad Graff,	William Whelpley,
Wm. A. Crothers,	Charles Gedney,	Theodore Miller,
Seaman V. Morrell,	Joseph Hibberd,	Ulric Ersigner,
Joseph H. Beal,	William Hennessy,	John Fay,
Robert Magee,	Augustus Adams,	Daniel Mahon,
William Baker,	Jacob Lender,	Richard Aylman,
Andrew Burns,	William H. Lee,	Timothy Bulkley,
Edward Bowen,	William Lee,	Jerry O'Donald.[1]
George W. Bulkley,	John Murphy,	

This company did good service, and bore a very high character throughout the war.

Immediately after its departure, Captain Charles H. Palmer commenced to recruit at his expense a company in this town, which when filled was mustered into the service, in the city of New York, as Company C, Forty-ninth Regiment New York Volunteers. Twenty of its members were residents of Rye, namely : —

Charles H. Palmer,	George Fish,	John Fisher,
Jacob Adams,	Wm. H. Hutchins,	Augustus Smith,
Gabriel Burger,	Joseph Sterry,	Leander Burns,
William H. Tyler,	John Mead,	J. Wright,
Benjamin Sherwood,	Levi Strayer,	Frederick C. Lord,
Bloomer Churchill,	Gilbert Miller,	I. Wight.
Calvin Churchill,	William Howard,	

When Captain Palmer's company was nearly filled, Captain

[1] Captain Bartram was promoted, December 5, 1861, to be major.

Charles Hilbert, second lieutenant, was promoted, December 20, to be captain.

John Vickers, first lieutenant, was transferred, August 3, to Company F.

Thomas Beal, jr., sergeant till October 4; first sergeant till August 30, 1862; was wounded in the battle of Bull Run, and promoted to be second lieutenant from that date.

Robert Magee, corporal till October 4; sergeant till March 1, 1863; was first sergeant from that date.

Joseph Beal, corporal. John Beal, corporal from August 10, 1862; was sergeant from March 1, 1863.

Silas Downs was corporal from October 4, 1861.

James Fox was promoted to be sergeant-major, October 4, 1862.

Benj. Glawson was corporal from March 1, 1863.

Thomas Beal [1] commenced to recruit a company in Rye, sending the men, as fast as they were recruited, to Staten Island, where they were mustered into the service. Thirty-eight of these men were residents of the town, namely: —

Theodore P. Butler,	Jeremiah Sheridan,	Edwin A. Rogers,
William H. Voorhies,	John H. Hopper,	William Keys,
Lucius Miller,	Edw. L. Lee,	Floyd Pugsley,
Adam Iler,	James Shaw,	Hiram Brundage,
John Williams,	Milton Wing,	John Rockett,
James Anderson,	Emmet M. Hoyt,	William Cleveland,
—— Allemer,	Lawrence Fitzgerald,	Albert Burrows,
—— Knotz,	George W. Floyd,	Joseph Hines,
George H. Summers,	John P. Whitehouse,	Richard Pierson,
Silas Weed,	William Walton,	John C. Faulkner,
John Ready,	Martin Davidson,	James Moines,
Stephen S. Sutton,	John C. O'Neal,	John M'Cormick.
Samuel C. Ingersoll,	Patrick McArdle,	

In addition to the recruits thus sent out, there were enlisted and mustered into the service, in different regiments of New York and Brooklyn, twenty-three men, residents of this town, whose names were as follows: —

E. D. Richman,	Charles Riddle,	—— Dodge,
Henry S. Green,	Edward Stiles,	Geo. E. Waring, jr.,
David E. Daniels,	Edw. W. Thompson,	Joseph Crank,
David C. Banks,	John Townley,	Joseph Bird,
Joseph Harrison,	James Thomson,	Martin Stahalen,
Philip Angel,	Ambr. W. Thomson,	James Waring,
George Hillman,	John Kaufman,	John Waring.
John Hillman,	John Fisher,	

When the call came in 1862 for three hundred thousand men, Captain Palmer resigned his position, and returned to Port Chester to organize another company. It was mustered into the service at Yonkers, on the second of September, 1862, as the Thirteenth New York Volunteers. It was transferred to the Sixth New York Heavy Artillery, on the second of October, 1862. The following members of this company were residents of the town of Rye: —

Charles H. Palmer, captain, wounded at Mechanicsville, May 3, 1864, while in command of the first battalion, promoted in Feb-

[1] Captain Beal, after faithful and untiring efforts to recruit men for the army, was seriously injured and disabled for life while on duty with his company at a point between Williamsport and the Virginia shore, where he had been stationed to convey across the Potomac the Union refugees from that State. He is now residing in the village of Port Chester.

ruary, 1865, to be major, and shortly after commissioned as colonel, but not mustered in; Charles M'Intosh, first sergeant, wounded May 30, 1864; James Reynolds, sergeant; Cephas Peck, sergeant; John L. Little, sergeant; Gabriel S. Burger, sergeant; George E. Rood, corporal; Henry C. Fox, corporal; Frank Kelly; John Hughes, wounded June 19, 1864; Jeremiah L. Butterfield, killed May 30, 1864; Michael Madigan; Joseph H. Morrell; John A. Billington; John S. St. John, corporal, taken prisoner May 27, 1864; Jacob Lender; William Reynolds; Wm. H. Mosier; Jacob Scheile; Wm. H. Romer, sen.; William Ashby; John Riley; Wm. H. Romer, jr.; Peter Butterfield; Walter L. Rood; Owen Duffy, wounded July 12, 1864; Edward Billington; Thomas T. Halpin; William H. Hees; William E. Briggs; William S. Morse; Henry Lowrey, died April 5, 1863; T. W. Johnson, wounded May 30, 1864; Thos. M. Smith; Luke Gaffney; John S. Merritt; B. McDonnell; Geo. W. P. Bouton; T. M. Swift; Thos. Golden, wounded June 18, 1864; Thomas Conlin; Thos. Colvin; John Townsend; Sidney Smith; James Taylor; John Miller; S. Waterbury.

Thirty-seven volunteers from this town enlisted and were enrolled in other regiments of New York and Brooklyn, subsequent to July 2, 1862. They were —

Edward Ireland; Clinton Summers; Joseph Smith; Michael M'Grath; Henry Loomis; Jeremiah Summers; Robert Bennett; Andrew Johns; Lewis Sours; William Davison; Augustus Johnson; Walter Andrews; Andrew St. John; William H. Miles; Henry C. Brown; Philemon A. Paris; Francis H. Minnett; Edward C. Tompkins;[1] Thos. Murphy; Wm. E. Thorne; John S. Kraft; Alexander S. Merritt; John Glynn; John H. Haines, Thirteenth Cavalry; William Ennis; Peter Devil; David Nichol;

[1] Edward C. Tompkins enlisted, August 14, 1862, in Company D, Fifth N. Y. Volunteers, — known as Colonel Duryea's Zouaves, — and remained with them until their discharge in May, 1863, when he was transferred to the One Hundred and Forty-sixth N. Y. Volunteers, Company I. He received an appointment on duty with the Chief Engineer at Headquarters, Army of the Potomac, in June, 1864, and remained in that position until discharged at the close of the war, June 15, 1865. He participated in the battles of

Antietam, September 16 to 18, 1862.
Shepardstown, September 20, 1862.
Fredericksburg, December 16, 1862.
Chancellorsville, May 1 to 6, 1863.
Gettysburg, July 1 to 3, 1863.
Rappahannock, November 6, 1863.
Mine Run, November 26 to 30, 1863.
Wilderness, May 5 to 7, 1864.
Spottsylvania, May 8 to 20, 1864.
North Anna, May 23 to 26, 1864.
Tolopotomie Creek, May 31, 1864.
Cold Harbor, June 2 to 11, 1864.
Siege of Petersburg, June 16, to April 3, 1865.
Mine Explosion, July 30, 1864.
Yellow Tavern, August 18 to 22, 1864.

Edward Parker, Thirteenth Cavalry; Albert Fuller; Andrew M'Laurie; William Brown; Edward Murtagh; William H. Prior; James Power; Julius Schmidt; G. W. Howard; Thos. Smith.

The following persons from this town were mustered into Connecticut regiments: —

Thomas Miley,	Frank Middlebrook,	Abram Van Houghten,
Michael Cain,	John Rearden,	Edwin Field,
Peter O'Brien,	Martin Fitzpatrick,	Chas. M'Gill,
Charles Down,	—— Washburn,	Stephen P. Wesley,
Francis Elliott,	—— Washburn,	Charles Lowden.

Others, who are not named in the foregoing lists, went into the army from this place, and did good service, at different periods in the course of the war. Among them were Mr. (now Rev.) Peter A. Jay, Dr. John C. Jay, jr., Mr. Arthur W. Parsons, and Mr. Kiliaen Van Rensselaer.

CHAPTER XLVI.

CONCLUSION.

'THE land is very good, and *near the City;* so, consequently, will in time be *a great settlement.*'

Thus wrote Colonel Heathcote, in the year 1705, concerning Rye Parish, and the adjacent parts. 'The City' of New York at that time contained about seven hundred and fifty dwellings, and had a population of four thousand five hundred white, and seven hundred and fifty black inhabitants. The shrewd London merchant might well prognosticate the growth of a place so favorably situated for a seat of commerce; but we must credit him with more than common foresight, to have anticipated the time when the lower part of Westchester County would come to 'be a great settlement.'

After the lapse of a century and a half, however, the prophecy began to have a visible fulfilment. Within twenty years past, our suburban towns have become easy of access from the city, and have gained largely in wealth and strength from its overflowing population. Rye, among the rest, has become the home of many families who have been drawn hither by the beauty and healthfulness of the spot, and by its proximity to New York. There can be no doubt that, with other localities of like situation, it is destined to increase in size, and to improve in many of the features that constitute a desirable country home.

It is perhaps worthy of consideration, by what a slow and painful process of improvement the manifold advantages possessed by the residents of such a locality as this, have been reached. The security of life, the convenience of travel, the means of education, the civil rights, the blessings of religion, enjoyed in our quiet, rural neighborhoods, as in crowded cities, have been gained by degrees and with effort, through successive generations. It may lead us to prize these advantages more highly, and strive more diligently to preserve and perpetuate them, that we have seen how, step by step, under a providential guidance, they have been attained.

Our history may be said to illustrate, within these narrow limits, the progress of our land and people during these two centuries, in all the conditions of physical and moral well-being. In the presence of evils and abuses distinctive of our own times, we are tempted to say, 'What is the cause that the former days were better than these?' We have seen under what abuses the community once suffered, almost without hope of remedy, where we are now living. There is perhaps no respect in which, if we 'enquire wisely concerning this,' we shall not find abundant proof that the course of society has been onward. There is less of misrule, of corruption, of unrighteous exaction,[1] of vice, of poverty, of ignorance, than there was, in any of 'the former days,' which often appear, in a dim retrospect, so much better than these.

We may learn from these records of the past, to appreciate the blessings of peace. We dwell in a region which again and again has been the scene of turmoil and conflict; first, during the primitive days of peril from the Indian; next, during the dispute between the two colonies relative to the possession of this border territory; then, during the agitations that long preceded the Revolution, dividing neighborhoods and families with bitter feuds; and lastly, during the Revolution itself. And if throughout this

[1] A relic of old colonial times has just come under our notice. It is a warrant to the collector of the town of Mamaroneck, for gathering a tax upon slaves. A similar warrant was doubtless issued for this town. The document reads as follows:—

'Westchester County ss. To the Collector of Mamaroneck Greeting.

'You are hereby required forthwith to Gather and Collect from every Owner or possessor of any slave or slaves within your Town one shilling a head for every slave male or female from fourteen to fifty years of Age & the same to pay unto ye Treasurer of ye County aboves[d] on or before ye twenty fifth day of March next Ensuing retaining in your hands ninepence on ye pound for Collecting & paying thereof and at the same time to deliver unto ye Said Treasurer upon your oath or affirmation a true & exact List of ye Name & Names of ye Owners or Possessors of ye Said slaves and in case such Owner or Possessor of such slave or slaves shall deny neglect or refuse to pay the Said Tax on Demand Then to Distrain him her or them by his her or their Goods & Chattels and ye Distress to keep at the Charge of the Owner four days & not being redeemed in that time to make sale thereof at publick Vendue to ye highest bidder & out of the produce to deduct the Said Tax & Charges & return the Over-plus (if any be) immediately to ye Owner and ye County Treasurer is to pay the Said Tax unto ye Treasurer of this Colony for ye time being on or before ye first day of May next retaining thereout Six pence on ye pound for his trouble in receiving & paying the Same Given under our hands & seals at Westchester this twenty sixth day of October in ye twelfth Year of his Majesty's Reign Annoq Dom: 1738

John Thomas
John Ward (?)
Thos Hadden'

period, the interests of morality and religion suffered, the churches remaining feeble and sickly, and the community torpid, it was undoubtedly owing in no small degree to the protracted disturbance of public and social feeling; to the want of that continued and well-established tranquillity which is so essential to progress.

FAMILIES OF RYE.

I. THE EARLY SETTLERS — 1660 TO 1700 — AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

ALLING. The name of Samuell Alling appears among the signatures attached to the declaration of the settlers of Hasting, July 26, 1662. In the following year, April 28, 1663, 'Samuel Allen,' according to Bolton, was one of the planters to whom the four purchasers conveyed the island and mainland. The name does not occur again in our records. (The date 1672 is doubtless a misprint for 1662, in Bolton's history, p. 23, the list of proprietors being the same as on page 20.) Several persons of this name are mentioned by Savage, as among the first settlers of New England. Alling probably left our settlement at an early day.

APPLEBE. The name of 'Thomas Aplebe' occurs in the same connection with that of Alling, and like it disappears from our records. He or another of the same name was one of the early settlers of Woodbury, Conn. Savage says, 'perhaps died 1690, at Woodbury.'

BANKS. I. John[1] was one of the first settlers of Windsor, Conn. Soon after 1643 he removed to Fairfield, of which town he was representative for several years. In 1670, 'John Banks, senior, of Fairfield, Conn.' (Rye Records) owned a home-lot at Rye, on the Plains. He was a leading man in the colony, active in public affairs, and frequently appointed on important business. It is not likely that he actually resided here at any time. He was deputy to the General Court from *Fairfield* as late as October 11, 1683. In 1680 he is mentioned in our records as 'John Banks of Fairfield.' In that year he sold two parcels of land at Rye, one of forty-six acres on Manussing Island, the other a house-lot on the main, 'with the frame of a house on it.' He appears as representative for Rye nearly every year from 1670 to 1680 — sometimes for Fairfield and Rye in the same year. Died January, 1685. Children: John, Samuel, Obadiah, Benjamin, Susanna Sturges; Hannah, wife of Daniel Burr; Mary Taylor.

II. 1. John,[2] oldest son, settled in Greenwich, near the border of Rye. About 1681 he is said, with Thomas Lyon, to have received 'a large grant of land, — four hundred acres, — 'situated in the angle made by the Armonck or Byram river and the Westchester path.' (History of Greenwich, Conn., by D. M. Mead, p. 68.) The houses of John Banks and Thomas Lyon are still standing, on the eastern bank

of Byram River, near the Boston Road. They were probably half-brothers. The family tradition places their coming to this spot forty years earlier, in 1640; but this is a palpable mistake. John married Abigail, and died July 14, 1699. (Savage.) He had a son John, and perhaps another, Joseph.

2. Samuel,[2] second son, was a resident of Rye, and one of the eighteen proprietors of Peningo Neck. He lived, 1682–1701, near Gunn Brook Plain, or below Port Chester. Died about 1719. In that year 'his nephews' John Banks and John Lyon petitioned the governor of New York, for letters of administration upon his estate. (N. Y. Col. MSS., lxi. 156.) Samuel, mentioned later, was perhaps his son.

Of the younger brothers, Obadiah and Benjamin, we know nothing.

III. 1. John,[3] son of John,[2] owned land in 1718 on Byram River. He was probably of Greenwich.

2. Joseph,[3] perhaps his brother, was 'of Greenwich' in 1707, when he bought one of the Byram Ridge lots. He died in or before 1713.

3. Samuel,[3] perhaps the son of Samuel,[2] in 1737 purchased from John Lyon three hundred acres of land in the Middle Patent, or North Castle. The families of this name in that region may be descended from him.

After this date, the name seldom occurs in our records.

Barton. Roger was a considerable landed proprietor under the Dutch in New Netherland as early as 1642. It was probably his son who gave the name of Barton's Neck to a part of Rye. In 1667 he signs a deed as witness, and in 1701 he is mentioned as former owner of a tract of land in Rye. In 1688, Roger, senior, aged sixty, made a deposition relative to a riot in the town of Westchester. (Co. Rec., A, 269.) A third Roger was sheriff of the county in 1706 and 1734.

John is mentioned in 1671; Thomas in 1743. Phœbe, about the beginning of this century, lived opposite the house now Mr. Webb's.

Basset. John, in 1673, lived in Mamaroneck, where, when the Dutch recovered New Netherland, he was appointed one of the Schepens. Before 1689 he had removed to Rye, his name then occurring in a list of soldiers 'for y^e^ Expedition to Albany' against the French and Indians. Unlike some of his comrades, he lived to return, and was here in 1691.

Arnold, in 1685, bought a house-lot at Rye, and was here in 1709.

Michael is first mentioned in 1713. He owned a farm on the lower part of Hog-pen Ridge. Portions of this he sold, 1732–1742, to the Purdys, Merritts, and Kniffens. The name then disappears.

Bloomer. This name does not occur among the lists of the early settlers of New England. In 1663, one John Scott of Setauket, L. I., had a dispute with 'Bloomer,' perhaps of the same place, which the commissioners from Hartford were desired to issue. (Col. Rec. of Conn., vol. i. p. 423.)

I. Robert, in 1672, bought land in Rye from Philip Galpin. He became a proprietor of Peningo Neck, sharing in 'one equal 18th part' with Thomas Merrit, who came to Rye about the same time. Their names are invariably associated in several divisions of land. From 1681 to 1684, he was engaged in lawsuits with some of his fellow townsmen, which appear to have been decided against him. Hence, perhaps, he removed in 1684 to 'Mr. Ridgbell's greate Neck,' and before 1703 to New Rochelle. In the latter year he and his wife Rachel conveyed to their son Robert, of Rye, their 'great lotment of land which was our old house lot in the field,' with some other lands, and 'one quarter of an eighteenth part or share of lands undivided below the marked trees.'

II. 1. Robert,[2] son of the preceding, was active in town affairs, being constable in 1697, townsman from 1701 to 1711, trustee till 1718, and again in 1729. In 1697 he was appointed one of a committee to lay out the lands of the proprietors, and highways through them. In 1698 the proprietors gave him the island known as Bloomer's; and in 1701 the *town* gave him land 'on the lower end of Hog-pen ridge, being near the lower falls of Blind brook.' In 1707 the town granted him the stream at the falls of Blind Brook, to erect a mill or mills, within ten years. *Bloomer's mill*, now Park's mill, was long known by this name. Robert was living in 1738, when he gave to his grandson Robert, 'son of Robert, junior, late of Rye,' the house where his father had lived, with forty-five acres of land. The tract thus conveyed lay between Ridge Street and Blind Brook and branch, south of the road to the mill, which formerly ran a little to the north of the present road.

2. John,[2] of Mamaroneck, apparently a younger brother, was living in 1714.

III. Robert,[3] junior, died about 1738.

IV. Robert,[4] son of Robert,[3] junior, mentioned above, was living in 1764. 'Captain Robert Bloomer' in 1775 commanded a company of the South Battalion, Westchester County Militia, raised in Mamaroneck and Rye.

Of the same generation were John, Joseph, and Gilbert. John, mentioned 1735–1740, owned land north of Bloomer's mill. He was justice of the peace in 1746. Joseph, mentioned 1735–1748. Gilbert was justice of the peace in 1746, and town clerk in 1751. He lived on Rye Neck, in the house now occupied by C. Keeler, and owned the mill now known as 'Davenport's' near the outlet of Stony or Beaver Swamp Brook. The mill stood anciently by the dam, on the north side of the road. Daniel is mentioned 1764.

Boid or Boyd. 1. John bought a home-lot and land in Rye in 1678, when he also appears as witness. He became a co-proprietor with John Merrit, senior. 'John Boyd's meadow' lay opposite the old mill, on Blind Brook Creek. He died about 1709.

2. John, 'son and heir' of the above, is so called in 1709. He married a daughter of Peter Disbrow, senior, of whose estate he obtained a considerable part. He sold in 1718 to John Disbrow his 'orchard in Rye,' of three acres, 'with the house on it.' The spot is still known to old inhabitants as 'Boyd's orchard,' directly south of Mr. Greacen's residence. Traces of a stone house were to be found here half a century ago. The upper part of Mr. Greacen's farm belonged to Boyd, who in 1720 sold fifty acres to John Disbrow. He was living in 1736. Ebenezer is mentioned in 1789, when persons are appointed by the town to collect 'the debts due from' him 'and others to the township of Rye.'

Bowers, Rev. Nathanael, 1697 to 1700. See page 281.

Brondige. First written Brondig; of late years, written Brundage. I. John Brondig,[1] mentioned 1662–1697, perhaps the son of John Brundish, of Wethersfield, Conn., was one of the original settlers of Rye. He was the first town clerk, and deputy to the General Court in 1677 and 1681. In the division of his estate, in 1698, his four sons, John, Joseph, Daniel, and Joshua, are named.

II. 1. John,[2] mentioned 1687–1719, was called senior in 1707, and was the father of John and Jonathan, who sold their rights as proprietors to Justus Bush in 1726.

2. Joseph,[2] mentioned 1697–1726, married Mary ——, and was probably the father of Joseph, junior, so called in 1719.

3. Daniel,[2] mentioned 1697–1723, was one of the first settlers of the White Plains, where he was living in 1721. A survey of the Plains in that year shows his house east of the highway, now Broadway, about opposite the end of Railroad Avenue.

4. Joshua,[2] mentioned 1697–1719, lived at Rye 'in the town,' and was one of the proprietors in 1718. He had a son Joshua and probably other children.

III. 1, 2. John[3] and Jonathan,[3] sons of John,[2] appear to have removed from Rye, after selling their proprietary rights in 1726.

3. Joseph,[3] called junior in 1729, probably son of Joseph,[2] lived in 1728 about where his son Gilbert afterward lived — near the end of the lane north of Mr. Josiah Purdy's house. Joseph and Gilbert were, probably, his sons.

4. Joshua,[3] styled in 1727 'eldest son of the late Joshua Brundage,' lived on the southeast corner of Ridge Street and the road to Park's mill. He married Hannah ——, December 29, 1723. Children, Hannah, Joshua, Deborah.

IV. 1. Joseph,[4] called junior in 1743, probably son of Joseph,[3] was then 'of Harrison.'

2. Gilbert,[4] probably another son, is mentioned in 1747. He married Anna, daughter of Rev. James Wetmore; and had a son Gilbert, father of Mrs. Josiah Buckley. Gilbert lived in the house mentioned above. He had deceased in 1815.

3. Hannah,[4] daughter of Joshua,[3] born May 2, 1733, married first, —— Stoakham; secondly, Joseph Merrit. She had several children.

4. Joshua,[4] son of Joshua,[3] born August 10, 1736, was called junior in 1767, when he was living on Hog-pen Ridge.

5. Deborah,[4] daughter of Joshua,[3] born April 24, 1741. (Fam. Rec.)

Of this generation were several others, whose parentage we do not learn. Ezekiel, of Rye, aged twenty-seven, was one of the soldiers enlisted in Westchester County in 1758, for the French War. Ebenezer was living near the Ridge Road and King Street in 1757. Abraham, in 1728 had bought land adjoining Mr. Wetmore's farm, or near the present railroad station, which he owned in 1759. Hachaliah was living in 1771. Absalom married a daughter of Hachaliah Brown.

Brown. 'This family was a younger branch of the Browns of Beechworth, in the County of Kent, England, founded by Sir Anthony Brown, who was created a Knight of the Bath, at the coronation of Richard II. He left issue two sons, Sir Richard his heir, and Sir Stephen, Lord Mayor of London in 1439. Sir Robert Brown, living *temp.* Henry V. was father of Sir Thomas Browne, treasurer of the household to Henry VI., and Sheriff of Kent, in 1444 and 1460. Thomas Brown, Esq., of Rye, County of Sussex, England, emigrated to Concord, Mass., circ. 1632, from whence he removed to Cambridge, where he lived some time. His sons were Thomas of Rye, who died 1694, and Hachaliah of Rye.' (Bolton, History of Westchester County, vol. ii. pp. 506, 507.)

In the following account of Thomas and Hachaliah Brown and their descendants, I have adhered to the genealogy given by Mr. Bolton. He prepared it with the help of persons who are not now living, and who were better qualified to give information on the subject than any whom I have been able to consult. It is however obviously defective in several particulars; some of which will be noticed in the proper place.

I. 1. Thomas Brown was 'aged about 22' in 1660. (New Haven Rec., vol. ii. p. 382.) In 1658 he owned land in Stamford; and in 1669 — then living in Rye — he sold his house and land in Stamford. (Hist. Stamford, p. 51.) In 1666, he with Hachaliah owned land in Rye. In 1671 he was one of the townsmen, and in 1676 was appointed with Thomas Lyon to choose a house or place to be fortified for the safety of the town. He was a proprietor in 1683, and had shares in all the lands divided in his time. His 'lotment' of seven acres 'on the banks of Byram river and Gunn brook cove,' now Lyon's Point, he sold in 1687 to John Merrit, after whom it was long known as Merrit's Point. Thomas appears to have left no children. He died, Mr. Bolton says, in 1694.

2. Hachaliah Brown, if younger than Thomas, was not more than twenty-four or twenty-five years of age when he came to this place in 1664 or 1665. December 8, 1666, he bought from John Coe 'purchaser of the town of Rye, being one of the four men that bought this

place in the colony of Connecticut in New England,' 'one half of a twelfth lot' or share in lands divided and undivided. The other half-lot had probably been purchased by his brother Thomas, whose land is mentioned in this deed, as bounding the lot conveyed on the southwest. This was the first of the purchases on the lower part of Peningo Neck, by which these brothers and their descendants ultimately acquired the greater portion of what became known more commonly as 'Brown's' Neck. 'Thomas and Hachaliah Brown's meadow,' near this, seems to have remained undivided for many years. 'Hackalyah Browne' was 'propownded for freeman' of Connecticut, at the court of election in Hartford, May 12, 1670. (Conn. Rec., vol. ii. p. 128.) He was undoubtedly a proprietor, though his name is not in the list of 1683. He had shares in all the divisions of land. He had land 'lying in the Field near the Great Bridge,' which was probably a part of the property until lately owned by his descendants, where the homestead — now Mr. C. V. Anderson's — stands. He was the leading man of the community in several important transactions, as the purchase of 'Lame Will's' tract in 1680. I conjecture that he died about 1720. His children were Deliverance, Peter, Thomas, Hachaliah, Benjamin, Anne, and Mary.

II. 1. Deliverance,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] called by Thomas, 'my loving brother,' in 1683, appears in the pedigree as the youngest son. More probably he was the *eldest.* In 1678, Philip Galpin, senior, sold to Deliverance Brown all his lands in Rye, and probably his proprietary rights also. He appears among the proprietors in 1683, and a descendant of his nearly a century after refers to him as 'one of the ancient proprietors of Peningo neck purchase.' He was a large landowner in Rye. He was constable in 1696, justice in 1698, and supervisor in 1701. When the inhabitants applied in 1697 to be taken back into Connecticut, Thomas Merrit and Deliverance Brown were sent to represent their wishes, and the latter was admitted as deputy to the next General Court. He had left Rye in 1724 (Records) and died in or before 1727. His children were, Deliverance, junior, Samuel, Zebediah, Jonathan.

2. Hachaliah,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] was called major in 1752, and was justice in 1755. In 1756, says Mr. Bolton, he commanded the Westchester levies under General Lord Amherst. An account of the destruction of his house by fire has been given, page 207. He married Ann Kniffen, and died in 1784. Children: Hachaliah[3] (of Somers), Christopher[3] (of Somers), David,[3] Nathan,[3] Thomas,[3] Josiah,[3] Isaac,[3] Gilbert[3] (two of this name died young).

3. Peter,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] is first mentioned in 1680. In 1695 he bought from Isaac and Mary Denham two acres of land by Blind Brook, where his house and mill stood in 1731. The house is that now owned by the Misses Mead. He married a daughter of Peter

Disbrow, of whose legacy he acknowledges the receipt in 1694. His wife Martha survived him. He died about 1731 (will dated February 11). Children: Ebenezer,[3] Peter,[3] Nehemiah,[3] Caleb,[3] Elizabeth,[3] Sarah,[3] Rebecca,[3] Hannah.[3]

4. Thomas,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] was chosen a town officer in 1711–1723. He died, probably without issue, in 1762.

5. Benjamin,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] in 1730 had land on the Westchester Path — recently Allen Carpenter's farm — and lived, probably, in the stone house, part of which is still standing. Benjamin Brown's old house by 'y^e^ road that leads into Harrison's Purchase' is referred to in 1732. The same property is described as 'Justice [Hachaliah] Brown's land' in 1760. Benjamin was justice, 1728–1746. He died in 1755. Children: Benjamin,[3] junior, Joseph,[3] Daniel,[3] William.[3]

6. Anne Brown,[2] daughter of Hachaliah,[1] married Daniel Purdy.

7. Mary Brown,[2] daughter of Hachaliah,[1] married Absalom Brondige.

III. 1. Deliverance,[3] junior, was assessor in 1716.

2. Samuel,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] not mentioned by Mr. Bolton, is so called in our Town Records in 1714; and in 1716 Deliverance conveys to his son Samuel, 'of Brushie Ridge,' one third of all his undivided lands 'within y^e^ purchase of y^e^ Eighteen of Rye (commonly so called).' This transfer he confirmed in 1724. Between 1714 and 1724 Samuel bought a number of allotments on 'Brush ridge,' below Hog pen Ridge, and here had a farm of one hundred acres or more. He was made justice in 1735, and died in or before 1750. 'Samuel Brown eldest son of Samuel Brown deceased,' appears on our records in 1767.

3. Zebediah,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] was perhaps the father of Zebediah Brown,[4] mentioned 1760–1771, who lived where Mr. Benjamin Loder lately lived.

4. Jonathan,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] was one of the most prominent members of this family. He was chosen townsman in 1728, and supervisor in 1762 and 1763, and was justice in 1735. Jonathan lived, it is supposed, in a house directly north of the late Hachaliah Brown's house — now Mr. C. V. Anderson's. He, with his cousin, Hachaliah, owned the greater part of 'the town neck,' or Brown's Point, as it came to be styled. In 1768 Jonathan was residing in Hartford, Conn. He died June 15th of that year, and was buried in the old cemetery near Milton. He had a son Jonathan.

5. Hachaliah,[3] of Somers, eldest son of Hachaliah,[2] was born August 20, 1727, and died May 22, 1813. He married Abby Halsted, born 1734, died August, 1807. Children: Nathan,[4] born August 24, 1756, died March, 1814. Stephen,[4] born July 10, 1766. Lewis,[4] born May 12, 1776, died March 3, 1830. Ann,[4] born October 28, 1754, died July, 1804; married James Bailey. Mary,[4] born June 22, 1758, died August 25, 1810; married Honorable Elijah Lee. Aner,[4] born February 16,

1760, died April 7, 1807; married —— Crane, M. D. Abigail,[4] born January 15, 1762, died April 20, 1828; married Colonel John Odell. Susannah,[4] born December 15, 1763; married John Titus. Esther,[4] born April 8, 1768, died April 16, 1798. Sarah,[4] born June 1, 1772; married Jonathan Ward.

6. Christopher,[3] second son of Hachaliah Brown,[2] removed to Somers. Children: Isaac, Aaron, Frederick, Phœbe.

7. David,[3] third son, died 1773. He married Esther, daughter of Rev. James Wetmore.

8. Nathan,[3] fourth son, died 1764; married Elizabeth Kniffen. Their son, Gilbert,[4] died December 27, 1820, aged sixty-one. Daughters: Elizabeth,[4] died June, 1831, aged seventy-one; Margaret,[4] died February 1, 1820, aged fifty; and Lavinia.

9. Thomas,[3] fifth son, born 1739, died April 6, 1825, aged eighty-six. He married Jane Seaman, who died April 8, 1813, aged seventy-one. Children: David,[4] died February 5, 1847, aged eighty-five years. Thomas,[4] died September 20, 1830, aged fifty-eight years. Nathan.[4] Hachaliah.[4] Letitia,[4] married Hon. Elijah Lee, and died September 20, 1830, aged thirty. Anne,[4] married David Stebbins. Jane,[4] died September 24, 1830, aged fifty-three. Abigail,[4] married Thomas Strang, and died 1813. Catharine,[4] married Rev. Elias Cooper.

10. Josiah,[3] sixth son of Hachaliah Brown,[2] died August 30, 1789, aged forty-seven years; married Deborah Brown, daughter of Jonathan, who died January 18, 1830, aged seventy-six. Children: Hachaliah;[4] Nancy,[4] married John Watson; Elizabeth,[4] Clarissa.[4]

11. Isaac,[3] seventh son of Hachaliah Brown.[2]

12 and 13. Gilbert[3] (two of the name) died young.

14. Ebenezer,[3] son of Peter Brown,[2] mentioned in 1740 and 1743 as owning land jointly with Peter, on the east side of Blind Brook, above the Ridge Road. He was chosen to a town office in 1739. Ebenezer,[4] junior, mentioned in 1767.

15. Peter,[3] son of Peter Brown,[2] in 1738 sold forty acres on Hogpen Ridge, 'given him by the will of his deceased father Peter Brown.' According to Bolton, he had two daughters: Rebecca, married John Purdy; and Sarah, married Thomas Sutton, and died 1739. Peter Brown,[4] who sold land on the same Ridge in 1764, may have been his son.

16. Nathanael,[3] son of Peter Brown,[2] born in 1732, died April 10, 1801. (Tombstone, near Park's mill.)

17. Nehemiah,[3] son of Peter Brown,[2] signs as witness in 1742. Others of the same name are mentioned half a century later.

18. Benjamin,[3] son of Benjamin Brown,[2] is called junior in 1718 and 1722. The same designation reappears 1746–1758, making it highly probable that both a son and a grandson of Benjamin,[2] son of Hachaliah,[1] were thus referred to. We adhere, however, to Mr. Bolton's account. 'Benjamin Brown junior's house' is said to have stood near Mr. Ives' (lately Mr. Hunt's) gate-house, on the post-road above the village.

19. Joseph,[3] second son of Benjamin.

20. Daniel,[3] third son.

21. William,[3] fourth son of Benjamin Brown,[2] is mentioned in 1754 and 1763. William, junior,[4] is named 1783–1786. The former lived in the 'town-plot' or village.

IV. 1. Samuel,[4] son of Samuel Brown,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] was living in 1753 on King Street. In 1733, he bought a farm of eighty-one acres — formerly Nathanael Sherwood's — on the east side of King Street. In 1767 he sold a lot at 'Saw-pit.' As he is called the eldest, there were probably other sons of Samuel.[3]

2. Zebediah,[4] perhaps son of Zebediah,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] mentioned 1760–1771. He lived where the house lately Mr. Benjamin Loder's stands, on the road to Port Chester.

3. Jonathan,[4] son of Jonathan,[3] son of Deliverance,[2] mentioned 1760–1771.

4. Nathan,[4] son of Hachaliah[3] (of Somers). 5. Stephen,[4] son of Hachaliah.[3] 6. Lewis,[4] son of Hachaliah.[3] 7. Isaac,[4] son of Christopher.[3] 8. Aaron,[4] son of Christopher.[3] 9. Frederick,[4] son of Christopher.[3] 10. Gilbert Brown,[4] son of Nathan.[3] 11. David,[4] son of Thomas.[3] 12. Thomas,[4] son of Thomas.[3] 13. Nathan,[4] son of Thomas.[3] 14. Hachaliah,[4] son of Thomas.[3] 15. Hachaliah,[4] son of Josiah.[3]

Brown, Francis, an eccentric individual, not related, so far as appears, to the preceding family. He came here about the year 1683, and was here in 1700. He had been an early settler of Stamford, where Mr. Huntington says 'he seems to have been a pertinacious stickler for the largest liberty to the individual.' His second wife was Judith, daughter of John Budd, and widow of John Ogden; and through her he acquired property in Rye. In 1685, 'while now lying upon his bed of sickness,' he made his will, which for some reason is entered in full on our records; 'for the settling and ordering of his effects according to his will and mind as it becomes a Christian living in his condition, that after his decease there may be no contentions arise amongst his successors, and *free the country from trouble* as concerning him.' He 'returns to his dear and loving wife Judith Brown that part of the estate that fell to her of her former husband, which the overseers gave her . . . . only my wife is to pay Captain Silleck for the cider I bought of him this last fall, and take in my bill.' He survived, however, and was alive in 1700. His son Joseph returned to Stamford.

Budd. I. John, born in England, was one of the planters of New Haven in 1639, and continued there about ten years. In 1653 he was appointed deputy to the General Court from Southold, but had returned to England upon a visit. He was lieutenant at Southold until 1660, when he resigned that office. His purchases at Rye have been related in the earlier pages of this volume. Mr. Budd married Katharine ——.

He died in 1670. 'A number of young men are supposed to have followed him from Southold.' (Indexes of Southold.) The following declaration or will is transcribed from the Colonial Records of Connecticut. (MS. Hartford, vol. i. p. 425.)

'Know all men by these prsence that I John Budd for diuers considerations have given and granted to John Budd my sonn all my part of the mill on Blind brooke and all lands that are undisposed of to him and his hèires forever he or his assignes payeing me John Budd or his mother Katheren Budd thirty pownds a yeare in good pay that is to say wheat Twenty pownds porck one Barrell pease the rest, and I doe give John Budd by these presents all my estate in cattell and debts to be freely his that he may dispose of all for the good of myselfe and wife that wee may be freed from trouble, and after o^{r} deceass too discharg o^{r} will and to have all o^{r} debts cattell and to pay all legases and debts and that John Ogden Juddey his wife and Joseph Horton and Joan his wife John Horton Joseph Horton and John Budd and his sonn John Budd Mary Niccolls alias Mary Young John Lyons these are to injoy their lotts as firm as if no such writeing had neuer been and the true intent of this writing is that we may haue our thirty pownds a year truely payd and the Benefitt of o^{r} cattell while we liue and after to be John Budds my soñs to him and his heires for euer to which I haue sett my hand and seale this 15 of October one Thousand six Hundred sixty Nine

Witness Joseph Horton — John Budd and a seale

Richard R B Bolards

his marke

'This is a true coppy of the originall being examined and compared therewith May 13, 1673 p me — John Allyn *Secret^{y}*.'

John Budd of Southold left two sons, John and Joseph; and two daughters: Judith, who married first John Ogden, and second Francis Brown; and Jane, who married Joseph Horton. (Rye Records, B. 57, deed from Jane and Joseph Horton, in 1673, to John Budd of Southold, conveying to him one hundred acres of land 'which our father Budd gave us.' See also the declaration quoted above.)

By his will dated October 13, 1669, he gave his son John part of the mill on Blind Brook, and his son Joseph the 'Epauquammes' land. (Town of Southold, L. I., Indexes, by Charles B. Moore, New York, 1868.)

II. 1. John Budd,[2] 'born probably in England in 1620,' married Mary ——; after his father's decease he confirmed the grants which he had made to various persons. He returned, apparently, to Southold, and died November 5, 1684. His brother-in-law, Joseph Horton, seems to have succeeded him in the ownership of the mill on Blind Brook. According to the 'Indexes of Southold, L. I.,' John Budd[2] had two sons, John and Joseph; and four daughters: Mary married [first, ——

Niccols; second] Christopher Youngs; Hannah married Jonathan Hart; Sarah probably married Benjamin Conkling; and Ann married Benjamin Horton. By his will, John gave his land in Southold to his son John, and that in Westchester County to his son Joseph and daughter Hannah.

2. Joseph,[2] second son of John Budd, was known as 'Captain Budd' as early as 1700. He was prominent in town and county affairs, being townsman in 1701, justice of the peace in 1710, farmer of the excise from 1714 to 1721, and supervisor of the town from 1713 to 1716, and from 1720 to 1722. In 1720 he obtained a patent for the tract purchased by his father and known as Budd's Neck. He died in 1722. He had married Sarah ——. Children: John, Joseph, Elisha, Underhill.

III. 1. John,[3] son of Joseph Budd[2] is mentioned in our records, 1723 to 1745. He inherited the estate on Budd's Neck, which he sold in 1745, principally to Peter Jay. In 1753, 'John Budd, late of Rye, now of Roxboro, Morris County, New Jersey,' sold a remaining parcel of land on Budd's Neck. He married Mary, daughter of Daniel Strang. Children: Daniel, Elijah; Hannah, who married Hachaliah Purdy; Mary, married Caleb Horton; Joseph, John, Underhill; Sally, married Thomas Sawyer; Gilbert, Abigail.

2. Joseph,[3] son of Joseph Budd,[2] married Ann ——. His will was made in 1763. Children: Joseph, Nicholas, Underhill, Anne; Sarah, married John Que of Dutchess.

3. Elisha,[3] son of Joseph Budd,[2] was born in 1705, and died September 21, 1765. His land on Budd's Neck is mentioned 1730. He married Ann Lyon, who died December 6, 1760, aged sixty years. In 1753 he was living at the White Plains. Children:

Jonathan,
James,
Miriam, who married Jonah Maynard;
Sarah, who married Hachaliah Purdy;
Anne, who married —— Brown;
Phœbe.

4. Underhill,[3] son of Joseph Budd,[2] was born April 29, 1708. He married Sarah, daughter of Captain Henry Fowler, September 17, 1730. She was born June 17, 1710, and died August 19, 1798. Children: Sarah, born July 28, 1731. Tamar, born December 3, 1738. Gilbert, born October 18, 1744. Mary, born December 30, 1746.

IV. 1. Daniel Budd,[4] eldest son of John,[3] married —— Purdy. He removed to the western part of this State.

2. Elijah Budd,[4] second son, married Ursula Sine.

3. Joseph Budd,[4] third son, married —— Budd. Children: Shubael,[5] John,[5] Mary.[5]

4. John Budd,[4] fourth son, removed to Kentucky.

5. Underhill,[4] fifth son, was unmarried.

6. Gilbert Budd,[4] sixth son, was for thirty years a surgeon in the

British navy. He returned to this country after the Revolution, and lived with his cousin, Colonel Gilbert Budd of Mamaroneck, until his death, which occurred October 14, 1805. He was eighty-five years old.

7. Tamar,[4] daughter of Underhill Budd,[3] married Ebenezer Haviland, M. D., of Rye, March 25, 1765. See notices of him, pp. 146, 224. Dr. Haviland died at Wallingford, Conn., in 1781. Mrs. Haviland died March 18, 1816. Their children were: Gilbert Budd, who died young; Esther, born March 27, 1768; Sarah Budd, born March 12, 1771; Horatio Gates, born August 28, 1773, died aged twenty-five years; and Ophelia, born 1776.

8. Gilbert,[4] son of Underhill Budd,[3] married Sarah Amelia Theall. See mention of Colonel Budd, pp. 226, 231. Little is known of the particulars of his military career, which is said to have been honorable and useful. He was in command of troops at Bedford in December, 1778, as appears from the following pass, the original of which, in a fine, bold handwriting, lies before me: —

'Permit the bearers M^essrs^ Josiah Brown & John Theal to pass unmolested to Rye, they behaveing themselves as becometh —

'GILB^T^ BUDD *L. Col^l^.*

'BEDFORD, *Decem^r^* 18^th^ 1778.

'To whom it may concern.'

He died September 7, 1813. Children: Sarah and Ophelia, twin daughters, born July 22, 1781.

V. 1. Shubael Budd,[5] son of Joseph,[4] had no children.

2. John Budd,[5] son of Joseph,[4] died in 1869, aged seventy-seven. He had two sons, John J., and Seely R.

3. Mary Budd,[5] daughter of Joseph,[4] married Joseph Budd. Their son Daniel is now living in Rye.

4. Esther,[5] daughter of Tamar Budd[4] and Dr. Ebenezer Haviland, married William Coleman, December 25, 1796, and died July 5, 1851. Mr. Coleman, a prominent journalist of New York — founder and for twenty years editor of the 'Evening Post' — died July 13, 1829.

5. Sarah,[5] daughter of Colonel Gilbert Budd,[4] died June 8, 1817, aged thirty-five years.

6. Ophelia,[5] twin sister of Sarah, is still living (August, 1870), retaining, in her *ninetieth* year, to a remarkable degree, the faculties of a clear and cultivated mind. Miss Budd resides in New Rochelle.

BULLOCK. 'Richard Booloch' was a resident of Stamford in 1677, when he owned a farm which John Budd had given to his son-in-law, John Ogden. (Hist. of Stamford, p. 179.) He was probably the same with 'Richard Bolards' who witnessed Budd's will, already quoted, in 1669. This individual appears to have lived at Rye long enough to own property here, and to bestow his name upon two or three localities. In 1678, execution is granted on the estate of Richard Bullard, de-

ceased, at Rye. 'Bollard's ridge' near the 'haseco meadows,' is mentioned in 1682; and 'a piece of salt meadow lying by the mill creek' is said in 1700 to have been 'formerly called Bolluck's meadow.' This seems to have been near the spot which is still designated as 'Bullock's landing,' on the west shore of the creek, upon Mr. S. C. Genin's land. There was also a tract of land in the southern part of Harrison, known by this name. 'The swamp called Bullock's meadow,' in 1730, was equally divided between Jonathan Haight's farm and that of the Rev. James Wetmore. A portion of Mr. Stevens's farm is still known to the old inhabitants by this name.

Church, John, was witness to a deed in 1661, and is mentioned from that date to 1707. In 1680 he bought land on Barton's Neck from Jonathan Vowles, who calls him 'my kinsman.' His widow had administered on his estate in April, 1707. (N. Y. Col. MSS. vol. lii. p. 41.) John, mentioned in 1708, may have been his son. Justus Church signs as witness in 1678.

Clere, George. See page 22.

Collyer, Benjamin, was in Rye in 1682; see pp. 34, 63, 308. Benjamin Collyer was high sheriff from 1688 to 1692, and clerk of Westchester County from 1698 to 1707. (Hist. Westchester County, vol. i. pp. xix., xx.)

Coe. I. John, 'one of the four men that bought the place,' was the eldest son of Robert Coe, of Norfolk County, England. He was born there in 1622, and came with his father to Watertown, thence to Wethersfield, and thence to Stamford. While there he received, December 7, 1641, a house-lot of two acres, and three acres of woodland. He soon went to Hempstead, L. I., and thence to Newtown; and was at Greenwich in 1660. After taking part in the purchase of Rye, he returned to Long Island, where the Connecticut government appointed him magistrate. He had five sons: John, Robert, Jonathan, Samuel, and David. (History of Stamford, p. 29.)

II. 1. John,[2] eldest son of John Coe,[1] settled at first on the northwest end of Manussing Island, separated from the eastern part by 'Coe's ditch,' still so called in 1693. In 1668, however, he sold his 'house and housing and home-lot upon the north neck' of the island to Stephen Sherwood; retaining a piece of salt meadow, which John and Jonathan sold in 1719 to Samuel Brown. He appears to have lived after this upon Grace Church Street, near the present Kirby Avenue. 'Coe's land' was in the eastern part of the Town Field. He had a thirty-eight acre lot in Will's Purchase, which was numbered twenty-five. John Coe married Athelana or Ethalanor. He removed to Greenwich, and died there, in or before 1744. His 'eldest son and heir' was Andrew.

2. Robert,[2] second son of John Coe,[1] went to Jamaica in 1656, and remained there.

3. Jonathan,[2] third son of John Coe,[1] was living in 1719. He had a son John.

4. Samuel,[2] fourth son of John Coe,[1] mentioned 1713–1719, owned land in Rye, on Branch Ridge and Manussing Island.

5. David,[2] fifth son, is not named in our records.

III. 1. Andrew,[3] eldest son of John Coe,[2] is mentioned in 1698. Andrew Coe who signed as witness in 1680, may have been a namesake, temporarily here. Andrew[3] was townsman in 1701 and 'sargeant' in 1705. His house in 1699 was near Fox Island. After his father's death he sold the land in Will's Purchase to Abraham Miller and Samuel Lane. He probably removed from Rye about 1744.

2. John,[3] son of Jonathan Coe,[2] had a son Jonathan.

IV. Jonathan,[4] son of John Coe,[3] lived in Saw Pit, now Port Chester, and was known as 'Dr. Coe.' He married Esther Green, who died December 1, 1805. He died November 28, 1809. His children were: John, Reuben, Edward, Mary.

V. 1. John,[5] eldest son of Dr. Jonathan Coe,[4] lived at Nine Partners. He married Sarah Furman. Children: Reuben, William, Henry, George, Jacob, Jonathan, and Esther, who married Silas Anson.

2. Reuben,[5] second son of Dr. Jonathan Coe,[4] lived in Saw Pit, in the house now his daughter Mrs. Moseman's. He died March 21, 1822, aged sixty-seven years. He married Phœbe Jordan, who died August 27, 1842, aged eighty years. Children: Charles, John, Lavinia.

3. Edward,[5] third son, had no children.

4. Mary[4] married John Mead, and removed to Ohio.

VI. 1. Charles,[6] eldest son of Reuben Coe,[5] died of yellow fever, in 1800, aged eighteen.

2. John,[6] second son, was unmarried.

3. Lavinia,[6] daughter of Reuben Coe,[5] born 1790, married Willet Moseman. Children:

Ann Eliza,	Charles William	George Henry,
Jeannette Augusta,	James,	Lavinia,
Phœbe,	John Coe,	Willet.

VII. Ann Eliza,[7] eldest daughter of Lavinia Coe[6] and Willet Moseman, married John Brooks.

2. Jeannette Augusta,[7] second daughter, married Joseph B. Husted.

3. Phœbe, third daughter, married James H. Peck.

4. Charles William,[7] son of Lavinia Coe[6] and Willet Moseman, died 1867.

5. James,[7] second son, died 1867.

6. John C.,[7] third son.

7. George Henry,[7] fourth son, married Sarah O. Finley.

8. Lavinia,[7] youngest daughter, married David M. Lyon.

9. Willet, unmarried.

Coffel. Robert, in 1697, bought land in Rye from John Brondige's sons.

Disbrow. I. Peter, may be called the founder of this town, in the

purchase and settlement of which he was the leading person. See page 9. He lived here until his decease, May 2, 1688, at the age of fifty-seven years. His house stood on 'The Plains,' in the neighborhood of the present rectory. He had a large landed estate in the town. October 13, 1681, the General Court of Connecticut 'considering the great losse that hath befallen Peter Disbrow by fyer, doe remitt unto him his country rate for the year ensueing.' (Pub. Records of Conn., vol. iii. p. 89.) His wife was Sarah Knapp, daughter of Nicholas of Stamford. They had two sons, Peter and John; and six daughters.

Mary, called 'the eldest,' married Joseph Lyon of Greenwich, and was living in 1735.

Lida or Leda [Lydia?] married John Boyd, of Rye.

Martha, married Peter Brown, of Rye.

And two others, whose names are not known.

II. 1. Peter,[2] eldest son of Peter Disbrow,[1] inherited a considerable part of his father's estate in Rye. He died in or before 1722. He had a son Peter.

2. John,[2] second son of Peter Disbrow,[1] purchased lands of Richbell in Mamaroneck, in 1674 and 1785. (Bolton, vol. i. p. 310.) His house, erected in 1677, is yet to be seen. In 1720 he bought of John Boyd a farm of fifty acres 'at the upper end of the field,' now Mr. Greacen's. He had three sons, — Henry, Benjamin, and John; and two daughters, — Sarah, and Anne.

III. 1. Peter,[3] son of Peter Disbrow,[2] styles himself 'bachelor' in 1714, and speaks of 'my unkle John Disbrow.' He had land on Brush Ridge.

2. Henry,[3] eldest son of John Disbrow,[2] was of Mamaroneck.

3. Benjamin.

4. John,[3] son of John Disbrow,[2] inherited a part of the farm his father had bought of John Boyd, and lived probably in the house which stood where Mr. Greacen's now stands. He married Sarah ——, and died about 1751. They had a son John.

5. Sarah,[3] daughter of John Disbrow,[2] married Roger Park, junior. (See account of Park family.)

6. Anne,[3] daughter of John Disbrow,[2] remained unmarried. She was living in 1763. In 1752 she sold to Roger Park, junior, for seven hundred pounds, one half of the tract of land, containing one hundred and twenty acres, 'which our brother the late John Disbrow bequeathed equally' to her and to her sister Sarah, wife of Roger Park.

Denham, Isaac. See page 150.

Denham, Rev. Thomas. See pp. 278–280, 285, 286.

Frost. 1. John Frost, 'gentleman,' owned land in the eastern part of the Town Field. He is first mentioned in 1684; was townsman in 1697, and supervisor in 1703. He died in or before 1722. In 1718 he paid to Peter Disbrow one hundred and twenty pounds for fifty

acres, bounded on the north by the highway and field fence, 'in consideration also of the support of his son Abraham during his life, and Christian-like burial after death.' From the recurrence of the surname, we think it likely that John Frost was a son, and Abraham a grandson, of Abraham Frost, who, in 1657, was living 'aboute Stamford or Greenwich,' and presented a petition to the Court at New Haven, 'desiring som releife from them because he is very poore, haueing lost all by the Indians aboute a yeare and a halfe agoe, his wife and chilldren taken captives but after brought to this jurisdiction, where they haue lived since in a poore and meane way.' The Court ordered that they should receive assistance. (Rec. of Col. of N. H., vol. ii. p. 216.)

2. Daniel Frost, of Oyster Bay, in 1744, bought thirty-five acres on Grace Church Street, near Byram harbor, which he sold some years after.

Galpin. I. Philip Galpin was a resident of New Haven as early as 1646, and there married Elizabeth Smith. (N. H. Rec., vol. i. p. 259.) He was living at Fairfield in 1657. (Savage.) He came to this place before January 26, 1662, the date of the petition of the settlers of Hasting, to which his name is attached. See page 30, for an account of his difficulty with the other inhabitants in 1671. Galpin died in 1685. (Rye Records.) His second wife was Hannah ——. Children: Samuel, Joseph, John, Benjamin, Moses, Jeremiah, Sarah, Deborah, Hannah.

'Other daughters' are referred to. One of his daughters married Richard Walters, another Robert Traves, and another Stephen Sherwood.

The Philip Galpin, who, in 1690, went with the Expedition to Albany against the French, may have been another son. See page 48.

'Galpin's Cove,' on the west side of Blind Brook Creek, takes its name perhaps from this person.

II. 1. Samuel,[2] son of Philip Galpin,[1] was born in New Haven in 1650, and in 1685 was living in Stratford. (Conn. Rec., vol. iii. p. 186, *note.*) In 1692, he was one of the grand jurors impanelled at Fairfield to try Mercy Disborough and others for witchcraft. (Conn. Rec., vol. iv. p. 76, *note.*)

2. Joseph,[2] son of Philip Galpin,[1] bought rights on Peningo Neck in 1685. In 1719, 1722, and 1724, he purchased land in Will's Purchase, where he already had a thirty-eight acre lot formerly his father's, making over one hundred and fifty acres. He is called 'wheelwright' in 1722.

3. John,[2] son of Philip Galpin,[1] married Mary ——. He was dead in 1738. He had land on Budd's Neck and in White Plains. 'Young John and the rest of his [John's[2]] children,' are mentioned in Philip's will.

4. Benjamin,[2] son of Philip Galpin,[1] disappears from our records

after the settlement of his father's estate. He is probably the 'Benjamin Galpin' of Woodbury, Conn., who came to that place, with his wife Rebecca, about 1680, and died in 1731. He left three sons, Benjamin, Joseph, and Samuel; and six daughters. Some of Samuel's descendants still reside there. (Hist. of Ancient Woodbury, Conn., by Wm. Cothren, pp. 544, 545.)

5. Moses,[2] son of Philip Galpin,[1] was a 'weaver' in 1738, when he sold to Thomas Gilchrist, of Rye, his house and thirty-five acres on the country road near Daniel Purdy's land.

Garnsey. Joseph Garnsey, native of Stamford (Hist. of Stamford, p. 53), was 'of Milford' in 1699, when he bought of John Disbrow one half of a 'lotment' in the Town Field, 'near the upper end.'

Hart. I. Jonathan Hart, in 1685, bought land on the lower part of Budd's Neck, to which he added in 1702. He was chosen one of the townsmen of Rye in 1686. He was called 'senior' in 1702. He married Hannah, daughter of John Budd.[2]

II. Monmouth Hart, perhaps a son of the preceding, owned land on Horseneck, probably the same with Jonathan's. In 1712 he bought land at White Plains. In 1740, Monmouth, probably junior, bought Thomas Merritt's farm of ninety-three acres at White Plains. He lived on Rye Neck, and was called 'Captain Hart' in 1746.

James Hart, 1761–1772, owned land on Horseneck, the southeastern extremity of Budd's Neck. This land appears to have been that now owned by Mr. Brevoort, on Rye Neck.

Hiat, or Hyat. I. Caleb Hiat[1] was constable of Rye in 1678, and in the same year bought the house and proprietary rights of Joseph Purdy. He must therefore have joined the settlement some time before this, though not one of the original settlers. His house 'on the Plains' was situated near the spot where the new district school-house stands. He was an active member of the community, in whose transactions his name occurs frequently, and every year until 1686, perhaps the year of his death. He had a son Caleb, and probably John.

II. 1. Caleb[2] was of age in 1699, when made constable of Rye. He and John removed early to the White Plains, and became identified with that settlement. In 1715, Caleb was one of the layers out of the White Plains purchase, and in 1721 was one of the patentees under the British crown. His house stood on North Street, nearly opposite the road lately closed, leading into Harrison, near 'Ridge Farm,' below the village of White Plains. His lands lay chiefly across the Mamaroneck River, on 'Brown's Point' in the town of Harrison.

Caleb Hyatt, 'son of Caleb Hyatt,' was appointed justice of the peace in 1722, and again in 1735. He was a prominent Presbyterian, and in 1727 was active in the effort to procure funds from Connecticut for the building of a church at White Plains, and another at Rye. See account of his action in the matter, pp. 323, 327. He had three sons, apparently, Caleb, Nathan, and Elisha.

2. John Hyatt,[2] probably the son of Caleb,[1] signs as witness in 1681. He owned land in the White Plains purchase as early as 1710, and in 1721 was living there, near Caleb. He was one of the petitioners in relation to the church in 1727. He had a son, 'John Hyat junior,' who owned property at Rye, in 1725.

III. 1. Caleb Hyatt,[3] son of Caleb,[2] was a resident of White Plains in 1752. Tradition states that he died about the time of the war. His name, with Nathan's, follows that of Caleb,[2] in the petition of 1727.

2. Nathan,[3] son of Caleb Hyatt,[2] settled with his brother on Brown's Point, opposite White Plains. He was living in 1748.

3. Elisha,[3] son of Caleb Hyatt,[2] born April 24, 1714, died in 1760. He married Sarah Underhill, born March 9, 1715; and had two sons: Elisha, born August 24, 1751, and Nathanael, born December 31, 1756; and two daughters: Mary, born April 2, 1745, and Sarah, born July 13, 1754.

IV. Elisha,[4] son of Elisha Hyatt,[3] had a son, Nathanael, born in 1787, and two daughters, Matilda, and Mrs. Avery. They were living in the village of White Plains, in the spring of 1869. Mrs. Avery has since died, at the age of eighty-six.

Abraham and Thomas Hyatt were perhaps other sons of Caleb.[1] Abraham, in 1702, had a house-lot given him at Rye, which he 'freely resigned.' Thomas was one of the patentees of lands near Rye Pond, in 1710.

Hoyt, or Haight. I. John Hoitt was living in Rye as early as 1678, on Apawamis, Budd's Neck, or Rye Neck — probably toward the southern end. He is said to have come to Rye in 1676 from East Chester, having removed to that place from Fairfield in 1665. He was not a 'Proprietor,' but appears to have bought land from one of the original settlers. He died about 1684, leaving his wife Mary, two daughters, Mary Browne, and Rachel Horton, and 'two youngest sons,' John and Simon. (Will, County Records, White Plains.)

II. John,[2] son of John Hoitt,[1] was a prominent person. He was town clerk of Rye in 1696, constable in 1702, supervisor in 1711, 1717, 1719, and justice of the peace in 1710, and was honored with the title, then rarely conferred, of Mr. He was one of the proprietors of the White Plains purchase, and of Will's purchases, and patentee, in 1720, of Budd's Neck, with Joseph Budd and others. He owned land in the northern part of Budd's Neck. He died about 1726. 'John Haight deceased' is mentioned 1728. Children: John, Samuel, Jonathan, Joseph.

III. 1, 2. John and Samuel Hoit were residents of the White Plains as early as 1721, and as late as 1730. Their houses appear on a map of the former date, situated about a mile above the bridge crossing Mamaroneck River. They were among the signers of the petition in 1727 for aid to build a Presbyterian church at White Plains, and one

at Rye. 'Mr. John Hoit and Mr. Robert Bloomer jun. were chosen at an orderly meeting of the Presbyterians of Rye and the White Plains to represent the case' to the Governor and Council of Connecticut.

3. Jonathan,[3] third son of John Hoit,[2] in 1726 sold land on Brown's Point, near White Plains.

4. Joseph,[3] fourth son of John Hoit,[2] had a farm at the northern end of Budd's Neck, eighty-three acres of which he sold, in 1737, to the Rev. James Wetmore. He died about 1748, and left three sons: Henry, Cornelius, and Joseph. He bought — after selling his farm — the house near the Episcopal Church, now Mr. David Kirby's tenement house.

This family is to be distinguished from that of the Haights of Harrison, though the name was occasionally written in the same way. The latter family is descended from Samuel Haight, of Flushing, son of Nicholas, of Windsor, supposed by Mr. D. W. Hoyt to have been an elder brother of John Hoit,[1] of Rye. Samuel Haight was one of the purchasers of Harrison, in 1695, and his sons settled in Harrison early in the last century.

Hopping. Nicholas, mentioned 1683, in 1688 bought John Galpin's land on Budd's Neck, between the country road and the harbor. He sold it in 1728.

Horton. I. Joseph Horton, eldest son of Barnabas, of Southold, L. I. (Indexes of Southold), was at Southold in 1662. He came to Rye, doubtless, at the invitation of John Budd, whose daughter Jane he had married. (Abigail, daughter of Jeremiah Vail, is mentioned in the 'Indexes' as 'probably' his wife; perhaps she was a second wife.) In 1669, Budd confirmed him in the possession of his 'lot.' He was chosen selectman of Rye in 1671, and was commissioner or justice of the peace in 1678. 'Lieutenant Horton' seems, indeed, to have been thought equal to every duty. In 1670, he is one of three chosen to procure a minister. The General Court authorizes him 'to grant warrants and to marry persons.' He is the chief officer of the train-band. In 1699, the town permits him to keep a place of public entertainment. In 1695, he is one of the vestrymen. With all these dignities he also filled the important office of miller, in which occupation several of his descendants succeeded him. Mr. Horton had four sons, — Joseph, John, Samuel, and David. The last three are mentioned in a deed of 'John Horton, son of Captain John Horton, deceased,' who resigns to them in 1707, all title to the share in White Plains purchase 'which was my honoured grandfather's, Captain Joseph Horton deceased.' He had also a daughter, who married Roger Park.

II. 1. Joseph,[2] son of Joseph Horton[1] (who styles himself 'senior' in 1684), was old enough to own land ('Joseph Horton junior's lot') in 1673. Another 'junior,' in 1723, was doubtless his son.

2. John,[2] son of Joseph Horton,[1] had, in 1682, a grant from John

Budd, his grandfather, of land between Mamaroneck River and Stony Brook. He and his descendants appear to have lived on the lower part of Budd's Neck. He died in 1707. Children: John, Joseph, Jonathan, Benjamin; Hannah, who married Thomas Robinson; and perhaps others.

3. Samuel,[2] son of Joseph Horton,[1] signs as witness in 1688. He, with his brother David, removed to the White Plains. Their land, in 1727, lay west of 'the [Presbyterian] meeting-house.'

4. David,[2] son of Joseph Horton,[1] signs as witness in 1697. According to Mr. Bolton, David, of White Plains, had four sons: Joseph, Thomas, John, Daniel.

III. 1. Joseph,[3] son of Joseph Horton,[2] called 'junior' in 1723, was of Rye in 1722. He had a son called 'junior' in 1750.

2. John,[3] son of Captain John Horton,[2] lived on Budd's Neck, in Rye, at or near the mill known as Guion's. He was one of Isaac Denham's executors in 1724. In 1737 he relinquishes his right to land in White Plains received from 'his uncle Samuel.' In 1740, he had an 'eldest son John, junior.'

3. Joseph,[3] son of Captain John Horton, was of Rye, in 1722. In 1715 he bought from his brother Jonathan a 'great lot' of sixty acres at White Plains, which he sold in 1722. There was a Joseph junior in 1750.

4. Jonathan,[3] son of Captain John Horton,[2] styled 'cordwainer' in 1734, lived on Budd's Neck, where, in 1760, he sold to James Gidney one hundred and thirty-nine acres near Mamaroneck Bridge. He died a year or two after, leaving sons Jonathan and James.

5. Joseph,[3] son of David Horton,[2] was of White Plains, in 1732.

6. John,[3] son of David Horton,[2] is probably the person whose mill, upon Horton's Pond, is frequently referred to from 1747 to 1769.

7. Daniel,[3] son of David Horton,[2] according to Mr. Bolton, had seven children.

(1.) Stephen, of White Plains, who left David of Yonkers, and Benjamin. (2.) Daniel. (3.) Samuel. (4.) George W. of City Island. (5.) Elijah C. (6.) Anne, who married Samuel Crawford of White Plains. (7.) Margaret.

IV. 1. James,[4] 'late of Mamaroneck, son of Jonathan,' married Sarah Hunt, daughter of Caleb, deceased, twenty-third of tenth month, 1760. (Friends' Rec.)

2. Joseph,[4] probably son of Joseph Horton,[3] of Rye, called junior in 1750, sold in 1746 to John Guion for three hundred and fifteen pounds, 'my farm and lands where I now dwell on Budd's neck,' lying south of Peter Jay's land, and comprising fifty acres, on both sides of the road.

3. John,[4] 'eldest son of John Horton,'[3] in 1740, relinquishes his interest in certain lands in White Plains.

Others of this name I cannot with certainty affiliate. Caleb Horton, of White Plains, mentioned in 1725 and 1740; Elisha Horton, of Brown's Point or Harrison's Purchase, in 1748–1751; William Horton, of Brown's Point, 1740–1761, were probably descendants of Samuel and David Horton,[2] of White Plains. James Horton, Esq., of Budd's Neck, 1750–1764, father of James Horton, junior, of Mamaroneck, 1770, was probably descended from John Horton,[2] of Budd's Neck. So too Daniel Horton, apparently a brother of James, senior, who was of Budd's Neck in 1760, and Elijah and Gill Budd Horton, perhaps brothers.

Mr. Bolton mentions '*William Horton* of King street, Rye,' as of this family, and states that his children were 'I. Jeremiah, of Mamaroneck, who married Elizabeth Hart, and left, 1. Abraham; 2. James; 3. Benjamin; 4. Elijah; 5. Hannah; 6. Anne. II. Isaac, who married Sarah Cornell, and died 1821. III. Timothy of L. I. IV. Rachel. V. Pruer.' He also mentions '*Daniel Horton* of Rye, a lineal descendant of the first Joseph; born Feb. 22, 1776; married Anne Strang, born Sept. 30, 1764. Their children were; 1. James, born Oct. 29, 1787; 2. Henry, born Feb. 19, 1789; Ebenezer, born Nov. 30, 1796, died May 13, 1814; 4. Nathanael, born Jan. 17, 1794;' and seven daughters.

Hudson. Robert and John, perhaps brothers, were here early. 'Robert Hutsone' was one of the signers of the declaration of 1662, on Manussing Island. His name occurs again in 1673 as that of witness. In 1688, he was living in Westchester. The deposition of Robert Hudson, 'aged 48 years,' is given concerning a riot in that town, July 16. (Co. Rec., A. p. 267.)

In 1674, John Hudson, junior, of Rye, conveyed to John Hudson, senior, of Rye, his right in four divisions of land which he had from Timothy Knap and Walter Lancaster. This right John Hudson, senior, in 1683, assigned to Peter Disbrow. He too, meantime, had removed to Westchester, where he was living in 1676. (Bolton, Hist. Westchester County, vol. i. p. 134.)

Jackson. John Jackson was a member of the original settlement on Manussing Island. He was a witness to the Indian deed, May 22, 1661, for the second purchase on Peningo Neck, and one of the signers of the letter to the General Court, January 26, 1663, when he wrote his name 'Jagson.' He removed soon after to East Chester, and was one of the founders of that town in 1665. In 1670, 'John Jackson of Eastchester in the Duke of York his territories in America,' sold his house and lands at Rye, together with all his rights and privileges there, to 'John Purdy, now inhabitant at Eastchester as aforesaid, for the sum of forty-five pounds, and a heifer of two years old, and some vantage, as is agreed by both parties.'

Jefferies. Thomas Jefferies was here early, but the only record of

his stay is the mention of a lot 'formerly' his, given in 1686 to Benjamin Collier; and the name of a locality apparently called after him. In 1701, the proprietors agreed to build a school-house, and to set it 'near Tom Jeffers' hill.'

Jee. 'The land that was John Jees,' near Andrew Coe's swamp, is mentioned in 1704. The name does not recur. A John *Gee* died in Boston in 1693. Mr. Savage mentions others.

Jenkins. Samuel Jenkins was of Greenwich in 1672. (Savage.) In 1684 he bought land at Rye, with a house and home-lot, which he sold again in 1703. 'Jenkins his lot' is referred to in 1718.

Knap. I. Timothy Knap came to Rye as early as 1667, when he bought Thomas Studwell's house and home-lot near 'the mill brook.' His father, Nicholas Knap, had emigrated to New England in 1630, and settled first in Watertown, Mass., where this son was born, December 14, 1632. Thence he removed to Stamford, Conn. (Savage.) Timothy became an active member of the community at Rye. He was constable of the town in 1681, 1682. He had proprietary rights through Studwell; and the record of 'several parcels of land' of his in 1680, shows that he had a considerable estate. At his house, which was somewhere near the spot where Mr. David Kirby now lives, religious services were held in and before 1682. Toward the latter part of the century, he removed to Greenwich, where he was living in 1697, and where he seems to have taken a leading part in church matters.

Joshua Knap, a brother of Timothy, born January 5, 1635, settled in Greenwich as early as 1688. (Hist. of Greenwich, p. 71.)

II. Timothy Knap, 'junior,'[2] owned land on Barton's Neck in 1689. He inherited his father's proprietary rights in Rye, where he remained. In 1745 he sold to his two sons Daniel and Amos, for five hundred pounds, his homestead and house 'where I now dwell,' comprising fourteen acres; and another parcel 'whereon my barn stands,' containing seventy acres, together with all his other lands, and his right in undivided lands in Peningo Neck purchase. The house-lot is that on the northeast corner of Milton Avenue, and the road to the Beach, now belonging, together with the larger tract on the south side of that road, to the late Newberry Halsted's estate. He left three sons: Daniel, Amos, and Gabriel.

III. 'Timothy Knap, Gabriel Knapp and Daniel Knapp' are mentioned in a deed of 1768 as having *formerly* sold the property above described to Ezekiel Halsted. Mr. Halsted died in 1757. He had removed from New Rochelle to Rye in 1746. Timothy Knap was probably living, and confirmed the sale to Halsted, made by his sons Gabriel and Daniel, Amos not being named.

Kniffen. I. George Kniffen, of Stratford, Conn., in 1666 bought a house and land in Rye from John Budd senior; 'the house being situated in the town formerly called Hastings.' (Probate Records

Fairfield Co.) At the same time probably he acquired proprietary rights which continued in his family as long as the corporation subsisted. He was 'propownded for freeman' of the colony in 1670, his name appearing as 'George Snuffene, of Ry.' (Conn. Rec., vol. ii. p. 128.) His 'house-lot, laid out in 1678,' seems to have been situated where his descendant Jonathan Sniffin now lives. He died in 1694. A son, Joseph, and a daughter who married John Stoakham, are known. Five others of the name are presumed to be his sons: Ebenezer, Jonathan, George, Nathan, and Samuel.

II. 1. Joseph,[2] son of George Kniffen,[1] is named as early as 1703. In 1711 he lived near 'Tom Jeffer's hill,' the present site of the Episcopal Church.

2. Jonathan,[2] mentioned 1697–1721, had land in the north end of the town.

3. Ebenezer,[2] first mentioned 1700, had land in the Town Field. The proprietors of Lame Will's Purchase in 1709 gave him land on Hog-pen Ridge, 'in consideration of moneys lent to the town, which belonged to his wife's portion.' He died about 1722.

4. George,[2] mentioned 1705–1718, is alluded to as early as 1687, his father then calling himself senior. In 1705 Deliverance Brown, senior, sold to George Kniffen four or five acres in the Great Swamp. This locality was between Ridge Street and Regent Street, south of the road to Park's mill. There 'the Kniffens' owned land long after.

5. Nathan,[2] mentioned 1701–1708, bought land on Gunn Brook Plain, or in the neighborhood of Dr. Sands' property. He was living in 1741, when he was called 'senior.' He had Nathan and Caleb.

6. Samuel,[2] probably the youngest son of George Kniffen,[1] was constable and collector of Rye in 1701. He married a daughter of Francis Purdy. His petition to the governor (about 1701) states that he is 'a prisoner in the common Gaol of the County, being destitute of many friends.' The inhabitants of the town of Rye had made choice of him for constable, and afterwards the collector's place was laid upon him; 'and being a young man verry ignorant of any office was flattered by the people so that the Rates which he was to collect through his simplicity are great part in arrears.' This 'has brought him into this destitute condition: and 'haveing a poor distressed wife at home big with child expecting every hour her deliverance, and no body to help her,' he implores his excellency to grant him enlargement, 'so that he may go and collect said taxes *with all severity*.' (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. xxxviii. p. 215.) These taxes were those that had accumulated during the revolt of the town to Connecticut. (See page 119.) The inhabitants evidently did not blame the collector for his lenity; and the governor must have granted his petition; for he was made one of the townsmen of Rye the next year, 1702. He died before 1707. (Ibid. vol. lii. p. 41.)

III. 1. Joseph Kniffen,[3] called 'junior' in 1732, was perhaps a son of Joseph.[2] He lived apparently about where Mr. T. Theall now lives, on Grace Church Street. In 1752 he sold to Josiah Purdy twenty-two acres 'beginning at the corner by the entrance of Grace church street.' Thomas and Obadiah Kniffen were perhaps his sons.

2. Ebenezer[3] is named in 1735 with Joseph,[3] as if brothers. He was a man of means and influence; acquiring as proprietor and by purchase a considerable landed property. He was justice of the peace in 1755 and 1769. He lived in 'the town-plot,' on or near the site of the house opposite the Episcopal Church, now Mr. Daniel Budd's; and owned a farm of ninety acres, bounded by Grace Church Street and the Milton Road. This farm he sold, about the year 1768, to Ezekiel Halsted, who conveyed it to Philemon Halsted soon after. Ebenezer Kniffen removed in 1769 to Courtlandt Manor.

3. Jonathan,[3] son of Jonathan Kniffen,[2] in 1745 owned land east of the Hog-pen Ridge Road. He died about 1758, leaving a son Jonathan.

4. George,[3] perhaps a son of George Kniffen,[2] in 1712–1717 bought land on Brush Ridge, and called himself 'George Kniffen of Brushie Ridge.' He afterwards lived on King Street, but by the year 1744 had removed to North Castle, where he died in or before 1750. He left two sons, George and David; and probably Israel.

5. Nathan,[3] son of Nathan Kniffen,[2] had land in 1741–1751 between Grace Church Street and the Boston Road.

6. Caleb,[3] son of Nathan Kniffen,[2] was perhaps the person of this name who lived in White Plains.

7. Samuel,[3] mentioned in 1718, perhaps an older son of Samuel Kniffen.[2]

8. William,[3] son of Samuel Kniffen,[2] was born about 1702. At the Court of Sessions in Westchester, in 1716, 'Francis Purdy junior acquaints y^e^ Court at y^e^ Request of his father Francis Purdy senior, y^t^ William Sneffin son of Samuel Sneffin deceased, who dying when y^e^ said son William was but two years old, and upon his death-bed gave y^e^ said William unto his grandfather Francis Purdy senior until he attained to y^e^ Age of twenty-one years,' is now fourteen years old; and his friends ask to have him bound to a good trade. (Westchester Co. Records, lib. B. p. 68.)

Of this generation there were several others, probably grandsons of George,[1] but whose immediate parentage I cannot ascertain. Andrew Kniffen is mentioned in 1724; Benjamin in 1727; Thomas in 1740; Nehemiah in 1741; Amos in 1744. Thomas lived on Grace Church Street, and was perhaps a son of Joseph.[2] Amos Kniffen bought in 1752 the house where Mr. Ezrahiah Wetmore now lives, with eight acres.

IV. 1. Thomas Kniffen,[4] perhaps the son of Joseph,[3] was the father of Thomas and Nehemiah. He is said to have lived where the entrance to Mr. Quintard's place now is.

2. Obadiah Kniffen[4] in 1732 adopted the 'ear-mark' or cattle-brand of Joseph.[3] These marks were generally transmitted from father to son.

3. George Kniffen,[4] 'eldest son and heir to George Kniffen, late of North Castle, deceased,' in 1750 surrendered all interest in the farm at Rye which his father had owned, and where his brother then lived. He probably settled in North Castle.

4. David Kniffen,[4] brother of George,[4] was living on King Street in 1752.

5. Israel Kniffen,[4] probably a son of George,[3] had removed to 'Philipsburgh manor' by the year 1745, when he sold land at Rye which he had acquired 'on the right of William Odell, one of the Proprietors. This right George Kniffen[3] had bought in 1706, 1715, and 1717.

6. Jonathan,[4] son of Jonathan Kniffen,[3] owned a large tract of land between Regent Street or 'Sniffen's lane' as it was then called, and Purchase Avenue, or the road to Park's mill; extending southward to the Boston Road. He lived on Regent Street, in a house which formerly stood about opposite Mrs. A. Sherwood's barn. The melancholy incident related on page 252 has reference to his daughter Polly.

7. Samuel Kniffen,[4] 'junior, of Phillips' manor,' in 1748 bought of Abraham Theall ninety and one half acres bounded northwest by Westchester old path, southwest by the White Plains Road, and east by Blind Brook. A part of this land — lying near the stone bridge — remained in the possession of the Sniffen family until within a few years. Samuel's wife was Rebecca.

8. John Kniffen,[4] perhaps a brother of Samuel,[3] married Hannah Sawyer. According to family tradition, he lived in a house south of the stone bridge, on land now belonging to the Presbyterian Church, and owned considerable land, extending back to Beaver Swamp. This was the farm above described as bought by Samuel in 1748. John had seven sons, John, Caleb, Isaac, Nathanael, Hachaliah, William, Elisha; and three daughters: Nancy, married Rev. Henry Belding; Lavinia, Deborah.

9. Caleb Kniffen,[4] brother of John[4] and perhaps of Samuel,[4] lived in 1751 where his son Caleb lived in the early part of this century, on the old road from Port Chester to the Purchase, near Mr. Peyton's present residence.

V. 1. Thomas Kniffen,[5] son of Thomas,[4] was about fourteen years old at the outbreak of the Revolution. See an account of him, page 246. His sons Samuel and Jonathan Sniffin are now living in Rye.

2. Nehemiah,[5] son of Thomas.[4]

3. Elisha Kniffen,[5] son of John,[4] born July 11, 1773, married Amy Seaman, born June 11, 1777. He removed from Rye to Saw Pit, now Port Chester, and died there March 6, 1851; his wife died December 19, 1858. They had two sons, Sylvanus S., and Seaman H., and three daughters, Nancy, Henrietta, Amy M.

4. Caleb Kniffen,[5] son of Caleb,[4] lived in the old house near Mr. Peyton's, and died about 1828.

Other sons of John [4] — John, Nathanael, and Hachaliah — were married, and had children, whose descendants are living in the town or in New York.

VI. 1. Seaman H. Sniffen,[6] son of Elisha,[5] born April 6, 1805, married Emeline Smith, who died in 1845. They had six sons, John, Charles, Sylvanus S. (my informant — died December, 1870), William C., Isaac, Mitchell M.; and two daughters, Elizabeth and Henrietta.

Benjamin Kniffen, perhaps the Benjamin mentioned in 1724, died about the close of the Revolution. His will, dated 1783, names his sons, Andrew, Roger, and Benjamin; and his daughters, Gertrude Bull, Phœbe Bull, Sarah Kniffen, Mary Wilson, Elizabeth Sherwood, and Jemima Merritt.

Andrew had three sons, Jeremiah, Roger, and Andrew; and two daughters, Eliza and Gertrude.

Benjamin had three sons, Benjamin, James, and Abraham. (Probate Rec., Westchester Co.)

Roger Kniffen was living in 1783–1788 on 'Gratious' Street.

'Widow Sniffen' had her children baptized, July 22, 1792: Sarah, John, and Isaac, adults; and William, Anna, Hachaliah, Deborah, Nathan, and Levina, young children.

Lancaster. Walter Lancaster was from Fairfield, Conn., where he lived in 1654, when he is said to have had lands perhaps never occupied, but removed soon (Savage). He was a member of the settlement on Manussing Island in 1663, but in 1674 had sold his rights, which were acquired by Peter Disbrow and Joseph Purdy. Lancaster went to East Chester, where at last he became stationary. He was one of the freeholders of that town in 1682, and a contributor in 1685 to the maintenance of a minister. John Lancaster, a pew-holder in the church there in 1696, may have been his son. (Bolton, Hist. of Westchester Co., vol. i. p. 122 *seq.*)

Lane. I. George Lane was here as early as 1666. He was constable of Rye in 1671, and was frequently chosen as one of the 'layers-out' of the undivided lands. He became one of the patriarchs of the village, being alive in 1719. 'George Lane's old house-lot' was at the corner of the Purchase Road and the Boston Road, where Mr. William Smith lately lived. The house stood nearly opposite the point where Locust Avenue begins.

II. 1. 'George Lane, gentleman,' removed early to the 'White Plains.' He was living there in 1714, and in 1721 his house stood on the present corner of Broadway and North Street. His proprietary rights at Rye were eventually acquired by the Rev. James Wetmore. He was living in 1733.

2. Samuel Lane,[2] probably a younger son of George,[1] first mentioned

1695, was one of the townsmen in 1699, and for the long period of *forty years* — from 1697 to 1736 — was the town clerk of Rye. His house in 1728 stood on the site of Mr. Josiah Purdy's present residence, near the railroad station. He was a 'Proprietor' in 1732, undoubtedly 'by the right' of his father. He died in 1736.

III. 1. Daniel Lane,[3] of White Plains in 1714–1721, was probably a son of George.[2]

2. Jonathan Lane,[3] of White Plains in 1729–1740, was probably another son of George.[2]

3. Samuel Lane[3] of Rye, son of Samuel,[2] sold his father's house in Rye to Raphael Jacobs, from whom the Rev. James Wetmore bought it. Here Esther Wetmore, wife of Jesse Hunt, lived for many years.

4. Hezekiah Lane, perhaps a son of George or Samuel, in 1726 bought land in Fauconier's Purchase (now a part of North Castle) from Richard Ogden.

IV. Samuel Lane,[4] son of Samuel,[3] 'called junior' in 1741, bought in that year the house formerly John Merritt's, junior, on Merritt's Point, with eleven and one half acres.

'Samuel Lane, age 22, tanner,' and 'Reuben Lane, age 16, labourer,' were among the men enlisted at Rye for the French and Indian War in 1758 and 1759. The former may have been a son of Samuel.[4]

Linch. Gabriel Linch, mentioned 1688. In the following year the town granted him ten acres of land above the marked trees, laid out 'by the lower falls of Blind brook,' north of the branch of the brook.

Jonathan Linch, called 'Captain,' was one of the petitioners in 1721 for a patent for the White Plains purchase. 'The heirs of Capt.' Linch are spoken of in 1740.

John Lynch had land in 1737 in White Plains.

Gabriel Lynch was one of the commissioners of highways for the town of Rye in 1765. A release of land at White Plains, to be annexed to the Presbyterian burying-ground, bears the signature of Gabriel Lynch, as one having proprietor's rights in that purchase. (Bolton, Hist. of Westchester Co., vol. ii. p. 364.)

Lockwood. 'Jonathan, son of Still John Lockwood, of Greenwich,' bought in 1744 the house and eight acres where Mr. E. Wetmore now lives; but in 1751 he had removed to North Castle.

Lounsbery. Richard Lounsbery was an early settler, and one of the proprietors of Peningo Neck. He is mentioned in 1672. He sold his land and rights there in 1673–1682, but retained land on Budd's Neck, which by his will, January 2, 1690, he left to his wife Elizabeth and two eldest sons. Children: Thomas, Michael, John, Henry, and Mary.

Of Thomas, who had rights in the White Plains purchase from his father, we hear nothing more. Michael was 'of Stanford' in 1709. Mr. Huntington states that he there married Sarah Lockwood, and that

the name is quite common in the upper part of that town. (Hist. of Stamford, p. 188.) John, 'son of Richard Lounsbery deceased,' appears to have remained here. His name occurs frequently as witness from 1706 to 1723.

Isaac Lounsbery, son or grandson of Richard, was 'of Budd's neck' in 1729, living apparently on the land which Richard had owned there. Some time previous to the year 1760 he conveyed his farm to Daniel Purdy. 'Lounsbery Farm' has retained its first possessor's name to the present day. It is now the property of James H. Parsons, Esq.

William Lounsbery, perhaps a son of Isaac, had land on the west side of the road on Budd's Neck, in 1760. He or a namesake was living in the same vicinity at the time of the Revolution.

Lyon. The tradition in this family runs that Thomas Lyon and John Banks came together from Yorkshire, England, about the year 1640, to the spot where they settled on the east bank of Byram River, which they reached by boat from Stamford. Saving the date, which is many years too early, the legend may be correct. Thomas Lyon was a landholder in Stamford in 1650 and 1652. (Hist. of Stamford, pp. 57, 60.) He is said to have been born December 1621. He married Abigail ——. Children:

John,	Joseph,	Hannah,
Thomas,	Deborah,	Rachel,
Samuel,	Sarah,	——.

The marriage of 'John *Banks* and Abigail *Lyon*' is on record at Stamford, as occurring April 3, 1672. I am led to think that this Abigail was the *widow* of Thomas Lyon above named. In 1719 John Banks[3] and John Lyon[3] style themselves *nephews* of Samuel Lyon.[2] (N. Y. Col. MSS., lxi. 156.) This would imply that their fathers were brothers-in-law, or half-brothers; the latter conjecture seems probable from the name, as Thomas had a *wife* but no *daughter* Abigail.

II. 1. John Lyon,[2] son of Thomas,[1] mentioned as brother of Joseph of Rye, was living in 1710 at Greenwich.

2. Thomas Lyon,[2] son of Thomas,[1] married Abigail Ogden. He lived in the homestead near Byram Bridge. Children:

Thomas,	Jonathan,	Mary,
Abigail,	Jemima,	Deborah,
Samuel,	David,	Gilbert.
Elizabeth,	Joseph,	

3. Samuel Lyon,[2] son of Thomas,[1] mentioned 1700 as living in Greenwich, and again 1707.

4. Joseph Lyon,[2] son of Thomas,[1] was of Rye in 1710, and had the mill on Blind Brook Creek in 1719.

III. 1. Thomas Lyon,[3] 'of King street,' son of Thomas,[2] married Phœbe Vowles. He removed in 1750 to the farm which his father had bought of his brother Samuel, now owned by William Bush. He had a son Andrew, and perhaps other children.

2. Samuel Lyon, of Rye, son of Thomas,[2] was born October 14, 1701. He married, December 23, 1735, Hannah ——, born June 1, 1712. In 1750, Samuel Lyon, 'mariner,' bought land near Byram harbor, on the neck called from him 'Lyon's point.' He died March 13, 1756, and was buried in the family grave-yard 'at old Byram.' Children:

Samuel,	Benjamin,	Hannah,
William,	Abraham,	Silvanus.
Nehemiah,	Monmouth,	
Elizabeth,	Abigail,	

3. Jonathan Lyon,[3] son of Thomas.[2]

4. David Lyon,[3] son of Thomas.[2]

5. Joseph Lyon,[3] of Greenwich, son of Thomas,[2] married Mary, eldest daughter of Peter Disbrow. In 1735 he gave to John Boyd one half of Disbrow's property in Rye.

Nothing has been ascertained regarding the descendants of these four sons.

6. Gilbert Lyon,[3] of Byram, youngest son of Thomas,[2] born July 20, 1719, married Jane Kniffen. He lived in the homestead near Byram Bridge. Children:

Deborah,	Andrew,	Abigail,
Gilbert,	Joshua,	Elizabeth,
Sarah,	Simeon,	Abraham.

IV. 1. Andrew Lyon,[4] son of Thomas[3] of King Street, born October 1728; died August 22, 1809; married Sarah Budd. He lived on the farm now William Bush's. Children: Underhill, Tamar, Polly, Sarah.

2. Samuel Lyon,[4] eldest son of Samuel,[3] of Rye, was born October 11, 1725.

3. William,[4] second son, born January 15, 1726.

4. Nehemiah,[4] third son, born February 10, 1728, died December 9, 1758.

5. Elizabeth,[4] daughter of Samuel Lyon,[3] born June 30, 1732, married —— Sherwood; died January 22, 1786.

6. Benjamin,[4] fourth son of Samuel Lyon,[3] born March 7, 1733.

7. Abraham,[4] fifth son, born August 9, 1736, died October 29, 1758.

8. Monmouth Lyon,[4] sixth son of Samuel,[3] born October 19, 1738, died December 7, 1791.

9. Abigail,[4] second daughter, born December 25, 1742.

10. Hannah,[4] third daughter, born July 23, 1744, died April 18, 1795.

11. Silvanus Lyon,[4] of White Plains, seventh son of Samuel,[3] born January 7, 1746, married, October 6, 1790, Sarah, daughter of Isaac Purdy of White Plains, — born August 9, 1757, died December 25,

1844. He died September 3, 1730. Children: Monmouth, Hannah, Sylvanus.

12. Deborah,[4] daughter of Gilbert[3] and Jane Lyon, born March 26, 1743, married Caleb Merritt.

13. Gilbert,[4] son of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born July 13, 1745, married Ruth Lyon. He lived where his grandson Elisha now lives. Gilbert had a son Thomas.

14. Sarah,[4] daughter of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born January 17, 1749, married Andrew Miller.

15. Andrew,[4] son of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born August 5, 1751, married Eunice Kniffen. He had a son Andrew.

16. Joshua,[4] son of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born February 5, 1754, married Elizabeth Purdy, and died October 2, 1841. Children: Samuel, Gilbert, Joshua, John.

17. Simeon,[4] son of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born August 20, 1756, married Mary Mills. No children.

18. Abigail,[4] daughter of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born April 5, 1760, married January 3, 1780, Daniel Purdy, who was born January 15, 1759, and died April 17, 1817. She died July 3, 1841. Children: John Purdy, born March 25, 1781, married three times; died April 21, 1866. Nehemiah Purdy, born January 28, 1783, married Amy M. Brown. Rebecca Purdy, born July 19, 1787, married Samuel Townsend; died August 11, 1831. Hannah Purdy, born December 2, 1790, married William Matthews. Daniel Purdy, born September 13, 1799, married Rachel Brundage. William Purdy, born March 3, 1804, married Dorcas Park; died December 17, 1859.

19. Elizabeth,[4] daughter of Gilbert Lyon,[3] born August 19, 1763, married Samuel Lyon. Mr. Thomas Lyon, now living on Ridge Street, is their son.

20. Abraham,[4] son of Gilbert Lyon,[3] married Hannah Mills. He lived in the old homestead near Byram Bridge, and had three sons: Fitch, Seth, and Elias. Seth Lyon is the present occupant; Fitch lives with him.

V. 1. Underhill,[5] son of Andrew Lyon,[4] born in 1763, married Mary, daughter of Ezekiel Halsted; died May 24, 1795. He lived in the house next to the bridge, on the west side of Byram River. Children: Harriet, Sarah Budd, Eliza Jane, Mary.

2. Tamar,[5] daughter of Andrew Lyon,[4] married —— Purdy, and had several children.

3. Polly,[5] daughter of Andrew Lyon,[4] married first —— Bush, and had a son and two daughters; second —— Davenport.

4. Sarah,[5] daughter of Andrew Lyon,[4] married Ezekiel, son of Ezekiel Halsted, and had five children.

5. Monmouth,[5] son of Silvanus Lyon,[4] born December 7, 1791, married June 28, 1814, Alethea Lyon, born May 3, 1791. Children:

Thomas C.; Sarah Ann, who married Francis Secor, and died October 29, 1844; Caroline, who married William Schotts; John, died young; John P.; Sylvanus; George, died young; William J.

6. Hannah,[5] daughter of Silvanus Lyon,[4] was born January 19, 1795.

7. Sylvanus,[5] son of Silvanus Lyon,[4] born September 14, 1797, died November 18, 1836.

8. Thomas,[5] son of Gilbert Lyon,[4] was the father of Elisha Lyon.

9. Andrew,[5] son of Andrew Lyon,[4] had a son Andrew.

10. Samuel,[5] son of Joshua Lyon,[4] no issue.

11. Gilbert,[5] son of Joshua Lyon,[4] known as Captain Gilbert, was born December 28, 1787; married Deborah Lyon,[4] born November 5, 1795. Children: Alvah A., Gilbert, Robert M., James M., William P.

12. Joshua,[5] son of Joshua Lyon,[4] no issue.

13. John,[5] son of Joshua Lyon,[4] lived on Weaver Street.

VI. 1. Harriet,[6] daughter of Underhill Lyon,[5] married —— Belden. Children: Mary, George.

2. Sarah Budd,[6] daughter of Underhill Lyon,[5] married, January 21, 1819, Rev. Isaac Parsons, born in Southampton, Mass.; graduated at Yale College 1811, at Andover Seminary 1814; settled in East Haddam, Conn., 1816; dismissed 1856; died August 21, 1868. Children: Mary, Harriet, Sarah (died young), Henry M., Elizabeth.

3. Eliza Jane,[6] daughter of Underhill Lyon,[5] born March 5, 1792; married David N. Lord, Esq., of New York; died December 7, 1840.

4. Mary,[6] daughter of Underhill Lyon,[5] born 1794, died 1816.

VII. 1. Mary,[7] daughter of Harriet [Lyon[6]] Belden, married —— Coit.

2. George,[7] son of Harriet [Lyon[6]] Belden.

3. Mary,[7] daughter of Rev. Isaac and Sarah B. [Lyon[6]] Parsons, born December 3, 1821, married S. E. Swift, M. D., of Colchester, Conn.; died October 1856. Children: Theodore, George, Edward.

4. Harriet,[7] second daughter, born April 12, 1823, married, in 1847, Rev. Warren C. Fiske, now of Wolcott, Conn. Children: Henry (died young), Isaac, Sarah, William.

5. Henry M.,[7] son of Rev. Isaac and Sarah B. [Lyon[6]] Parsons, born November 13, 1828, graduated at Yale College 1848, at Theological Institute 1854; settled as pastor of First Congregational Church in Springfield, Mass., 1854, as associate pastor of Union Church (Columbus Avenue), Boston, 1870; married, January 16, 1855, Mary E. Dudley, of Richmond, Va. Children: Ella, Jessie, Emma, Howard (died 1865), Walter.

6. Elizabeth,[7] third daughter of Rev. Isaac and Sarah B. Parsons, born June 15, 1830, married, November 1857, Zechariah Cone of East Haddam, Conn. Children: Jennie, Mary, Alice (died 1868), Elizabeth, Newton.

MERRIT. Thomas and John Merrit came here early, Thomas being mentioned in 1673 and John in 1678. We know nothing of their antecedents. It is supposed that they were brothers, but we have no evidence that such was the case. Both obtained proprietors' rights.

I. Thomas Merrit,[1] called senior in 1698, had married, perhaps as his second wife, Mary, youngest daughter of Robert Francis of Wethersfield, Conn. (Rec.) She was born, says Mr. Savage, in 1656. An 'indenture' regarding the disposition of his property after death, dated October 20, 1688, assigns to his wife the use of his house, etc., which is to descend to his eldest son. He had proprietary rights with Robert Bloomer. He lived nearly opposite the spot where the Park Institute now stands. In 1702 he gave to his son, Thomas junior, his house-lot 'where he [the son] now lives.' Thomas Merrit was one of the principal men of the place. He was sent with Deliverance Brown in January, 1697, to Hartford, to petition the General Court of Connecticut to take the town back into its jurisdiction. (Conn. Rec., vol. iv. p .192.) He was forward in the matter of building a 'meeting-house' and parsonage, and procuring a minister, while under Connecticut. He seems to have taken no part in town affairs after this. He was living in 1713. Children: Thomas, Ephraim, Samuel, and perhaps others.

II. 1. Thomas Merrit,[2] eldest son of Thomas,[1] was called Sergeant Merrit. He lived in the house above mentioned. His death occurred before 1729. Children: Thomas, Edward, John, Benoni, and perhaps others.

2. Ephraim Merrit,[2] son of Thomas,[1] is mentioned 1713–1718.

3. Samuel Merrit,[2] son of Thomas,[1] mentioned 1706, in 1720 had from Thomas[2] of Rye his lands in the White Plains. Samuel had settled there, and was the father of William, of White Plains, and perhaps of George.

III. 1. Thomas Merrit,[3] son of Thomas,[2] went to the White Plains, but sold his farm there in 1740 to Monmouth Hart, and removed to King Street, where he was living in 1755–1768. He was the father of Shubael Merrit.

2. Edward Merrit,[3] son of Thomas,[2] is mentioned 1740–1755; was living in 1748.

3. John Merrit,[3] son of Thomas,[2] mentioned 1721, was of King Street in 1727.

4. Benoni Merrit,[3] son of Thomas,[2] mentioned 1720; in 1724 bought from Richard Cornell of Cow Neck two hundred acres in 'Forcaneer's [Fauconier's] west patent.' In 1737 he was 'of Oyster Bay, merchant,' and sold his house and sixteen acres of land on the country road at Rye.

5. William Merrit,[3] son of Samuel,[2] in 1739 bought from Joseph Haight and others one hundred acres in Harrison's Purchase, 'beginning at the bridge over Mamaroneck river in the White Plains road,'

and lying between the river and the 'land of y^e^ Heavlins.' He was living in 1755. He had two sons, — Joseph and Elijah.

6. George Merrit, of the White Plains, perhaps a brother of William, bought at the same time for the same price a similar tract of land north of his. He was living in 1752.

IV. Joseph,[4] son of William,[3] had four sons — Abraham,[5] Joshua[5] (father of Abraham,[6] David,[6] and Joseph,[6] now living), David,[5] and James.[5] Joseph[4] died September 3, 1793.

I. John Merrit,[1] mentioned 1678, bought in 1680, from several individuals about forty acres of land between Byram River, and Gunn Brook Creek: and in 1686 he had an allotment of twenty acres more in the same locality. Thus and by other purchases he acquired early a considerable tract, beginning with Lyon's Point, then Merrit's Point, and extending some distance below Port Chester, on both sides of Grace Church Street. He was living here in 1706. He had proprietor's rights with John Boyd. John Merrit 'senior' is mentioned as late as 1724. Children: John, Jonathan, Andrew, and perhaps Joseph.

II. 1. John Merrit,[2] son of John,[1] is called junior in 1700. He had land in Will's Purchase. He had a son John.

2. Jonathan Merrit,[2] called 'son of John Merrit senior' in 1718, is mentioned 1708. He lived in 1744 'near Byram river or harbour.' He had a son Jonathan and a son John.

3. Andrew Merrit,[2] son of John,[1] lived on Merrit's Point. In 1706, 'John Merrit senior, husbandman,' gave his son Andrew 'my farm where I dwell,' bounded east by Byram River, north by Gunn Brook Cove, west by the Hassocky Meadow Brook, and the country road, and south by Richard Ogden's land; to be his 'when he shall attain the age of twenty-one years.'

Andrew Merrit, who lived on Grace Church Street in 1757, and was called captain, 1749–1760, was probably the son of Andrew.[2]

4. Joseph Merrit,[2] perhaps a son of John,[1] is mentioned 1707, when he took up lands on Hog-pen Ridge. In 1708 he was one of the proprietors of Will's purchases. In 1740 he sold to Gilbert Bloomer thirty-two acres near the present Park's mill. He had a son called Joseph junior in 1727.

III. 1. John Merrit,[3] son of John,[2] is called 'junior' in 1732.

2. Jonathan Merrit,[3] son of Jonathan,[2] lived on Hog-pen Ridge in 1757. In 1748, Jonathan[2] of Rye conveyed to his son Jonathan[3] his house and twenty acres, between 'Byram river harbour' and the road or street. This property Jonathan seems to have sold, as he did Fox Island in 1753, to Samuel Lyon.

3. John Merrit,[3] son of Jonathan,[2] in 1750 sold part of his father's estate to Samuel Lyon.

4. Andrew Merrit,[3] perhaps son of Andrew.[2]

5. Joseph Merrit,[3] called junior in 1727, lived on the southeast corner of the Ridge Road and the road to Park's mill. He had a son Joseph.

IV. 1. Jonathan,[4] son of Jonathan,[3] was perhaps the person, — father of Jonathan, Abraham, Daniel, and Thomas, — several of whose descendants are now living in the town. He had also three daughters — Alethea, Elizabeth, and Mary.

2. Joseph Merrit,[4] son of Joseph,[3] was born January 14, 1731. He married Ruth ——, born June 3, 1737; and died May 19, 1782. Children:

Joseph, born February 15, 1753.
Nehemiah, born March 3, 1756.
Joseph, born October 12, 1760.
Daniel, born March 31, 1764.
Anna, born June 20, 1766.
Sarah, born May 14, 1768.
Jotham, born July 19, 1770.
John, born April 14, 1774.
Lot, born March 2, 1777.

V. 1. Nehemiah Merrit,[5] son of Joseph,[4] lived on Ridge Street, where Mr. W. Acker now lives. He had two sons, John and Daniel; and a daughter unmarried. He died about the year 1836.

2. Daniel Merrit,[5] son of Joseph.[4]

3. Anna Merrit,[5] daughter of Joseph,[4] married Nathaniel Brown, of Scarsdale.

4. Jotham Merrit,[5] son of Joseph,[4] had one son, John A. Merrit.

5. Lot Merrit,[5] son of Joseph,[4] had no children.

VI. 1. John Merrit,[6] son of Nehemiah,[5] was unmarried.

2. Daniel Merrit,[6] son of Nehemiah,[5] is living on the upper part of Ridge Street. Children: Daniel, Ezra B., Joseph.

Miller. James Miller, in 1681 had land on Budd's Neck near 'the old Westchester path.' In 1701 'the towne hath granted by a voat unto James Miller tenn eakers of land within the White Plaines purches to be Layd out by those layers out which was chosen to lay out the White Plaines to the best of their descretion.' He is mentioned again about 1708.

Abraham Miller, mentioned 1708–1738, was perhaps a son of James. In 1720, he sold a tract of land on Brown's Point in Harrison. In 1745, Abraham Miller lived directly north of Abraham Bush's land (now Gershom Bulkley's) in Saw Pit. A namesake, perhaps a son of his, was of Saw Pit, 1783–1792.

Samuel Miller, mentioned 1718–1727, was of Budd's Neck. In 1741 he sold seventy acres of land situated apparently where James [1] owned in 1681. The next year he sold to his father-in-law, Joseph Lyon, a considerable tract of land in the lower part of Harrison.

Anthony Miller, perhaps another son, mentioned 1711–1718. In 1640, he had land in White Plains.

Gilbert Miller, 'son of Abraham,' 1752, was of King Street in 1759. He died in April 1792.

William Miller was of Harrison in 1771.

Daniel and Richard Miller were living in the upper part of the town at the beginning of this century.

Roger Miller's name occurs in 1793.

James Miller lived on North Street in 1762–1764.

Lyon Miller, in 1775, was chosen first lieutenant of a company raised in 'Harrison and the upper part of King street.' (N. Y. Rev. Papers, vol. i. p. 159.) 'Lyon Miller died March 15, 1814, aged seventy-seven years, eight months, and eleven days. Susanna, wife of Lyon Miller, died July 14, 1802, aged sixty-nine years.' (Cemetery near Mamaroneck.)

Odell. William, was perhaps a son of William Odell of Concord, Mass. (Savage.) If so, he came over at the age of five years in 1639 with his father, who settled in Fairfield. William Odell was one of the first settlers of Rye. He was with the Hastings planters in 1662, and continued here apparently until his death, which occurred between 1697 and 1700. He had land in the various divisions during his life. His house-lot, afterward John Brondige's, was about the northern part of Mr. J. E. Corning's garden. He married a daughter of Richard Vowles of Rye. Our records mention his sons John and Samuel. The latter is not mentioned by Mr. Bolton in the pedigree which he gives of William Odell's descendants (History of Westchester Co., vol. ii. p. 536); according to which, William had five sons, Stephen, John, Michael, Isaac, and Jonathan. Perhaps the first name should read Samuel.

II. 1. John Odell,[2] son of William,[1] signed as witness in 1683. He removed to Fordham, and is the ancestor of the numerous family of this name in the western part of our county. In 1706, John Odell of Fordham sold to George Kniffen of Rye his interest in the undivided lands, 'below the marked trees which belongs unto the Eighteen;' namely a thirty-sixth part of said lands, which part 'was his deceased father William Odell's.' For the descendants of John, see Bolton's History, vol. ii. pp. 536, 537.

2. Samuel Odell,[2] son of William, in 1684 had from his father William all his title and interest in the White Plains purchase. He removed, like his brother, to the Manor of Fordham, where with his wife Patience he was 'very well settled to their satisfaction,' when, about the year 1693, his uncle Jonathan Vowles, of Rye, 'happening at that time to be parted and living separate from his then wife Deborah, and being alone and having no children, persuaded him to leave his habitation and to go and live with him.' In compensation for his services, about nine years after, according to his own statement, Samuel received, by deed from Vowles, the southernmost part of Mounsting [Manussing] Island, containing about 150 acres.' Six or seven years after, says Samuel, Deborah, who was then living with her husband, came and borrowed the deed, and he has never seen it since. He returned to Fordham (about 1708, apparently), but persisted in his claim against Roger Park who in 1707 bought from Vowles his father-in-law the land on Manussing Island. Samuel petitioned the governor in 1717

for a patent, and in 1720 remonstrated against the granting of a patent to the inhabitants of Rye without recognition of his claim.

In 1715, William Odell, of East Chester, sold to George Kniffen, of Rye, for twenty pounds, his *quarter* 'of an eighteenth part or share of undivided lands.' According to the pedigree given by Mr. Bolton, this William was the eldest son of Isaac Odell of East Chester, fourth son of William.[1]

None of this name appear in our records after these dates. The few families that reside here now have I presume removed hither in later years from other towns.

Ogden. I. John Ogden of Rye in 1674 (Pub. Rec. of Conn., vol. ii. p. 236), was of Stamford originally, and was undoubtedly related to John Ogden, the builder, who settled there in 1641; but cannot have been he, as Mr. Huntington supposes (Hist. of Stamford, p. 39), nor his son, as Mr. Savage conjectures. (Gen. Dict.) For John removed as early as 1644 to Hempstead, thence to Northampton, L. I., and settled in 1664–1665 at Elizabeth, N. J. (Dr. Hatfield's Hist. of Elizabeth), where he died in 1681, and where John junior was living from 1673 to 1694. Our settler was unquestionably a son of Richard, brother of the first John Ogden, who, says Mr. Huntington, went to Fairfield, where he became a man of note, and who had numerous descendants.

John Ogden, of Rye, is first heard of in 1669, when John Budd mentions him with 'Juddey [Judith] his wife,' who was Budd's daughter. In 1674 he was deputy for Rye to the General Court at Hartford. In 1678 he had several allotments here, as well as a tract of land on Budd's Neck which he had received from his wife's father. His house-lot was at the upper end of the town, near Mr. Joseph Kirby's present dwelling. In 1679 the town made a grant to 'John Ogden of forty-eight or fifty acres of land by the water side at the fishing rock, for the purpose of building a house and wharf. The inhabitants of Peningoe Neck to have wharfage free.' (Bolton, vol. ii. p. 93) July 13, 1681, the town authorized John Ogden and George Kniffen to purchase a barrel of powder and three hundred weight of lead of Mr. Budd of Fairfield, or wherever it can be obtained the cheapest. These to be kept for the use of the town. (Rye Rec., in Bolton, vol. ii. p. 47.) Ogden died in 1683. He left a widow, who in the same year married Francis Brown, of Rye, previously of Stamford. Ogden had three sons, Joseph, Richard, and David.

II. 1. Joseph Ogden,[2] son of John,[1] mentioned 1685–1715, had land on Budd's Neck from his father; a portion of which — thirty rods wide from Westchester old path to the sea — he sold in 1699 to Benjamin Horton. He had a wife and a daughter Mary, and probably a son Joseph. In 1717, perhaps shortly after his death, 'Mary Ogden, spinster,' released to her mother Mary Ogden all title to her father's prop-

erty. Joseph,[3] living on Budd's Neck in 1740, was probably a son of Joseph.[2]

2. Richard Ogden,[2] son of John,[1] is mentioned 1696–1726. He is ranked among the proprietors. In 1696 Francis Brown and Judah his wife release to their 'son Richard Ogden' certain parcels of land, 'with all in both Will's purchases and also in the Eighteen Men's propriety that is below the marked trees upon Penninggoe neck so called.' In 1699, 'att a lawful meeting of the proprietors of Peningo Neck the said proprietors do grant unto Richard Ogden an Island commonly called Fox Island.' (See page 134.) This island he sold in 1722 to Jonathan Merrit. Richard was 'active in real estate.' The recording of his purchases and sales, on the ridges, in the swamps, and at 'y^e^ Plaines,' must have helped to keep good Samuel Lane, the town clerk, in occupation. Among the rest he sells in 1699 some land 'lying in a place commonly *Dick's* Hollow.'

3. David Ogden,[2] son of John,[1] in 1700 was to have his step-father Francis Brown's dwelling lot, and the salt meadow lying by the mill creek 'formerly called Bolluck's meadow,' after his death. He removed to the White Plains, where he and his son David, junior, were living in 1741, and had land. In 1745, father and son 'of Rye' sold to Henry Scott of Mamaroneck one hundred and thirty-eight acres in the White Plains purchase for four hundred and ninety-four pounds. And in 1751 David Ogden of *Scarsdale* sold to Samuel Purdy, junior, a lot 'called y^e^ fifth or last division of the White Plains purchase — lying at the north end of said purchase, adjoining y^e^ line called the Indian line.'

John Ogden, mentioned 1702–1708, was perhaps a son of one of the above.

Jonathan Ogden, mentioned 1720–1737, was of North Castle.

Daniel Ogden is mentioned 1720.

Park. The name was originally spelled *Parcque*, the family being of Huguenot extraction.

I. Roger Park, according to the family tradition, fled from France in the time of the persecution of the Protestants, and came to this country. His name occurs at Rye as early as 1699, when Joseph Horton conveyed to him, *his son-in-law*, one half of his home-lot lying at the White Plains, with one half of his right in said purchase. In 1718 he appears among the proprietors of Peningo Neck, and has a share of land allotted to him, under a new division of the common lands.

II. Roger Park,[2] probably the son of the above named, is mentioned in 1707 as son-in-law to Jonathan Vowles, who conveys to him his land on the southern part of 'Minusin Island.' His title to this property was contested, in 1716 and 1720, by Samuel Odell, Vowles' nephew, who appears to have failed to make good his claim. Roger Park's descendants were still in possession of this land a few years since; one of them owns a part of it at present. His second wife was

Charlotte Strang. In 1729 he was living in Harrison's Purchase. He is probably the 'Roger Park, *senior*,' mentioned in 1768 as still living. Children: Roger; Mary, who married Joshua Purdy; Sophia, married Nehemiah Brown; Thomas; Lucy, married Moses Husted; Charlotte, married Benjamin Haviland.

III. 1. Roger Park[3] was a large proprietor and a leading man in the town. He owned farms in Harrison, and Rye. He married Sarah, daughter of Peter Disbrow, who died January 6, 1811, aged eighty years. Roger Park's will, written in 1768, was proved in 1788. His children were: Jesse (named Justus in the will); Disbrow (without issue); John (without issue); Anna, married Lemuel Jagger; Sarah, married Thomas McCollum; Lavinia, married Bilha Theall.

2. Thomas,[3] second son of Roger Park,[2] born March 8, 1720, married, January 1, 1747, Martha, daughter of Thomas Carpenter, born May 21, 1729. Thomas Park lived on the site of the house now occupied by Mrs. Mary Park, on the cross road to North Street, near the Purchase Road. He owned a large tract of land in that vicinity. Children: Thomas, born December 11, 1747; Joseph, born October 10, 1750; Mary, married Nehemiah Purdy, born August 24, 1752; Roger, born July 11, 1754; Hannah, born March 18, 1756, unmarried; Daniel, born November 27, 1758; Stephen and Thomas (twins), born August 17, 1761; Timothy, born April 27, 1766.

IV. 1. Jesse Park,[4] son of Roger Park,[3] married Phœbe Sawyer. His children were:

Jesse,
James,
Moses Husted,
Thomas,
John,
Levina, married Elijah Purdy,
Ann, unmarried,
Jane, married Alexander Hubbs,
Phœbe, unmarried.

2. Thomas Park,[4] eldest son of Thomas,[3] probably died young.

3. Joseph Park,[4] second son of Thomas,[3] had one son, Israel, and three daughters, — Charlotte, married James Paulding; Mary, married William Sniffen; and Abby.

4. Roger Park,[4] third son of Thomas,[3] married first, Elizabeth Lyon. Children: Sophia, died young; Phœbe, unmarried; Samuel, Thomas, and Timothy. His second wife was Sarah Lyon; who had one son, Knapp.

5. Daniel Park,[4] fourth son of Thomas,[3] married Emma, daughter of Daniel Knapp. He lived on the lower part of North Street, where he had a large farm. They had three sons, Knapp, Thomas, and Daniel.

6. Stephen Park,[4] fifth son of Thomas,[3] was not married.

7. Thomas Park,[4] sixth son of Thomas,[3] married Nancy Lyon, and had several children.

8. Timothy Park[4] youngest son of Thomas,[3] married first, Anna, daughter of Jonathan Sniffen, and had one son, Joseph, and two daugh-

ters, — Mary, who married Daniel Park (son of Daniel[4]), and Anne. Timothy married, secondly, Arna, daughter of Abram Hobby, and had one daughter, Martha.

V. 1. Jesse Park,[5] son of Jesse,[4] married Martha H., daughter of Robert Kennedy, and widow of Augustus Tredwell. She was born June 5, 1775, and died January 16, 1853. Jesse Park died May 15, 1848, aged seventy-six years. Children: Thomas, William, Augustus, Jesse; Sarah Ann, married Benjamin Watson; Ann Maria; and Nancy Jane, married —— Furlong.

2. James Park,[5] second son of Jesse,[4] married Mercy, daughter of Nathanael Carpenter. He lived in Bedford, and had several children.

3. Moses Husted Park,[5] third son of Jesse,[4] was not married.

4. Thomas Park,[5] fourth son, was not married.

5. John Park,[5] fifth son, was not married.

6. Israel Park,[5] son of Joseph.[4]

7. Samuel Park,[5] son of Roger.[4]

8. Thomas Park,[5] son of Roger.[4]

9. Timothy Park,[5] son of Roger.[4]

10. Knapp Park,[5] son of Daniel,[4] married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Wilson. He lived on King Street. He had one son, Thomas, and three daughters, Emma, Deborah, Dorcas.

11. Thomas Park,[5] son of Daniel,[4] died young.

12. Daniel Park,[5] son of Daniel,[4] married Mary, daughter of Timothy Park,[4] now living in Harrison.

13. Joseph Park,[5] only son of Timothy,[4] married Mary Delavan. They have had three sons — Jonathan, Joseph, and Charles; and two daughters, — Clarissa, married Henry W. Wheaton, and Elizabeth, married David Purdy.

Pearce. Jacob Pearce, 'husbandman,' first mentioned 1680, had lands and proprietary rights here in 1683, and may have been here several years previous to the former date. His house-lot was where Mr. B. S. Olmstead now lives, and he also owned the land now Miss Mead's. In 1690 'Jacob Paers of Rye' was one of the soldiers who left Fort William on the second of April, in the expedition to repel the French and Indians after the burning of Schenectady. He did not live to return. (See page 48, where the date should be 1689 Old Style, or 1690 New Style.) His widow Mary married Isaac Denham, son of the Rev. Thomas Denham, who thus acquired Pearce's proprietary rights, as well as his other estate. 'At a Prerogative Court held at Westchester, the 7th and 8th Xber 1694, Isaac Denham Husband of the Widdow and Relict of Jacob Peirce deceased brought into Court an Inventory of said Peirce's estate.' The Court confirmed upon her the said Mary all the moveable estate, and decreed that the lands remain in her possession till the right heir appears. A claimant seems to have turned up, perhaps a brother or more distant relative. In 1713, a list

of 'The Draft of the Branch Ridge Lots' then laid out is headed with the name of 'Christopher Bridge for Daniel Pierce in Right of Jacob Pierce deceased.' (Town Mg. Bk., G. p. 20.) This Daniel is not mentioned elsewhere.

PURDY. Francis Purdy, of Fairfield, Conn., who died in 1658, is believed to have been the common ancestor of the numerous race bearing this name, scattered widely throughout our county. Three sons of Francis, — JOHN, JOSEPH, and FRANCIS, — came early to Rye; John in the year 1670, Joseph by 1677, and Francis by 1679. The following account of them and of their descendants is drawn chiefly from our Town Records, for the more remote degrees. Family records have been consulted as far as accessible.

The pedigree of the Purdy family given in the appendix to Mr. Bolton's invaluable History of Westchester County, has been of some service in the preparation of the following account. But for the earlier portion it is utterly inaccurate and incoherent. Thus, Joseph Purdy, who died in 1709, leaving seven sons, is represented as the grandson, instead of the brother, of John Purdy.[1] No mention is made of a brother Joseph,[1] nor of the descendants of the brother Francis;[1] while Samuel, who married Penelope Strang (whose father Daniel was born in 1656, and came to America in 1688), is called a son of Francis of Fairfield, who died in 1658. I have relied on the pedigree only for the accounts of some of the later generations, which appear to have been derived from authentic sources, and are generally confirmed by the information I have been able to gain.

I. JOHN PURDY[1] came to Rye in 1670, from East Chester, where however his stay must have been short, for his name does not occur among the names of the early settlers of that place. On his arrival here he bought John Jackson's house and lands, with his rights, and a home-lot on the Plains from John Banks. He died about 1678, leaving a widow, Elizabeth, and two sons under age. His widow and John Brondig administered his estate, and 'Elizabeth Purdy's children' figure in our records as owning various allotments, and a share in the undivided lands.

II. 1. 'Daniel Purdy, son of John, deceased,' was about thirty-five years of age when constable in 1711, and hence could have been but an infant when his father died. His name is associated with that of Francis, senior, his uncle, in deeds and lists of the proprietors, 1699–1709. From this fact, and inasmuch as no other son of John[1] is mentioned, we infer that his brother died young.

I. JOSEPH PURDY[1] is first mentioned in 1677, and in 1678 owned land adjoining that of 'his brother John Purdy's children.' He was a leading member of the community, — being supervisor of the town in 1707–1708; justice of the peace in 1702 and after; representative of the county for several years in the Assembly; and 'one of the chief

promoters of the church,' writes the Rev. Mr. Wetmore many years later. With Colonel Heathcote and others, in 1701, he purchased lands in North Castle, where some of his descendants settled. His will is dated October 5, 1709. He had seven sons: Joseph, Daniel, Samuel, David, Jonathan, John (called Still John), and Francis.

II. 1. Joseph Purdy,[2] son of Joseph,[1] was of Rye. He died in or before 1734, leaving a son, Obadiah.

2. Daniel Purdy,[2] son of Joseph,[1] was one of the patentees of Budd's Neck in 1720. He was alive in 1750. His house stood on the site of Mr. Sylvanus Purdy's present tenement house; and his farm lay below this point, on both sides of the road. He also owned a thousand acres in Courtlandt's Manor, or North Salem, which he left to two of his grandsons. He had three sons: Hachaliah, Joshua, and Daniel.

3. Samuel Purdy,[2] son of Joseph,[1] first mentioned 1708, died in 1753. The Rev. Mr. Wetmore, in 1732, requested the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts to appoint him schoolmaster at Rye, recommending him as 'a gentleman very well respected in the town, a constant communicant in the church, a man of good abilities and sober exemplary life and conversation. He is the foremost justice of the peace in the parish, and one of the quorum, as well as chaplain [captain?] of the militia.' (Bolton, Church, p. 261.) Mr. Purdy was chosen to various other offices of trust; as that of supervisor, town clerk, overseer, and farmer of the excise. In 1753 Mr. Wetmore reports that 'the Church has suffered a loss by the death of Mr. Purdy, the Society's schoolmaster, who was a friend to religion, and did many kind offices to the poor, as far as he was able. His corpse was attended to the Church on Ash Wednesday by a great concourse of people of all persuasions.' (Ibid. p. 284.) Shortly before his death, he had sold to his two sons, Samuel and Caleb, for one hundred and seventy pounds, 'my home-lot where I dwell, in Rye,' comprising five acres. This included the present rectory grounds of Christ Church.

4. David Purdy,[2] son of Joseph,[1] lived on 'Brown's Point,' in Harrison's Purchase, 1739–1747. In 1752 he and his son Nathan were 'both of Newburgh.' The pedigree mentions also a son David.

5. Jonathan Purdy,[2] son of Joseph,[1] called 'Captain' in 1750, was of White Plains as early as 1729. According to the pedigree, he married Mary Hart, and had four children: Elijah, Jonathan, Joseph, and Elizabeth, who married —— Williams.

6. John Purdy,[2] called 'Still John,' son of Joseph,[1] married Rebecca ——, and removed to North Castle as early as 1736. He was living in 1760, when 'Still John Purdy,' both senior and junior, with others, petitioned the governor for lands on the northern frontier. (See page 213.) The *sobriquet*, which recalls William 'the Silent,' may refer to a kind of business more frequently carried on by farmers in those days than now.

7. Francis Purdy,[2] youngest son of Joseph,[1] was of Newburgh, and 'lately of Rye,' in 1750, when he released to his brother Daniel of Rye all claims on 'the farm where Daniel now lives, below the country road, on Budd's neck, which our deceased father Joseph owned.' He had a son Daniel.

III. 1. Obadiah Purdy,[3] son of Joseph,[2] mentioned 1734, was, according to the pedigree, the father of Caleb.

2. Hachaliah Purdy,[3] eldest son of Daniel,[2] lived where his father had lived on Budd's Neck. He married Sarah, daughter of Elisha Budd.

3. Joshua Purdy,[3] second son of Daniel,[2] was known as 'Captain.' The house now owned by Mr. William Purdy was built by Daniel for this son. Tradition speaks of him as a man of remarkable excellence. He lived until near the close of the last century. After the war he bought the farm now Mrs. A. W. Bradford's for his son Joshua, leaving his own farm to his son Roger. See page 210 for some further accounts of him.

4. Daniel Purdy,[3] third son of Daniel,[2] had two sons, Joseph and Daniel.

5. Samuel Purdy,[3] son of Samuel,[2] in 1754 sold his share of certain lands to his brother Caleb.

6. Caleb Purdy,[3] son of Samuel,[2] in 1740 bought two hundred acres in the lower part of Harrison's Purchase. 'Caleb Purdy's two sons' lived on West Street before the Revolution.

7. Elijah Purdy,[3] son of Jonathan,[2] of White Plains (see pedigree), married Lavinia Hoyt. Children:

Samuel,	Mary, who married John Purdy,
David,	Abby, who married Jonathan Purdy,
John,	Fridy, who married John Haviland,
Israel,	Lavinia, who married Isenhart Purdy,
Elijah,	Hester; and Melissa, who married Thomas Halsted.

8. Jonathan Purdy,[3] of White Plains, son of Jonathan[2] (pedigree), married Charity Hadden. Children:

Jonathan,	Nebe, married Amos Purdy,
Benjamin,	Glorianna, married Henry Budd,
Timothy,	Sarah, Elizabeth, Charity.
Job,	

9. Joseph Purdy,[3] son of Jonathan[2] (ibid.) married Charity Isenhart. Children:

Jonathan,	Wermoth,	——, married —— De Lancey,
Joseph,	Michael,	Charity, married —— Purdy.
Henry,		

IV. Joshua Purdy,[4] son of Joshua,[3] was living on the farm above mentioned at the commencement of the Revolutionary War. The pedigree in Bolton's History states that he married Lætitia Guion, and had

three sons: Isaac of North Salem, Thomas of Rye, and Joshua of North Salem.

2. Roger Purdy,[4] son of Daniel,[3] lived where Mr. William Purdy now lives, on the post-road below the village. In 1774 he, or another Roger, was a prisoner at Fishkill under the orders of the Provincial Congress. His good conduct subsequently is certified in the following paper: 'Cortlandt's Manor, 18th Novr 1775. Gentlemen, whereas Roger Purdy of the town of Rye in the County of Westchester was some time last fall made prisoner, and was till some time in January under the care of the guard at Fishkill, at which time his brother Joseph [Joshua?] Purdy of this place released him from that confinement by giving his obligation that the said Roger shall not at any time abscond the said Joseph's farm, until by authority released from that confinement. Now the said Roger humbly begs of the gentlemen so authorized to enlarge his bounds 4 or 5 miles, his said brother giving obligations that he shall not exceed his boundaries for which and we the subscribers (being near neighbours to the said Purdy) do certify that the said Roger has since he has been in this place been true to his trust and behaved himself very well to our knowledge.

James Brown
Andrew Brown.'

I. Francis Purdy,[1] brother of John,[1] is first heard of in 1679. At a Court of Election held at Hartford, May 8th in that year, 'This Court doe grant liberty to John Brandig and Eliz: Purdy, who are administrators to the estate of John Purdy of Rye, deceassed, to make, signe, seale and deliver unto Francis Purdy deeds of sale for the one halfe of those lands John Purdy afoarsayd bought of John Jackson, lyeing in Rye, which were purchased for the sayd Francis Purdy intentionally as appeares by sundry testimonies exhibited in this Court by Mr. John Bankes: which sayd deeds of sale when compleated according to law shall have full force and vertue to hold the sayd lands firm to the sayd Francis Purdy, his heires and assignes forever.' (Public Records of Conn., vol. iii. p. 28.)

Francis thus acquired land and proprietary rights in Rye. His house-lot was on Wolf-pit, — afterward called Pulpit Ridge, — the hill above the village, where the district school, Park Institute, and Female Seminary now stand. His name occurs until 1722, when he gave to his son Daniel all his house and lands in Rye — Daniel promising to leave his parents in possession during their lives, 'and if it please God as they live till they are past labour, to maintain them sufficiently during their natural lives.'

The children of Francis, whom we find mentioned, are, Francis junior, Joseph, Daniel, and a daughter who married Samuel Kniffen. Thomas and Samuel were perhaps also his sons.

II. 1. Francis Purdy,[2] son of Francis,[1] in 1698–1699 bought land at

the White Plains, and in 1701 a 'lotment' of thirty-eight acres on Hog-pen Ridge. In 1716 'Francis Purdy junior' appeared for his father Francis senior, at the Court of Sessions in Westchester, with a request relative to his nephew William Sneffin. (Co. Rec., B. 50.) We have no account of any children of his.

2. 'Joseph Purdy,[2] junior, son of Francis,' was so styled in 1699, when he bought Richard Ogden's dwelling-house, with eight and one half acres, on 'the highway that goeth to the mill.'

3. Daniel Purdy,[2] son of Francis,[1] lived on the east side of Blind Brook, or on Peningo Neck. He was constable in 1717, and is mentioned repeatedly, 1711–1722, as son of Francis, and perhaps, 1724–1728, as 'Daniel Purdy drummer.'

4. Thomas Purdy [2] was perhaps another son of Francis.[1] He is first mentioned 1704. In 1717 he owned land on Branch Ridge with Daniel 'merchant:' and in 1737–1747 his son James, 'with Daniel Purdy, drummer,' sells part of his estate. Thomas' will was dated 1731. His homestead of thirty acres, 'with house, barn, cider-mill, orchard,' etc., on the west side of the country road near Benjamin Brown's, was bought in 1737 by Joshua Brundige. His sons were James and Nehemiah.

III. Of Francis Purdy's[1] descendants beyond the second generation we cannot speak positively, but there are grounds for believing that his son Joseph [2] was the ancestor, perhaps the father, of Roger, Moses, and William; that Thomas,[2] the father of James,[3] was the ancestor of Joseph, Jacob, and James.

The late David Purdy informed me that his great-grandfather Joseph lived in a house on the knoll south of the house on the road to Milton now owned by Mr. W. Mathews — formerly the Clark mansion; and that from there he removed to North Street. This location agrees with the description of Richard Ogden's homestead, bought in 1699 by Joseph Purdy.[2] Our account of this branch of the family is derived from the person above referred to, and from the Town Records.

Roger Purdy, son of Joseph, lived on North Street, nearly opposite the present district school-house. In 1741 he bought land on the east side of the White Plains Road, extending to Roger Park's land. Later, he purchased land of Elisha Budd, north of this.

William and Moses Purdy, sons of Joseph, in 1746 bought a farm of eighty acres on the west side of the White Plains Road, above Job Hadden's. Moses in 1763 bought seventy-seven and one fourth acres 'between the White Plains road and Mamaroneck river.'

William Purdy had a son Abraham, who was the father of the late David Purdy, father of Isaac Purdy of Rye.

James Purdy,[3] probably son of Thomas,[2] had a son James,[4] the father of Joseph,[5] Jacob,[5] and James [5] Purdy. Joseph [5] spent a number of years at the South, and died at Milton, in Rye, about the year 1848.

He left no children. Jacob[5] had two sons, James[6] and Alexander.[6] He died at Milton about the year 1806. His son James[6] — still living — was born in 1788, and has had five sons and three daughters, all of whom, except one daughter, are dead. His brother Alexander never married. James,[5] third son of James,[4] died about the year 1855. He resided in the West, and left several children.

Samuel Purdy, who 'married Penelope, daughter of Daniel Strang and Charlotte his wife,' is called in the pedigree the 'youngest son of the first Francis' (of Fairfield). This is altogether improbable, as the sons of Francis — John, Joseph, and Francis — were men in 1670–1679, when Penelope was not yet born. Besides, Samuel is not mentioned in our records until 1709. I think it likely that he was a son of Francis,[2] who might readily be mistaken for Francis.[1] He was at all events contemporary with this third generation; and for convenience the names of his descendants will be numbered accordingly in the following account, which is based upon the pedigree. Samuel and Penelope had five sons: Samuel, Henry, Gabriel, Josiah, Caleb; and three daughters, Charlotte, married Samuel Fowler; Clara, married George Merritt; Elizabeth, married Josiah Fowler.

IV. 1. Samuel Purdy,[4] eldest son of Samuel[3] and Penelope, married Wineford Griffin.

2. Henry Purdy,[4] second son, married Mary Foster.

3. Gabriel Purdy,[4] third son, married Eliza Miller.

4. Josiah Purdy,[4] son of Samuel,[3] and Penelope, married Charity, daughter of the Rev. James Wetmore. His grandson, Mr. Josiah Purdy, informs me that he lived in a house which stood close by the road, a few rods north of the Park Academy. The chimney of this house was standing seventy years ago. He owned a tract of sixty-five acres across the road, known as 'the Cedars,' as well as all the land between the post-road and the Purchase Road, for some distance northward from the present flag-staff. Part of this land he sold to Jesse Hunt. Josiah Purdy died about the year 1755, leaving one son, Seth; and three daughters: Alethea, married first Joseph Purdy, second, William Purdy; Esther, who married Henry Purdy of King Street; and Hannah, who married Josiah Merrit. (Josiah in 1753 took the ear-mark 'which was Francis Purdy's.' This confirms the supposition that his father Samuel was Francis' son.)

5. Caleb Purdy,[4] son of Samuel[3] and Penelope, married Hannah Brown, daughter of Samuel, and had seven sons and four daughters:

Caleb,	Nehemiah,	Hannah
Samuel,	Sylvanus,	Lavinia,
Josiah,	Elias,	Anne.
Andrew,	Caroline,	

V. 1. Seth Purdy,[5] only son of Josiah[4] and Charity, succeeded to his

father's lands in Rye, and was living here at the time of the Revolution. He married Phœbe Ketchum of Long Island. Children:

Joshua, Josiah, Alethea, Charity, Phœbe.
Seth, Keziah, Elizabeth, Melinda,

2. Caleb Purdy,[5] eldest son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married Ruth Peck. Children: Caleb, Elias, Ruth, Sarah.

3. Samuel Purdy,[5] second son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married Glorianna Fowler. Children: Gabriel, Samuel, Phœbe, Elizabeth, Glorianna, Hannah.

4. Josiah Purdy,[5] third son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married U. Knapp. Children: Josiah, Joshua.

5. Andrew Purdy,[5] fourth son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married Phœbe Merrit. Children: Robert, Andrew ('Andrew, son of Andrew & Phœbe Purdy, bapt. Jan. 1791.' — *Notit. Paroch.*), John Merrit; Phœbe, Hevelinda.

6. Nehemiah Purdy,[5] fifth son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married Elizabeth Burchum. Children: Thomas, Nehemiah, Caleb ('Caleb, son of Neh. & Eliz. Purdy, bapt. Sept. 28, 1791.' — *Notit. Paroch.*), Hannah, Anne, Elizabeth, Deborah.

7. Sylvanus Purdy,[5] sixth son.

8. Elias Purdy,[5] seventh son of Caleb[4] and Hannah, married Rachel Merrit. Children: Elias, Merrit ('Merritt, son of Elias & Rachel Purdy, bapt. Mar. 4, 1793'), William Henry, Caleb, Sarah, Ophelia.

VI. 1. Joshua Purdy,[6] eldest son of Seth[5] and Phœbe.

2. Seth Purdy,[6] second son.

3. Josiah Purdy,[6] third son.

Roberts. 'Simon Robards, of Boston,' about 1680 bought of Philip Galpin a house-lot of three acres in Rye, near the Field Gate, with one quarter of all his 'commonage or undivided lands, on the east side of Blind brook.'

Robisson. Hannah, wife of Thomas Robisson, and sister of Joseph, John, and Benjamin Horton, in 1699, had five acres from her brother Benjamin, on Budd's Neck, between Stony Brook and Westchester old path. Her husband was perhaps Thomas of Guilford, whose controversies are set forth in the Public Records of Connecticut, 1677–1699. (Vol. ii. pp. 322, 323; vol. iii. pp. 90, 99; vol. iv. p. 447.)

Rockwell. John Rockwell was of Stamford, 1641–1669. (Hist. of Stamford, p. 40.) In 1673 he had land at Rye on Budd's Neck, east of Joseph Horton. He died in or before 1677. The General Court at Hartford, that year, May 18, 'being informed to their sattisfaction of the necessity of the selling of the land of John Rockwell, late of Rye, to pay his just debts and for the supply of his wife and children, doe impower the relict of sayd Rockwell and Daniel Weed to make sale of the sayd Rockwell's land, and to grant assureance of the same.' (Pub. Rec. of Conn., vol. ii. p. 313.) A difficulty occurred in

the settling of this estate, which was not ended until thirty years after. In 1707, Jonathan Rockwell, of Norwalk, acknowledged satisfaction received from Philip, son of Garit Traves of Rye, 'concerning a dispute a lotment of upland and parcel of salt meadow belonging to it on Budd's Neck, formerly possessed by his deceased father John Rockwell of Rye.'

SHERWOOD. I. Stephen and Isaac Sherwood were the sons of Thomas, one of the settlers of Stratford, who came to Boston in 1634 from Ipswich, England. He was at Stamford in 1648, and his will, dated July 21, 1655, mentions these sons, with Matthew and three daughters, as the children of his first wife. (Hist. of Stamford, p. 61.) Stephen was in 1664 a freeman of Greenwich. He removed to Rye between that year and 1668, when he bought John Coe's 'house and housing and home-lot upon the north side of Manusing island.' In the same year he with others remonstrated against Budd's proceedings. His lands were chiefly located in the direction of Byram River. In 1680 he bought the remainder of the north neck of Manussing Island — forty-six acres — from John Banks, senior. Stephen had proprietary rights in Will's purchases, which his family retained. In 1708, Nathanael and Stephen, and Elizabeth, perhaps their mother, ranked among the proprietors.

Isaac in 1677 bought rights on Peningo Neck, formerly Lancaster's but sold his rights at White Plains in 1683, and in 1684 'all his rights in both them two purchases of land that the town of Rye bought of that Indian that is commonly called limping Will.' He had a son Daniel, and probably Isaac.

Both the brothers removed to Fairfield by 1680. In that year Stephen was 'formerly of Fairfield, now living at Stanford.' (Rec.) In 1685–1688, he divided 'his neck of land on Manussing Island' between his sons Stephen, junior, and Joseph.

II. 1. Isaac Sherwood,[2] probably son of Isaac,[1] was called senior in 1733, when he gave his son Daniel of Ridgefield all his rights to land in Rye. He was then living in Fairfield. In 1765, Isaac Sherwood of Fairfield, perhaps a third Isaac, released to Thomas Disbrow of Fairfield, for *five pounds*, 'all his right to undivided lands both in Rye and in Fairfield;' the former of which may well have become infinitesimal by that time.

2. Daniel Sherwood,[2] son of Isaac,[1] was of Fairfield in 1696, when he conveyed to Stephen, of Rye, his lands 'lying in the field of Rye' — forty or fifty acres, bordering on the creek (between the main and Manussing Island).

3. Stephen Sherwood,[2] son of Stephen,[1] married Mary ——. He remained in Rye, where he acquired considerable property. In 1708 he bought from the 'trustees or overseers of the town of Rye,' a tract of seven hundred acres 'at or near the upper end of Will's second

purchase;' between Byram River and the colony line, and extending southward from the upper end of that purchase 'till it contains said quantity of land.' The same year, Stephen offers to sell this land in parcels, at two shillings per acre. He died in or before 1713, when his widow sold to Henry Hill one hundred acres of this tract for fifty-three pounds.

4. Joseph Sherwood,[2] of Rye, son of Stephen,[1] is mentioned in 1682. He had land on Barton's Neck, and Gunn Brook Plain, apparently where the 'homestead' afterwards lay, on Grace Church Street. He had a son Joseph, and perhaps a son Andrew.

5. Nathanael Sherwood,[2] of Rye, probably son of Stephen,[1] was 'aged about 32 years' in 1704. (Rec.) He had land with Joseph on Branch Ridge and elsewhere, which they sold together in 1719. Joseph, with Abigail, Nathanael's widow, were executors of his estate in 1733.

6. John Sherwood,[2] probably son of Stephen,[1] in 1726 sold land in Will's Purchase, part of a 'lotment drawn by the Sherwoods.'

III. 1. Stephen Sherwood,[3] perhaps son of Stephen,[2] is mentioned 1740–1765. He had land on Hog-pen Ridge.

2. Andrew Sherwood,[3] of Rye, perhaps son of Joseph,[2] is mentioned in 1715. In 1729 he sold to Joseph, for ninety-one pounds, his 'homestead in Rye' of fifty-five acres, 'with house, orchard, garden, &c.;' apparently in the same locality with that noticed above and below. He married Anne Young, called in 1750 'widow of Andrew Sherwood deceased.'

3. Joseph Sherwood,[3] of Rye, son of Joseph,[2] is called junior in 1741, and was perhaps of Greenwich in 1736. About 1751 he sold to Abraham Theall for seven hundred and seventy pounds, 'his farm whereon I now dwell,' comprising twenty acres between 'Gracious street and the water-side,' — in the vicinity of the present steamboat landing, — and one hundred acres on the opposite side of the road: and in that year he bought for seven hundred and seventy-three pounds, from Samuel Bayard, merchant, of New York, and Frances his wife, 'two farms in Courtlandt manor.' In 1771 he was of the latter place.

IV. 1. Daniel Sherwood,[4] son of Andrew,[3] is so designated in 1749. He was perhaps the father of Daniel and Jabez.

2. Nehemiah Sherwood,[4] perhaps son of Stephen,[3] had land in the same vicinity — on Hog-pen Ridge — in 1764. He was living in 1771.

3. Samuel Sherwood,[4] perhaps son of Stephen,[3] was living in 1743 on King Street, upon a farm of fifty acres.

V. 1. Daniel Sherwood,[5] perhaps son of Daniel,[4] kept a store and tavern, known as Sherwood's, by the bridge across the Byram River at Glenville, also known as Sherwood's, or Sherrod's bridge. Children: Hugford, Jabez, Daniel, Willis. They all lived in the neighborhood of Glenville.

2. Jabez Sherwood,[5] brother of Daniel,[5] and perhaps son of Daniel,[4]

lived where William Sherwood now lives, east of Glenville. Children: Benjamin, and several daughters.

VI. Benjamin Sherwood,[6] son of Jabez,[5] died about the year 1863, aged eighty-seven. Children: Alanson, Allen, William, Warren, Jotham.

Smith. Abraham bought in 1700 of Samuel Odell 'his right, from his father William,' to lands in the White Plains purchase; and in 1705 a 'lotment' in that purchase, where he appears to have been one of the earliest settlers. His farm lay near the site of the Presbyterian Church in White Plains. He was living there in 1729. Daniel owned property in the town in 1722. Benjamin is mentioned in 1761. Maurice or Morris, of Rye, sold land on Budd's Neck about 1760. For the family of Rev. John Smith of Rye, see part second.

Selleck. Jonathan Selleck, of Stamford, had land on Budd's Neck, 1670–1678: probably the same with the 'Vineyard Farm' which in 1681 Jonathan and Joseph Selleck sold for seven hundred pounds to Humphrey Underhill. David Selleck signed as witness in 1672.

Statham. Thomas Statham, 'of Flushing, New York,' in 1671 bought a tract of land on Budd's Neck above the Vineyard Farm, with other lands, and proprietary rights formerly Walter Lancaster's, which he sold in 1676–1677, to George Kniffen and Isaac Sherwood. He was then of Richbell's Neck.

Stevens. Jonas Stevens was of Rye in 1681. In 1670 he went to Albany with the expedition against the French and Indians, upon the attack on Schenectady, after which we hear nothing of him. In 1716 'Jonas Stephens' old house' is mentioned, as being on the lower part of Budd's Neck.

Stoakham. I. John Stoakham is first mentioned in 1678. In 1684 he is called George Kniffen's son-in-law. This may equally mean stepson, which seems likely, as he was but eighteen years old when first mentioned, and may have come with Kniffen from Stratford as a child. He was a proprietor, but in 1684 sold to Richard Walters all his right on Peningo Neck below the marked trees. His lands were situated chiefly on Byram and Branch Ridges. In 1716 he is called 'senior.' In 1704 his age is stated at forty-four. His sons were John and Stephen: also, probably, Samuel, Isaac, and Israel.

II. 1. John Stoakham,[2] son of John,[1] was living in 1742 on King Street. In 1755 John and Stephen Stoakham sold to Thomas Merritt of King Street, for three hundred and sixty-nine pounds, 'our farm in King street,' of fifty-four acres.

2. Stephen Stoakham,[2] son of John,[1] is first mentioned in 1719. He is probably the father of Stephen, who married Hannah Brundige.

3. Samuel, mentioned 1709–1711.

4. Isaac, mentioned 1718.

5. Israel, mentioned 1724.

III. Stephen Stoakham,[3] probably son of Stephen,[2] married Hannah, daughter of Joshua Brundige, and died in Canada, it is said, leaving a son Stephen. Hannah married Joseph Merritt, who left his property, on the southeast corner of Ridge Street and the road to Park's mill, to Stephen; who conveyed it to Daniel S. Merritt, uncle of Abraham, now living. Stephen died about the year 1817, unmarried.

This family has, I believe, entirely disappeared from the neighborhood. Fifty or sixty years ago one Reuben Stokem lived near Quaker Ridge, in Greenwich. He had ten or twelve children, all of whom are said to have removed to New York. A nephew, Lemuel, lived at Riverville near Glenville. He was born in 1752, and died some years since.

Strang. I. 'Daniel L'Estrange was born about the year 1650 in the City of Paris in France.' He and Charlotte 'his Wife, a daughter of Francis Hubert, being Protestants, were compelled to make their escape from the City of Paris in France in the Year of our Lord 1685, in the time of Louis XIV, in the time of the Persecution there by the Roman Catholics, and came to the City of London in Great Britain, where Mr. L'Estrange through the interest of his correspondents, some merchants, obtained a Lieutenancy in the guards of James the Duke of York, the then King of Great Britain, and continued there until in the Year of our Lord 1688: When he with his Wife embarked for America in company with a number of French Protestant families, and arrived at the City of New York: from thence moving to the Town of New-Rochelle in West-Chester County, they settled themselves: after remaining there some few Years they moved to the Town of Rye, in the same County, and settled themselves, where they remained until the time of their respective deaths — Mr. L'Estrange dying a few years before his Wife.' ('A Record of the family of Daniel L'Estrange and Charlotte his wife,' MS.)

At Rye Mr. L'Estrange 'procured a lot in the Town Plot, upon the East side of the Blind brook, and including the land east thereof, and where the Park family have since possessed.' He had also 'a farm lying north of the Town Plot and near the line of Harrison's Purchase, including the lands since possessed by Jesse Hunt Esquire. He was likewise a proprietor in the patent of the White Plains, where he had a farm situate south of the Court house and where Bartholemew Gedney has since possessed. Mr. L'Estrange resided in Rye several years in the respective pursuits of a farmer, innkeeper and merchant, until his death.' (A Memorandum of the family of Daniel L'Estrange and of Charlotte his wife, MS., 20 pp., written apparently in the latter part of the last century.)

It is believed that Mr. L'Estrange lived from the first on the site of the house until lately owned by some of his descendants, on the southeast corner of 'Rectory street' and the post-road, in Rye. Here at all events, his family lived, thirty years later. The lively account which

Madam Knight gives of her stay at the good Huguenot's (p. 149), shows that he had not risen to wealth in the land of exile. Probably he followed some trade, as well as kept a house of entertainment.

It appears that Daniel L'Estrange connected himself while at New Rochelle, with the French Reformed or Huguenot Church there, and as late as 1694 was one of its elders. (Bolton's Hist., vol. i. p. 398.) He then signed his name Streing, in partial conformity to the language of the country. Doubtless with his family he attended worship at New Rochelle, perhaps walking thither every Sabbath morning, along the newly opened country road which passed his door: even as the Huguenots of New Rochelle are said to have walked to New York to attend service in the French Church there, before their own house of worship was built in 1692.

Daniel Streing was justice of the peace in 1690; appointed probably while at New Rochelle. He died about the year 1707 (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. lii. p. 41); and was buried 'at the Episcopal church,' then just built, where he was 'an attendant and a member, it is said' (Memorandum, etc.), *i. e.*, for a short time before his death, which occurred only three years after the coming of the first Church of England missionary. His widow Charlotte 'died about the year 1722, and was buried in the churchyard of the Episcopal church of the town.' (Memorandum, etc.) Children: Daniel, Henry, Gabriel, Mary, Charlotte, Penelope, Lucy.

II. 1. Daniel Streing,[2] son of Daniel,[1] born in England, married Phœbe Purdy. He was one of the proprietors of Peningo Neck in 1713; but by 1729, had removed to the White Plains, where he was living in 1737. He 'moved from there about the year 1744 to the Manor of Cortlandt,' where he settled. (Memorandum, etc.) Children: Daniel, Francis, Joseph, John, Gabriel, Henry; Phœbe, married Abraham Purdy of Cortlandt; Elizabeth, married Rev. Joseph Sackett, 'a Presbyterian Minister at what is now called Yorktown.' (Ibid.)

2. Henry Streing,[2] son of Daniel,[1] born at New Rochelle, mentioned 1726, married —— Kissam. His farm of one hundred and thirty acres, which he bought in 1737–1739, lay directly north of that lately Allen Carpenter's, now Charles Park's. He resided 'in the village of Rye, at or near the homestead.' (Ibid.) He was dead in 1764. Children: Daniel; Eliza, married Richard Vandyck; Hannah, married Gabriel Carman; Levina, married John Woods.

3. Gabriel Streing,[2] son of Daniel,[1] went to France, thence to England, and there settled. He had a son William.

4. Mary Strang,[2] daughter of Daniel,[1] married John Budd.

5. Charlotte, daughter of Daniel,[1] was twenty years of age in 1711. (Co. Rec., vol. D. p. 12.) She married Roger Park.

6. Penelope,[2] daughter, of Daniel,[1] married Samuel Purdy.

7. Lucy Streing,[2] fourth daughter, married —— Davie, and settled in the West Indies.

III. 1. Daniel Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Galpin, 'in King Street.' Children: Daniel, Joseph (died young), Gabriel, Solomon, Jared, Mary, Eliza, Hester.

2. Joseph Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married, first, Jemima, 'daughter of Joseph Budd, Esq., of the Manor of Cortlandt.' Children: John, Gilbert, Underhill, Jemima (died young). Second wife, Anne Haight. Children: Sarah, married Scudder Waring; Deborah; Jemima, married Stephen Brown; Samuel, married Catharine White.

3. Francis Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married Eliza Hyatt. Children: John, Sylvanus, Joshua, Daniel, Gabriel; Phœbe, married Caleb Barton; Sarah, married Jeremiah Mabee; Hannah, married Gilbert Post; Elizabeth, married Daniel Lane; Jerusha, married Henry Dillingham; Frances, Mary.

4. Gabriel Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married Hannah, daughter of Johanus Clements of Cortlandt. Children: Gabriel, William.

5. John Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] died young.

6. Henry Strang,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married, 1761, Margaret, daughter of Thomas Hazard of the island of Nassau; he died July 22, 1832, aged eighty-three. Children: Thomas, born 1763; Nancy, born 1764, married Daniel Horton; Ebenezer, born 1770; Daniel, born 1772; Nathanael, born 1774; Betsey, born 1776, married Seth Whitney; Phœbe, born 1776, married —— Keeler; Hannah, born 1778, married Henry Paulding; Sally, born 1778; Henry, born 1781; Margaret, born 1783, married ——Wood; John, born 1786; Martha, born 1789, married James Purdy.

7. Daniel Strang,[3] son of Henry,[2] married Mary Hubbs. In 1760 he sold to Hachaliah Brown the farm his father had owned on the Purchase Road. He died in 1821 aged ninety-six; his wife in 1828, aged eighty-eight. Children: Daniel, Joseph, John, Henry, William, Betsey, Levina.

Studwell. I. Thomas Steedwell was one of the inhabitants of Greenwich who 'freely yielded themselues,' October 6, 1656, to the government of New Haven. (Rec. of N. H., vol. ii. p. 216.) With Peter Disbrow and John Coe, he bought the Island of Manussing, June 29, 1660, and was here for some years. 'Thomas Stedwill' signs the declaration of the inhabitants of Hasting, July 26, 1662, and the letter to the Hartford government, January 26, 1663. In 1667 he sold his house and house-lot on the Mill Brook in Rye, and went with Joseph, probably his son, to Stamford. (Hist. Stamf., p. 193), but appears to have settled himself at length in the town of Greenwich, where in 1694–1695, his real estate was rated at thirty pounds. (Hist. Greenwich, p. 79.)

II. 1. Joseph Studwell,[2] probably son of Thomas,[1] was with him at Stamford, and at Greenwich, where his estate is rated in 1694–1695 at

eighteen pounds. Soon after he acquired lands in Rye, on Barton's Neck, in Will's purchases and on Byram Ridge, in 1705, 1717–1722. He had a son Joseph, called junior in 1734.

2. John Studwell,[2] probably son of Thomas,[1] signs as witness in 1713.

III. Joseph Studwell,[3] junior, son of Joseph,[2] was living on King Street in 1740.

THEALL. I. Joseph Theale is supposed by Savage to be the son of Nicholas, of Watertown, who removed to Stamford in 1645, and died there in 1658. Joseph was born in 1640, and admitted a freeman at Stamford in 1662. He was chosen representative in 1671, 1675, 1676, 1677. He had a good estate at Stamford, but removed to Bedford in the province of New York. The Hartford government in 1682 constituted Bedford a plantation, and appointed Joseph Theale 'to be the present cheife millitary officer for the Train Band.' (Pub. Rec. of Conn., vol. iii. p. 101.) By the year 1690 he had left Bedford, for he was then supervisor of this town; and then and in several succeeding years he was appointed with others a committee to procure a minister for the town. He was justice of the peace in 1694. The title, Captain, he seems to have brought from Bedford. He appears to have settled from the first on Budd's Neck, where he doubtless bought land at an early day. In 1705 we find the town treating with Joseph Budd and Captain Theale in relation to that tract. The farms of some of his descendants have been located here for nearly two hundred years, upon the land which their ancestor thus secured.

In 1705 Captain Theale was associated with Clapp and Horton in the purchase of a tract of land between Rye Pond and Byram River; but refusing to submit to the exaction of a fee for a patent from the government, he forfeited his right. In 1710 he was chosen a churchwarden of the parish of Rye. He was then seventy years of age, and probably died soon after.

II. 1. Ebenezer Theall,[2] probably son of Captain Joseph,[1] must have been born during his father's stay at Stamford; as he had a son holding property in 1712. In 1737 he gave his farm of one hundred and twenty acres, lying in the upper part of Budd's Neck, to his oldest son, Charles. He had other sons, Hachaliah, Joseph, and Abraham, and a 'youngest daughter,' Hannah.

III. 1. Charles Theall,[3] son of Ebenezer,[2] according to the family tradition, owned a tract of land a mile square, extending from Westchester Path to Blind Brook, and from the present southern boundary of the farm lately Abraham Theall's (where the house stands) northward to the old parsonage land, including the late James Halsted's land. Part of this property he received from his father; but he is said to have bought much land, and to have divided the whole into four parts, giving one part to each of his four sons, Gilbert, Joseph, Thomas, and probably Abraham.

2. Hachaliah Theall,[3] son of Ebenezer,[2] mentioned 1722–1750.

3. Joseph Theall,[3] son of Ebenezer,[2] mentioned 1747.

4. Abraham,[3] 'youngest son of Captain Ebenezer,'[2] in 1747 sold land to Joseph.

IV. 1. Gilbert Theall,[4] son of Charles,[3] mentioned 1768, is said to have owned two hundred acres, bounded on the south and west by North Street, and on the east by the post-road.

2. Joseph Theall,[4] son of Charles,[3] had the farm south of this, embracing the land now Mr. Benjamin Mead's.

Thomas. John Thomas, of Rye, in 1670 bought from John Budd of Southold, the tract of land above the Vineyard Farm, which he sold in 1671 to Thomas Statham. Charles Thomas of Rye in 1714 bought eighteen acres in Will's Purchase from John Disbrow. There is nothing to show whether these were of the same family with John Thomas, Esq., of Harrison, half a century later.

Thorne. Francis Thorne signed as witness in 1678, and was 'now of Rye' in 1688, when he bought land at Rye on the road to 'the old town.'

William Thorne, of Flushing, in 1729 bought a farm in White Plains.

Samuel Thorne, mentioned 1729, was of White Plains in 1748.

Stevenson Thorn, of North Castle, son of Thomas, married Prudence Merritt, fifteenth of ninth month, 1763. (Friends' Rec.) Isaac of North Castle, son of Thomas, married Rachel Birdsall, eighteenth of fifth month, 1780. (Ibid.) About the beginning of this century, Henry W. Thorne lived where Mr. Stiles lives now, above Milton.

Traves. Garret, James, Robert, and Richard Traves appear in Rye about the same time, 1681–1686; but how related we do not learn. Garret was perhaps here before 1670, as there is mention of a difference between him and John Budd about a piece of land, which Budd's executors settled in 1686. James bought land in 1681 on Budd's Neck but removed to the White Plains. In 1699 'the town doth grant unto James Traves Liberty to settell upon that Land which now he live upon as his own and when the Rest of the Land is Layd out hee shall haue his proposion joyning to the above said Land.' (Town Meeting Book, C. p. 4.) This may have been in the White Plains, where James had land in 1723. James, junior, also bought land there in 1720. Robert Traves married a daughter of Philip Galpin, of whose portion he acknowledges the receipt in 1685. He had land in the White Plains, 1716–1740. Philip Travis was one of the soldiers of the expedition to Albany in 1690. In 1716 Philip Travis and Hannah his wife sold to Robert their estate in Rye, apparently on the lower part of Rye Neck. Philip, son of Garret Traves, is mentioned in 1707.

Underhill. Captain Humphrey Underhill was apparently from Stamford, and may have been related to the renowned Captain John, of that place. In 1631 he bought the Vineyard Farm at Rye, from the

Sellecks; and in 1698, the town appointed persons to treat with him for land to be appropriated as a 'parsonage.' As early as 1705 he had a mill on Mamaroneck River, and lived at the White Plains, of which he was one of the patentees in 1722. 'Mr. Underhill,' so called in 1715, was a man of high consideration among his fellow townsmen, who chose him in 1692 for a delicate mission to the government of Connecticut. (See page 93.) He was also twice sent as deputy to Hartford during the revolt of the town to Connecticut, 1697–1700. He was living in 1725.

Henry Underhill is mentioned 1686–1705.

Abraham Underhill had land at White Plains, 1722–1740. Isaac, son of Abraham, married Sarah, daughter of Robert Field, eighteenth of eighth month, 1756. (Friends' Rec.)

Samuel Underhill in 1772 bought Little Neck, a part of Budd's Neck (now Mr. S. L. Mitchill's). Samuel junior was witness in the same year.

Vowles. I. Richard Vowles or Ffowls came, about 1656, from Fairfield to Greenwich (Savage), and in 1662 was made constable for that town. (Col. Rec. of Conn., vol. i. p. 389.) He had joined the Hastings settlement January 1663, and was its first constable in that year, and three times deputy from Rye — 1665, 1668, 1669 — to the General Court. He appears to have been advanced in years when he joined the settlement, most of whose members were young men; and was honored accordingly, as was wont in those old-fashioned days. He is not mentioned after 1685.

Jonathan, son of Richard, was propounded for freeman of Connecticut in 1670. (Col. Rec. of Conn., vol. ii. p. 128.) In 1680 he purchased of his father Richard a parcel of land 'commonly called Monusing Island;' afterwards described as the southernmost neck of that island, and as containing one hundred and fifty acres. To this island he was 'reputed to have a right from the colony of Connecticut' (Odell's petition, 1717), which could only be by patent for lands which he had duly purchased from the several owners. In 1707 he conveyed this neck to Roger Park, his son-in-law. Jonathan Vowles married first, Deborah ——, who was living in 1702, and secondly, Sophia ——. His daughter, first wife of Roger Park,[2] appears to have been the only child. Jonathan was living in 1713. None of this name appear later.

Walters, or Waters. Richard Walters was a son-in-law of Philip Galpin; he came to Rye before 1682, and in 1684 bought John Stoakham's rights on Peningo Neck. He had land in White Plains, and was one of the purchasers, with Colonel Heathcote, of the Middle or Whitefield patent (afterwards a part of North Castle). Richard Waters, probably the same, signed as witness, 1684–1686. Let us hope that he was not the person of this name who was shot for desertion, in 1696. (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. iv. p. 165.)

Wascot, or Westcot. John Westcot, of Stamford in 1667, and of Bedford in 1680 (Hist. of Stamford, pp. 34, 144), had land in Rye.

Wood. Richard Wood, perhaps of the Stamford family of this name, signed as witness in 1681. John was living on King Street in 1725. Stephen is mentioned in 1730. James was here in 1723. 'James Woods of Rye, merchant,' sold land in White Plains previous to 1736, and in 1740. Later, he owned the West Neck and other adjacent lands on the lower end of Budd's Neck. About the middle of the last century, James Woods kept the 'bigg store' near Davenport's mill, on Rye Neck, and appears to have had a thriving business. Jotham Wood was 'pounder for Saw Pit' in 1800.

Woodbridge, Rev. John. See page 280.

Wright. James Wright 'of Rye, Fairfield County,' in 1681 sold his dwelling-house and new frame, with commons for two cows and swine, and several allotments of land, to Isaac Sherwood. 'Also, said Isaac is to have two rodd of common fence with the land.' It would appear that he was a proprietor. Next year he bought land north of 'the parson's land.' And in 1686 Stephen Sherwood sold land on Byram Ridge to James Wright '*the baker*, now in Greenwich.'

Jotham Wright, joiner, in 1747 bought a house and land on the road leading up Harrison's Purchase, near the house lately Allen Carpenter's. This, with more land, he sold in 1763, and about the same time bought the place now owned by the daughters of David H. Mead. Here, as early as 1771, he kept the stage-house, which was known as 'Wright's' until the close of the Revolution. (Gaine's N. Y. Pocket Almanac, 1771–1782.) In 1768, Thomas Wright, physician, of East Chester, released to 'Joatham Wright, ship-joiner, of Rye' all his right to the messuage of twenty acres, which Jotham bought of Timothy Wetmore, etc. (Co. Rec., vol. ii. p. 351.)

Reuben, Keziah, and Tabitha Wright, signed as witnesses in 1769 and 1763.

Youngs. Christopher Youngs of Southold, had land from John Budd, senior, in 1671. Mary Young is mentioned among John Budd's[2] children.

FAMILIES OF RYE.

II. LATER INHABITANTS — 1700 TO 1800 — AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

ABRAHAMS. 'John Abrahamson, of the city of New York, merchant,' in 1736 bought for one hundred and twenty-three pounds a house and six acres on the road to Milton, apparently just above the house now Mr. C. V. Anderson's, which in 1742 he sold to the Rev. John Smith. In 1745 he signs his name Abrahams. This is undoubtedly the person whose daughter Elizabeth married James, son of Rev. James Wetmore. He was, according to the Wetmore Memorial (pp. 207, 208), 'a wealthy West India merchant,' who 'losing a number of his vessels with valuable cargoes, without insurance, was obliged to suspend business,' and removed to Rye. 'While residing there he experienced much pecuniary embarrassment. After his death his wife removed to the vicinity of Philadelphia, where she was compelled to support herself from the products of a market garden.'

ADEE. I. The first of this name in Rye was John, said to have been the son of a clergyman of the Church of England. He is mentioned 1750–1766 as living on Hog-pen Ridge. His farm, apparently, was that now owned by his descendant John A. Merritt.

II. Daniel Adee,[2] first mentioned 1788, probably a son of John, lived in the same locality. He married Jemima Hobby, and had three sons: Hobby, David, and William; and three daughters: Sarah (died young), Charlotte, and Tamazon.

III. 1. Hobby Adee,[3] mentioned 1799, son of Daniel,[2] had three sons: Daniel of New York, Samuel, lately of New York, and one who died young; and six daughters.

2. David Adee,[3] son of Daniel,[2] had a son James, and five daughters.

3. William Adee,[3] son of Daniel,[2] married twice. His eldest son, Augustus A. Adee, M. D., surgeon U. S. N., died about the year 1850, leaving two sons, Graham and Alvah. His other children: George T., of Throg's Neck, Thomas T., Jared P., William, James T., of Westchester, Katharine, John, Caroline, Titus K., Charles T., Emily, Edward, Russel W.

4. Charlotte Adee,[3] daughter of Daniel,[2] married Jotham Merritt. Their son, John A. Merritt, is now living on Ridge Street.

5. Tamazon Adee,[3] daughter of Daniel,[2] married Jared Peck, of Port Chester. Children: William, James Harvey, Charles Adee, Caroline, Henry Adee, George T., Sarah E., Jared V., and Mary P.

Anderson. Isaac Anderson came to Rye in 1707, when he styled himself 'mariner, of New York.' In 1710 the town permits *Captain* Isaac Anderson to build a mill on Byram River. In 1713, he bought lands in Will's Purchase, and along Byram River, and became one of the largest land-owners in Rye. The names of James and William, perhaps his brothers, occur in the same year.

William Anderson of White Plains, perhaps a son of the last named, in 1750 bought land upon the cross-road between the White Plains and Harrison. This property remains in the possession of his descendants at the present day.

The petition of John Anderson to the Governor and Council, for permission to establish a ferry from Lyon's Point (now Byram Point), and 'the westernmost point of Rye Neck or Scotch Caps point,' over to 'Muskitta Cove and Mattinnicock on Long Island,' is dated 1732. It sets forth that the 'petitioner has at their earnest desire frequently ferried travellers over with their horses and cattle.' (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. lxx. p. 21.) The same or another John Anderson of Rye, in 1771 bought land on Grace Church Street, south of the road to the landing.

Joseph Anderson was living at Rye in 1753.

Andrews, 'Germanious,' was witness in 1716.

Armor, Samuel, lived at Rye early in this century, and was supervisor in 1808. He resided where the Cliff House stands.

Armstrong. George was here in 1720. John signed as witness in 1741. James and Alice in 1745. William lived in Rye in 1776, when he was examined before the Committee of Safety, and discharged. (Journals of the Prov. Congress, etc., vol. i. p. 270.)

Ascough, William, lived on Brown's Point, the western part of Harrison, near White Plains, 1769–1771. Richard Ayscough, 'chirurgeon, of the city of New York,' died about 1774. (Chancery Minutes, N. Y., p. 180.)

Adams, Freegrace, sold land on Budd's Neck before 1738.

Akerly. Joseph Eakerly had property here in 1718.

Baker, Samuel, of White Plains, 1758. (Friends' Rec.)

Bumpos. 'Deliverance, daughter of Thomas Bumpus,' had property here in 1740. Samuel Bumpos was 'chosen publick whipper' in 1747. 'Bumpos' old house,' mentioned in 1750, stood near the road to the Beach.

Bayly. Nathanael, of Rye, 1722, in 1728 bought a considerable tract of land on Budd's Neck, part of which he sold in 1738–1743. He died a few years after. Levi, of Courtlandt's Manor, probably his son, in 1750, sold land in the same place.

Bailey, Dr. Nicholas. See page 167.

Jonathan Bailey, mentioned 1786–1800, lived on Ridge Street. He was justice of the peace in 1793.

Barker. Lewis owned property in 1724. Daniel and Thomas are

mentioned 1750. The former in 1760 had land on Budd's Neck. John is mentioned 1794.

Barnes. Joshua, mentioned 1730, John, 1731, Richard, 1744, and Samuel, 1746, were brothers, according to the family tradition. They were perhaps sons of William, mentioned 1720. James, son of Richard, married Ruth, daughter of Benjamin Clapp, of North Castle, seventeenth of fifth month, 1769. Samuel had three sons, Stephen, Joshua, and Richard; and three daughters: Jerusha, married Edward Underhill, of Phillipsburgh, fifteenth of first month, 1772; Charity, married James Underhill, of Phillipsburg, thirtieth of ninth month, 1778; Deborah, married William Clapp, of Oswego, Dutchess County, fifteenth of third month, 1780. Stephen married Hannah, daughter of Isaac Carpenter, twentieth of twelfth month, 1780 (Friends' Rec.), and had six sons: Isaac, Samuel, Stephen, Josiah, Joshua, and David H., the last of whom is now living where his grandfather lived. David H. Barnes has had one son, Robert, and two daughters: Hannah, married D. W. Smith, and Anne, married H. B. Hallock.

Barrel. Gideon, blacksmith, of Rye, in 1738 bought Peter Brown's house and seven acres, which he sold soon after to Raphael Jacobs. Perhaps the same name with *Burrell.*

Bates, Thomas, of Rye, in 1669 married Mary Butcher, at Stamford, where there were many of this name. (Huntington's Hist. of Stamford, p. 156.)

Bell, John, had land in Harrison, on the east side of Horton's mill-pond, in 1747.

Besly, Oliver, mentioned 1722.

Bloodgood, Joseph, was of the Purchase in 1759; wife, Sarah. His daughter Mary married Henry Matthews, seventeenth of first month, 1759. (Friends' Rec.)

Blakeman, or Blackman, Samuel, in 1718, was one of the inhabitants of Rye (now North Castle) who remonstrated against the attempt of the constable of Horseneck to collect the minister's tax.

Bird. The tradition is that the ancestor of this family came from Germany, but died on the voyage, leaving four children, whom the captain, on arriving in New York, sold into servitude, — not an uncommon proceeding in those days. One of these children, Henry *Vogel*, was bought by an inhabitant of Rye, and grew up and settled here. He took the Anglicized name of Bird; but some members of the family are said to have still used the German name, in preference, among themselves. Henry married —— Kniffen, and had four sons: Henry, Thomas, James, and William. He lived upon the site of the cottage belonging to Mr. James H. Titus, south of his residence on Grace Church Street. He acquired a considerable tract of land, extending northward from the place now Mr. Frederick Cornell's; which was known as 'Bird's land,' as late as 1820. He was drowned while on a fishing cruise near Newport.

Henry Bird,[2] son of Henry,[1] had no children. In 1771 he sold his house and twenty acres near the landing on Grace Church Street, to John Anderson. He died in 1792.

Thomas[2] was the father of James Bird, of Manhassett, and others. William[2] died young.

James[2] lived in the homestead on Grace Church Street. He died in 1832. He had six sons: Andrew, Adolphus, Alexander, William, James, and Thomas; and one daughter, Leah. James is living in Harrison. Thomas was for many years captain of a sloop running between Saw Pit or Port Chester and New York. He died in Brooklyn, December 5, 1870, aged sixty-eight.

Leah, daughter of James,[2] married David Kirby, of Rye, and had six sons: Joseph, Andrew, William B., James B., David, and Thomas D.; and four daughters: Maria, married John T. Noye, of Buffalo; Rosetta A., married Cornelius Curtis; Cornelia J., married Thomas Brownell; and Gulielma. Mrs. Kirby died January 8, 1871.

Birdsall. Benjamin Birdsall was here in 1725, and probably before. He was a namesake and doubtless a descendant of Benjamin, one of the early inhabitants of Hempstead, who came from England in 1657, and who was also the ancestor of Captain Benjamin Birdsall, a heroic officer of the Revolution. (Thompson's L. I., vol. ii. pp. 492–494.) In 1737–1739–1745, he sold one hundred and seventy-five acres to Henry Strang and others. Nathan Birdsall was here in 1728; Isaac Birdsall, 1744–1759.

Bishop. The estate of Thomas Bishopp, at Rye, was administered in or before 1707. (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. lii. p. 41.)

Bowne. See page 269.

Bridge, Rev. Christopher. See page 310.

Brush, Jesse, 'is permitted' in 1790 'to Enlarge his Dock on the Publick Landing at Rye.'

Burns. Alexander, witness in 1730–1741–1748. Alexander and Mary, in 1739.

Burrell, Joseph, lived on Rye Neck in 1776, when he was concerned in the plan (see page 226) to spike the American guns near King's Bridge. (Journals of the Prov. Congress, etc., vol. i. p. 280.)

Burchum, Benjamin. His land in 1723 lay south of Rye Ponds.

Bush. The family were from Holland. I. 'Justus Bush, merchant, of the city of New York,' in 1726 bought from John and Jonathan Brondig an eighteenth share of undivided lands in Peningo Neck Purchase, at the very low price of eight pounds. In 1732 he owned land apparently including a part of that lately Dr. Tuttle's. The old stone house begun by Justus shortly before his death, and finished by Anne his wife, remained unaltered until 1832, when it was renovated. He appears to have been at one time a resident of Greenwich, where his name occurs in 1733, as plaintiff in an action. (Records Fairfield Co.,

1702–1735.) He died about the year 1737, leaving a widow, Anne, who died August 5, 1745, and three sons, Henry, Bernardus, and Abraham.

II. 1. Henry Bush,[2] son of Justus,[1] was of Greenwich in 1745, when he and Bernardus released to Abraham part of their rights in their father's estate. Many of his descendants, says Mr. Mead, live in Greenwich.

2. Bernardus Bush,[2] son of Justus.[1]

3. Abraham Bush,[2] 'youngest son' of Justus,[1] born 1720, had the homestead near Saw Pit Landing. (See page 268.) He married Ruth, daughter of Gilbert Lyon. He had two sons, Abraham and Gilbert, and five daughters.

III. 1. Abraham Bush,[3] son of Abraham,[2] born 1751. (See page 161.) He had one son, William, of King Street, and two daughters.

2. Gilbert Bush,[3] son of Abraham,[2] born 1753, died 1831. He married Sabrina, daughter of Samuel Seymour, of Greenwich. They had one daughter, Mary E.

IV. 1. William Bush,[4] son of Abraham,[3] died December 24, 1856. He had four sons: Andrew L., William L., H. Hobart, and Newberry D.; and five daughters.

2. Mary E., daughter of Gilbert Bush, married Gershom Bulkley. Children: Charles S.; Helen B., married Willson D. Slawson; and Gilbert B.

Bartholomew Bush is mentioned in 1726, and John in 1745.

Carle, Thomas, of Rye, carpenter, in 1731 sold to Stephen Lawrence of Flushing four hundred acres in Harrison on Mamaroneck River, which Lawrence in 1738 conveyed to Joseph Haight.

Carey, or Casey, Henry, was of Rye in 1771.

Carhartt. Joseph is mentioned in 1719, and in 1727 with Ann, probably his wife. John, 1722–1750, appears to have been in constant requisition as a witness of deeds. Till 1737 he lived near the church, apparently in the house now Mr. Joseph Kirby's tenement house, which he held 'on the right of George Lane.' This he sold, with two acres of land, to the Rev. James Wetmore. John was clerk of the Vestry for many years. In 1745 he signs with Jane, probably his wife.

John Carhartt, junior, mentioned 1750, was doubtless the son of the above named. He was living in 1763. Thomas, 1737–1747; Jonathan, 1737, and Matthew, 1747–1749, may have been other sons.

John, Joseph, and Andrew Carhartt were living in Rye in 1771.

Hachaliah Carhartt, said to have been an officer in the British service, was one of the company of De Lancey's Refugees who captured Judge Thomas at his residence in Harrison, in 1777. (See page 252.) He died about the year 1834.

One of this name, a blacksmith, had a shop on the land now Mr. James Weeks', about the time of the Revolution.

Carpenter, Joseph, was here in 1718 (Brander's Book), Tim-

othy in 1720, Silles (Silas?) in 1721 (Ibid.). Our records also mention Benjamin, 1749, and Isaac, 1754. Isaac had a daughter, Hannah, who married Stephen Barnes, of Harrison, twentieth of twelfth month, 1780. (Friends' Rec.)

I. 1. Thomas, called 'jr. of Rye,' in 1739, and 'late of the isl. of Nassau, now of Rye,' in 1742, bought, between 1739 and 1743, Samuel Field's farm of one hundred and ten acres, south of Judge Thomas's; and John Fowler's farm, of one hundred and thirty-one acres, with other land in the lower part of Harrison. (Rec., C. pp. 124, 149, 150.) He had a son Joseph, and two daughters, one of whom, Hannah, married Solomon Haviland, son of Benjamin, seventeenth of ninth month, 1742. (Friends' Rec.)

2. John, 'of Oyster Bay,' in 1739, was perhaps, like Thomas, a son of Thomas, senior. He bought Little Neck, seventy acres, a part of Budd's Neck, from John Budd. He was still 'of Oyster Bay,' in 1751, when he conveyed this land to his son John 'of Rye, hatter.' (Rec.) We have no further knowledge of this branch.

John, perhaps the above, had a son Abraham, of North Castle, who married Lydia, daughter of Peter Totten, twentieth of ninth month, 1759. (Friends' Rec.)

II. Joseph,[2] son of Thomas,[1] married Mary, daughter of John Clapp, of Greenwich, Conn., fourteenth of twelfth month, 1768. (Friends' Rec.) He lived in Harrison, where Mr. Joseph Park now lives, and owned three farms now comprised in Mr. Park's estate. Sons: John, William, Thomas, Charles, Joseph; daughters: Phœbe, married James Field; Dorcas, married William Cornell; Martha, married John Schureman; Mary, married John Sands; Sarah.

III. 1. John,[3] son of Joseph,[2] married Elizabeth Field. His farm lay north of Mr. Warren Leland's. Children: Uriah, Aaron, Joseph, Mary; Phœbe, married Silas Sutton.

2. William,[3] son of Joseph,[2] born July 7, 1772, died September 26, 1847. He married Abby Jane, daughter of Ezekiel Halsted, born March 29, 1772, died March 31, 1834. He owned at one time the farm north of Mr. Park's, and moved in 1810 to the place now Mr. Leland's. Sons: Philemon H., Allen P., Thomas W.; daughters: Elizabeth J., born December 27, 1803, married Joseph Bartram; Martha S., born July 30, 1812, married John H. Purdy, died June 27, 1850.

3. Thomas,[3] son of Joseph,[2] married, first, Mary ——, and had one son, Richard, now living on the farm formerly his father's, in Greenwich, Conn. Second wife, Eliza Keeler.

4. Charles,[3] son of Joseph,[2] married Phœbe Cromwell. He owned the farm now Mr. Griswold's, in Harrison. Children: Alfred, Edward, James, Elizabeth (died young); Sarah Ann, married William Haviland; Phœbe, married David Haviland.

5. Joseph,[3] son of Joseph,[2] married Eliza Taber. He owned one of the farms now Mr. Park's. Children: Harriet, married Joseph Park; Mary, Arthur.

Daniel Carpenter, perhaps of the same family, born about 1750, married Sarah Merritt. At the outbreak of the Revolution he was living on Peck's land, Greenwich, Conn. He went to Long Island during the war, after which he lived where Mr. James Weeks now lives, in Rye, and from there moved to a farm on Grace Church Street, extending to Fox Island. He died about 1830. Children: Gilbert, Daniel; Hannah, married Francis Secor of Harrison; Rhoda, Maria, Thorn, Jacob, Peter, Zeno, Merritt, Sylvanus, Elizabeth.

Gilbert, eldest son of Daniel, born November 10, 1772, married Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Gedney, born November 30, 1769, died November 14, 1844. He died July 2, 1820. Sons: Elisha, William; daughters: Ann, Sarah, Mary, Charity, Charlotte, Penelope. Elisha (my informant, now living in Harrison) married Sarah L. Deall.

Daniel, son of Daniel, had several children: William, Thorn, Phœbe, Ezra, Eliakim, and ——, married Elijah P. Morrill.

Cavalaer. 'The estate of Peter Cavalaer of Long Island, deceased,' is mentioned in 1771. The land thus referred to lay south of the road leading from Grace Church Street to the landing, or Rye Ferry. (See page 134.) 'Chavalier Rock,' so called in 1804, — Cavalier's in 1829, — and still known to old inhabitants at the present day, was evidently named from this person, of whom we have no other trace. This rock stands by the water's edge, below Horse Rock, near the late steamboat landing.

Chatterton. Michael, 'of the manor of Philipsboro,' in 1752, bought sixty-six acres of land 'on Brown's pint near the White Plains,' *i. e.* in Harrison. Chatterton Hill, famous in connection with the battle of the White Plains, but situated, not in that town, but across the Bronx in Greenburg, formerly Phillipsburg manor, undoubtedly took its name from this family, a member of which, says Mr. Bolton, was settled on the hill as early as 1731. (Hist. of Westchester Co., vol. i. p. 242.) 'Bets' Chatterton, 1756–1767, and Shadrach, 1757–1758, were of Brown's Point.

Cheeseman, Samuel, of Oyster Bay, in 1720 bought of Abraham Miller a 'great lot' of eighty acres, being one fifth part of the tract known as Brown's Point, in Harrison. In 1739 this lot had 'formerly belonged to Ann Cheeseman.'

Clapp. I. Captain John Clapp claimed to be 'of y^e^ town of Rye' as early as 1705, when with Joseph Theall and John Horton he bought from the Indians land now in North Castle, above Rye Pond, and west of Byram River. (Co. Rec., E. p. 1.) 'The Humble Petition of John Clapp John Horton Thomas Hyat & Company Inhabitants & Residents of the Town of Rye' to Governor Cornbury, shows that the petitioners,

'being Inhabitants of y^e^ Town of Rye have by your Excellency's License to Purchase land in West-Chester County, and *according to the Customes of s^d^ Town* made purchase of a certain tract,' lying between Byram River and Rye Ponds, for which they desire a patent. This petition was read and a warrant ordered September 27, 1705. (Land Papers, Secretary of State's Office, vol. iv. p. 61.) 'Y^e^ house of John Clap' on King Street, was mentioned in 1723, when the road from that street across Harrison to the White Plains was opened. Here doubtless he was living in 1718 (see page 120), when the constable of Greenwich coming to demand the 'rates due to the minister of Horseneck,' he 'shut to the doors, and told me,' says that official, 'if I came in, he would knock me in the head.' (N. Y. Col. MSS., vol. lxi. p. 17.) This pugnacity, while it comports with his military rank, seems less in harmony with his profession as 'a reputed Quaker,' for so he designates himself in his 'solemn affirmation,' to a counter statement in the same case. (Ibid. p. 14.) He was alive in 1725. His sons, according to the pedigree given by Mr. Bolton, were John, Silas, Elias, and Gibson.

II. 1. John Clapp,[2] son of John,[1] is mentioned in 1748, when he owned land on both sides of the road to the Friends' meeting-house. Children: Thomas; Dorcas, who married, first, William Sutton, second, Francis Nash; Mary, who married Joseph Carpenter.

2. Silas Clapp,[2] son of John,[1] was 'of Rhode Island.' (Bolton.)

3. Elias[2] had two sons, John and Benjamin. John, son of Elias, married Phœbe, daughter of John Hallock, April 17, 1765. (Friends' Rec.)

John Clapp's house, as we have seen (p. 248), is a building of historic interest. It stands near the corner of King Street and the road to the meeting-house.

Cleator, Joseph. See page 174.

Cole, Samuel, mentioned 1719.

Coon, Jacob, weaver, had land in White Plains, 1748.

Cornell, Richard, of Cow Neck, in 1724 sold to Benoni Merritt, of Rye, two hundred acres in Fauconier's patent. From the very extensive pedigree of this family which Mr. Bolton gives, it appears that he was the son of John, of Cow Neck, fourth son of Richard, who emigrated from England to Long Island about 1655, and bought Little Neck under the Dutch government. The grandson Richard removed from Cow Neck to Westchester in 1725, and in 1733 complained, with Silvanus Palmer, to the governor, of injustice done to them by the sheriff of Westchester in refusing their vote at an election because they were Quakers. (Doc. Hist. of N. Y., vol. iii. p. 1008.) Joseph, of Mamaroneck, son of Richard, married Phœbe Ferris, daughter of Peter Ferris, twentieth of fourth month, 1734. (Friends' Rec.)

Cornwall. Daniel, was of Brown's Point or Harrison's Purchase as early as 1738. In 1749 he sold his house and one hundred and

thirty acres, near Horton's Pond and Mamaroneck River. He married Mary ——. Jacob, mentioned 1715, of White Plains in 1741, had land in the same locality. Samuel, 1732. The name is written as often Cornell, but I find no Daniel of this period among the many descendants of Richard above mentioned.

Coverтt, Isaac, before 1722 had land in Will's Purchase, which he sold; and in 1725–1733 he had land in White Plains.

Crampton, Samuel, weaver, in 1742 sold his homestead on King Street, opposite Samuel Wilson's.

Crawford, John, in 1760 had land on Budd's Neck.

Cromwell. 'The several branches of the Cromwell family in America claim descent from the same parent stock as that of the Protector, Oliver Cromwell. It is presumed that the ancestor of the American line was Colonel John Cromwell, third son of Robert Cromwell, and a brother of the Protector.' (Bolton, Hist. of Westchester Co., vol. ii. p. 512, app. The following pedigree is based partly upon the account given by Mr. Bolton.)

I. John Cromwell,[1] son of Colonel John, emigrated from Holland to New Netherland. He resided, in 1686, at Long Neck, Westchester, afterwards known as Cromwell's Neck. He married Mary ——, and left two sons, John and James.

II. 1. John Cromwell,[2] son of John,[1] of Westchester, was the ancestor of Oliver and Jeremiah of West Farms. (Bolton, ibid.; also vol. i. p. 254.)

2. James,[2] second son of John,[1] of Westchester, was born in 1696, and married Esther Godfrey. He died in 1780. Children: John, James, William. In 1748, James 'Crumwell of Greenwich,' bought of Thomas Weeden's widow his plantation in Harrison's Purchase, — one tract lying 'northward of frind's meeting house, and north of the road,' and bounded on the west by Thomas Tredwell's land, on the north by 'Clapp's land,' on the east and south by the road. Another tract lay on the south side of the road, and was bounded east by John Clapp's land, south by Anthony Field's and the meeting-house lot, west and north by the road. (Rye Records.)

III. 1. John Cromwell,[3] of Harrison, eldest son of James,[2] born December 5, 1727, married Anna Hopkins of Long Island, born January 12, 1730. He was an active patriot during the Revolution: see mention of him, ante, pp. 251–257. His house is yet standing, a short distance above the Friends' meeting-house in the Purchase, and near to Rye Pond. Here the 'advance guard' of a force of Continental troops stationed on King Street, was said by a tory paper of New York, February 14, 1780, to be occupying 'the house of John Crom [*i. e.*, Cromwell] near the Quaker meeting-house in Harrison's Purchase.' (Gaine's Gazette.) Mr. Cromwell's name occurs in 1777 among the names of teamsters who presented to the New York Committee of Safety their

accounts for service in removing forage and transporting well-affected inhabitants to the interior. (Journals of Provincial Congress, vol. i. p. 955.) He suffered severely from the maltreatment of the British troops and their allies the Cow Boys, for his well-known attachment to the American cause. Once, it is said, a party of Cow Boys entered his house, and demanded that he should tell them where he kept his money concealed. Upon Mr. Cromwell's refusal, they seized him, and heating a shovel red-hot in the kitchen fire, applied it to his naked person. Mr. Cromwell lived to relate various incidents of his experience during the war, with much satisfaction, in a good old age. He died in 1805, aged seventy-eight. Children: James, Daniel, John, Joseph, William; Naomi, born May 4, 1757, married Rev. —— Halsted; Esther, born January 1, 1760, married John Griffin, junior, of North Castle, twenty-second of tenth month, 1777 (Friends' Rec., Purchase); Hannah, born May 20, 1762, married William Field of Cortland's Manor, son of Benjamin, fifteenth of fifth month, 1782. (Ibid.)

2. James Cromwell,[3] son of James,[2] 'left Oliver.' (Bolton.)

3. William Cromwell,[3] son of James,[2] was of Poughkeepsie, and was the father of William of New York and Robert of Canada. (Ibid.)

IV. 1. James,[4] eldest son of John Cromwell,[3] of Harrison, was born November 6, 1752, and died December 23, 1828. He married, May 15, 1782 (Friends' Rec.), Charlotte Hunt, daughter of Aaron, of Greenwich, Conn., born November 18, 1762, died January 1839. Children: Daniel, James, Oliver, David, Aaron, William and Mary (twins, died young), William, John; Hannah, married David Griffin; Rebecca, married George Fritts; Anne, married John Haviland.

2. Daniel,[4] second son of John Cromwell[3] of Harrison, was born July 17, 1755. He married Rachel Hopkins of Long Island. Children: John, and Sarah, who married William Waring.

3. John,[4] third son of John Cromwell[3] of Harrison, was born August 18, 1767.

4. Joseph,[4] fourth son of John Cromwell[3] of Harrison, born March 3, 1770; died 1843. He married Mary Clapp, of Greenwich. Their son William, of Harrison, married Sarah Griffin.

5. William,[4] fifth son of John Cromwell[3] of Harrison, born April 29, 1773, resided in Canada. He left William, of New York.

V. 1. Daniel,[5] eldest son of James Cromwell,[4] married Elizabeth Townsend. Children: Henry, Edward, Daniel, and Charlotte, all of New York.

2. James,[5] second son of James Cromwell,[4] married Anne Abbott.

3. Oliver,[5] third son of James Cromwell,[4] married Sarah Titus, and left Joshua of Monroe County, Thomas of New York, James, John of St. Louis, and William of New York.

4. David,[5] fourth son of James Cromwell,[4] married Rebecca Bowman.

Children: William D., of New York, Henry, James, Frederick, Anna, Sarah, Charlotte, Maria, Rebecca, Emily.

5. William,[5] sixth son of James Cromwell,[4] married Caroline Underhill, daughter of Joshua. Children: James W., and Caroline.

6. John,[5] eighth son of James Cromwell,[4] of Orange County, N. Y.; he married Lætitia Haviland. Children: Walter, of Orange County, James, David, and Oliver.

7. John,[5] son of Daniel Cromwell,[4] married Elizabeth Thorn, of Glen Cove, L. I. Children: James T., M. D., of Indiana; Daniel S., Charles T., and Leonard T., of New York.

Mr. Charles T. Cromwell,[6] son of John,[5] married Henrietta, daughter of Benjamin Brooks, of Bridgeport, Conn.; a lineal descendant of Theophilus Eaton, first governor of the colony of New Haven, and of Robert Cromwell, father of the Protector. Henrietta, third daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Cromwell, married in 1623 Colonel John Jones, subsequently one of the judges of Charles I. Their son William, born in London 1624, married in 1659 Hannah, daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton. William Jones became deputy governor of New Haven colony, and afterwards lieutenant-governor of the colony of Connecticut. He died October 17, 1706, aged eighty-two; his wife died May 4, 1707, aged seventy-four. (Memoir of Theophilus Eaton, the first Governor of the Colony of New Haven; by Jacob Bailey Moore. In Collections of the New York Historical Society, second series, vol. ii. paper xv.; pp. 469–493.)

Mr. Charles T. Cromwell, whose summer residence is on Manussing Island, Rye, has had three children: Charles B., who was drowned, June 1860; Henrietta, who married John de Ruyter, of New York, and Oliver Eaton Cromwell.

Crooker, William, 1783–1784. Moses Crooker, 1791, had a storehouse, near the present bridge crossing to Lyon's Point, Port Chester.

Cue. 'James Cues land' in 1723 was situated apparently where that of Mr. James Weeks is. This is the only mention of him that we find.

Dusenbery. Henry, 1721, bought a piece of 'salt marsh' on Manussing Island. In 1724 he had land on the road from the Purchase to King Street. Henry, of Harrison, doubtless a son of the above, born July 28, 1735, married Susannah Ogden, born May 27, 1738. (Her mother was Wilmot Ogden.) Children: Henry, born November 12, 1757, married Hannah Budd; Wilmot, born February 17, 1759, married Joseph Merritt; Jemima, died young; Helena, born August 5, 1763, married John Hawkins; Freelove, born November 13, 1766, married Simon Tyler; and Parthenia, born September 19, 1772, married first, March 27, 1798, Peter Brown, a native of Scotland, born November 8, 1774, died September 29, 1799; second, James Glover. She died June 12, 1856. Daughter by the former marriage, Margaret W.,

born February 16, 1799, married July 16, 1817, John Pirnie. (Pirnie Family Rec.)

Daniels, Thomas, 'of the town of Rye,' complains of the Horseneck constable in 1718.

Deall, Samuel, is first mentioned in 1791, about which time he established a mill, now Mr. Van Amringe's. He was supervisor from 1809 to 1822.

Delhingham, Stephen, witness in 1750.

Demilt, Peter, had land in Will's Purchase, but above the town limits, in 1713.

Dickinson, Joseph, had land in 'Limpen Will's purchase,' near Byram River, 1722.

Dixon, John, was in Rye in 1791. He was the father of John, James, and Thomas, and three daughters, one of whom married John Minuse. 'James Purdy, son of John Dixon, was baptized Sept. 10' of that year.

Dow, John, mentioned 1729.

Dodge, Joseph; his 'salt meadow' was near Mamaroneck harbor in 1772.

Doutty, Palmer, was here in 1715.

Doughty. I. Francis (see page 150), was probably a descendant of the Rev. Francis Doughty, who came about the year 1642 from England to New England, and thence to New Netherland, where he bought a large tract of land at Mespath, now Newtown, L. I. He was driven thence in the Indian troubles to New Amsterdam, where he officiated as minister for some time. His namesake, Francis 'junior, of Flushing,' in 1728 bought the house at Rye known of late years as Van Sicklin's, with three acres of land. He appears to have lived here till about 1740; was justice of the peace in 1735, and constable in 1737, and a vestryman repeatedly. In 1748 we find him advertising as 'Francis Doughty, *who kept the* Kings Bridge,' and 'now *removed to the Sign of the* Sun *in* Rye,' etc. He is last mentioned in 1753.

II. John Doughty,[2] son of Francis,[1] mentioned 1750, succeeded his father as innkeeper in the 'old fort,' and was constable, 1750, 1768–1773. His will is dated 1789, and mentions four sons: John, Isaac, Philemon, and Ebenezer; and two daughters; Mary Tillot, and Sarah Van Cot. (Surrogate's Office, White Plains.)

David Doughty,[2] mentioned 1788–1797, probably a younger son of Francis,[1] held various offices in the town.

III. John Doughty,[3] son of John,[2] kept the inn, which had now been long known as 'Doughty's,' and was town clerk, 1794–1799. Phœbe, wife of John Doughty, died in 1812, aged forty-two years. (Cemetery near Mamaroneck.)

Eisenhart. Christopher, an unmistakably Teutonic name, first occurs in 1730, about the same time with Godfret Hans. Eisenhart was of Harrison in 1745, and was living in 1771. Christopher, junior, then

mentioned, lived in Rye, and about the beginning of this century occupied the old house now Mr. Joseph Kirby's. He died April 29, 1819, aged fifty-two years. (Cem.) The name is sometimes written Izenhart.

Elsworth, Joseph, witness in 1729.

Embree, John, witness in 1732.

Esmond, Thomas, of Harrison's Purchase in 1733.

Eustace, David, of Westchester in 1720, was husband of Mary, daughter of Samuel Haight, and had through her one hundred and seventy acres in Harrison, west of Rye Pond, which he sold to John Tredwell.

Farrington, Stephen, of Rye, married Elizabeth Sutton of North Castle, sixteenth of second month, 1757. (Friends' Rec.) Edward, of White Plains, son of Edward, married Phœbe Baker, eighteenth of twelfth month, 1765. (Ibid.)

Fauconier, Peter, a native of France, high in favor with Bellamont and Cornbury, governors of New York: by the latter made collector and receiver-general of the province in 1705. He obtained large grants of land from the governors, and among the rest a patent to a tract within the territory originally claimed by the town of Rye. This, long known as Fauconier's West Patent, is now a part of the town of North Castle. On the application of the people of Rye for a patent in 1720, the Council examined Mr. Fauconier, who made no objection to the granting of the petition. (Documents relating to the Colonial History of New York, vols. iv., v.; Land Papers, vol. viii. p. 5.)

Feenas, Eleazar, witness in 1703.

Ferris, Peter, 'of the borough town of Westchester, esq.,' in 1730 bought the rights of David Jamison to the tract of land known as Harrison's Purchase. For this claim, comprising one fifth of the whole tract, he gave *fifteen pounds;* and sold or gave it, the same year, to Peter Stringham, of Rye.

Field. This family trace their lineage to John Field of Ardsley, Yorkshire, England, 'a distinguished mathematician and astronomer,' born about 1525; died in 1587. Robert, his great-grandson, born in 1610, removed to America, and settled at Flushing, L. I., in 1645.

I. Benjamin Field,[1] grandson of Robert, born 1663, married Hannah Browne, of Flushing. He had six sons: Benjamin, John, Samuel, Anthony, Joseph, and Robert; and two daughters: Hannah, born 1700; and Sarah, born 1707.

1. Benjamin Field,[2] son of Benjamin,[1] born 1692.

2. John Field,[2] son of Benjamin,[1] born 1694.

3. Samuel Field,[2] son of Benjamin,[1] born 1696, mentioned 1723, had three sons: William, Stephen, and John.

4. Anthony Field,[2] son of Benjamin,[1] born 1698, married Hannah Burling. He removed from Flushing to Harrison's Purchase in 1725.

He had six sons: John, Thomas, Moses, Samuel, Benjamin, William; and two daughters: Sarah, who married Joseph Waters, and Mary.

5. Joseph Field,[2] son of Benjamin,[1] born 1702, had three sons: Gilbert, Nehemiah, and Solomon; and a daughter, Comfort.

6. Robert,[2] youngest son of Benjamin Field,[1] born July 7, 1707. It is said that he came over when young from Long Island with his father, upon a 'prospecting' tour, but found the country so wild that he returned. At a later day he came back, and married, about 1737, Abigail, daughter of Joseph Sutton, of King Street. Joseph Sutton left his house and half his farm to Robert, who left it to his only son Uriah. Robert, 'of Greenwich, Ct.,' — probably the same, — had two daughters: Sarah, married Isaac Underhill, eighteenth of eighth month, 1756; and Jerusha, married Stephen Field, son of Nathan, fifteenth of tenth month, 1760. (Friends' Rec.)

III. 1. William Field,[3] son of Samuel,[2] had two sons, William and Samuel.

2. John Field,[3] son of Anthony,[2] was of Yorktown.

3. Uriah Field,[3] son of Robert,[2] was born in 1738, and died in 1814. He married Mary Quinby, of Westchester, daughter of Aaron, eighteenth of first month, 1764. (Friends' Rec.) They had four sons: Aaron, Robert, Josiah, James; and six daughters: Abigail, Elizabeth, Hannah, Sarah, Mary, and Anne.

IV. 1. Aaron Field,[4] son of Uriah,[3] born in 1760, married Jane, daughter of John and Phœbe Haviland, and had two sons, Charles and Richard; and four daughters now living, Sarah, Anne, Eliza, and Hannah. These ladies reside in the homestead, on the upper part of King Street.

I. Nathan Field, born November 30, 1702, married Elizabeth ——, born March 31, 1702. In 1752 he was living in the western part of Harrison, near Horton's mill-pond. Our records mention him, 1737–1771. He had a son Stephen, and a son William.

II. 1. 'Stephen Field, of Rye, son of Nathan,' married Jerusha Field, daughter of Robert, of Greenwich, Conn., '15th of 10th mo., 1760.' (Friends' Rec.) They had four sons: William, Jesse, Oliver, David; and three daughters: Jerusha, Phœbe, and Elizabeth. (Family Rec.)

2. William,[2] son of Nathan,[1] born January 15, 1741. (Family Rec.)

III. 1. Jesse,[2] son of Stephen,[1] born August 13, 1762, married, eighteenth of fifth month, 1784, Phœbe Hawkshurst, daughter of Seaman, born March 8, 1767. (Friends' Rec.)

2. Oliver,[3] son of Stephen,[2] born March 29, 1766.

3. David,[3] son of Stephen,[2] born April 28, 1768, married Sarah ——, born April 11, 1776, died June, 1817. He died October 15, 1805. Children: Marcia, born January 25, 1799; Stephen, born July 31, 1800; and David, born October 6, 1804.

IV. Stephen Field,[4] son of David,[3] married Mary C., born March

26, 1805. They have had seven sons: William M., Joseph C., Stephen J. (died young), David R., Stephen, Charles, James; and one daughter, Sarah A., married David A. Banks.

Flamman. Cornelius [Flamand?] was a Frenchman, probably a Huguenot, who served as apprentice to Mr. Francis Garabrant, in New York, from 1707 to 1722, and married his daughter. See his trouble about slaves, page 182. Flamman was here in 1734, and lived at Saw Pit in 1741–1743. He was (presumably) a trustee of the Presbyterian congregation of Rye in 1753. He was dead in 1758, when Cornelius, his 'eldest son and heir,' sold his land on Merritt's Point.

Flood. 'John Flood the boatman,' of Rye, testified before the Committee of Safety, January 27, 1776. See page 270. August 29, 1776, twenty dollars were 'given to Mr. Flood, as a reward for his spirited conduct in apprehending William Lounsbery, a notorious enemy to the cause of America.' (American Archives, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1555.) Captain Flood was living at Saw Pit in 1789, when a John junior is mentioned.

Foreman, Solomon, 1736.

Fitzgerald, Edward, 1712.

Fowler. I. William, of Flushing, sold land at Taffy's Plain in Rye, 1706; and conveyed two hundred and forty acres of land, probably in Harrison, to his son William, of Rye, 1711. (Co. Rec., E. 9.) He was living in 1716. He had two sons, William and John, and probably three others, Thomas, Joseph, and Jeremiah.

II. 1. William Fowler,[2] son of William,[1] of Flushing, is called junior in 1716. He was 'of Menussink,' or '*Man* island,' 1719–1722, but removed apparently to the 'town plot,' and was dead in 1742. Perhaps he had transferred the land in Harrison to his brother Thomas.

2. John Fowler,[2] son of William,[1] of Flushing, had from his father 'one third of lot number two,' in Rye, — probably in Harrison. His 'dwelling-house' is mentioned 1720. In 1742 he sold to Thomas Carpenter, late of the island of Nassau, his farm of one hundred and thirty-one acres in Harrison, apparently on both sides of the Purchase Road, north of the road to King Street.

3. Thomas Fowler,[2] perhaps a son of William,[1] in 1723 had land on the road from White Plains to Harrison; in 1724 he sold to Henry Franklin two hundred and forty acres 'in Harris's purchase.' His wife was Catharine. He removed to the 'town plot' of Rye, and bought a house and five acres of land where the Presbyterian Church now stands. He was justice of the peace in 1734, and was living in 1737.

4. Joseph Fowler,[2] perhaps a son of William,[1] had a farm in Harrison, on the west side of the Purchase Road. He was the father of Benjamin and James. He, or another Joseph, in 1729 sold his farm in the White Plains. 'The late Joseph Fowler,' is mentioned in 1730.

5. Jeremiah Fowler,[2] perhaps a son of William,[1] in 1723 had land in

Harrison adjoining that of Thomas, and in the White Plains. He had a son Jeremiah. March 25, 1771, 'A Good farm lying in Harrison's purchase, situate and lying on the road leading from Rye to Bedford, three miles from the Saw Pit landing and four from the Rye landing,' is advertised in the New York papers as for sale. It contains one hundred and sixty-four acres good profitable land, and formerly belonged to Jeremiah Fowler deceased.

'Lieutenant William Fowler' lived, 1723–1742, on King Street, and was apparently of a different family. In 1742 he sold his farm of one hundred and twenty-five acres, between Blind Brook and the colony line and highway, to Adam Seaman, of North Castle, reserving 'the burying place to bury those of his own family.'

Franklin, Henry, of Flushing, bought land in Harrison from Thomas Fowler in 1724, which he sold in 1729 to Thomas Franklin. Thomas, mentioned 1725–1750, in the latter year sold to William Anderson one hundred and fifty-eight acres on the cross-road from Harrison to White Plains.

French, George, in 1740–1741, bought several 'small lots' in White Plains.

Gale, Griffin, bought twenty acres in Hog-pen Ridge in 1764.

Gandal, John, deceased 1769, had owned land on Budd's Neck, near Archibald Telford's. Elijah Gandrell was here in 1813.

Gibson, Joseph, witness in 1740.

Gilchrist, Thomas, 1738, bought Moses Galpin's house with thirty-five acres on the country road, near Daniel Purdy's land. Thomas and William were here in 1752.

Glover, John, 1738, in 1742 bought three acres of land on 'Grachus street,' near Hyatt's Cove. He was of Newtown, Conn., in 1745.

Gorum [Gorham ?], George, witness, 1733–1736.

Graham, Augustine, of Morrisania, son of James, who was attorney-general of New York from 1685 to 1701, was patentee with Clapp, Horton and others of lands then within the bounds of Rye, between Byram River and Rye Pond. 'Young Graham' was complained of in 1701 as concerned in one of the extravagant grants of land made by Governor Fletcher. In 1711 he writes, 'I am upon sale of my land at Ry Ponds in order to raise money to satisfie my arrears to Mr. [Governor] Dongan.' (N. Y. Col. MSS., lvi. 125.) He was dead in 1719. (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. of N. Y., iv., v.) His lands were adjacent to those of John Clapp in 1723.

James Graham, of Morrisania, in 1742 sold land in Harrison.

John Augustus [or Augustine] Graham, doubtless of the same family, was a physician of the White Plains, who took an active part in political affairs at the outbreak of the Revolution. He was a leading member of the Committee of Safety in 1776. (American Archives, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1447, etc.) He lived near the [old] court-house at the White Plains.

Graham. Robert, of Scarsdale, in 1749 bought a tract of fifty acres in White Plains, south of the 'highway over against the Wolf-pit hill.' This was doubtless Dr. Robert Graham who practised medicine in this neighborhood for several years before the Revolution (see page 168), perhaps the brother of Dr. Andrew Graham of Woodbury. (Hist. of Woodbury, Conn., p. 547.)

Green, Joseph, 1717, was of King Street in 1729.

Griffin. Richard, 1722, had lands in Harrison, near Mamaroneck River, and near Rye Pond. Jacob, 1717–1733, was of White Plains in 1737–1752. In 1750 he bought of Aaron Veal ninety-five acres in Harrison, west of Rye Pond. Adam had property here in 1727. Caleb was of White Plains, 1752. Henry, 1746–1762, had land on Budd's Neck, below Guion's. Anne, probably his wife, is mentioned with him in 1762.

Captain Jonathan Griffin, 1749, was an elder of the Presbyterian Church of White Plains in 1762. His tombstone, in the burying-ground of that church, records his death, April 27, 1780, at the age of seventy-seven years, ten months, and seven days.

Guion. I. John, of Rye Neck, was the grandson of Louis Guion, of La Rochelle, in France, who, 'four years before the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, fled with his family into England, from whence he emigrated to America, and settled at New Rochelle about 1687.' His son Louis, who died at New Rochelle about 1725, had five children, of whom John was the youngest. (Bolton, Hist. of Westchester Co., vol. ii. p. 521.)

In 1746 Joseph Horton sold to John Gujon, for three hundred and fifteen pounds, 'my farm and lands where I now dwell on Budd's neck . . . on both sides of the country road,' comprising fifty acres. This property has but very lately passed out of the hands of his descendants. John, born February 1, 1723, died June 21, 1792; married Anna Hart, born April 11, 1728, died February 26, 1814. They had eight sons: Jonathan, Peter, James, John, Abraham, Isaac, Elijah, Monmouth Hart; and three daughters: Sarah, born April 25, 1751, died July 15, 1808, married Bartholomew Hadden; Dinah, born May 7, 1757, married Peter Knapp; and Anna, born January 12, 1760, married Silas Knapp.

II. 1. Jonathan Guion,[2] son of John,[1] of Rye Neck, lived in the 'Middle Patent,' or North Castle. He was born January 28, 1749, married Phœbe Lyon, and left two sons, James and Alvy.

2. Peter Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born May 27, 1753, died 1772.

3. James Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born June 22, 1755, died at New Haven, February 1, 1781.

4. John Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born March 4, 1762, married Phœbe Huestis. He was supervisor of the town, 1797, 1801–1804. He lived in the house now (1870) occupied by Jonathan H. Gedney, and owned the store-house on the corner diagonally opposite, then the principal place of business in Rye.

5. Abraham Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born January 26, 1765, married, May 19, 1793, Mary Purdy, born June 7, 1777. He died October 9, 1831; his widow, September 28, 1846. They had five sons: John (died young), William Henry, Peter Knapp, James Hart, and Gabriel; and seven daughters: Anne Eliza, married Thomas Haviland, and died October 26, 1840; Sarah, died May 15, 1798; Maria, married John W. Conover, of New York; Sarah Ophelia, married Royal C. Ormsby, of New York; Charity Amelia, married Garret Vermilye; Hetty Adeline, married Gilbert Haight; and Charlotte Purdy, died April 2, 1824.

6. Isaac Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born September 19, 1767, married Elizabeth Wilsey.

7. Elijah Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born April 19, 1770, married Elizabeth Marshall. Their sons were, the Rev. John M. Guion, and the Rev. Elijah Guion.

8. Monmouth Hart Guion,[2] son of John,[1] born October 8, 1771, married Anne Lyon.

III. 1. James Guion,[3] son of Jonathan,[2] of the Middle Patent, was the father of the Rev. Thomas T. Guion.

William Henry,[3] son of Abraham,[2] late proprietor of the homestead.

Gedney. I. John Gedney, of Norwich, Norfolk County, England, born 1603, came to Salem, Mass., in May 1637, with his wife Mary, aged twenty-five. He had four sons: John, Bartholomew, Eleazar, and Eli. Eleazar, the third, born May 15, 1642, was the father of Eleazar, who in all probability was the ancestor of the family in this neighborhood. He was born in 1666. (Savage, Geneal. Dict. of the First Settlers of N. E.) The inscription upon a tombstone in the Gedney cemetery, near Mamaroneck, reads: '1722. Here lies Eleazar Gedney deceased Oct. 27. Born in Boston Goverment.' Next to it 'lies Anne Gedney his wife.'

II. 1. John Gedney,[2] probably the son of Eleazar,[1] was born in 1695. His epitaph in the same locality records his death, October 3, 1766, at the age of seventy-one years; and that of Mary his wife, January 5, 1772, at the age of seventy-three years, two months. In 1740 'John Gediney of Scarsdale' bought of William Marsh one hundred and sixteen acres in White Plains, for four hundred pounds.

2. James Gedney,[2] probably the son of Eleazar,[1] was born in 1702. He 'departed this Life 27 of Jan^{ry} 1766 in the 64th year of his Age;' and Hebe his wife died August 10, 1799, aged ninety-four years, six months, eight days. He also was of Scarsdale in 1733, when he bought of Daniel Horton sixty acres in White Plains for two hundred pounds. In 1739 he bought of John Budd one hundred and two acres on Budd's Neck, between the country road and Westchester old path. In 1760, he bought of Jonathan Horton one hundred and thirty-nine acres on Budd's Neck near Mamaroneck Bridge, for one thousand two hundred

and seventeen pounds. Portions of this land he gave in 1761–1764 to his sons, James, Isaac, Caleb, and Jonathan. Their farms lay adjoining on Budd's Neck, fronting on the country road, and extending from Mamaroneck River eastward beyond 'Barry's lane.' He had three other sons, of whom Solomon was one.

III. 1. Bartholomew Gedney,[3] perhaps the son of John,[2] was born in 1720, and died August 27, 1775. (Cem.)

2. John Gedney,[3] perhaps the son of John,[2] was of Crompond. His two sons bore the ancestral names Bartholomew and John. He had four daughters: Martha, Sarah, Sibby, and Mary. (Information from Mrs. Todd, Thomas Haviland's sister.)

3. Eleazar Gedney,[3] perhaps the son of John,[2] bought land in 1754 from Harrison and others in Ulster County, and conveyed it in 1760 to his five sons, — Joseph, Eleazar, Daniel, David, and Jacob. He was then of Scarsdale.

4. James Gedney,[3] son of James,[2] was born in 1734, and died October 15, 1809, aged seventy-five years, ten months, twenty-seven days. His wife, Anne, died October 11, 1806, aged sixty-five years, eleven month, nine days. They lived in a house which stood directly opposite the gate to Dr. Jay's grounds. They had four sons: James, Abraham, Gilbert, and Jonathan; and seven daughters: Nancy, married Benjamin Gedney; Sarah, married Gabriel Burger; Phœbe, married —— Kenny; Mary, married —— Sutton; Tamar, married David Roberts, and died at Glenn's Falls, October 6, 1846; Martha, married —— Smith; and Jane, married Daniel Hains.

5. Isaac Gedney,[3] son of James,[2] 1761, had from his father twenty-four and a half acres on the country road and Mamaroneck River. Isaac, perhaps the same, was of Mamaroneck in 1750, when he bought eighteen acres on Budd's Neck, between the harbor and the road. He was arrested and confined at White Plains in the early part of the war: see his letter to the Committee of Safety, page 230, where he speaks of his family of seven children. These were, Isaac, Sylvanus, William; Elizabeth, married Gilbert Carpenter; Mary, died young; Mary, married William H. Gedney; ——, married William Gray, a captain in the British army. (Information from Elisha Carpenter.) Isaac Gedney was buried October 26, 1791. (*Notitia Parochi.*)

6. Caleb Gedney,[3] son of James,[2] 1762, had from his father thirty-nine acres by Mamaroneck River. Caleb Gedney lived at White Plains during the Revolution, and moved down to the lower part of Harrison; he was one of the signers of the petition for a fair, 1771. Children: Henry, Phœbe, Gilbert, Caleb (now living in Mamaroneck, aged eighty-two).

7. Jonathan Gedney,[3] son of James,[2] had from his father thirty-nine acres on Budd's Neck. He lived where Miss Henderson's school is now kept, near Barry's Lane. He was born March 17, 1739, and died during the war. His wife, Elizabeth Hains, was born December 29,

1742, and died August 24, 1801. They had five sons: Alexander, (died young), Solomon, Joseph Hains, William Tryon (died young), and Jonathan; and two daughters: Elizabeth, born January 29, 1767, died September 30, 1801; and Mary, born February 20, 1772, died about 1852.

8. Solomon Gedney,[3] son of James,[2] married —— Horton, and lived opposite Dr. Jay's farm-house. He had one daughter, Hannah, married Isaac Gedney.

IV. 1. Bartholomew Gedney,[4] son of John,[3] of Crompond, was unmarried, and died during the Revolution.

2. John Gedney,[4] son of John,[3] of Crompond, married Mary, daughter of Benjamin Lyon, of North Street. He lived in White Plains, about a mile and a half below the old court-house. He had three sons: Bartholomew, Elijah, and John Benjamin; and seven daughters: Margaret, Esther, Abigail, Elizabeth Ann, Charlotte, Dorothy, and Mary. Elizabeth married William Haviland.

3. James Gedney,[4] son of James,[3] removed to New York, and died about 1822, leaving a son James, and two daughters.

4. Abraham Gedney,[4] son of James,[3] died about 1858. He was the father of Captain Joseph H. Gedney.

5. Gilbert Gedney,[4] son of James,[3] died about 1850. He had a son Timothy, and two daughters.

6. Jonathan Gedney,[4] son of James,[3] born in 1772, died in 1857. He had three sons: Gilbert, David, and John; and two daughters: Sarah Ann, and Hetty. (From David Gedney, Milton.)

7. Isaac Gedney,[4] son of Isaac,[3] married —— Gedney; lived on Rye Neck, and had one daughter, Susan, died unmarried in 1870.

8. Sylvanus Gedney,[4] son of Isaac,[3] unmarried.

9. William Gedney,[4] son of Isaac,[3] married Charity Gedney. Children: Mercy, married John Hadden; Alexander; Sylvanus; Ann, married Benjamin Way; Jane married Jonathan Purdy; Alfred; Mary, married David Stanley; James.

10. Solomon Gedney,[4] son of Jonathan,[3] born September 20, 1769, died February 3, 1836. He lived in the homestead on Rye Neck. He married, October 25, 1795, Amy, daughter of David Haight, born February 25, 1777, died September 5, 1833. They had eight sons: Jonathan H., David H., Nicholas H., Solomon, Peter Joseph, Alexander, William Tryon, and Benjamin F.; and four daughters: Charlotte H., born July 14, 1796, died January 22, 1870; Elizabeth, born April 18, 1802; Susan C. R., born June 23, 1808; and Sarah A., born December 11, 1810.

Jonathan H.,[5] son of Solomon Gedney,[4] lives on Rye Neck (1870). He married Margaret M., daughter of Isaac Worden. They have had four sons: Charles T., and Samuel L., died young; Jonathan W., Alexander James: and four daughters: Julia Ann, Elvira T., Caroline M., married H. Sivalls; and Sarah Ann.

Haddon. Job, 1742–1764, lived on West Street. Job, junior, mentioned 1764, was probably the 'Job Heady' whose 'mill' is indicated, beside Mamaroneck River, on the map of 1779. The name is variously written, Huddin, Hadding, Headen, etc. Thomas lived during the Revolution on North Street, where William S. Carpenter now lives. Bartholomew is mentioned, 1794–1804.

Hains. I. Godfret or Godfrey Hanse, or Hains,[1] first mentioned 1717, came over from Germany about that time, and settled on the lower part of Budd's Neck He was a rope-maker by trade, like many of his descendants, whose 'rope-walks' were numerous in that part of the town. He died July 22, 1768, aged ninety-three. (Milton Cemetery.) Godfrey, junior, was his son, and probably Joseph and Solomon.

II. 1. Godfrey Hains,[2] son of Godfrey,[1] called junior, 1734, had land on Budd's Neck, part of which is now comprised in the Jay property. He was drowned in the East River, in 1766. See account on page 161. He had four sons at least: Godfrey, James, Daniel, and Solomon. Gilbert was probably another son.

2. Joseph Hains,[2] probably a son of Godfrey,[1] was a rope-maker, and in 1741 bought a farm of seventy acres on Budd's Neck below the country road and Westchester old path, 'beginning at a rock within a few feet to the westernmost of the school house.'

3. Solomon Hains,[2] perhaps a son of Godfrey,[1] had land on Budd's Neck in 1739.

III. 1. Godfrey Hains,[3] son of Godfrey,[2] was an active loyalist during the Revolution, of whom some account has been given, Chapter XXVII. He was 'a single man' in 1775. The following account of one of his many 'hair-breadth escapes' has been preserved by tradition: He was once taken, together with Joseph Parker and William Haviland (father of Samuel and Thomas, now living), and carried to Poughkeepsie, where they were kept some time in confinement in a dwelling-house. One night Hains, who was a strong man, succeeded in releasing himself from his hand-cuffs, woke his companions, and promised to liberate them. An Indian was on guard at the door, armed with a gun; the party seized him before he could give the alarm, and taking his gun from him, slipped out, and started to escape. Parker missed the way and was taken: Hains and Haviland made their way toward the Croton River. They knew that a strong guard was posted on the bridge over which they had been taken, and accordingly went a mile further up, and Hains, being very tall, forded the stream, carrying his comrade on his back. After spending the next day in concealment in a barn, where they came very near detection, they reached home the following night. Hains lived till after the war, and died in Nova Scotia.

2. James Hains,[3] son of Godfrey,[2] in 1753–1760 bought land on Budd's Neck. His sons were James, junior, and Thomas.

3. Daniel Hains,[3] son of Godfrey,[2] had land from his father in 1760.

4. Solomon Hains,[3] son of Godfrey,[2] had land on Budd's Neck in 1760.

5. Gilbert Hains,[3] probably a son of Godfrey,[2] was the father of Godfrey, William Andrew, and Gilbert.

IV. 1, 2. James, junior, and Thomas Hains,[4] 'the two sons of James,'[3] were concerned in the spiking of American cannon near King's Bridge, January 1776. (Journal of Prov. Congress, etc., vol. i. p. 272.)

Gilbert Hains,[4] youngest son of Gilbert,[3] was a soldier in the war of 1812; he died at Milton in 1869. He had three sons: Isaac, Joseph, and Henry S.; the last two of whom are now living in Milton.

Haight. I. Samuel Haight, of Flushing, L. I., born 1647, died 1712, a prominent member of the Society of Friends, was associated with John Harrison, William Nicoll, Ebenezer Wilson, and David Jamison, in 1695, in the purchase of the tract of land called after the first of these, Harrison's Purchase. He was a son of Nicholas Haight of Windsor, brother of John Hoit, an early settler of Rye, of whom some account has already been given (page 412). In the division of the lands now forming the town of Harrison, Mr. Haight had two portions, the one in the upper part, adjoining Rye Ponds, which in his will he directed his executors to sell for the benefit of his daughters; and the other in the lower part, adjoining the territory now forming the town of Rye. Here he left lands to his sons Jonathan and David. He married Sarah ——, and had five sons: Samuel, Nicholas, Jonathan, David, and John; and five daughters: Susannah, married Richard Griffin; Sarah, married Silas Titus; Mary, married David Eustace or Huystead; Hannah; and Phœbe.

II. 1. Samuel Haight,[2] son of Samuel of Flushing,[1] born about 1670, died 1712, was the father of James, of Greenburg.

2. Nicholas Haight[2] son of Samuel,[1] was the father of Jacob, who removed to Dutchess County about 1750.

3. Jonathan Haight,[2] son of Samuel,[1] inherited land from his father, which he sold in portions to a number of persons, among others to the Rev. James Wetmore, before 1728. He removed with his son Charles to North Castle. His other son William remained till 1765, when he went to Sing Sing.

4. David Haight,[2] son of Samuel,[1] born before 1691, died before 1760. He came to Rye and settled near the present Harrison station, in which neighborhood his lands were located. His sons were Samuel, David, Thomas, and Nicholas. Daughters: Hannah, and Elizabeth, who married John Culbert. In 1746 and 1757 he divided his lands among them, giving one hundred acres each to Samuel and David, forty acres to Thomas, and one hundred and forty acres to Nicholas, including his homestead.

III. 1. Samuel Haight,[3] son of David,[2] died in 1784; probably without children.

2. David Haight,[3] son of David,[2] born about 1701, died about 1798

His house stood on the north side of the entrance to Mr. Josiah Macy's place, on North Street, which he owned. He was a member of the Vestry of Rye. He sold the property in 1792 to his son Daniel, and went to live with his son David, at Bedford, where he died. He was married twice; first, to Melicent Lane. Children: John, and Lavinia, wife of Elijah Purdy, born 1735, died 1816. Secondly, to Abigail Purdy.† Children: Thomas, David, Samuel, Daniel, Isaiah, and Joshua. Another daughter married Benjamin Miller of Putnam County.

3. Thomas Haight,[3] son of David,[2] was dead in 1757.

4. Nicholas Haight,[3] son of David,[2] had the homestead, near the present Harrison station. He died before 1775, leaving one son, David.

IV. 1. John Haight,[4] son of David,[3] born 1738, died 1819, lived where Mr. William H. Smith now lives, on North Street. He has descendants in New York.

2. Thomas Haight,[4] son of David,[3] was of New York.

3. David,[4] lived in Bedford, and died in 1836.

4. Samuel,[4] had one son, Hachaliah, who died young.

5. Daniel,[4] had the mill now Mr. Van Amringe's, for a time, and in 1792 bought his father's farm, now Mr. Josiah Macy's. He married in 1777 Phœbe, daughter of Roger Purdy, senior, of North Street, and died in 1828, aged seventy-six years. He had three sons: Jonathan, Daniel, and Epenetus; and five daughters: Anne, married Elijah Anderson; Sarah, married first, Daniel, son of John Haight; second, Elijah Purdy; Mary, married Isaac Purdy; Elizabeth, married Elias Purdy; and Abigail, married Richard F. Cornwell.

V. 1. Jonathan Haight,[5] son of Daniel,[4] born September 25, 1782; married Hannah Seaman, born September 30, 1786. He died November 25, 1856; his wife, July 25, 1856. They had eight sons: Elisha, Jonathan, Charles, Daniel, Sylvanus, Henry, William, and George; and one daughter.

2. Daniel Haight,[5] son of Daniel,[4] married Desire, daughter of Nehemiah Wilson, of Greenwich, September 26, 1810. They had five sons: Nehemiah W., Daniel, Joseph, John D., and Webster; and three daughters.

3. Epenetus Haight,[5] son of Daniel,[4] had three daughters.

Hawkshurst, Daniel, 1758, bought Flamman's place at Saw Pit, and next year lived in Rye.

Hare, Edward, of Rye, 1742, sold thirty acres in Harrison to Thomas Marsh in 1746, and next year his house and twelve acres in Rye. He married Mary, daughter of Sarah Tory, widow, of Rye.

Harris, George. See page 177.

Harrison, Samuel, 1750, had land in Harrison, on the cross-road to White Plains.

Hatfield. Peter, witness in 1724. Abraham, of White Plains, 1749, sold land there. Gilbert, of White Plains, is mentioned 1751; and Joshua in 1748.

† [illegible]

Halsted. Jonas, 1726. David, 1732–1734. Thomas, 1738–1768, was of Harrison. The Revolutionary chart of 1779 shows his farm on the cross-road to White Plains, near Mamaroneck River.

Halsted. I. 1. Ezekiel Halsted,[1] originally from Huntington, L. I., says Mr. Bolton (Hist. Weschester Co., vol. ii. p. 79), was of New Rochelle in 1732. (Co. Rec., G.) He removed to Rye in 1746, and bought from the sons of Timothy Knap the estate now belonging to the heirs of the late Newberry Halsted, on the road to the Beach. He was, apparently, one of the trustees of the Presbyterian Church in 1753. He died at Rye, October 30, 1757, in the forty-ninth year of his age. (Milton Cemetery.) He had two sons, Ezekiel and Joseph.

2. Philemon Halsted,[1] was executor to Ezekiel's will, and therefore could not be the Philemon mentioned below, born in 1743. He was doubtless Ezekiel's brother. In 1768 Ezekiel[2] sold to him the estate above described, and also ninety acres north of Roger Park's farm, now Mr. Greacen's. This was the property owned a few years ago by a namesake of Philemon.

II. 1. Ezekiel Halsted,[2] son of Ezekiel,[1] was born in New Rochelle, November 29, 1738, and came to Rye with his father. He married Abigail Theall, July 17, 1758. In 1768 he sold the property left him by his father, and, April 30, 1771, bought the farm south of it, previously Jonathan Brown's, comprising one hundred acres, the lower part of which is still owned by his grandson Underhill. Ezekiel[2] died February 20, 1805. He had a son Ezekiel, and perhaps others.

2. Joseph Halsted,[2] son of Ezekiel,[1] was probably younger, as provision was made in his father's will for his support.

3. Philemon Halsted,[2] probably a son of Philemon,[1] was born October 10, 1743, and died August 13, 1816. He married Jane ——.

III. 1. Ezekiel Halsted,[3] son of Ezekiel,[2] born February 6, 1761, married, first, February 10, 1784, Sarah, daughter of Andrew Lyon, born August 17, 1760, died February 24, 1802. They had five sons: Andrew Lyon, Ezekiel, Underhill, Elisha, and William Henry; and three daughters: Sarah, born August 21, 1789, married Joseph H. Horton, November 22, 1808, died September 20, 1816; Mary, born July 4, 1791, married Elijah M. Davis, January 3, 1815; and Jane Eliza, born July 29, 1801, married Joseph Miller, February 8, 1826. Mr. Halsted married a second time, December 16, 1802, Esther [Schureman] Griffin, widow of John, born February 23, 1762, died May 5, 1843. They had two sons, Samuel and Schureman.

2. Philemon Halsted,[3] son of Ezekiel,[2] born April 2, 1779, married Deborah, daughter of Newberry and Elizabeth Davenport, born 1788, died July 1, 1845. He died May 16, 1857. Sons: James D. and Newberry.

IV. 1. Andrew Lyon Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] born December 15, 1784, married, first, April 3, 1809, Lavinia Horton, who died February 26, 1811. He married a second time, May 13, 1812, Frances Miller.

He had five daughters by the first wife, and a son, Griffin B., and a daughter, by the second.

2. Ezekiel Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] born August 13, 1787, married, November 23, 1808, Ann Griffen. He died August 28, 1828, 'having been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church twenty-two years.' He had four sons: John, Edward, Ezekiel, and Benjamin; and one daughter.

3. Underhill Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] born January 3, 1794, married, April 28, 1818, Ann Barker. Children: Henry, William, Sarah.

4. Elisha Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] born February 13, 1776, married, April 28, 1824, Harriet Purdy. Children: James, Leonard, Mary.

5. William Henry Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] born August 21, 1799, married, November 12, 1823, Sarah Barker. He had four daughters.

6. Samuel Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] had three daughters.

7. Schureman Halsted,[4] son of Ezekiel,[3] had Ezekiel, Gilbert, William, Samuel, Isaac, Charles, and three daughters.

8. James D. Halsted,[4] son of Philemon,[3] married Elizabeth Todd, and had two sons, Augustus and Mandeville, and one daughter.

Haviland. Three persons of this name appear in our records nearly simultaneously, — Jacob in 1715, Benjamin and Adam in 1716. Thomas and John, apparently brothers, appear soon after, in 1723–1725. In 1742 they owned a parcel of sedge land on Manussing Island (the southern part of which was called Haviland Island in 1796).

Jacob was of Harrison in 1727, and of West Street in 1742. He was perhaps the father of Joseph.

Benjamin, called junior, 1718–1723, in 1724 conveyed a farm of one hundred and thirty acres in Harrison to his son Ebenezer. (Co. Rec., lib. G. p. 6). Solomon, son of Benjamin deceased, married Hannah, daughter of Thomas Carpenter, September 17, 1742. (Friends' Rec.) Charity, daughter of Benjamin Haviland, married John Hutchins, sixteenth of fourth month, 1742. (Ibid.) Adam had a son Gilbert. (Brander's Book.)

II. 1. Joseph Haviland[2] was of West Street in 1751, and may have been the son of Jacob, of West Street. He was the father of William.

2. Solomon,[2] son of Benjamin deceased, September 17, 1742, married Hannah, daughter of Thomas Carpenter. (Friends' Rec.)

3. Gilbert,[2] son of Adam, mentioned 1751.

4. William, of Harrison's Purchase, was the father of Margaret, who married Stephen Cornell, sixteenth of eighth month, 1775 (Friends' Rec.); and Charity, who married Richard Burling, fourth of twelfth month, 1776. (Ibid.)

5. John Haviland, perhaps a son of John above mentioned, married Sarah Sneading.

III. 1. William Haviland,[3] son of Joseph,[2] born July 4, 1754, died June 24, 1834. He married, February 14, 1781, Elizabeth, daughter of John Gedney, born February 14, 1763; died November 16, 1842.

He lived in a house which stood at some distance west of North Street, on land now owned by Mr. William Mathews, but removed to the lower part of White Plains, shortly after the Revolution. He had four sons: Bartholomew, Timothy, Samuel, Thomas; and five daughters: Dorothy, born September 17, 1784, married William Harriott, died August 15, 1852; Margaret, born January 13, 1793, married Samuel Purdy, died July 18, 1855; Jane, born June 5, 1796, married Eliphalet Todd; Matilda G., born April 18, 1799, married Benjamin Clark, died August 25, 1853; and Charlotte, born December 9, 1802, died October 10, 1865.

2. John Haviland,[3] son of John[2] and Sarah Sneading, married Phœbe, daughter of Thomas Carpenter, born March 24, 1741. They had four sons: William, John, Benjamin, and Samuel; and five daughters: Sarah, married Isaac Oakley, died about 1820; Charity, married Gilbert Brundage, died March 4, 1823; Margaret, married first, J. Smith, second, James Nearing; Mary, married William Miller; Elizabeth, married Thomas Carpenter; and Jane, married Aaron Field, died 1858, aged ninety-three.

IV. 1. Bartholomew Haviland,[4] son of William,[3] born January 9, 1783, died October 28, 1851.

2. Timothy,[4] son of William,[3] born August 20, 1786, died May 29, 1869.

3. Samuel,[4] son of William,[3] born October 20, 1788.

4. Thomas,[4] son of William,[3] born June 5, 1791.

5. William Haviland,[4] son of John,[3] married Mary Halsted, and died young, leaving two daughters: Charity, married Richard Burling; and Margaret, married Stephen Cornell.

6. John Haviland,[4] son of John,[3] born August 1, 1734, married Phœbe Carpenter. He died February 29, 1804. They had two sons: William, and John; and three daughters: Jane, Sarah, and Mary (died young).

7. Benjamin Haviland,[4] son of John,[3] married Anne Cornell, tenth of first month, 1777; he died in Canada.

8. Samuel Haviland,[4] son of John,[3] married Rachel Lecraft, daughter of Dr. Willett, and died in Bedford.

Dr. Ebenezer Haviland (see pp. 146, 169.) belonged to one of the branches of this family. He married Tamar, daughter of Underhill Budd, March 25, 1765; served honorably in the Revolutionary War as military surgeon; and died at Wallingford, Connecticut, about the close of the war. (See page 499 for account of his family.) 'Mr. Haviland,' was recognized as deputy from Westchester County, in the New York Convention, when it met 'in the Court house at the White Plains,' July 9, 1776. (American Archives, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1386.) He was surgeon to the Fourth Regiment, New York Continental troops, August 4, 1775. (Ibid. vol. iii. p. 26.) In April 1776, the New York Committee of Safety appointed 'Doctor Ebenezer Haviland Surgeon to Col. Wynkoop's Regiment,' and ordered 'that he immediately take the direction

of the Field Officers of the Regiment, as to his duty and attendance.' (American Archives, fourth series, vol. v. p. 1475.) 'Ebenezer Haviland, S. [surgeon's] mate 2d Regt [New York] died 28 June '81.' (The Balloting Book, and other Documents relating to Military Bounty Lands, in the State of New York: Albany, 1825: p. 108.) The patent for five hundred acres, bounty land, awarded him in 1790, was 'delivered to Horatius Haviland his son.' (Ibid. pp. 59, 165.)

Hawkins, John, was here in 1771. His son, called junior in 1789, was constable for six years. This family owned land on Grace Church Street, above Jonathan Sniffen's. Here William lived in 1804.

Hays, Jacob, with Titus Beekman, of New York, and others, in 1721–1722, leased forty acres in Rye 'for thirty years, *to work mines thereon!*' The land was apparently on Hog-pen Ridge. Jacob Hays, merchant, in 1734 sold 'his lot where he now dwells' in Rye.

Judah Hays, of New York, merchant, 1743, bought Thomas Purdy's homestead. In 1757 he advertised his stock of dry goods at his 'store in the late Major Van Horne's house, between the Fly and Meal Markets' in New York.

Haywood. William, 1720, witness; John, 1736. In 1719, John Haywood of New York, gentleman, had land on Manussing Island.

Hill. Henry, 1713, bought of Mary Sherwood one hundred acres in the upper part of Will's Purchase, — now North Castle. John, witness, 1746–1753. Anthony, of Scarsdale, 1749, bought and sold land on Brown's Point. Andrew, 1765.

Heet, or Hitt. Thomas Heate, or Hitte, was of Cambridge, Mass., in 1635, 'after which,' says Mr. Savage, 'the name is not found.' Henry Heet or Hitt was here in 1710, and perhaps before. He had land in Will's Purchase, and was collector in 1717. He is last mentioned in 1726. Samuel was of Rye in 1723.

Hobes, or Hubbs. Joseph lived on 'Gracos street' in 1753. Daniel, of Rye, in 1761 bought Solomon Purdy's homestead on Ridge Street, below the place lately Mrs. Osborne's. Here he had fifty-seven acres in 1763. Zephaniah, in 1767, had one of the lots at Saw Pit. Alexander had land on 'Gracious street' in 1768. Abraham is mentioned in 1790.

Hosier. Samuel, witness in 1740. John, of White Plains, married Hannah Horton, fifteenth of eleventh month, 1758. (Friends' Rec.)

Howel, Thomas, 1756–1767, was of Harrison.

Hugford. Thomas, of Greenwich, bought land near Saw Pit in 1751, and sold it next year. Peter Hugeford, see page 167.

Hicks. John 'Heex' was of Rye in 1723.

Hutchings. John 'Huchinge' was of Rye in 1720.

Huson. Walter, 1743; Henry, 1747.

Hunt. 'Samuel Hunt, of Rye,' in 1705, had twenty acres of land from the town, with permission to build a mill at the falls of Mamaroneck River, above Humphrey Underhill's. From the deposition of

Edward Rogers before the Council, New York, February 13, 1725, it appears that Hunt was of Westchester, and was a son-in-law of Underhill. (Land Papers in Secretary of State's Office, Albany, vol. viii. p. 101.) In 1721 he had a tract of three hundred and eighty acres in White Plains, for which he obtained a patent. (Ibid. p. 100.) The survey of White Plains, February 24, 1721, shows the location of this tract, between North Street and Mamaroneck River. His house, at the lower end of this tract, stood about where Mr. Carpenter's house now stands, two miles below the village. His mill was situated apparently where there is a saw-mill now, a mile and a half above the bridge.

Samuel Hunt, junior, was of Rye in 1745–1748.

Hugh Hunt was here in 1717, and Enoch Hunt in 1739–1742. These may have been sons of Samuel. No others of this name appear to have settled in Rye, until the latter part of the century, when Jesse Hunt,* Esq., high sheriff of the county, married Esther, daughter of the Rev. James Wetmore, and widow of David Brown of Rye. It is said that he then sold Hunter's Island, which he owned, and came to this place. He was supervisor of the town in 1785–1786. He lived where Mr. Josiah Purdy now lives, near the railroad station in Rye, upon land which his wife had received from her father. Mr. Hunt had three sons, Thomas, Jesse, and Samuel, and a daughter, by his first wife; no children by the second. See pedigree in Bolton's History of Westchester County, vol. ii. pp. 523, 524. I find nothing to bear out the statement there made that Thomas Hunt, who went to Westchester before 1665, was 'of Rye.' On no other ground than this statement, apparently, the Hunt Genealogy represents this ancestor of the Westchester family as going from Stamford to Rye 'by 1652,' — a period when Rye certainly was not; and as representative in 1664, — a fact which the Colony Records do not establish. The name does not appear among the names of our early settlers.

Hunter, Andrew, was here in 1723–1724.

Ireland, Adam; see page 120.

Jacobs, Raphael, 1739, merchant of New York, in 1742 bought from Gideon Barrel the house and land adjoining previously Peter Brown's (lately D. H. Mead's), which he afterwards sold to Rev. Jas. Wetmore. (Records, and Mr. Wetmore's will.)

Jagger, Lemuel, married Anna, daughter of Roger Park;[3] in 1775 he bought the above mentioned property from Dr. Ebenezer Haviland (Co. Rec., lib. i. p. 74), and sold it in 1784 to Dr. Gilbert Budd, of Mamaroneck. (Ibid. p. 357.) In 1776, the Vestry met 'at the house of Capt. Lemuel Jagger.' About the beginning of this century he was living in a house which stood between the post-road and Mr. J. E. Corning's present residence.

* 'Jesse Hunt of New Rochelle' was captain of militia in Colonel Drake's regiment, May, 1776. (See certificate of good character given him by the N. Y. Com. of Safety; American Archives, fourth series, vol. v. p. 1486.)

John Jay.

The Jay Cemetery, Rye.

Jay. 'I have been informed that our family is of Poictou, in France, and that the branch of it to which we belong removed from thence to Rochelle. Of our ancestors anterior to Pierre Jay, who left France on the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, I know nothing that is certain.' (Chief Justice Jay, autobiography, in Life of John Jay, by his son William Jay: in two volumes. New York, 1833: vol. i. pp. 2, 3.)

I. Pierre Jay 'was an active and opulent merchant, extensively and profitably engaged in commerce. He married Judith, a daughter of Mons. François, a merchant in Rochelle. One of her sisters married M. Mouchard, whose son was a director of the French East India Company. Pierre Jay had three sons and one daughter. The sons were Francis, who was the eldest; Augustus, who was born the twenty-third of March, 1665; and Isaac. The daughter's name was Frances. Mr. Jay seemed to have been solicitous to have one of his sons educated in England. He first sent his eldest son, but he unfortunately died [of *sea-sickness*] on the passage. Notwithstanding this distressing event, he immediately sent over his son Augustus, who was then only twelve years old. In the year 1683, Mr. Jay recalled Augustus, and sent him to Africa, but to what part or for what purpose is now unknown.' (Ibid.)

During the absence of Augustus, the persecution of the Protestants in France became severe; and Pierre Jay became one of its objects. Dragoons were quartered in his house; and his family were subjected to serious annoyance. He was imprisoned in the castle of Rochelle,

but was released through the influence of some Roman Catholic connections. Having at the time several vessels out at sea, which were expected soon in port, he desired a Protestant pilot in his employment to take the first of these vessels that should arrive to a place agreed upon — the Island of Rhé. The ship that arrived first was one from Spain, of which he was the sole owner. The pilot was faithful to his trust, and in due time Mr. Jay reached England, and rejoined his family, whom he had sent to England some time before, at Plymouth.

II. Augustus Jay returned to France from Africa, ignorant of these family changes. As it was unsafe to appear in Rochelle openly, he was secreted for some time by his aunt Madame Mouchard, who was a Protestant, but whose husband was a Roman Catholic. With the help of his friends he escaped to the West Indies, and thence to Charleston, South Carolina. The climate proving unfavorable, he removed to Philadelphia, and afterwards to Esopus, on the Hudson River, where he entered into business; but he ultimately settled down in New York. He revisited France and England in 1692, and saw his father and sister; his mother had lately died.

In 1697, Augustus Jay married, in New York, Anna Maria, daughter of Balthazar Bayard, the descendant of a Protestant professor of theology at Paris in the reign of Louis XIII. who had been compelled to leave Paris and take refuge with his wife and children in Holland; whence several members of his family came to America. Mrs. Jay was a woman of eminent piety. It is mentioned that she died while on her knees in prayer.

Augustus Jay was born March 23, 1665. 'He lived to the good old age of eighty-six, respected and esteemed by his fellow-citizens,' and died in New York, where he had pursued his calling as a merchant with credit and success, March 10, 1751. He had four daughters, and one son, Peter. His daughter Judith, born August 29, 1798, married Cornelius Van Horne, April 6, 1735, and died August, 1757; Mary, born August 31, 1700, married Peter Valette, June 27, 1723, and died June 5, 1762; Frances, born February 26, 1702, married Frederick Van Cortlandt, January 19, 1724; Ann, died young.

III. Peter Jay,[3] only son of Augustus,[2] was born November 3, 1704. He married Mary, daughter of Jacobus Van Cortlandt, January 20, 1728. Like his father, he was a merchant in the city of New York. 'Having earned a fortune which, added to the property he had acquired by inheritance and marriage, he thought sufficient, he resolved, when little more than forty years old, to retire into the country, and for this purpose purchased a farm at Rye.' For account of this purchase and notice of Mr. Jay, see pp. 209, 210. He died April 17, 1782; his wife had died April 17, 1777. They had seven sons: Augustus, James (died young), another James, Peter, Frederick (died young), John, and another Frederick; and three daughters: Eve; Anna Maricka, born

October 20, 1737; died September 4, 1791 (see page 209, note); and Mary, born November 10, 1748; died May 18, 1752.

IV. 1. Augustus Jay,[4] eldest son of Peter,[3] was born April 12, 1730. He was never married. He died December 23, 1801.

2. James Jay,[4] third son of Peter,[3] born October 16, 1732, became Sir James Jay, Kt.; he resided for some years in England, and returned after the Revolution to New York, where he lived until the time of his death, October 20, 1815. On his return from England, in 1784 or 1785, Sir James Jay brought propositions from the Countess of Huntington to some of the States of the Union, for establishing settlements of emigrants among the Indians, with a view to civilizing them, and converting them to Christianity. General Washington, in a letter to him dated January 25, 1785, expresses his entire approval of the plan, and suggests that it should be brought before Congress. (Writings of Washington, by Jared Sparks, vol. ix. pp. 86–89.)

3. Peter Jay,[4] fourth son, was born December 19, 1734. He and his sister Ann Maricka were deprived of sight in infancy by the small-pox. (See page 209.) He married Mary Duyckinck in 1789. 'This gentleman,' says Dr. Dwight, 'had the misfortune to become blind, when he was fourteen [four] years of age. It has not, however, prevented him from possessing a fine mind, and an excellent character; or from being highly respected and beloved by his acquaintance. Notwithstanding the disadvantage under which' he 'labors, he directs all his own concerns with skill and success; and often with an ingenuity and discernment which have astonished those by whom they were known.'*

* 'Some years since,' adds Dr. Dwight, 'Mr. Jay, having directed a carpenter to renew the fence which enclosed his garden, made a little excursion to visit some of his friends. Upon his return he was told that the posts on the front line of the garden were already set up. He therefore went out to examine them; and having walked with attention along the whole row, declared that it was not straight. The carpenter insisted that his eyes were better guides in this case than Mr. Jay's hands. Mr. Jay still persisted in his opinion, and pointed out the place where the row diverged from a right line. Upon a reëxamination the carpenter found a small bend in the row, at the very spot designated by his employer. — Several gentlemen were at Mr. Jay's on a friendly visit. In the room where they were sitting was a large stand. One of the company observed that so wide a board must have been furnished by a tree of remarkable size. Another doubted whether the board was single. It was examined; no joint could be found; and the generally uniform aspect of the surface seemed to prove that it was but one board. Governor [John] Jay, who had gone out, was asked when he returned whether the table was formed of one or two boards. Upon his declaring that it was made of two, a new examination was had; but none of the company could find the joint. The Governor then observed that his brother would be able to show them where it was. Mr. Jay soon came in, and having moved his finger for a moment over the middle of the table, rested it upon the joint. It was barely visible, even when thus pointed out. When we remember that it was so nicely made at first, and that it had been waxed and polished for perhaps half a century, we shall be satisfied that the touch, able so easily to detect an object imperceptible to every eye in this company, must possess an exquisiteness of sensibility, which, antecedent to such a

Mr. Jay died not long after Dr. Dwight's visit; his death occurred on the eighth of July, 1813. Mrs. Jay, born September 14, 1736, survived her husband several years; she died April 26, 1824. They had no children.

4. John Jay,[4] sixth son of Peter,[3] was born December 12, 1745. His boyhood was spent at Rye and New Rochelle. (See page 209.) On commencing his clerkship (in a lawyer's office in New York) he asked his father's permission to keep a riding horse. His father hesitated, and inquired, 'John, why do you want a horse?' 'That I may have the means, sir, of visiting you frequently,' was the reply; and it removed every objection. The horse was procured; and during the three years of his clerkship, Mr. Jay made it a rule to pass one day with his parents at Rye every fortnight. (Life of John Jay, vol. i. p. 21.) He was admitted to the bar in 1768. April 28, 1774, he married Sarah, daughter of William Livingston, afterwards governor of New Jersey. He soon took a leading position in the politics of the country, and was prominent in the debates of the first and the second Continental Congress. In 1777 he was appointed chief justice of the State of New York. In 1778 he was elected president of Congress. In 1779 he was sent as minister to Spain, and from thence in 1782 went to Paris as commissioner to assist in the negotiation of a treaty of peace with Great Britain. He returned to New York in 1784, after an absence of five years, and was received with tokens of esteem and admiration. December 21, 1784, he was appointed by Congress secretary for foreign affairs, and held the office for five years. He was one of the contributors to 'The Fœderalist.' In 1789 he was appointed chief justice of the United States, — an office which he was the first to fill. In 1794 he was sent as special minister to London, upon a delicate and most important mission, relating to difficulties growing out of unsettled boundaries and certain commercial complications. He discharged this duty with great ability, and upon his return to America in 1795, was elected by a large majority governor of the State of New York. At the end of three years he was reëlected; and at the expiration of a second term was solicited to become a candidate for election a third time. But he had determined to renounce public life; and though nominated again in 1800 to the office of chief justice of the United States, declined the honor, and retired to his paternal estate at Bedford; a property — part of the Van Cortlandt estate — which his father had acquired by marriage with Mary, daughter of Jacobus Van Cortlandt. There Judge Jay lived for twenty-eight years, a peaceful and honored life. In 1827 he was seized with a severe illness, and after two years of weakness and suffering, was struck with palsy, May 14, 1829, and died three days after. 'His public reputation as a patriot and statesman of the Revo-

fact, would scarcely be credible.' (*Travels in New England and New York:* vol. iii. pp. 487, 488.)

lution was second only to that of Washington; and his private character as a man and a Christian is singularly free from stain or blemish.'

Judge Jay had two sons, Peter Augustus and William; and four daughters: Susan (died young); Maria, married Goldsborough Banyar; Ann; and Sarah Louisa, born February 20, 1792, died April 22, 1818.

5. Frederick Jay,[4] seventh son of Peter,[3] was born April 19, 1747. He married, first, November 17, 1773,* Margaret, daughter of Andrew Barclay, who died October 28, 1791, aged thirty-nine; secondly Euphemia Dunscomb, who died February 26, 1817. In May, 1776 Frederick Jay was a member of the Committee of Safety for Rye. (See page 228.) August 16, 1776, General Washington wrote from headquarters, New York, to Frederick Jay, at New Rochelle [Rye?] by persons going under a guard to Governor Trumbull, of Connecticut, asking him to dismiss the guard and send them on under parole. These persons were Colonel Phillips, James Jauncey, and six others. (American Archives, fifth series, vol. i. p. 981.) Not long after this, Mr. Frederick Jay found it necessary to remove with his family from Rye to Bedford, for security. He died December 14, 1799, and was buried in the family vault in the Bowery.

6. Eve Jay,[4] eldest daughter of Peter Jay,[3] born November 9, 1728, married Rev. Harry Munro, March 31, 1766, and died April 7, 1810. Mr. Munro, born in 1730, was ordained in 1757 a clergyman of the Church of Scotland, and as chaplain of a Highland regiment served in the 'French War,' 1759–1760. In 1765 he united with the Church of England, and was ordained and appointed missionary of the Gospel Propagation Society at Yonkers, N. Y. He was afterwards settled at Albany. In 1778 he went to England, and in 1787 to Scotland, where he died May 30, 1801. Mrs. Eve Munro was his third wife; their only child was Peter J. Munro, a prominent lawyer and citizen of New York. (Bolton, Hist. of the Prot. Episc. Church in Westchester County, pp. 494–504.)

V. 1. Peter Augustus,[5] eldest son of John Jay,[4] was born January 24, 1776. He graduated at Columbia College in 1794, and studied law under Peter Jay Munro. He married Mary Rutherfurd, daughter of General Matthew Clarkson. Mr. Jay became prominent in the legal profession, and in public affairs. He was a member of the State Assembly in 1816; was recorder of New York in 1818; was a member of the Convention which framed the constitution of the State in 1821; and was for many years president of the New York Historical Society, trustee of Columbia College, etc. He received the degree of LL. D. in 1831 from Harvard, and in 1835 from Columbia College. He died February 20, 1843. Children: John Clarkson Jay, M. D.; Peter

* 'Last night was married Mr. Frederick Jay, merchant of this city, to Miss Barclay, daughter of Mr. Andrew Barclay, merchant in Wall Street.' Rivington's N. Y. *Gazetteer*, November 18, 1773.

Augustus; Mary, who married Frederick Prime; Sarah, who married William Dawson; Catharine Helena, who married Henry Augustus Dubois, M. D.; Anna Maria, who married Henry Evelyn Pierrepont; Susan Matilda, who married Matthew Clarkson; and Elizabeth Clarkson.

2. William,[5] second son of John Jay,[4] born June 16, 1779, graduated at Yale College in 1807, and studied law at Albany; but having injured his eyes by intense study, relinquished his practice and retired to Bedford. Upon the death of his father in 1829, he acquired the Bedford estate. His life was principally devoted to philanthropic labors. He married Augusta McVicker. He died at Bedford, October 14, 1858. He had one son, John, and five daughters: Anna, who married Rev. Lewis P. W. Balch, D. D.; Maria, who married John F. Butterworth; Sarah Louisa, who married Alexander M. Bruen, M. D.; Eliza, who married Henry Edward Pellew, of England; and Augusta.

3. Maria,[5] daughter of John Jay,[4] was born at Madrid, February 20, 1782. She was married, April 22, 1801, to Goldsborough Banyar, who died June, 1806. Mrs. Banyar died November 21, 1856.

4. Ann,[5] daughter of John Jay,[4] was born at Passy, near Paris, August 13, 1783. She died November 13, 1856.

The names of these two sisters, rich in faith and in good works, are widely known through the published notices of their lives and death. The remains of both lie in the family cemetery at Rye.

VI. 1. John Clarkson,[6] eldest son of Peter Augustus Jay, born September 11, 1808, married Laura, daughter of Nathanael Prime. Dr. Jay is the proprietor of the estate at Rye. He graduated at Columbia College in 1827, and in 1831 took his degree as M. D. He has made a special study of conchology, and possesses the most complete and valuable collections of shells in this country. On this branch of natural history Dr. Jay has written several pamphlets.* Sons: Peter Augustus, and John Clarkson, M. D., both of whom served in the war for the Union, the former as captain of a company, the latter as assistant surgeon. Rev. Peter A. Jay is now rector of Christ P. E. church, Warwick, Orange Co., New York. He married Julia, daughter of Alfred C. Post, M. D. Daughters: Laura, who married Charles Pemberton Wurts; Mary, who married Jonathan Edwards; Cornelia, Alice, and Sarah. He has lost two sons: John and Augustus (both of whom died young); and two daughters: Anne Maria, who died December 3, 1858, aged fifteen; and Matilda Costar (died young).

2. John,[6] son of Judge William Jay,[5] married Eleanor Kingsland,

* *Catalogue of Recent Shells*, etc. New York, 1835, 8vo, pp. 56. *Description of New and Rare Shells*, with four plates. New York, 1836, 2d ed., pp. 78. *A Catalogue, &c., together with Descriptions of New and Rare Species.* New York, pp. 125, 4to, ten plates. The article on Shells, in the narrative of Commodore Perry's Expedition to Japan, is by Dr. Jay.

daughter of Hickson W. Field. Children: Eleanor, who married Henry Grafton Chapman; William; Augusta, who married Edmund Randolph Robinson; Mary, who married William Schieffelin; and Anna.

The Cemetery of the Jay family, of which a view has been given, is situated on the estate at Rye. To this spot the remains of several of the earlier members of the family were brought, in 1807, from the family vault in New York; and here a number of their descendants have been interred since.

The pointed shaft a little to the right of the centre is the tomb of Peter Augustus Jay and his wife Mary. Next on the right is the tomb of Ann Jay, daughter of John. The next monument is that of her illustrious father, and bears the following inscription: —

IN MEMORY OF
JOHN JAY,
Eminent among those who asserted the liberty
and established the independence
of his country
which he long served in the most
important offices
legislative, executive, judicial and diplomatic
and distinguished in them all by his
ability, firmness, patriotism and integrity,
he was in his life and in his death
an example of the virtues,
the faith and the hopes
of a Christian.
Born Dec. 12, 1745.
Died May 17, 1829.

The tombs of Peter Jay and his wife are near this; and next to theirs is the grave of Eve Munro — the last but one towards the right of the vignette. The monument surmounted by an urn is to the memory of Harriet van Cortlandt, wife of Augustus F. van Cortlandt, and daughter of Peter Jay Munro. The obelisk in the foreground indicates the resting-place of Maria Rutherfurd, wife of Frederick Prime and daughter of Peter A. Jay. Several children of Dr. John C. Jay lie buried in the southeast corner of the cemetery (at the left in the vignette) The tomb of the last of these bears this touching inscription: —

'Child after child on earth
Has lived, and loved, and died:
And as they left us, one by one,
We laid them side by side.

'We laid them down to sleep,
But not in hope forlorn;
We laid them but to ripen here
Till the last glorious morn.'

Janes, Michael, aged twenty-five, made deposition in 1711, before Court of Sessions. (Co. Records, White Plains, vol. D. p. 12.) 'Micah Jeanes,' 1812, owned property here (Brander's Book); witness, 1731.

Kennedy, Robert, 1789–1813. 'Capt. Kenady's house and mill' are indicated on Webb's map of Rye, 1797: the house on the upper, the mill on the lower side of Blind Brook, where Park's mill now stands. Robert Kennedy died February 6, 1826, aged seventy years, ten months, eleven days. His wife Sarah died July 29, 1821, aged sixty years, four months, eleven days. (Cemetery.) Their daughter, Martha H., married Jesse Park, junior.

King, John, 1733, bought Jacob Hays' house.

La Count (Le compte), Francis (of New Rochelle); a 'home-lot formerly laid out' to him, on Brown's Point, near White Plains, is mentioned in 1727. (Rec., C. 163, 168.)

Lamson, 'Anna, daughter of John & Hep[h],' baptized February 1, 1793.

Lawrence. Jacob, 'of East Chester,' in 1710, bought a Byram River lot, and in 1714 the 'mowing meadow lot,' formerly Jacob Pearce's. Stephen, 'of Flushing,' in 1731 bought from Thomas Carle, of Rye, four hundred acres in Harrison, between Mamaroneck River and the 'middle line'; and in 1738 conveyed his title to it to Joseph Haight. William, 'of Flushing,' in 1732, sold to William Marsh his farm of seventy-five acres in the White Plains purchase. John, in 1748, bought twenty-eight acres in Lame Will's Purchase.

Lewis, Henry, witness, 1733; had property here, 1735.

Man, Isaac, owned land on the north side of Joseph Sherwood's farm on Grace Church Street, about 1750.

McCollum, Thomas, married Sarah, daughter of Roger Park,[3] and was living in 1799, on Grace Church Street. He is mentioned in 1801.

Marsh, William, 'of Flushing,' in 1732 bought a farm of seventy-five acres in White Plains; to which he added largely by subsequent purchases. He is mentioned last in 1740. Thomas, perhaps his brother, as early as 1735 owned land between Blind Brook and Purchase Street, near Park's mill. He is mentioned last in 1767, and as 'currier.' Thomas left his lands to the grandfather of Mr. Thomas Lyon, of Ridge Street, now living.

Marselis, Theophilus, of New York, was here for some years from about 1790. He lived at Rye Neck in the house by Davenport's mill-pond. Sons: Peter, Theophilus, John, Nelson; daughters: Catharine, Hannah; Jane, married Dr. Harris. John, son of Theophilus, was baptized at Rye, May 8, 1791, Peter Marselis sponsor. Last mentioned 1802.

Marvin, Lewis, witness in 1739, called 'merchant, of Rye' in 1759, lived in Saw Pit. His wife Martha died February 5, 1767, in her thirty-ninth year, and was buried near the old Episcopal Church at

Rye. (Bolton, Hist. P. E. Church, p. 349.) Her husband died during the war, and was buried in the same place. He is said to have been a native of Ireland. Samuel, probably his son, was living in Saw Pit in 1786. He was supervisor in 1805, and justice of the peace in 1804–1806. 'Abigail and Edward Thomas, children of Samuel and Abigail Marvin,' were baptized February 1791, and Nancy Thomas, daughter of the same, October 25, 1792.

Mollinex, Horsman, of Rye, married Sarah Blackman, nineteenth of tenth month, 1769. (Friends' Rec.)

Morrill, Rivers, was of Saw Pit in 1799; mentioned 1814.

Morris. John, 'of Rye, yeoman,' in 1741 sold his house and eleven and one half acres, on Merritt's Point, bought in 1732. Owen, witness, in 1747.

Morgan, Jonas, appears to have been associated in some way with Joseph Budd in the proprietorship of Budd's Neck. 'Budd and Jonas Morgan's Purchase' is mentioned in Harrison's patent, 1696; also in a deed of David Jamison, 1730. (Rec., D. p. 295.)

Maynard, Isaiah, mentioned 1752, 1753, 1761.

Muirson, Rev. George. See page 306.

Murray, Charles, witness in 1738.

McDonald, Dr. Charles. See page 170.

Moore, Nathanael, was here in 1771.

Mott, James, was here in 1771.

Neally, John, is mentioned in 1721 and 1740.

Newman, John, was of Harrison in 1740.

Nichols, Thomas. His 'dwelling house' and 'fulling mill,' apparently in Harrison, are mentioned 1720. Walter, mentioned in 1793.

Oakley, Isaac, witness in 1757, 1761.

Owen, Moses, bought in 1730 the farm of seventy-four acres formerly John Walton's, near the Presbyterian Church at the White Plains. Moses, junior, is mentioned 1741.

Panton, Andrew, was here in 1719.

Palmer, Edward, of King Street in 1746, and Marmaduke, of Brown's Point, near White Plains, in 1764, were sons of Sylvanus, of Mamaroneck, where this family established themselves at an early day.

Peck, Jared, removed early in this century from Greenwich, Conn., to Saw Pit, now Port Chester, where his family have since resided. (See Adee.)

Pederick, Benjamin, 'late of Rye, now of New York,' in 1744 sold his house and eight and one half acres (where the Seminary now stands) to Rev. John Smith. He owned this property in 1732.

Peet, William, of Mamaroneck, in 1743 bought seventy acres on Budd's Neck, which he sold in 1752 to Jonathan Horton.

Pine. James is mentioned in 1744. The 'estate of James Pine, deceased,' on the Purchase Road (about opposite Mr. Wilson's pres-

ent residence), is referred to in 1760. James, perhaps his son, 'late of Nassau island,' in 1763 bought Anne Disbrow's house and land (near the present site of the Presbyterian Church), but removed next year to New Rochelle, where he died in 1766. Benjamin, in 1767, bought one of the Saw Pit lots. A third James in 1786 was living on the lower part of King Street; mentioned in 1785–1801.

Parker, William, married Anna Hyat, July 25, 1792. Joseph, of Rye, in early life was concerned in one of the most extraordinary cases of 'mistaken identity' on record. At a court of Oyer and Terminer, held in the city of New York, June 22, 1804, 'Thomas Hoag *alias* Joseph Parker' was indicted for bigamy. The charge was that on the eighth of May, 1797, he was married in New York to Susan Faesch, and on the twenty-fifth of December, 1800, his wife being still alive, he married one Catharine Secor, in Rockland County, N. Y. The first marriage was admitted by the prisoner; and to prove the second, witnesses were brought, who testified that they had seen him constantly for several months in Rockland County, had been present at his wedding, etc.; the woman herself declaring 'that she was as well convinced as she could possibly be of anything in this world that the prisoner at the bar was the person who married her by the name of Thomas Hoag; that she then thought him and still thinks him the handsomest man she ever saw.' Certain bodily marks, and other peculiarities were specified by the witnesses, as belonging to Hoag; *e. g.* a scar on the forehead, produced by a kick from a horse, another just above the lip, a mark on the neck, a peculiar gait, a shrill voice, rapid utterance, slight lisp, etc. All these were noticed in the prisoner. For the defence it was shown that Parker, who 'was born at Rye, in Westchester county,' had been engaged in his regular occupation in New York during the whole time of his alleged presence in Rockland County; that he had served throughout the same period as one of the city watch, and had done constant duty, etc. Finally, several witnesses for the prosecution having spoken of a scar which Hoag bore on his foot, the trace of a wound produced by treading on a drawing knife; the prisoner was requested to exhibit his foot to the jury; whereupon 'not the least mark or scar could be found.' The jury, without retiring from the box, returned a verdict of not guilty. (Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York, by D. T. Valentine, 1866, pp. 746–755.)

Pinkney. Mr. Thomas Pinkney lived here in 1712.

Proboy, William, bought land in Harrison, 1720; mentioned 1723.

Provoost. David,[1] of New York, owned the property now known as Jones' Wood. He married —— Rhinelander, and had four sons: John, William, Henry, and ——; and one daughter. William,[2] son of David,[1] came to Rye, and bought of David Doughty sixty-seven acres of land near Rye Ferry — lately known as the Provoost estate. William T.,[3] son of William,[2] became the sole proprietor of Rye

Ferry. He married Mary Carson, daughter of Robert Carson. She died in 1844. They had seven sons, five of whom removed to Buffalo: James,[4] who died in 1868; Robert,[4] who died in 1840; David,[4] Samuel,[4] and John,[4] now living. George, whose family are now residing on Rye Neck, died in 1846. William,[4] second son of William T.,[3] lives near the steamboat landing, on a part of the old farm, the greater portion of which was bought in 1868, by E. B. Wesley.

'Rye Ferry' ceased to exist about sixty years ago. As late as 1810 or 1811, boats — schooners — ran regularly between this place and Matinecock Point, on the opposite shore of Long Island.

Quimby, Josiah, of Mamaroneck, sold land in Harrison, 1727.

Quintard, Peter. See page 148.

Rickey. Thomas, lived here in 1720, and is mentioned in 1739–1740. Peter and Jeremiah (the latter called Ricker) enlisted for the French War, 1758–1759.

Ritchie (perhaps the same name), William, was here in 1771.

Reynolds, Gideon, witness in 1740.

Robinson. Thomas, of Rye in 1719, owned land in Harrison, 1727–1740: was living in 1766. William, mentioned 1736.

Rogers, Dr. David. See page 170.

Rogers, Israel, witness in 1722. Jeremiah was living here in 1723.

Roll, Mangle Jonson, mariner, of New York, bought land in 'limping Will's purchase,' 1713; witness in 1747.

Roosevelt. 'Rosevelt's store-house,' near Byram River, is mentioned in 1730: 'Rosevelt's land' near Saw Pit landing, in 1732. John Roosevelt and others of New York in 1743 sell to Adam Seaman of Rye for one thousand and two hundred pounds, a grist mill on Byram River, with all lands laid out to them 'at a place called the Saw pitt,' and a farm of fifty acres, on King Street.

Rusforth, Jonathan, lived here in 1705.

Rusten, John, about 1760 bought land on Budd's Neck.

Ray, John, witness in 1744–1754.

Sackett, Nathanael, witness in 1764.

Sawyer. Thomas, mentioned 1739, bought land in 1750–1751, on Budd's Neck, now owned by J. E. Corning, Esq., and Miss Hubbs.

Schofield, R.; 'lot in town field, formerly' his, mentioned 1714.

Scott, Henry, of Mamaroneck, in 1745 bought one hundred and thirty-eight acres in White Plains.

Seaman. Richard, witness in 1722, had land in the upper part of Harrison 1723–1730, previous to 1737. Adam, 'of North Castle, merchant,' in 1742 bought land in Rye. He owned land at the lower end of King Street in 1749. Adam, junior, mentioned in 1758. Israel and Silvanus lived at Saw Pit in the latter part of the last century. Isaac is mentioned in 1800; Drake, in 1791. Hicks lived in Harrison in 1743.

Saler, John, in 1724 had land in Harrison, on the road from the Purchase to King Street.

Secor. Joshua, 1796, and Jonathan, 1802–1803, lived in the upper part of King Street: perhaps of the New Rochelle family of this name. (See Bolton, Hist. Westchester Co., vol. ii. p. 542.)

Sears. —— Seers had property in the town in 1720. In 1746 Bartholomew Sears of Rye sold eighty acres between Mamaroneck River and the White Plains Road. William Suel [Sewall?] Sears lived on Middle Street in 1748.

Setton, Daniel, in 1731 had land on the east side of King Street.

Sexton, George, of Rye, 'cordwinder,' sold his house and land in White Plains, 1735, to Jeremiah Fowler.

Seymour, Drake, mentioned 1788–1813.

Shaw, John, witness in 1743. 'Shaw's field' adjoining Godfrey Hains' land on Budd's Neck, is mentioned 1760.

Slater. Abraham is mentioned in 1730; John in 1733. John as early as 1758 was living on Hog-pen Ridge; was alive in 1789. Henry was of the same locality in 1785, and William in 1796. The name is sometimes written Slaughter.

Smith. I. Rev. John Smith, for nearly thirty years minister of the Presbyterian congregation of Rye and the White Plains, was the ancestor of a numerous and respectable family in this county. According to the inscription upon his tombstone in the burying-ground at White Plains, he was born in England, May 5, 1702. See notice of his life and labors, pp. 166, 330–335. The following particulars are gathered chiefly from family records. Dr. Smith married, May 6, 1724, Mehetabel, daughter of James and Mary Hooker, of Guilford, Conn., born May 1, 1704, died September 5, 1775, aged seventy-one years. Her father was a son of Rev. Samuel Hooker, and grandson of the famous Rev. Thomas Hooker. Dr. Smith died February 26, 1771, aged sixty-nine years. He had four sons: William Hooker, John, James, and Thomas; and eight daughters: Mary, Susannah, Elizabeth, Ann, Martha, Sarah, Mehetabel, and Abigail.

II. 1. William Hooker Smith, M. D., was the eldest son of the Rev. John Smith, pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Rye from 1742 to 1771. He was born March 23, 1725, and studied medicine probably under the direction of his father, who was a physician as well as a clergyman. Dr. W. H. Smith practised medicine as early as 1753 at Rye. He joined the Continental Army at an early period, and was appointed assistant surgeon in the Pennsylvania line. From July 3, 1778, until the close of the war, he 'acted as surgeon at the post of Wilkesbarre, Wyoming Valley, and was the only officer attached to that post during the war. The garrison consisted of two companies of Regulars, and the militia of the valley.' In view of his services during the war, the claim of his descendants in 1837 to commutation on account of those

services was favored by the committee of Congress on Revolutionary claims, December 22, 1837. (Resolutions, etc., relating to the Pay of Officers and Soldiers of the Revolution. Washington: 1838, p. 355.) And in 1838, the heirs of William Hooker Smith, 'who was a surgeon in the War of the Revolution,' obtained compensation from the United States government, 'for five years' full pay.' 'The heirs represented in the settlement were James Smith, William Smith, John Smith, and Susannah Gay.' (Information from Treasury Department.) These would appear to have been children of Dr. W. H. Smith. He married Sarah ——. He had a daughter Mary, who married John Barker.

2. John Smith,[2] second son of Rev. John Smith, born August 12, 1726; died at Guilford, September 24, 1729.

3. James Smith,[2] third son, born September 11, 1739; died July 23, 1754.

4. Thomas Smith,[2] fourth son, born March 7, 1741, lived in Greenburg, and left several children.

5. Mary,[2] eldest daughter, born August 5, 1728; died in New York, August 28, 1729.

6. Susannah,[2] second daughter, born October 5, 1729; died April 20, 1768.

7. Elizabeth,[2] third daughter, born January 12, 1731; died February 28, 1797.

8. Ann,[2] fourth daughter, born September 26, 1732; died November 2, 1750.

9. Martha,[2] fifth daughter, born November 11, 1734.

10. Sarah,[2] sixth 'daughter to y^e^ Rev. Doc^tr^ John Smith,' born December 26, 1736, married Reuben Wright, and 'dep^td^ this Life Sept^r^ y^e^ 7^th^ 1768 in y^e^ 32^d^ Year of her Age.' (W. P. Cem.)

11. Mehetabel,[2] seventh daughter, born June 22, 1744, married —— Purdy, of Greenburg, and had two sons: James and Elisha.

12. Abigail,[2] youngest daughter, born March 21, 1746, married Jacob Purdy, of White Plains, and died about twenty-five years ago. She had three sons: Henry, Jacob, and John; and five daughters: Lavinia, married —— Horton; Susan, married —— Hunt, whose son Jacob is still living at White Plains; Winneford, married —— Ferris; Abigail, married —— Angevine; and Mehetabel, married John Dusenbery, of Greenburg.

Stevenson. John, executor with Samuel Purdy, of Joseph Budd's will, in 1722. (Rec., C. p. 62.) Benjamin, owned land in Harrison, 1737. Stephen, of Rye, had deceased in 1742. (Friends' Rec.) Nathanael, mentioned 1744, sold land in Harrison, 1749, to James Stevenson, called esquire in 1745. By an execution on the lands, etc., of James Stevenson, in 1766, his farm of two hundred acres, on the cross-road from Harrison to King Street, was granted to Andrew Lyon. (D. p. 218.)

Stringham, Peter, witness in 1726; of Rye in 1730, when Peter Ferris of Westchester released to him all his claim to the tract of land known as Harrison's Purchase. (D. p. 119.)

Sutton. Joseph, according to Mr. Bolton, a son of Joseph Sutton who removed from Massachusetts to Long Island. He lived on King Street, within the present bounds of North Castle, where his descendants the Misses Field now live. The house is said to have been built by Joseph as early as 1710. Thomas, mentioned 1718, owned lands on the south side of the road from the meeting-house to King Street in 1723. Joseph, junior, mentioned 1725, and Daniel, mentioned 1727, were probably his sons. John, witness in 1750, and William, 1771, were perhaps of this family. John, son of Benjamin, married Ann Marshall of Greenwich, eighteenth of second month, 1761. (Friends' Rec.)

Talledy, Stephen, was of Rye in 1718, when the proprietors of Peningo Neck 'for their goodwill to' him, give 'him 1 acre 1 rood north of Nathan Kniffen's field.' John Tallady, witness in 1740.

Taylor. Nathanael, witness in 1712; Moses in 1715. John, of East Chester, in 1715 bought a house and three acres in Rye from Rev. Chr. Bridge. John was of King Street in 1735–1743. In 1741 he sold to Samuel Wilson, junior, his farm of forty-seven acres, 'partly in Greenwich, Ct., but mostly in Rye.' He owned other lands; part of which were sold in 1768 as 'the *late* John Taylor's estate.' Joshua, 1739–1751; and Henry, 1743, were brothers, perhaps sons of John.

Tebowes, William, was of Rye in 1707.

Thacker [Thatcher?], witness in 1739.

Thomas. John, a son of Rev. John Thomas, missionary of the Gospel Propagation Society in Hempstead, L. I., removed to Rye as early as 1734, and in 1739, when he was called esquire, owned land in 'Rye Woods' or Harrison, north of the cross-road to King Street. He was for many years one of the most influential men in this region, 'favoured with all the administration of all offices, civil and military, by the help of which,' says Mr. T. Wetmore in 1761, 'he has procured himself a large interest in the county.' He espoused the cause of his country upon the approach of the Revolution, and became particularly obnoxious to the enemy. (See an account of his services and sufferings, pp. 225, 252.) He died in prison in New York, May 2, 1777. Judge Thomas married Abigail, daughter of John Sands, of Sand Point, L. I., born January 1708, married February 19, 1729; died August 14, 1782. Their children were: John, Thomas, William, Sibyl, Charity, Margaret, and Glorianna.

II. 1. John, son of Judge Thomas, born February 3, 1732, was for some time sheriff of Westchester County. He married Phœbe Palmer, and had two sons, Edward and John.

2. Thomas, second son, born June 17, 1745, married Catharine Floyd

of Mastic, L. I., born May 9, 1746; died January 15, 1825. Colonel, afterward Major-General Thomas, was a useful officer of the Continental Army. He was appointed colonel of a regiment of militia of Westchester County, formed by order of the New York Convention July 16, 1773, and ordered to repair immediately to Peekskill. (American Archives, fourth series, vol. i. p. 1406.) August 6, he wrote to Washington, from Tarrytown, offering suggestions as to the mode of repelling the British ships. (Ibid. fifth series, vol. i. p. 791.) October 21, his regiment formed part of General Clinton's brigade at Peekskill. (Ibid. vol. ii. p. 1319.) December 26, he was ordered by Heath to repair to North Castle, 'to protect the well-affected.' (Ibid. vol. iii. p. 1431.) In 1777 he was taken prisoner, and detained for some time. (See pp. 256, 373.) He died May 29, 1824. He had four children: Charles Floyd, died January 3, 1802, in his twenty-fourth year; Glorianna, died young; Nancy, died February 1, 1795, aged nineteen; and Catharine.

3. William, third son, died young.

4. Sibyl, eldest daughter, born January 15, 1730, married Abram Field.

5. Charity, second daughter, born July 3, 1734, married James Ferris, and had a son George, and a daughter Abigail.

6. Margaret, third daughter, born August 1, 1738, married Charles Floyd.

7. Glorianna, fourth daughter, born September 27, 1740, married James Franklin.

III. 1. Edward, son of John,[2] surrogate of Westchester County, married Anne Oakley. He died May 2, 1806, aged forty-four. She died May 12, 1807, aged forty-five. They had one son, William, who died August 22, 1836, aged thirty-seven.

2. John, son of John,[2] died January 6, 1835. Children: Benjamin, who died September 16, 1813; John; Sophia, married —— Deighton, M. D.; and Catharine, married O. Demilt.

3. George, son of James Ferris and Charity Thomas, married —— Post, and had a son Thomas, 'heir of the Thomas property, Harrison.'

4. Abigail, daughter of James Ferris and Charity Thomas, married David Harrison, and had a son David Harrison, of New Rochelle. (Pedigree, and account in Bolton's History of Westchester County, vol. i. pp. 254–258.)

THOMPSON, James, witness in 1770.

TILFORD. Archibald in 1734 had land in the lower part of Harrison. In 1743, John Budd sold to Archibald Telford of Rye eighteen acres, 'on the westerly side of the West Chester old path so called.' In 1745 he bought ten acres adjoining this. He had a son Archibald, junior, mentioned 1769, when the father was still living. The son was living in 1795. Charles Tilford lived on Rye Neck, 1795–1808. The

Tilford house stood a little south of Mr. Thomas Haviland's present house, close to the post-road.

Titus, Silas, in 1720 sold a tract of one hundred and seventy acres in Harrison to Thomas Tredwell of Hempstead.

Tompkins, John, was here in 1731. He owned a house and eight acres in Rye, on the west side of 'the country road from Yorck to Boston.' He had deceased in 1741.

Totten, Peter, senior, witness in 1739. In Gaine's 'New York Gazette,' February 14, 1774, the farm of one hundred and thirteen acres, 'formerly belonging to Peter Totten, Sr., deceased, now in the tenure of David Totten,' is offered for sale. 'It lays binding on King Street, which runs from the Saw-Pit direct to North Castle, about four miles from the Saw-Pit landing, in the township of Rye.' Robert and James Totten, September 19, 1776, apply to the New York Convention for directions. They have part in a brig lying in Saw Pit Creek, and have applied to the Committee of Safety for a permit to have her loaded at Philadelphia. The committee have refused to grant such a permit, 'lest she may go over to the enemy.' (American Archives, fifth series, vol. ii. p. 401.) Samuel in 1797 was living on the 'upper part of King Street.' Mentioned until 1806.

Tredwell. Thomas, of Hempstead in 1720, had deceased in 1722. His land in the upper part of Harrison, three hundred and twenty-one and one half acres, was conveyed in 1722 by his eldest son, John of Hempstead, to the younger sons, Thomas and Timothy. Thomas was living in the Purchase, 1757. Samuel was here in 1723; of Harrison's Purchase in 1732; died between 1747–1749. Joseph, junior, mentioned 1728.

Thomas Star Tredwell in 1737 bought land in Harrison near Rye Ponds from Timothy Tredwell.

Turner, John, in 1702 bought Jonathan Vowles' right in the White Plains purchase; and in 1703 bought a 'lotment' of seven acres there from Deliverance Brown, senior. He was living there in 1749.

Varnell, John, witness in 1740.

Vail. John 'Veal' of Rye, 1708–1709, bought land in the White Plains purchase. Ruth, 'of Amboy,' 1710, sold land in that purchase. Aaron, of Rye, 1745, bought of Benjamin Birdsall, ninety acres in Harrison, west of Rye Pond. Aster (?) Veal is mentioned in the deed. Aaron sold this land in 1750 to Jacob Griffin. Thomas, 1764–1771, was living in the 'upper part' of Harrison. Phœbe, of Rye, daughter of Thomas Vail, married Josiah Quimby, fifteenth of eighth month, 1764. (Friends' Rec.) Thomas, junior, of West Chester, son of Thomas, married Sarah Carpenter, twelfth of sixth month, 1767. (Ibid.)

Vickers, Jonathan F. See page 172.

Virdine [Worden?], Cornelius, witness in 1740–1741; Mary in 1746.

Walton, Rev. John. See page 322.

Warner, Samuel, witness in 1739.

Weeden. William, of White Plains in 1737 ; wife, Mary. (New York Gazette, March 28, 1737.) Thomas, of Harrison, in 1739–1742, bought sixty-five acres near the meeting-house, from Benjamin Birdsall and James Graham. Jane, widow of Thomas, in 1748, sold to 'James Crumwell, of Greenwich,' her husband's plantation ; one tract 'northward of frind's meeting house, and north of the road' ; another, south of the road and north of the meeting-house. (Rec., C. 227–230.)

Weeks, Abel, was here in 1724. Joseph, of White Plains, in 1752 bought Elisha Merritt's house and land there. Elijah, mentioned in 1771.

Wetmore, Rev. James ; see page 314. He 'was the third son of Izrahiah Whitmore, and Rachel Stow,' and grandson of Thomas Wetmore, a native of England, one of the first settlers of Middletown, Connecticut. James was born at Middletown, December 31, 1695 (O. S.) ; educated at the Saybrook Academy, and at Yale College, where he took the degree of B. A., September 1714, and that of M. A., September 1717. He was ordained to the ministry of the Gospel, November 1718, as first pastor of the Congregational Church of North Haven, where he continued his labors for about four years. Having arrived at the belief that his ordination was not valid, he resigned his charge, and in 1723 went to England, where he was ordained 'deacon' and 'priest' of the Church of England. While in London he received from the 'Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts' the appointment of catechist to Trinity Church, New York, and assistant to the rector of that church. He returned to America, and in June 1726 was inducted as rector of the parish of Rye, and next year was appointed missionary of the Gospel Propagation Society to this place. Here he remained until his death, May 15, 1760. Mr. Wetmore married Anna Dwight ; she died February 28, 1771. They had two sons : Timothy and James ; and four daughters : Alethea, married Rev. Joseph Lamson ; Anna, married Gilbert Brundage ; Charity, married Joseph Purdy ; Esther, married first, David Brown, secondly, Jesse Hunt, Esq.

II. 1. James (see page 177), eldest * son of Rev. James Wetmore, born in Rye, December 19, 1727, married Elizabeth Abrahams, born March 16, 1730. Children : Abraham, John, Izrahiah, James, David, Josiah, Caleb, Elizabeth, Susannah, Charity, Alethea, Esther. 'He was for many years an influential citizen of Westchester Co. He remained loyal to the Crown during the Revolution. He removed with his family to New Brunswick in 1783, and settled at the mouth of the St. John's River,' and soon after removed to Hammond River, distant about twenty miles from St. John's, where he resided till his death. His wife survived him seven years. (Wetmore Memorial.)

* So considered by the editor of *The Wetmore Family*, for reasons which seem sufficient. Mr. Bolton speaks of him as the *second* son of Rev. James Wetmore.

2. Timothy (see page 172), second son of Rev. James Wetmore, married first, October 21, 1756, Jane Haviland, of Rye. Children: James, Jane, Anna, Timothy, Fletcher, Thomas, Luther, Theodore, Robert Griffith. Married, secondly, Rachel, widow of Benjamin Ogden, of New York; no issue. He was a highly respectable and influential citizen of Westchester County; 'was among the first graduates of Kings, now Columbia College, in the city of New York, 1758. He first studied for the ministry, but circumstances prevented his going to England for ordination. Subsequently he turned his attention to the study of the law, and became a practitioner of considerable importance. In 1753–1734, he was appointed by the Society as teacher for the parish of Rye.' (See pp. 175, 177.) 'At the close of the war (1783) he removed to Nova Scotia, where he practised his profession for many years, and held numerous offices of public trust.' His wife died in New York, August 5, 1777. Mr. Wetmore returned from New Brunswick in 1800, and took up his residence in New York, where he died, March 1820, aged eighty-three or eighty-five years. (Wetmore Memorial.)

For the descendants of James and Timothy Wetmore and their sisters, see 'The Wetmore Family of America and its Collateral Branches,' by James Carnahan Wetmore: Albany, Munsell & Rowland, 1861: pp. 220–281.

Weissenfels, Frederic de [Friedrich von]; see pp. 79, 223–224. He was captain of Company I, First Regiment New York Continental troops, August 4, 1775. (American Archives, fourth series, vol. iii. p. 23.) The New York Provincial Congress, February 1776, nominated 'Frederick Van Weisenfels for major' in one of the four regiments to be raised for the colony of New York. (Ibid. vol. v. p. 317.) In April, he was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel in Colonel Nicholson's Regiment; 'Headquarters before Quebec, April 15, 1776.' (Ibid. p. 949.) November 26, 1776, he received three thousand pounds bounty money. July 9, 1790, the State of New York gave him three thousand acres, military bounty lands. (Balloting Book, p. 66.)

Wilcox. Isaac, mentioned 1741, 1742. Samuel, mentioned 1750.

Willis. Richard was here in 1747; on King Street, 1752–1753. James is mentioned 1766; John, 1774.

Willett, 'Mr. William Willett' is mentioned 1728–1738; called 'Col.' in 1739, and 1750–1761, when he filled the office of supervisor. In 1762, 'Wm. Willett gent. and Alice his wife' sell 'his farm which he bought in 1743 from Joseph Brundige,' one hundred and ten acres in Harrison. Cornelius was of the Purchase, 1755–1756. According to the pedigree given by Mr. Bolton, William and Cornelius were sons of William, who died in 1733, and brothers of Isaac, high sheriff of Westchester County, 1737–1766.

WILLSON. I. Samuel was the first of the family who settled in this town or in Greenwich. He was probably a son of Jeremiah Willson and Mary his wife, of New Shoreham or Block Island, who died in 1740, a son of Samuel of Portsmouth, Rhode Island, one of the freemen of 1655, who died in 1682, aged sixty years. Samuel came from Rhode Island in or previous to the year 1710, and settled on the place now owned by John B. Haight on King Street. His wife was Susannah Ogden. He died early in the year 1751, and the inventory of his estate as returned by the appraisers May 14, 1751, amounted to £13,478 5*s.* 10½*d.*, of which £9,015 was real estate. His wife Susannah died in 1770. Children: Samuel, Joseph, William; Susannah, married —— Kniffen of Rye; and Mary, married Roger Lyon of North Castle. William was under twenty-one in 1751, and died in 1763, unmarried.

II. 1. Samuel,[2] son of Samuel, married Phœbe Lyon, and lived on the place now owned by the Misses Willson on King Street, where he died July 2, 1756. Phœbe his wife died January 29, 1770. Children: Samuel, Benjamin, Justus, Jotham, Andrew, Roger, Thomas, and Susannah, who married Gabriel Many, and lived at Amsterdam, New York; all under twenty-one years of age at the time of the death of their father in 1756.

2. Joseph,[2] was born August 30, 1726, and lived on King Street. He married first, Eunice Brown, and second, Susannah Willson (hereafter named), and died June 15, 1811. His children were, of the first marriage: Nehemiah, born June 26, 1751; Mary, born February 27, 1755; and Susannah, born January 8, 1762.

Susannah,[3] married Nathan Merritt, and lived at New Castle, where she died March 22, 1838.

Mary,[3] married first, Samuel Brown, and second, James Green, and died November 17, 1838. She lived at Rye and Greenwich.

III. 1. Samuel,[3] son of Samuel,[2] married a daughter of Daniel Newman, and moved to Somers before the war.

2. Benjamin,[3] son of Samuel,[2] married Polly Kniffen, and lived at Rye on the place now owned by William E. Ward till about the year 1794, then on the place now owned by George P. Weeks till about the year 1800, when he moved to Oxford, New York. Children: Gertrude, married Hobby Adee, of Rye; Phœbe, married Charles Leggett, of Saratoga; Charity, married David Lyon, of Greenwich; Susannah, born July 23, 1770, married first, Joseph Willson (before named), March 17, 1794, and second, Jesse Slawson, May 13, 1813, and died August 9, 1827, leaving one son, Willson D. Slawson; Benjamin, married Phœbe Merritt, of Rye, and removed to Chenango County; Kniffen, married Ruth Morey, of Chenango County, where he lived; and Daniel, married Abigail Miller, of Greenwich, and moved to Chenango County.

3. Justus,[3] son of Samuel,[2] moved to Amenia, Dutchess County, married Elizabeth ——, and died in 1781, leaving no children.

4. Jotham,[3] son of Samuel,[2] married Mary Brundage, and lived on King Street, where he died November 18, 1811, in the sixty-fifth year of his age. His wife died October 21, 1800, aged forty-six years. There was one child of this marriage, Jotham, born February 2, 1774.

5. Andrew,[3] son of Samuel,[2] was a Friend, and resided at Nine Partners, Dutchess County.

6. Roger,[3] son of Samuel.[3] His father in his will directs his sons Samuel and Benjamin, when they come of age to support 'Roger, being lame and unable to support himself.' And his mother in her will gives him the 'bed whereon he now lieth.'

7. Thomas,[3] son of Samuel,[2] married Ruth Merritt, and lived on King Street; died May 3, 1812, aged fifty-six years. His wife died July 20, 1822, aged sixty-three years. Children: Elizabeth, born September 2, 1776, married Knapp Park, and died December 18, 1856; Thomas M., and James.

8. Nehemiah,[3] son of Joseph,[2] married Sarah Pierce, of Block Island, and lived on King Street, where he died January 24, 1814. Children: Eunice, born November 23, 1784, and Desire, born March 26, 1789. Nehemiah Willson was highly esteemed by his neighbors. He was prominent in town affairs, and often represented his town in the General Assembly. Eunice[4] married Elias Peck, and died April 26, 1865. Desire[4] married Daniel Haight, and lived on King Street, where she died April 19, 1856.

IV. 1. Jotham,[4] son of Jotham,[3] married Sarah Green, and died October 22, 1828. Children: Mary, married Lewis Haight, now living near Binghamton, N. Y.; James, now living on King Street; Nancy, married Aaron Wakeman, of Lewisboro'; Thomas, deceased; Ann, married Caleb Huestis, of Greenwich; Samuel, deceased; John B., now living at Greenwich; and Sarah, married first, John Finley, and second, William H. Craft, now living on King Street.

2. Thomas M.,[4] son of Thomas,[3] born January 2, 1782, married Elizabeth Sackett, and died December 10, 1824. Children: Elizabeth and Mary, now living on the homestead; and Sarah, married Elkanah Rundle, of Greenwich.

3. James,[4] son of Thomas,[3] was the late Dr. Willson, of Rye; born November 13, 1785, married Elizabeth Willis, and died November 19, 1862. Sons: James, deceased; Thomas, of New York; and Henry, late of Baltimore, deceased.

Wilson. 'John and Marie Wilson of Rye in the Province of New York' petitioned the General Court of Connecticut, in May, 1703, to have three hundred acres of land in Greenwich, formerly belonging to Thomas Lyon, deceased, returned to them. Samuel and Joseph, sons of Thomas Lyon, were ordered to satisfy their claim. (Public

Records of Conn., iv. 424.) In October, 1705, the Lyons not responding, execution was issued by the Court. (Ibid. 530.)

John Wilson in 1722 sold land in 'Limpen Will's purchase, *on the east side of the colony line.*'

Willy, Thomas, of White Plains, in 1741 bought forty-five acres in that purchase.

Woolsey, William, witness in 1724.

Worden. Valentine, was living on King Street 1742–1744. James, 1812. Amos, 1814.

Samuel, and Thankful his wife, had children: Mary, born June 10, 1735; Phœbe, born February 11, 1737; Rebecca, born February 21, 1740; Amy, born December 23, 1747; Mercy, born January 31, 1755; Isaac, born November 4, 1759. Isaac, son of Samuel and Thankful, had children: James, born September 1, 1786; Charity, born April 22, 1789; Amos, born October 21, 1791; Henry, born August 17, 1794; Nathanael Cameron, born July 31, 179–; Margaret B., born March 4, 1801. (Family Record.) Charity married Edward Hare, and had one son, James, now of Harrison; she died February 10, 1871. Margaret B. is the wife of Jonathan H. Gedney.

Yeomans, Christopher, was living at White Plains in 1721. Eleazar, witness in 1727, bought land on Brown's Point, in Harrison, 1739–1741, and in 1744 sold to John Horton his 'house, barn, and corn-mill in White Plains.'

Clark. Ebenezer Clark (see pp. 351, 367) was born in Wallingford, Conn., January 15, 1769, and removed in early manhood to the city of New York. He married, July 1794, Ann Marselis, born in New York, March 5, 1769. Mr. Clark came to Rye May 10, 1821. He resided first for two years in the house afterwards Dr. Willson's, and next for two years on the 'Marquand Place,' after which he bought the property on the road to Milton now owned by Mr. Mathews; and in 1836 built the house opposite the Presbyterian Church, where he spent his last days. He died September 15, 1847, aged seventy-eight years and eight months. Mrs. Clark died August 25, 1856, aged eighty-seven years and five months. They had two sons: Andrew, and Daniel, who died young; and five daughters: Eliza, Maria, Matilda, Catharine A. (died young), and Catharine A.

Andrew Clark, son of Ebenezer, married Charity Shirly. Son: Ebenezer; daughters: Anna, who married George A. Knower; and Matilda. Andrew died July 8, 1863.

Maria, second daughter of Ebenezer, married Rev. Williams H. Whittemore (see pp. 348, 367). Sons: Williams, Edward, John Howard; daughter: Emma.

Matilda, third daughter, married Edward L. Parsons. Sons: John E., William H., Arthur W., jr.; daughters: Anna Matilda, Emma (died young), and Mary.

Catharine A., youngest daughter, married Arthur W. Parsons. Daughter: Emma.

Mention has been made (page 352) of Mr. Clark's exertions to provide a suitable house of worship for the congregation of which he was an honored member and ruling elder. This church — the building soon to be vacated for the larger one now in process of construction — was erected on the site of that built in 1793. The corner-stone was laid on Tuesday, September 28, 1841, by the pastor, Rev. Edward D. Bryan, Rev. Drs. Krebs and Dickinson of New York participating in the service. The dedication of the new church took place on the twenty-eighth of June, 1842, Dr. Dickinson officiating. The entire cost of the edifice was six thousand dollars, of which amount more than five thousand dollars were given by Mr. Clark and his family.

APPENDIX.

I. RECORDS OF STREETS AND HIGHWAYS.

1672–1857.

WE have seen (Chapter XVI.) that, shortly after the settlement of the town, persons were appointed by the General Court of Connecticut to lay out highways in Rye. One of these doubtless was the 'country road,' to which we have devoted some attention. There are three or four other roads which we hear of soon after this order of 1672, and which may have been opened as thoroughfares about the same time, though already used as paths through the forest.

The Beach Road we suppose to be the very oldest of our highways. Originally, perhaps, an Indian trail like the 'old Westchester Path'[1] leading from the wigwams on the coast to the opposite side of the Neck, it was the way for our planters to go from the 'Old Town' — Hastings or Manussing Island — to Mr. Budd's new mill at the head of Blind Brook Creek. We have no record of the opening of the Beach Road; but it is often mentioned as a boundary of early allotments of land. Several of the first town-lots were laid out here. This was undoubtedly 'the path as we go to the old town plot,' spoken of in 1680 and afterward.

By the middle of the last century, this road appears to have become in a measure disused. Two proprietors had acquired all the lands on either side of it, and an attempt was made to close it as a public highway. April 9, 1750, a survey was made of a certain road running from 'the road which goes down to y^e^ Milston Landing, to y^e^ Flatts,' between the land of Ezekiel Halsted and Major Hachaliah Brown. It is described as 'beginning at a Crabb tree, and running two rods southward to Bumpos old house,' etc. Permission is granted to Hachaliah Brown and Ezekiel Halsted 'to keep swing gates' for said road.[2] It remained

[1] An examination of the records of deeds relating to lands in the lower part of this county, would perhaps enable us to trace the course of the old Westchester Path with some precision. The tract afterwards known as the manor of Fordham was described in 1668 as beginning 'from Westchester old *foot* path by the Boggy swamp,' and thence running southerly two miles, 'bounded east by Brunxes River and west by Harlem river.' (Elias Doughty to John Archer: Abstract of Title of the ministers, elders, and deacons of the R. P. D. Church to the Manor of Fordham.)

The petition of certain inhabitants of Rye in 1720, for a patent, confirms our surmise that the Westchester Path was the northern boundary of the First Purchase on Peningo Neck. See page 515.

[2] County Records, White Plains, vol. G. p. 407.

thus closed for fifteen years, at the end of which time a return was made with reference to this road, which established it as a public highway for all time to come.

'West Chester County. In Rye. A Return made this 27th September 1765 of a regulation of a highway, upon complaint made to us by a considerable number of inhabitants in Rye, for a road leading to Lyons Mill towards the Gut, we order the *gate erected on said road* to the Gut southerly of Ezekiel Halsted's house, to be taken down, and that no other gate on the road towards said place called the Gut shall at any time hereafter be there erected by any person whatsoever, but that said road to the Gut shall be an open road, and that from said gate to the bank along the north side of said Halsted's fence of two rods width, until it comes down to the bank against the Flatts, thence upon said bank four rods wide northerly until it comes to the Burying hill over the highest part of said bank thence four rods west from the north side of the road that now is, until it comes to said Gut to be an open highway from the road to Lyons mill down to said Gut as aforesaid. Witness our hands in Rye.

Nathan Brown
Gabriel Lynch
John Thomas Jr.'[1]

The Milton Road, as we have seen elsewhere, was the main street of our village, as laid out about the year 1663. This we suppose to have been the *Peningo Path*, mentioned in one of the early Indian deeds of Rye,[2] leading from the old Westchester Path, about where the present Ridge Road begins, down into Peningo Neck, and to the Indian villages below the Beach. It was doubtless one of the highways laid out under the order of 1672. No record of this original establishment of the road exists, but there are several records of surveys in later times, made probably for the purpose of settling disputes as to its exact course. In 1719 we have an account of a survey of the whole road, in the return made of

'A publick highway . . . . beginning at y^e^ Country road near y^e^ house of the Widow Strangs and runs as y^e^ path now is four rods wide till it comes to a landing called and known by y^e^ name of Milstone allowing Daniel Purdy liberty to hang a gate or make a drawbars at y^e^ Hamack for the conveniency of fencing his meadow he y^e^ said Purdy keeping said Gate in good repair at his own charge performed this 23rd day of December 1719 by us

John Hoit
Joseph Drake
John Stevenson.'[3]

[1] Y^e^ Entering of Highways from the Time of Wm. Forster being County Cl., — a volume of records in the County Clerk's office, White Plains, p. 88.

[2] The deed in question, omitted in our account of the Indian Purchases, Chapter II., is apparently explanatory of the deed of Shanorock and other Indians to John Budd, and of the same date, November 8, 1661. It reads as follows: —

'Know all men, english and Ingens, that whereas Shanorock sold John Budd all the land from the sea to Westchester path, I Shenorock marked Trees by *Penning path* do hereby give and grant and acknowledge that I have received full satisfaction of him, and according to the true intent of these bounds [bonds], he the sayd John Budd is to have and enjoy all the land by the Blind brook to Westchester path, as witness my hand.

Witness the
mark of Cokeo
Peter Disbrow.

The mark of Shanorock
The mark of Remaquaie

Col. Rec. of Conn., vol. i. (MS.) p. 334.

[3] The New Receipt Book, County Clerk's office, White Plains, p. 45.

A survey of Budd's Neck in 1720 represents the bridge across Blind Brook, where the present stone bridge stands, as '*nere Strange*.' This was about four times as far, in the opposite direction.

The short road from the Milton Road to Lyon's mill was surveyed at the same time with the above. 'We do also,' say the commissioners, 'lay out a certain a road y^t^ Lead out of y^e^ above mentioned highway to Joseph Lyon's Mill. Performed y^e^ Date above said.' This refers only to the eastern part of the present cross-road from the Milton Road to the post-road — as far as the west side of the brook, where the mill anciently stood. From the brook to the post-road, no thoroughfare existed until the year 1795.

The Milton Road has been altered from time to time since this survey, but the changes appear to have been slight. The following returns relate to portions of this road: —

'July y^e^ 9th, 1730. A highway laid out in Rye beginning by Jonathan Brown's Land where y^e^ Rode goes to the Mill-stone Landing commonly so called — from thence running by y^e^ west end of y^e^ Lotts foure rods in wedth untill it comes to y^e^ Land y^t^ y^e^ said Jonath: Brown lately bought of Peter Brown — by us

SAMLL PURDY
BENJAMIN BROWN.'[1]

In 1817, the commissioners of highways made a return of a change in the 'road leading to the landing on Peningo Neck,' which was altered and straightened, 'beginning at the north corner of the garden belonging to Philemon Halsted jr., and running on the lands of said Halsted about north and north-east with said road until it comes to a point at the bars that goes into the east meadow of the said Halsted, varying south-east from the former road twelve feet in the extreme width.'[2] In 1820, the commissioners approved an 'alteration made by Hachaliah Brown in the public highway to the west of Thomas Brown's house, in straightening the road through his land until it comes to the land of Philemon Halsted.'[3]

There was a road anciently running *across Peningo Neck*, below the present village of Milton. It led to KNIFFEN'S COVE, — an inlet on the east side of the Neck, above Pine Island. Here the inhabitants had a wharf or landing-place, which was still used some fifty or sixty years ago. The following entries relate to various changes in this road: —

'December 2, 1758. A road laid out beginning at the road leading into the Town Neck so called opposite Caleb Hyat's salt meadow running easterly across said neck on the south side of Jonathan Brown's land to the Kniffen's Cove so called — thence along the south side of said Cove till it comes ten rod below southward of the old Warehouse so called. The road formerly laid out by the Proprietors across said neck through Jonathan Brown's land to said Kniffen's Cove, to be blocked and shut up.'[4]

'Return of a highway or road laid out this 18th day of May A. D. 1762 in the

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 29.
[2] Town Records, vol. D. p. 375.
[3] Town Records, vol. D. p. 385.
[4] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 71.

town of Rye. . . . . Beginning at Thomas Brown's barrs near and on the east side of the road that leads down the Town neck (so called) in said Rye on the west side of said neck, thence running from said Thomas Brown's barrs easterly across said town neck on the south side of Jonathan Brown's land two rods wide till it comes to Kniffen's Cove (so called) thence southerly along said cove eight rods below the old Warehouse place (so called) for conveniency of vessels four rods wide and we do allow Jonathan Brown to stop and block up the highway formerly laid out to said Kniffen's cove through his land.' [1]

There was also, in early times, a road across the *upper end of Peningo Neck*, from Blind Brook to the shore opposite Manussing Island. The street south of the Presbyterian Church is probably a part of this old road, which formerly intersected the Milton Road above the house now owned by C. V. Anderson, Esq. The following is a description of the road, as it was entered in 1719: —

'A publick highway . . . . beginning at Jonathan Brown's corner of land near y^e^ great Bridge so called and runs as y^e^ path now leads four rods wide till it comes to a place called and known by y^e^ name of y^e^ Gutt and from thence as the way now is to Manusen Island allowing liberty to y^e^ inhabitants of said Town y^t^ have any freehold in land or meadow near y^e^ Gutt (above named) to have liberty to have a gate for them or either of their conveniencies, he or they keeping said Gate in good repair at his or their own cost and charge performed this 26th day of December 1719 By us

John Hoit
Joseph Drake
John Stevenson.' [2]

Rectory Street — the road south of the Episcopal Church — is described in 1723, as a 'path' already existing: —

'A public highway laid out in y^e^ town of Rye beginning at y^e^ Corner of James Cues land by the Country Road and runs along by y^e^ side of said Cues Land to the Church and from y^e^ Church as y^e^ path now leads into the Country Road against Mr. Jannis [Rev. Mr. Jenney's] Garden s^d^ highway laid out six Rods wide this twenty-first day of November 1723

Entered by me Dec. 9, 1723
Wm Forster *Cl.*

By us Jo: Drake, Jno. Stevenson, Silv. Palmer } *Com'rs*' [3]

This road was surveyed and recorded in the year 1833. In 1853, a slight alteration of the northern line of the road near the church was made.[4]

On the west side of our village street there are three short roads which have been opened at different periods, leading down to the bank of Blind Brook. The first of these is still indicated by a road-bed, a few rods south of Mr. Daniel Strang's store. I find no record of this road, but it is referred to in a deed dated 1832, relating to the strip of land opposite the present rectory grounds, as the northern boundary of that tract, which the town then conveyed to the wardens and vestry of the Episcopal Church. The deed mentions it as 'the road leading across the brook to the parsonage land.' As the parsonage land across

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 65.
[2] The New Receipt Book, p. 45.
[3] Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 59.
[4] Town Records, p. 320.

the brook was laid out for a glebe in 1759, we presume this road may have been opened not long after that time.

South of the house now belonging to the Misses Mead, there was formerly a road leading to the *fulling mill* which stood on the west side of Blind Brook. Some indications of it still remain near the bank of that stream. The following is the record of the opening of this road in 1742 : —

'We the subscribers Commissioners appointed by Act of Generall Assembly for laying out Highways in Rye in the County of Westchester being requested to view & consider the necessity of a highway from the country road between the parsonage Lott so called and the Lott now belonging to Raphael Jacobs unto the bridge by w^ch there is a ffulling-mill erected by blind brook we judge the same very necessary & with the consent of the present Rector and Incumbent have and hereby Do lay out a highway through the said parsonage Lott to be two rods in width from the Country road running by the Land of Raphael Jacobs unto the bank of the brook thence two rods wide from the top of the bank of said blind brook to go southerly Down the said bank unto the southermost part of the stone work Laid for Butment of the present bridge by the ffulling-mill the owner of the said bridge and mill for the time being always to maintain sufficient Gates or draw bars at the bridge and at y^e road. Given under our hands in Rye this tenth day of June in the 15th Year of his Majestie's Reign 1742.

SAM^LL PURDY }
CALEB HYATT } *Commiss^rs*.'[1]

A short distance above this, north of the house of Mr. Josiah Purdy, there is a third short road leading down to the bank of Blind Brook. This road was laid out in 1728. It is described as —

'Beginning at y^e Road leading to Harrison's purchase near Samuel Lane's house, thence direct to Blind Brook four rods wide between said Lane's house and Barn, thence crossing y^e Brook, along said Brook two rods wide to John Haight's Deceased his Land : thence along y^e line of said Haight's Land on Joseph Brundige's Land two rods wide till it comes to a Certain Cleft of Rocks near a brook, to go round y^e Rocks two rods wide according to Agreement on y^e North Side and so to continue two rods wide as said Brundige's Land goes till it comes to Benjamin Brown's Land, allowing said Brundige Swing gates if he see cause, and so to continue through Benjamin Brown's Land two rods wide according to agreement till it comes to y^e Land y^t James Wetmore and Abraham Brundige purchased from Jonathan Haight.'[2]

This street was again recorded in the year 1815, as 'beginning at a highway leading from Rye to Harrison a few rods north of Esther Hunt's house, running westerly across Blind brook, thence bearing southerly to a gate belonging to the heirs of Gilbert Brondage deceased.' The railroad embankment has cut off the western part of this road.

LOCUST AVENUE — the road leading from Rye across to North Street — was opened in 1853; the commissioners of this town laying it out as far as the boundary of Harrison, from which point it was continued by the commissioners of Harrison, to its termination, opposite the house of Mr. William H. Smith.[3]

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., pp. 51, 52.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 16.
[3] Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 324.

Cedar Street, or the road leading from Rye station to the post-road, on the west and north of the Seminary grounds, was laid out in 1732: —

'Beginning at y^e^ road that leads into Harrisons Purchase opposite to Benjamin Browns old house and running by y^e^ land of Samuel Lane and Benjamin Pedrick on the north side thereof and on the south side of the land of Merritt Bush and Brown untill it comes to y^e^ King's road near the house of Thomas Merritt deceased being four rods in breadth.'[1]

The road leading from the post-road to the railroad station, and beyond it as far as the house of Mr. Charles Park, lately Allen Carpenter's, was probably one of the earliest roads constructed in Rye. It formed the lower part of the road to Hog-pen Ridge, long before the laying out of Harrison's Purchase; and even as late as the beginning of this century it was often called the Hog-pen Ridge Road. A more common name, however, was the Purchase Road, or the road to Harrison's Purchase, which, until within a few years, was considered to begin at the post-road, near the house of the late David H. Mead.[2]

Grace Church Street, we have supposed, was originally a path along the northern fence of the Town Field. The eastern part of this road appears to have been 'opened' as a highway in 1701: —

'At a meeting held by the properities [proprietors] of Peningo neck August the 29, 1701 . . . . Jonathan Fowls and John Merit sener and Deliverance Browne sener is chosen by a meger [major] voat to mark out the road upon Bartons neck and the high way downe unto the solt water that is to say to mark out a good sofistient road and high way to the best of there discretion.'

'Jonathan Fowls and Deliverance Browne sener and John Merit sener being chosen to mark out the road upon Bartons neck which may apeere by record and did decleare unto me Samuell Lane clarke this 16 day of Febewery 1702–3 that thay have now marked out the road upon Bartons neck a Long the way which John Merit and Joseph Bude Layd for a countrey road and is bounded as followeth easterly where there is Lottments Layd out to be bounded by them and so likewise on the west side and between those Lotments of each side to run by those marks which are now marked and also a high way by the soalt water beginning at the east corner of Bartons lott and so to run to the fild fence and from thence to run unto the said countrey road upwards.'[3]

We have shown elsewhere that Barton's Neck was the tract of land through which Grace Church Street runs, from Kirby Avenue to the brook near Dr. Sands' house. In 1703, the road above described is mentioned as 'the country road that goes through Barton's Neck.'[4]

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 48. This road is referred to in several ancient deeds. The old Presbyterian Church before the Revolution stood on the northwest corner of Cedar Street and the post-road. In 1791 the town granted permission to Jesse Hunt 'to fix gates at the each end of the Road [that] leads from the Purchase Road to the ould meeting house across the cedars.' (Town Records, vol. D. p. 313.)

[2] The road connecting the post-road with the Ridge Road, between the lands now owned by Dr. J. T. Tuttle and Mrs. Catlin, was laid out in 1857. (Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 153.)

[3] Town Meeting Book, C. pp. 18, 20.

[4] Town Records, vol. B. p. 162.

A list of lands divided in 1723 is entitled, 'The Draught of Lots upon Barton's Neck, between the [Byram] river, and the road that runs through said neck.'[1] The name Grace Church Street, or Gracious Street, as it was already vulgarized, first occurs in 1736.

No considerable change seems to have been made in the course of this road, which probably remains at present almost as devious as when first laid out.[2]

Kirby Avenue, or the road leading from Grace Church Street to Manussing Island, was laid out by the commissioners as a highway in 1820. It is described as 'beginning at the gate, and running in a southerly direction through the lands called Bird's land to David Kirby's land; thence through said land joining the west end of the mill-pond to Billa Theall's land joining the creek nearly as the road now runs that leads to Manursing Island.'[3]

In 1747, there was a 'road from the landing place laid out south of Joseph Sherwood's homestead,' to Grace Church Street,[4] which may have coincided with the western part of Kirby Avenue. The Sherwood property was bought by Henry Bird before 1771.[5]

What is now a lane running through the late Provoost estate, was anciently a road that led from Grace Church Street to the landing, long known as Rye Ferry. This, a hundred years ago, was the most travelled road in our neighborhood. It does not appear to have been thrown open as a public highway. In 1804 the commissioners of roads altered 'the road from the publick Landing (at a Beach North of Chavalier Rock) to the publick road leading to Grace church street:' the alteration 'beginning at the beach and running a west course Nine Rods or thereabouts from thence to the publick Road leading to Grace church street.'[6]

The Road to Fox Island from Grace Church Street is very ancient. In 1699, 'Att a lawful meeting of the proprietors of Peningo Neck the said proprietors do grant unto Richard Ogden an Island commonly called Fox Island at the mouth of Byram River, provided he the said Richard Ogden makes a good sufficient Cart bridge over the Run between Andrew Cos house and the field fence as Andrew Co and Stephen Sherwood shall see convenient, by the last of June next.'[7]

[1] Town Records, vol. B. p. 105.

[2] A slight rectification was made, in 1841, nearly opposite Mr. A. Abendroth's residence. (Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 95.)

[3] Town Records, vol. D. p. 386.

[4] *Ib'd.* p. 193.

[5] *Ibid.* p. 284.

[6] Town Records, Vol. D. p. 334. In 1829 the survey of a tract of public land near 'Cavalier's Rock,' was recorded. It comprised one acre, one rood, and fourteen rods, and was bounded 'beginning at a rock on the north side of Cavalier Rock,' etc. Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 41.

[7] Town Records, Vol. C. pp. 1, 289.

SAW PIT.

'A public highway laid out in y^e^ town of Rye in y^e^ County of West-Chester beginning near y^e^ dwelling house of John Fowlers so running opposite against Thomas Nichols dwelling house so four rods wide to his fulling mill and from thence to Robert Bloomer seniors grist mill performed by us y^e^ 28th day of April 1720.'[1]

'A publick highway laid out in y^e^ town of Rye in y^e^ County of West-Chester beginning near y^e^ house of Robert Bloomer jun^r^ in y^e^ north end of Robert Bloomers land so running to Robert Bloomer seniors Grist mill two rods wide according to mark trees and stakes performed by us y^e^ 29th day of April 1723.

JOSEPH DRAKE,
JOHN HOIT, } *Commiss^rs^*[2]
JAMES STEVENSON,

A 'road laid out from Robert Bloomers Mills as y^e^ path now goes untill it comes to y^e^ hog pen ridge road then running southerly along said hog pen ridge road untill it comes to the Land of Sam^ll^ Lane thence along said Lanes Land between that and the Rosevelts land untill it comes to y^e^ road y^t^ goes to the Sawpitt landing (so called) being four rods in breadth Laid out by us April y^e^ 6th 1732.

SAMUEL PURDY,
BENJAMIN BROWN.'[3]

These records appear to describe portions of the road which runs from the Purchase Road across the valley of Blind Brook to the Ridge Road. John Fowler's farm, in 1742, bordered on the Purchase Road and this cross street.[4] Robert Bloomer's mill was that now owned by Mr. Park. The road from Park's mill formerly terminated a short distance north of the point where it now intersects the Ridge Road and above the house of Mr. T. Lyon. The change took place in 1843, when the road was also straightened below Regent Street. The ancient road, however, still exists at this point, being that which terminates on Regent Street opposite Mr. E. B. Wesley's gate.[5]

'The road to the Sawpit landing,' it appears, had already been laid out in 1732. This is the present Purchase Street from Port Chester.

'May y^e^ 18^th^ 1730 A highway and landing place laid out in Rye beginning at a stump at y^e^ north corner of Cornealus Flamins land from thence along y^e^ Contery rode to a rock marked I D from thence to a Rock near y^e^ Mill-pond marked I D from thence along the s^d^ mill-pond and Byram river Southward till it comes to a Rock mark I D about ten rods & a half below Rosevelts storehouse and from thence about west to another Rock in y^e^ medow marked I D and from thence to y^e^ corner of y^e^ s^d^ Flamens Land or Storehouse & then to the stump where it began, by us.

SAM^LL^ PURDY
BENJ^A^ BROWN.'[6]

This road was located at Saw Pit, but precisely where we cannot determine. Cornelius Flamen lived in 1741 on Merrit's Point, now Lyon's Point, in Port Chester.

[1] The New Receipt Book, p. 44.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 43.
[3] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 48.
[4] Town Records, vol. C., p. 149.
[5] Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 310.
[6] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 30.

In 1808, the commissioners laid out the street now known as Willett Street: '—

'Beginning at the corner of the fence south of Reuben Coe's house where it now stands, and running south four rods thence easterly continued to the corner of the horse-shed occupied by Elisha Brewster thence northerly by the Turnpike Road four rods to a stake, and thence running westerly to the first mentioned bounds.' [1]

The road across Lyon's Point was laid out in 1803: —

'Beginning at a stake and stones about twenty-four feet westerly of the most Easterly part of a point of Rocks call'd Negro point in biram River opposite goose Island and from thence Runs south 38° West 70 Links to a stake and stones it being the East end of the road and from thence runs north 64° West, in a Direct line with the walnut tree standing in Kniffins hill Eight chains and 23 Links to the south Branch of Sawpit harbour between the storehouse of Silvenus Seaman and the bake house of Benjamin Rockwells and is the south line of the Road Laid out across the said point, the said road to be two rods wide and to lye North of the Last described line — the Landing is then laid out Beginning at the East bounds of the road being a stake with stones thence continues with the south line of the Road 2 chains to a heap of stones thence runs North 32° East one chain and ten Links to stones on a rock then south 74° East seventy Links to 2 stakes and stones upon the edge of the bank and from thence to the Channel including all the Lands as above Described for the use and benefit of the publick.

April 2nd, 1803. William T. Provoost, Barthow Hadden, } *Commissioners.*' [2]

King Street appears to have been laid out as early as the year 1683. This is, probably, the road mentioned in a deed of that date from Timothy Knap to Stephen Sherwood for a tract of eighteen acres on Byram Ridge, bordering on Byram River. 'There is a highway runs through the middle of it.' In 1700 'the country road up Byram River' is mentioned. In 1733 it is spoken of as 'the King street road.' [3]

There is a tradition in one of the families living on King Street that when their ancestor came thither about the beginning of the last century, 'King Street was nothing but a path through the forest.' This indeed was the aspect of nearly all our roads at that time.

HARRISON.

Most of the roads in the town of Harrison are on record, having been laid out more recently than those on Peningo Neck. The volume from which we have already quoted, containing 'Y^e^ Entering of Highways from the Time of Wm. Forster being County Clerk,' mentions several of them. These entries began in 1722, about the time when Harrison began to be settled.

The Purchase Road, leading from Rye northward through the

[1] Town Records, vol. D. p. 359.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 330. A diagram of this survey, apparently, is contained in the Records, 1851 to 1859, opposite the record of a new survey of the same road made in 1852, pp. 336, 338.

[3] *Ibid.* B. 51, 146; C. 133.

Purchase to the neighborhood of Rye Pond, was perhaps laid out previous to this date. Several descriptions of other roads refer to it as 'a road formerly laid out by the Commissioners along and near the *middle line*' of Harrison's Purchase. From this fact it took the name of Middle Street, by which it was known as early as 1742. The Purchase Road, as already intimated, commences at a point near the house of Mr. Charles Park, lately Mr. Allen Carpenter's. Here is the boundary line between Rye and Harrison. Below this, the road from the post-road, northward, is, properly speaking, the lower part of the Ridge Road, which existed long before the Purchase Road was laid out.

The road above the Friends' Meeting-house, was opened in 1723. It began at King Street, and ran across the northern part of the towns of Rye and Harrison, terminating near the White Plains. The entry in the Record of Highways is as follows: —

'A publick Road surveyed & laid out for y^e^ County of Westchester March 10 1722–3 by Joseph Drake, John Stevenson and Lewis Morris Jun^r^ three of y^e^ Commission^rs^ for y^e^ s^d^ County Beginning at Kings street near y^e^ house of John Clap so along between y^e^ Land of said Clap and Thomas Sutton till it meets w^th^ y^e^ land of Augustin Graham so running between y^e^ Lands of Augustin Graham & s^d^ Clap over blind brook keeping between y^e^ s^d^ Lotts till you come to y^e^ Land of Benjamin Burchum to y^e^ southward of Rye ponds and so across pond brook and miry brook and from thence along by a Line of markt trees across Mamaroneck River and so over Brown's point along y^e^ side of Long Meadow till you come to y^e^ Lotts of John Hyatt and Caleb Hait then along between y^e^ said Lotts and Sam^ll^ Cheesemans so over by Meadow brook upon Daniel Brundages Land till you come to fflat meadow brook and so through James Traveses Land in a Road formerly left by y^e^ White Plains people till it meets w^th^ a Road laid out by y^e^ Commission^rs^ keeping always four rod wide

Surveyed & laid out by us

Joseph Drake
Lewis Morris Jun^r^
John Stevenson.'[1]

The road directly south of this, beginning at the Purchase Road opposite the house of Mr. Sutton, and running in a northwesterly direction to the road above described, was opened in the same year: —

'A publick highway laid out in Harrison's Purchase so called in the township of Rye, beginning at Richard Simmons land (at y^e^ end of a highway formerly laid out by the Commission^rs^ along and near the middle line) and runs across said Simmons land to Benjamin Burchums land, across Burchums land by the west side of his house till it comes to Tredwell's land, then along the line between said Burchum and said Tredwell till it comes into the highway y^t^ leads from John Claps to the White Plains. The abovesaid highway laid out four rods wide according to marked trees this first day of November 1723.

William Willet
John Stevenson
Silvanus Palmer
} *Commiss^rs^.*'[2]

The road from North Street to Purchase Village seems to be that described in the following record of the same date: —

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 2. An alteration in this road was ordered in 1839. Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 85.

[2] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 67.

'A public highway laid out part in White Plains and part in Harrisons Purchase beginning at y^e^ highway that leads from the White Plains to Rye near Caleb Hyat's house and runs along the way y^t^ leads to Brown's point crossing a small brook in said Hyat's land and so along Hyat's land till it comes to the corner stake between said Hyat and Thomas Fowler and soe along between them, each allowing two rods for y^e^ way, till it comes to Jere Fowler's land — then along y^e^ Division line between said Thomas Fowler and Jere Fowler till it comes into the highway that runs along and near the middle line each lott allowing two rods as aforesaid. All y^e^ aforesaid highway laid out four rods wide according to marked trees the second day of November 1723.

WILLIAM WILLET
JOHN STEVENSON
SILVANUS PALMER
} *Commiss^rs^.*' [1]

The following record likewise appears to describe the continuation of this road from the Purchase Road at the Harrison post-office to King Street: —

'A publick highway laid out in y^e^ township of Rye beginning (at a highway laid out in Harrison's Purchase along the middel Line) at y^e^ bounds between Henry Dusenborrou's Land and Sam^ll^ ffields' Land and runs between said Dusenborrou's Land and s^d^ ffield's Land taking one rod and a half from each of their Lotts w^ch^ makes y^e^ Road three rods wide till it comes to John Saler his land and then along three rods wide upon Saler his land along the side of said Dusenborrou's Land till it comes to blind brook crossing blind brook and runs up between John Coe's Land and Sam^ll^ Lane Jun^rs^ Land taking of a rod and a half from each of their Lotts w^ch^ makes the Road three Rods wide till it comes into King street — all said highway being three rods wide according to marked trees allowing liberty to y^e^ persons that were Owners of y^e^ Land to hang Gates across the Road (for to save them the charge of makeing part of the ffenceing) where they shall think it most convenient for themselves and for the Conveniency of Travellers they keeping said Gates in good repair at their own proper Costs and Charge as Witness our hands this second day of January Annoq. Dom. 1723–4

JNO. STEVENSON
WILLIAM WILLETT
JOSEPH DRAKE
SILVANUS PALMER
} *Commiss^rs^.*' [2]

Another road laid out in Harrison is described as follows: —

'April y^e^ 7th 1730. A highway laid out in Rye beginning at y^e^ rode y^t^ run up Harsons purches between the Land of Richard Semans and the Land of the late Joseph ffowler two rods wide one rod of each running westerly till coms to the Land of Roger Park

CALEB HYATT
SAM^LL^ PURDY
BENJA: BROWN.' [3]

WHITE PLAINS.

NORTH STREET, or the road from Rye to the White Plains, is one of our most ancient highways. The following extracts from our Town Records show when it was opened: —

'At a towne meting in Rye Aprell 1: 1699 John Lyon and Isack Dunham are chosen to Laye out a Rode to the White Playnes begining at the had [head] of Cap^t^ Thall [Theall's] Land and so to Run to the Caseaway brook.'

'At a towne meting in Rye Aprell 17: 1699 the towne hath past an act that the

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 67. [2] *Ibid.* pp. 7, 8. [3] *Ibid.* p. 39.

Rode shall continue a Rode up to the Whit Playnes where John Lyon and Isaac Dunham hath mark it out and the said Rode to be 3 Rods in bradth.'[1]

Causeway Brook is the stream that forms the outlet of Horton's Pond, near the White Plains. This brook is sometimes designated as the Mamaroneck River; but that name properly belongs to the eastern branch, which joins it a little way below the White Plains, coming down from the neighborhood of Rye Pond. This stream our early settlers considered to be the river; and the tract of land between this and Causeway Brook was anciently known as Brown's Point.

Thus it appears to have taken the settlers only two weeks to 'lay out' North Street in its entire length, from 'the head of Captain Theall's land' to the entrance of White Plains. Of course they did nothing more than 'mark the trees' along which the path was to run. And for many years doubtless this road was simply a path through the forest. Tradition states that in those primitive times the journey to the Plains occupied a whole day; and a huge boulder which lies a few rods above the North Street school-house, still known as the 'Bread-and-butter Rock,' is said to be the spot where they halted for refreshment by the way!

Frequent alterations have been made in the lower part of North Street. It is still a very *crooked* road; but anciently its course was much more tortuous than now. In 1754 there was a change made in the White Plains road, 'beginning at a small brook below Beaver Swamp,' running thence southeasterly by certain trees, 'and so running between a small hill and a swamp to the old road.'[2] The next year, a return was made of 'the regulating and ascertaining a highway from Rye to the White Plains' in the following terms: —

'Whereas the said Highway in the place where it crossed the Beaver Swamp was Disputable and Uncertain where it should cross the same, and we the subscribers having examined and inspected the same, that the said Highway might be in the most convenient place for transport and Travelling Do order and confirm said Highway be and continued over said Beaver swamp where it hath Been formerly & to be four Rods wide from Joseph Theals fence now standing northerly towards John Doughtys Land and so to remain and Highway there in that place over said Beaver swamp. Witness our hands the date aforesaid

WILLIAM WILLETT }
JONATHAN BROWN } *Commiss^rs.*'[3]
GABRIEL LYNCH }

North Street has been straightened in various places within the last thirty years. One of its former deviations can still be traced along the front wall of the Union Cemetery. The road formerly followed the course of this wall, crossing Beaver Swamp below the present bridge.

The Book of Highways already quoted contains the record of several

[1] Town and Proprietors' Meeting Book No. 3, or C. p. 4.
[2] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 60.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 61.

roads opened in the present town of White Plains. The following is one: —

'Rye November 13th 1730 A highway Laid out in the White Plains beginning at the street near ye Meeting house runing four rods wide by marked trees till it comes to the Bridge over Broncke river near John Garritsons Laid out by us

SAMLL PURDY
CALEB HYATT
BENJAMIN BROWN.'[1]

In 1764 there was an alteration of this road, apparently, 'the road which lies near the Presbyterian Meeting house in the White Plains, on the north side of the burying-yard.'[2]

RYE NECK.

Of the principal highway through Rye Neck, or Budd's Neck, as it was anciently called, — the old Boston Road, — we have given a separate account in Chapter XVI. Several other roads, which existed formerly in this part of the town, have completely disappeared. The most important of these, and probably one of the first ever laid out in Rye, was the ROAD TO BULLOCK'S LANDING. This road led from the post-road to the creek, through the land now owned by Mr. Genin. Bullock's Landing took its name from an individual who seems to have remained but a short time in Rye, during the early days of the settlement. This was Richard Booloch, or Bullard, an associate of John Budd. The landing appears to have been one of the first used by the inhabitants of Rye. There are traces of an Indian village in the vicinity of this spot, which is still identified by means of a rock, known to this day as Bullock's.

The road to Bullock's Landing was not closed until the year 1795. It was then 'exchanged' for the road which now leads from the post-road, south of Mr. Sylvanus Purdy's house, to the bridge across Blind Brook above Milton. This new road was laid out in that year as follows: 'Beginning at the north-west corner of John Purdy's land and running to the south-west of said land, about an east by south course until it comes to the orchard of Gilbert Brown, thence about the same course to the south' of his dwelling-house 'to the mill-pond, thence across the old mill-dam to the road leading to the mill creek landing.' This road was opened in exchange for 'a road leading from the post-road on the south of said Brown's land to Bullock's landing so called.' In 1819 the new road had not yet been thrown open, and Gilbert Brown was 'ordered to take off his gates without delay.'[3]

There was anciently a road where the lane now runs from the bridge near Mr. Richard B. Chapman's house, along the west bank of the creek.

[1] Entering of Highways, etc., p. 32.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 73.
[3] Town Records, vol. D. p. 382.

The 'cross road to Milton' has been straightened at different times. Such an alteration occurred in 1841. (Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 77.)

It led, apparently, from Lyon's mill to Bullock's Landing; and this must have been the usual way to go from the old mill, which stood on the southwest side of the bridge, to the post-road on Budd's Neck. This road we suppose to be described in the following entry: —

'We the Commishoners for the Town of Rye and White Playns Do allow Joseph Lyon to Hang and Keep in Repair at his own proper cost a good swing Gate for Carts to go through to the Bulock Landing so caled, between his own Land and the Land of Daniel Purdy. Witness our hands June y^e^ 20th 1751.

William Willett
Jonathan Brown
Gabriel Lynch.'[1]

A road is mentioned in 1765, as 'formerly leading from the post road through the lands of Peter Jay, John Guion and James Hart.' This road was then closed, and a new one laid out. It commenced at a point opposite the old district school-house on Rye Neck, which stood on the north side of the post-road below Dr. Jay's farm-house, and ran across to the head of Horseneck Creek, where Mr. Alexander Taylor now resides. Here there was a public dock or landing for sloops. The construction of a dam across the mouth of this inlet, about the year 1790, rendered the dock useless, and the road leading to it was discontinued. The 'Black road,' as it was called, was then extended from the neighborhood of the dock down to Deall's mill, now Van Amringe's.

The following record of a highway appears to define the road which now leads from the new Harrison Station southward to Davenport's mill. 'David Haight's house' in 1724 stood very near the present depot. The road is correctly described as running along the boundary line of the towns of Harrison and Rye. This was a part of the 'old Westchester Path,' which had long been in use, but was now perhaps surveyed and established as a highway for the first time.

'A publick Highway laid out in the township of Rye beginning at David Haight's house, and running southerly from said house *as y^e^ path now leads* (in y^e^ most part) according to marked trees near y^e^ line between Harrison's purchase and y^e^ neck lotts till it comes into y^e^ road y^t^ leads from y^e^ White Plains to y^e^ post-road near John Hortons . . . . March 1, 1724.'[2]

In 1734 another road was laid out in this vicinity, 'between the land of Archibald Telford and the land of Elisha Budd and running by Budd's land and Caleb Horton's land to the road to the landing-place where Mr. Sam^ll^ Wood now lives.'[3] In 1750 a road was laid out from the highway by Elisha Budd's to the highway by Caleb Horton's.

The road now leading from the post-road opposite Mr. Sylvanus Purdy's house, to Harrison Station, was laid out in 1857, 'Through land of Joshua P. Purdy by land of Edward Corning . . . . to Harrison line;' three rods wide.

[1] Entering of Highways, etc. p. 59.
[2] *Ibid.* p. 8.
[3] *Ibid.* p. 39.

II. ROYAL PATENTS.[1]

I. PATENT FOR THE TRACT OF LAND BETWEEN BLIND BROOK AND BYRAM RIVER.[2]

To [3] the Hon^ble^ Peter Schuyler y^e^ President of his Majesties Counsill of the Province of New York and Territories thereon depending in America In Counsill.

The Humble Petition of Daniell Purdy Son of John Purdy Deceased Samuell Brown and Benjamin Brown Inhabitants of the Township of Rye in the County of West Chester in behalfe of themselves and diverse other Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye.

Sheweth That one Peter Disbrow many yeares since by authority from the Colony of Connecticut (under whose Government the Township of Rye then lay) on the third of January 1660 purchased from the then Native Indian Proprietors a Certaine Tract of Land lyeing on the maine Betweene a sertaine plane then called Rahonaness to the East and to the West Chester Path to the North and up to a River then called Moaquanes to the West That is to say all the Land lyeing betweene the aforesaid Two Rivers then called Pennigoe Extending from the said Path to the North and South to the Sea or Sound

That the said Peter Disbrow also purchased of the said Native Indian Proprietors by authority as aforesaid a Certaine other Tract of Land lyeing Betweene Byram River and the Blind Brook which was bounded as followeth viz^t^ with the Byram River Beginning at the Mouth of the aforesaid River on the East and the Bounds of Hasting (then soe called) on the south, and southwest to the marked Trees, and northward up to the marked Trees, abt six or seven miles from the sea along the said Byram River northward and soe from the said River a Cross the North Northwest and west to the said River called the blind Brook bounded northward with marked Trees which lead down to a little Brook runing into the Blind brook as by the said Two Indian Purchases may more fully appeare

That the said Peter Disbrow having made such purchases afterward sold and Disposed of the same to many of the Inhabitants of the said Township of Rye who settled and Improved the same Lands [4] and were first under the Township of Rye under the Collony of Connecticut and Great part thereof hath since falne under the Government of the Province of New York:

That yo^r^ Petitioners and other Inhabitants of the Town of Rye aforesaid and those under whom they Claime have beene ever since in the quiet and peaceable possession of the said Lands and premises and Cultivated and Improved the same.

But inasmuch as such Parts of the aforesaid Two severall Tracts of Land now Claimed by yo^r^ Petitioners and those whom they Represent as aforesaid lyes now within the said Townshipp of Rye under the Government of the said Province of New York and there having been as yet noe Grant from the Crown for the same under this Government Your Petitioners and those whom they Represent being willing and Desirous to have his majesties most Gracious Letters Patent for such part of the aforesaid Tracts of Land now in their quiet and peaceable possession under this Government viz^t^ Beginning at the Southermost part of Pinningoe Neck and Runs alorg the sound Easterly until it comes to the mouth of Byram River and Runing up the said River and the Land Betweene the Colony of Connecticut and the Province of New York Northward to the Antient marked Trees of Limping Wills purchase and soe with the said marked Trees a Cross the said purchase north west

[1] Town Records, 1815 to 1859, p. 159.

[2] Book of Patents (Albany) No. 8, page 391.

[3] Land Papers, vol. vii. p. 171.

[4] (Words erased) and were first as a Township.

to the River called the Blind brooke, and soe Runing down to the said River, and brook called Mill Creek to the Sound.

Yor Petitioners therefore on behalf of themselves and the said other Inhabitants (who have fully authorized and Impowered yor Petitioners to this Purpose) most humbly pray yor honours will be pleased to Grant to yor Petitioners his majesties most Gracious Letters Patent for the aforesaid Tract within the Limitts and Boundaries last above Described, In Trust for themselves and the aforesaid Inhabitants according to their respective rights and Interest in the same under such Reservation and Restrictions as are appointed for that purpose

And yor Petitioners shall ever pray etc.

New York ye 20th June 1720

Samuel Brown
Beniamin Brown

George by the *Grace* of *God King* of *Great Brittain France* and *Ireland* Defender of the faith &c *To all To Whom* these presents shall come sendeth *Greeting Whereas* our Loving Subjects *Daniel Purdy* son of *John Purdy* deceased *Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* in behalf of themselves and others Freeholders and Inhabitants of the *Township* of *Rye* in the *County* of *Westchester* in the *Province* of *New York* by their Humble Petition presented to our trusty and well-beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler*, President of our Councill for our Province of New York aforesaid, Have set forth that they and their Ancestors and predecessors under whom they hold have held and improved at their great charge with their labour and industry, a Certain Tract of land bordering upon the line of Division between this Province and *Connecticut Colony* for which they nor their Ancestors and predecessors hitherto have had no patent under the Seal of the province of New York, Which said Tract of land is scituate and being between *Byram River* and *Blind Brook* and Begins at a Certain rock being the ending of a point of land commonly known by the Name of *Town Neck Point* and in the Southermost point of the said Tract of land, thence running Easterly by the Sound to a point near the mouth of said *Byrams River* called *Byrams Point* including a certain Island called *Mounsons Island* and from the said Byram point Northerly up Byram River on the East side of the said River as the Colony line is at present supposed to be run by the inhabitants of the Neighbourhood to a rock standing on the East side of the said River by the Wadeing place and the high road leading to Connecticut, then North twenty four degrees thirty minutes West three hundred and forty eight chains as the line which divides this Province from Connecticut is supposed to run by the said inhabitants to a Wallnut Tree marked with three knotches on three sides being twelve chains on a straight line to an Ash Tree Marked with three Knotches on three sides standing near blind Brook then down the said Brook untill it emptys it self into a Creek called Mill Creek and then by the said Creek to the place where it Begun, Containing Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land or thereabout, after Eighteen small Tracts of Land which lye within the said bounds and are part of twenty small Tracts formerly granted to the Reverend Christopher

Bridge in his life time are deducted and allowance being made for the Kings Highways and prayed to have our Grant and Letters Patent for the same under the Great Seal of the Province of New York in the manner following that is to say. To Hold to them and their heirs and assigns for ever but to and for the use and uses following and to no other use whatsoever (that is to say) As for and concerning such Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before receited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island whereof they the said *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interests and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use Benefit and Behoofe of the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* severally and respectively and of their severall and respective heirs and assigns forever. And as for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island which are belonging and Appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds and limits of the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island some of more some of less according to their several seperate and particular interest in trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their particular Names and their particular and severall Freeholdes and Inheritances were particularly and severally Expressed Mentioned and Described under the usual Quitt Rent, Clauses, provisions conditions limitations and restrictions as are limited and appointed by our Royall Instructions for the Granting of Lands in our Province of New York, for that purpose. Which request wee being willing to grant *Know Yee* that of our Especial Grace certain knowledge and meer Motion Wee have given granted, ratifyed and confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and successors for ever Give Grant Ratifie and Confirm unto the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* and to their heirs and assigns for ever. All that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island Containing as before is set forth Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres together with all and singular Woods, Underwoods, Houses, Edifices, Buildings, Barns, Fences, Orchards, Fields, Fielding, Pastures, Meadows, Marshes, Swamps, Ponds, Pools, Waters, Water courses, Rivers, Rivoletts, Runs and Streams of Water, Fishing, Fowling, Hunting and Hawking, Quarrys, Mines, Mineralls, Standing Growing Lying and being or to be had used or enjoyed within the limits and bounds aforesaid and all other profits benefits libertys priviledges, Hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or any ways appertaining. And all that our Estate, Right, Title, Interest, Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or

to the same. And the Revertion and Revertions, Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and Profits of the same (Excepting and always reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our heirs and successors for ever all such Fir Trees and Pine Trees of the Diameter of Twenty-four inches at Twelve inches from the ground or root as are or shall be fit to make Masts for the use of our said their Royall Navy. As also all such other Trees, are or shall be fit to make planks and Knees for the use of our said their said Royall Navy only which now are standing growing or being in and upon any of the said Tract of Land and Island with Free Lycence and Liberty for any person or persons whomsoever by us our heirs and successors or any of them to be thereunto authorized and appointed under our and their sign Manual with Workmen Horses Waggons Carts and Carriages and without to enter upon and come into the same Tract of Land and Island and there to fell cut down root up hiew saw rive splitt have take cart and carry away the same Masts, Trees, Planks and Knees for the use aforesaid and also Except all Gold and Silver Mines, saving also and reserving unto the heirs and assigns for ever of the aforesaid *Christopher Bridge* Eighteen small Tracts of Land which Lye within the said bounds and are part of Twenty small Tracts formerly granted to him in his life time by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of our said Province of New York bearing Date the Nineteenth day of July in the Fourth Year of our Reign saving also and reserving unto Lemuel Rogers and Roger Parks, and to their several and respective heirs and assigns respectively for ever their Respective Rights Title Interest and Equity which they and either of them respectively do shall or may have or claim to the Southermost part of the said Island any thing in these Presents to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding.) *To have and To hold* all that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island containing in the whole Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and all other the above granted premises with the hereditaments and appurtenances (Saving and *Excepting* only as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the aforesaid Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown and Benjamin Brown, their heirs and assigns for ever, but to and for the uses following and to and for no other use whatsoever (that is to say) As for and concerning such Tracts of land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island whereof they the said *Daniel Purdy, Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interests and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy Samuel Brown*, and *Benjamin Brown* severally and respectively and of their severall and respective heirs and assigns for ever. *And as* for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments parts of the before recited Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres

of Land and Island which are belonging and appertaining to several other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds and limits of the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land and Island some or more, some of less according to their severall separate and particular interest in Trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoofe of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitants particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their particular Names and their particular and severall Freeholds and Inheritances were particularly and severally Expressed Mentioned and described in these presents. *To hee Holden* of us our heirs and successors for ever in free and common soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within our Realm of Great Brittain Yeilding rendering and paying therefore yearly and every year unto us our heirs and successors at our Custom House in New York unto our and their Receiver Generall of our said Province for the time being on the Feast of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the Annual Rent of Two shillings and six pence Lawfull Money of New York for every Hundred Acres thereof in Lieu and stead of all other rents services Dues Duties and Demands whatsoever for the same Four Thousand Five Hundred Acres of Land Island and Premises, so granted as aforesaid *Provided* always and these presents are upon this condition that the same *Daniel Purdy Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* and the other Freeholders and Inhabitants of the same Tract of Land and Island so granted as aforesaid and their heirs and assigns some or one of them have already or shall within the Term and Space of three Years next Ensuing the Date hereof settle clear and make improvement of three acres of land for every fifty acres of land at least of the same tract of land and Island so granted as aforesaid and so proportionably for a larger or smaller Tract or parcel thereof and in Default thereof or if the aforesaid *Daniel Purdy Samuel Brown* and *Benjamin Brown* and the other Inhabitants and Freeholders of any part or parts of the same Tract of land and Island or their heirs or assigns or any of them or any other person or persons whatsoever by their or any of their privity consent or procurement shall set on fire and burn the Woods on the same Tract of Land and Island or any part thereof to clear the same that then and there and in either of these Two cases this our present Grant and every Article and Clause therein or thereof shall cease determine and become utterly *Void* anything in these presents to the contrary thereof in any ways notwithstanding. *And* Wee do hereby Will and Grant that these our Letters be made Patent and that they and the Record of them in our Secretary's Office of our Province of New York shall be good and effectuall in the Law to all Intents and Purposes Notwithstanding the not true and well reciting of the premises or of the limits and

bounds thereof or any former or other Grant or Letters Patent for the same made or granted to any other person or persons or persons body politick or corporate whatsoever, any Laws or other restraint incertainty or imperfection whatsoever to the contrary hereof in anyways Notwithstanding

In Testimony whereof Wee have caused the Great Seal of our Province of New York to be affixed to these presents and the same to be Entred of Record in one of the Books of Patents in our said Secretary's Office remaining *Witness* our said trusty and well beloved Colonel Peter Schuyler President of our Councill for our Provinge of New York in Councill at Fort George in New York the Eleventh day of August in the Seventh Year of our Reign Annoque Domini 1720.

Js. Bolin *Dep^ty Sec^ry.*

II. PATENT FOR BUDD'S NECK.[1]

George by the Grace of God King of Great Brittain France and Ireland Defender of the faith &c *To all To Whom* these presents shall come sendeth *Greeting Whereas* our Loving subjects *Joseph Budd, John Hoight* and *Daniel Purdy*, Inhabitants of the *Town* of *Rye*, in the *County* of *Westchester* by their petition presented to our Trusty and well-beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler* President of the Council for our Province of New York, Have set forth that in Virtue of a purchase made by *John Budd* in his life time the Father of the aforesaid *Joseph Budd* by Lycence from the Government of Connecticut Colony bearing Date the Eighth Day of November One Thousand Six Hundred and Sixty of a certain Tract or parcell of land in the Bounds of the *Township of Rye*, in the *County* of *Westchester* then called *Apawquammis* bounded East by a River then called *Mockquams River* Southerly by the Sea or Sound against Long Island now called the Island Nassau Westerly by a River then called *Pochoteswake River* and Northerly by Marked Trees near West Chester path that the said petitioners with Diverse others of our Loving subjects Inhabitants of the same *Township of Rye* who have and do hold and enjoy the same Tract of Land by from or under the same *John Budd* and his heirs and assigns have cultivated and improved the same at their great charge and with great labour and industry and have been and are now hitherto peaceably and Quietly possessed thereof praying to have the same confirmed to them by Letters Patent under the Great Seal of the Province of New York, in the manner as is hereafter Described (that is to say) All that Tract or Neck of Land in the *Township* of *Rye*, in the *County* of *Westchester* in the *Province* of *New York* now called *Budds purchase* Beginning at a certain Grist Mill called *Joseph Lyons Mill* standing on a Brook called *Blind Brook*,

[1] Book of Patents (Albany), No. 8, p. 375.

thence up the stream of said Brook including the said Mill untill it meets with a small Brook called or known by the name of *Round Brook*, thence on a North West course untill it meets with Westchester Old Road, then South Westerly along the said Road as it runs to a White Oak Tree Marked on two sides standing on the West side of a certain brook known by the name of *Stony Brook* which White Oak Tree is the South West corner of a certain patent called *Harrisons Patent* thence from said White Oak Tree on a North West course to an Ash Tree Marked on two sides standing on the East side of *Mamarroneck River* close by the edge of said River as it runs to the place where said Mamarroneck River emptys itself into *Mamarroneck Harbour* or Creek thence Southerly to where said Mamarroneck Harbour or Creek falls into the Sound thence Easterly along the Sound untill it meets with a certain Creek called Mill Creek on the head whereof the aforesaid Grist Mill of *Joseph Lyon* is standing thence up the channell of said Creek as it runs until it meets the aforesaid Grist Mill where it first begun, Bounded Easterly by Blind Brook and Mill Creek Northerly by Westchester Road and Harrisons Patent Westerly by Mamarroneck River and Harbour and Southerly by the Sound together with a small Island called *Henn Island* lying in the Sound over against the said lands about a quarter of a Mile from the Main containing in the whole Main land and Island fifteen hundred and sixty acres, To Hold to them and their heirs and assigns for ever, but to and for the use and uses following and to no other use whatsoever (that is to say) as for and concerning such Tracts of land and hereditaments part of the afore recited Tract of land and Island whereof they the said *Joseph Budd John Hoight* and *Daniel Purdy* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own severall and respective rights interest and estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of the aforesaid *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight* and *Daniel Purdy* severally and respectively and of their severall and respective heirs and assigns for ever, *And as* for and concerning such other Tracts of Land parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island which belonging and appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds of the same Tract of Land and Island some more and some less according to their severall and particular intrest and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their names were particularly and severally mentioned and expressed and their particular and severall Freehold were particularly and severally mentioned and Described under the usual Quit Rent with the usual Clauses provisions conditions limitations and restrictions as are limited and appointed by our Royall Instructions for Granting of land in our said province which request Wee being wil-

ling to Grant *Know Yee* that of our Especial Grace Certain Knowledge and Meer Motion Wee have given granted ratifyed and confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and successors give grant ratifie and confirm unto the said *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight*, and *Daniel Purdy*, and to their heirs and assigns for ever, All that the aforesaid Tract of land and Island before it containing in the whole Fifteen Hundred and Sixty Acres in manner and form as last mentioned and Described together with all and singular Woods, Under woods, Houses, Edifices, Buildings Barns Fences Orchards Feilds Feedings, Pastures, Meadows, Marshes, Swamps, Ponds, Pools, Waters Water Courses Rivers, Rivoletts, Runs and Streams of Water, Fishing, Fowling Hunting and Hawking Quarries Mines Mineralls, standing growing lying and being or to be had used and enjoyed within the limits and bounds aforesaid and all other profits benefits libertys priviledges hereditaments and appurtenances to the same belonging or any ways appertaining, *And* all that our Estate Right Title Interest Benefit Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or to the same and the Revertion and Revertions Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and profits of the same Excepting and always Reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our heirs and successors for ever all such Fir Trees and Pine Trees of the Diameter of twenty-four Inches at twelve Inches from the Ground or Root as are or shall be fit to make Masts for our Royall Navy as also all such other Trees as are or shall be fit to make Planks or Knees for the use of our said Royall Navy only which now are standing growing or being or which for ever hereafter shall be standing growing or being in and upon any of the said Tract of Land and Island with free Lycence and Liberty for any person and persons whomsoever by us our heirs and successors or any of them to be thereunto authorized and appointed under our or their Sign Manual with Workmen Horses Waggons Carts and Carriages, and without to enter upon and come into the same Tract of Land and Island and there to fell cut down root up hiew saw rive split have take cart and carry away the same Trees Planks Masts and Knees for the use aforesaid and also Except all Gold and Silver Mines *To have and to hold* all that the aforesaid Tract of Land and Island before it containing in the whole Fifteen Hundred and Sixty Acres and all other the above Granted Premisses with the hereditaments and appurtenances (Excepting only as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the aforesaid *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight*, and *Daniel Purdy* their heirs and assigns for ever, but to and for the uses following and to and for no other use whatsoever (that is to say) as for and concerning such Tracts of Land and Hereditaments part or parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island herein and hereby Granted whereof they the said *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight*, and *Daniel Purdy* are and stand Lawfully and Rightfully seized and possessed in their own and severall and Respective Rights Interest

and Estate to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of the said *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight* and *Daniel Purdy* severally and respectively and their severall and respective Heirs and assigns for ever, And as for and concerning such other Tracts of Land and hereditaments part or parts of the before recited Tract of Land and Island herein and hereby Granted which are or shall be belonging and appertaining to severall other persons Freeholders and Inhabitants within the bounds of the same Tract of land and Island some more and some less according to their severall seperate and particular Estate and Interest in trust to and for the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of each particular Freeholder and Inhabitant particularly and respectively and of each of their particular and respective heirs and assigns for ever in as full and ample manner as if their severall Names and their severall and respective Freeholds and Inheritances were particularly and severally Described and Exprest in these presents *To Bee Holden* of us our heirs and successors in free and common soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within the Realm of Great Brittain Yeilding rendring and paying therefore unto us our heirs and successors unto our and their Receiver Generall for the Province of New York for the time being at our Custom House in the City of New York Yearly and every Year for ever on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the annual rent of *Two Shillings* and Six pence for every hundred acres of the said Tract of Land and Island and so proportionably for a smaller quantity (that is to say) the sum of One Pound Nineteen shillings for the whole Tract of Land and Island in Lieu and Stead of all other Rents services Dues Duties and Demands whatsoever for the same Tract of Land Island and Premisses so Granted as aforesaid, Provided always and these presents are upon this Condition that the same *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight*, and *Daniel Purdy*, and the other Freeholders and Inhabitants of the same Tract of Land and Island so Granted as aforesaid and their heirs and assigns some or One of them have or shall within the Term and Space of three Years next ensueing the Date hereof settle clear and make improvement of three acres of Land at least for every Fifty Acres of the said Tract of Land and Island and so proportionably for a larger or smaller Tract or parcell thereof and in Default thereof the said *Joseph Budd*, *John Hoight*, and *Daniel Purdy*, and the other Inhabitants and Freeholders of any part or parts of the said Tract of Land and Island or their heirs or assigns or any of them or any other person or person by their or any of their privity consent or procurement shall set on fire and burn the Woods on the same Tract of Land and Island or any part thereof to clear the same that then and in either of these cases this our present Grant and every article and clause thereof shall become *Void*, cease and Determine any thing in these presents to the contrary thereof in any ways Notwithstanding

And Wee do hereby *Will* and *Grant* that these our *Letters* be made *patent* and that they and the Record of them in our Secretarys Office of our Province of New York, shall be good and Effectual in the Law Notwithstanding the not true and well reciting of the premisses or of the bounds thereof or of any former or other Letters Patent or Grant for the same made or granted to any other person or persons Body Corporate or Politick whatsoever by us or any of our Royall Ancestors or predecessors any Law or other restraint uncertainty or imperfection whatsoever to the contrary hereof in any ways Notwithstanding, *In Testimony* whereof Wee have caused the Great Seal of our Province of New York aforesaid to be affixed to these presents and the same to be Entered of Record in One of the Books of Patents in our said Secretarys Office remaining *Witness* our said Trusty and well beloved Colonel *Peter Schuyler* President of our Councill for our Province of New York in Councill at Fort George in New York the twenty-eighth Day of July in the Sixth year of our Reign Annoq Domini 1720.

J^s^. Bolin *Dep^ty^ Sec^ry^*.

III. PATENT FOR HARRISON'S PURCHASE.[1]

William the third by the Grace of God King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland Defender of the faith &c To all to whom these Presents shall come Sendeth *Greeting*. *Whereas* our Loving Subjects *William Nicolls* Esq. Captaine *Ebenezer Wilson*, *David Jamison John Harrison* and *Samuel Height* have by their Petition Presented unto our Trusty and wellbeloved Benjamin Fletcher our Captaine Generall and Governo^r^ in Cheife of our Province of New Yorke and Territoryes Depending thereon in America &c Prayed our Grant and Confirmacon of a Certaine Tract of Land in our *County* of *Westchester* beginning at a certaine White Ash Tree marked with three notches Standing in the East side of *Mamerranock River* and thence by marked Trees it runns South Sixty-five Degrees and thirty minutes Easterly fifty six Chains to a black oake one of the marked Trees of *Joseph Budds Purchase* Standing neere Westchester Path marked with three Notches and thence by the marked Trees of *Joseph Budds Purchase* Standing neer Westchester Path aforesaid to an Elm Tree of the West Side of *blind brooke* and a White ash on the East side of the said brooke marked with three Notches and thence by the East side of the said brooke to the head thereof to a Chesnut Tree marked with three Notches and the Letters E W and H thence North to a Whitewood Tree marked and thence by marked Trees West to Rye Ponds thence including the

1 Recorded for William Nicolls Esq. & Company. Book of Patents (Albany), No. 7, p. 38.

said Ponds South to the head of Mamerraneck River which Runns on the West side of Browns Point and thence by Mamerraneck River and the East Bounds of Richbells Patent to the Place where began Bounded East by blinde Brooke and vacant land North by Vacent Land West by Mamerroneck River and South by Budd and Jones Morgans Purchase, which Reasonable request Wee being Willing to Grant, Know Yee that of our Speciall Grace Certaine knowledge and meere mocon we have given Granted, Ratifyed and Confirmed and by these Presents do for us our Heirs and *Successours*, Give, Grant, Ratifye and Confirme unto our said loving Subjects William Nicolls, Ebenezer Wilson, David Jamison, John Harrison and Samuell Height all the aforerecited Certaine Tract of Land within our said County of Westchester and within the Limites and Bounds aforesaid together with all and Singular the woods underwoods Trees Timber feedings Pastures, Meadows Marshes, Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Watercourses Rivers, Rivoletts Runns brooks Streams fishing fouling hunting and hawking and all other Profites, benefites Priviledges Libertys Advantages Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the aforerecited Certaine Tract of Land within the Limites and Bounds aforemenconed belonging or in any wayes appertaining *To have and to hold* all the aforesaid Certain Tract of Land together with all and Singular the Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Timber, feedings, Pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Watercourses Rivers Rivoletts, Runns, Brooks Streams fishing fouling hunting and hawking and all other Profites benefites, Priviledges Libertys Advantages Hereditaments and Appurtenances whatsoever to the aforerecited Certaine Tract of Land within the Limites and Bounds aforesaid belonging or in any ways appertaining unto them the said William Nicolls, Ebenezar Wilson David Jamison John Harrison and Samuell Height their Heirs and Assignes to the only Propper use benefite and behoofe of them the said William Nicolls, Ebenezar Wilson, David Jamison, John Harrison and Samuel Height their Heirs and Assignes forever without any Lett, Hindrance, Molestacon or Right to be had or Reserved upon Pretence of Joynt Tennancy or Survivorship any thing Contained in this our Grant to the Contrary in any wayes notwithstanding To be holden of us our Heirs and Successours in free and Comon Soccage as of our Mannour of East Greenwich in our County of Kent within our Realme of England Yeelding Rendring and Paying therefore yearly and every Year unto us our Heirs and Successours the Annual and Yearly Rent of twenty Shilling, Curr[t] money of our said Province at our City of New Yorke on the feast day of the Annunciation of our blessed Virgin Mary in Lieu and Steade of all other Rents, Dues Dutyes Services and Demands whatsoever *In Testimony* whereof we have Caused the Great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed *Witnesse* our Trusty and wellbeloved Benjamin Fletcher our Captain Generall and Gover-

nour in Cheife of our Province of New Yorke and the Territoryes *and* Tracts of Land Depending thereon in America & Vice Admirall of the same our Lieu[t] and Commander in Cheife of the Militia and of all the forces by Sea and Land within our Colony of Connecticutt and of all the forts and Places of Strength within the same at our Fort in New Yorke the twenty fifth day of June in the eighth year of our Reigne Annoq Dm 1696. Ben ffletcher By his Excelt Command David Jamison D. Secry.

I do hereby certify the aforegoing to be a true Copy of the Original Record. Words *East Side* 30th Line page 36 written on a razure. Compared therewith by me. LEWIS A. SCOTT, *Secretary.*

IV. PATENT FOR THE WHITE PLAINS.[1]

George by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland King Defender of the faith &c To all To Whom these presents shall come Greeting Whereas our Loving Subjects Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hetfield James Traviss Isaac Coevert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans by their Humble Petition presented to our Trusty and welbeloved William Burnet Esq[r] Captain General and Governour in Chief of our Province of New York in Council the Twenty first Day of December last did humbly pray that his said Excellency would be favourably pleased to grant to them their Heirs and Assigns his Majestys Letters patent for their Claims and purchase lying within this province in the County of Westchester known by the Name of the White Plains in such manner and under such Quit Rent provisions and Restrictions as is and Directed in our Royall Commission and Instructions to our said Governour, which Petition was then and there Read and Considered of by our Council of our said Province untill the first Day of this Instant they did Humbly Advise our said Governour and Consent that the prayer of the said Petition be granted In order to the granting whereof in Pursuance of and in Obedience to our Royall Instructions to his said Excellency given at S[t] James's the third Day of June one Thousand Seven Hundred and Twenty in the Sixth Year of our Reign our said Governour together with George Clarke Esq[r] Secretary and Cadwallader Colden Esq[r] Surveyor Generall of the said Province three of the Commissioners Appointed by our said Instructions for Setting out all Lands to be granted within our said Province of New York did Sett out for the said Joseph Budd

[1] Book of Patents (Albany), lib. viii. pp. 450–454 (new paging); pp. 462–466 (old paging.)

John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniell Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Travise Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans, a Certain Tract or Parcell of Land Scituate lying and being in the County of Westchester and is Commonly known by the Name of the White Plains Beginning at a large White Oak Tree Marked with Severall Letters where Two Brooks fall into the West Branch of Momaroneck River and Runs thence by Marked Trees to Brunxes River near the Place where a small Brook falls into the said River by a Bush of alders some of which are Marked thence up the Stream of Brunxe River to an Ash Tree about Seventeen Chains above Anthony Millers fulling Mill, thence by Marked Trees to White Oak Tree Marked near long Meadow Brook, then Down the Stream of the said Brook to the Land laid out for Daniel Brondige Then along his Lands to the said Long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the Place where it Falls into Momarroneek River and down the Stream of the said River to the land granted to Christopher Bridge then along his Line and the Lines of the Land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Momaroneek River then down the Stream of the said River to the Place where the West Branch Falls into the said River and then up the Stream of the said West Branch to the Place where it begun Containing Four Thousand Four hundred and Thirty five Acres with Allowance for Highways, and in the Setting out of the said Tract of Land had Regard to the Profitable and unprofitable Acres and had taken care that the Length of the said Tract do not Extend along the Banks of any River Conformable to our said Royall Instructions as by a Certificate under their hands bearing Date the Tenth Day of March last Entered of Record in our Secretarys Office more fully and at large Appears Which Tract of Land set out as aforesaid according to our said Royall Instructions Wee being willing to grant to the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns according to the Prayer of their Petition Know Yee that of our Especial grace certain Knowledge and meer Motion We have given granted Ratifyed and Confirmed and do by these presents for us our heirs and Successors give grant Ratifie and Confirm unto the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphry Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns all that the said Tract or Parcell of Land Scituate lying and being in the County of Westchester which is Commonly known by the Name of the White Plains Begin-

ning at a large White Oak Tree Marked with Severall Letters where Two Brooks fall into the West Branch of Momaroneek River, and Runs thence by Markt Trees to Brunxes River near to the place where a small Brook falls into the said River by a Bush of Alders some of which are Markt thence up the Stream of Brunxes River to an Ash Tree about Seventeen Chains above Anthony Millers fulling Mill thence by Markt Trees to a White Oak Marked near long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the Land laid out for Daniel Brondige then along his Line to the said Long Meadow Brook then down the Stream of the said Brook to the place where it falls into Momaroneek River and down the Stream of the said River to the Land granted to Christopher Bridge then along his Line and the Lines of the Land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Momaroneek River then down the Stream of the said River to the Place where the West Branch falls into the said River and then up the Stream of the said West Branch to the place where it begun Containing Four Thousand Four Hundred and Thirty five Acres with Allowance for Highways Together with all and Singular Woods underwoods Trees Timber Feedings pastures Meadows Marshes Swamps Ponds Pools Waters Water Courses Rivers Rivolets Runs and Streams of Water Fishing Fowling Hunting and Hawking Mines Minerals Standing being Growing lying or to be had used and Enjoyed within the Limits and Bounds aforesaid, And all other Profits Benefits Liberties Priviledges Hereditaments and Appurtenances to the same belonging or in any wise Appertaining and all that our Estate Right Title Interest Benefit Claim and Demand whatsoever of in or to the same and the Reversion and Reversions Remainder and Remainders and the Yearly Rents and Profits of the same (Excepting and always Reserving out of this our present Grant unto us our Heirs and Successors forever all Trees of the Diameter of Twenty four Inches and upwards at Twelve Inches from the Ground for Masts for our Royall Navy, and also all such other Trees as may be fit to make Planks Knees and other things Necessary for the use of our said Navy which now are Standing Growing or being or which for ever hereafter shall be Standing Growing or being in and upon any of the said Lands with free Liberty and Lycence for any person or persons whatsoever by us our Heirs and Successors or any of them to be thereunto Appointed under our or their Sign Manual with Workman Horses Waggons Carts and Carriages and without to Enter and come into and upon the said Lands and every part thereof, and there to Fell Cut Down Root up Hiew Saw and Rive have take Cart and Carry away the same for the uses aforesaid (Excepting also and Reserving all Silver and Gold Mines To Have and to hold all and Singular the same certain Tract of Land and Premisses with its Hereditaments and Appurtenances (Excepting as before is Excepted and Reserved) unto the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphry Underhill Joseph Purdy

George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Jonathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns forever To be Holden of us our Heirs and Successors in free and common Soccage as of our Mannor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent within our Kingdom of Great Britain Yeilding Rendring and paying therefore Yearly and every Year forever unto us our Heirs and Successors at our Custom House in the City of New York unto our or their Collector or Receiver General for the time being on the Feast Day of the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary commonly called Lady Day the annual Rent of two Shillings and Sixpence for every hundred acres thereof in Lieu and stead of all other Rents Services dues Dutys and Demands whatsoever for the same four Thousand four Hundred and Thirty five Acres of Land so granted as aforesaid Provided always and these presents are upon this Condition that the same Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphrey Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert, Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns some or one of them shall and do within the Term and Space of three Years now next ensuing the Date hereof plant Settle and Effectually Cultivate at least three Acres of Land granted as aforesaid, and in Default thereof or if the said Joseph Budd John Hoit Caleb Hoit Humphry Underhill Joseph Purdy George Lane Daniel Lane Moses Knap John Horton David Horton Johnathan Lynch Peter Hatfield James Traviss Isaac Covert Benjamin Brown John Turner David Ogden and William Yeomans their Heirs and Assigns or any other person or Persons by their privity consent or procurement Shall Set on Fire or Burn the Woods on the Said Lands or any part thereof to Clear the Same so as Destroy Impair or hinder the Growth of any of the Trees that are or may be fit for Masts Planks Knees or other Timber for our Royall Navy hereby Reserved unto us our Heirs and Successors that then and in either of these cases this our present Grant and every Article and Clause therein or thereof Shall Cease Determine and be Void any thing herein Contained to the Contrary thereof in any wise Notwithstanding And We do further of our Especial grace Certain knowledge and meer motion Consent and Agree that these presents being Entered upon Record as is hereafter Appointed shall be good and effectual in Law to all intents and purposes against us our Heirs and Successors Notwithstanding the not well Reciting or Misreciting of the premisses or any part thereof In Testimony whereof Wee have Caused these our Letters to be made Patent and the Great Seal of our said Province to be hereunto affixed and the same to be Entred of Record in our Secretarys Office in one of the Books of Patents there Remaining Witness our Trusty and

welbeloved William Burnet Esq Captain General and Governour in Chief of our Province of New York of our Province of New Jersey and of all the Territories and Tracts of Land thereon Depending in America and Vice Admirall of the same &c at Fort George in New York the Thirteenth day of March in the Eighth Year of our Reign Annoq[e] Domini 1721.

TOWN OFFICERS.

SUPERVISORS.

1691	Joseph Theall.	1796	Bartholomew Hadden.
1701	Deliverance Brown.	1797	John Guion.
1703	John Frost.	1799	John Brown.
1705–1706	Thomas Merritt.	1800	Thomas Brown.
1707–1708	Joseph Purdy.	1801–1804	John Guion.
1711	John Hoyt.	1805–1806	Samuel Marvin.
1713–1716	Joseph Budd.	1807–1808	Samuel Armor.
1717–1719	John Hoyt.	1809–1822	Samuel Deall.
1720–1722	Joseph Budd.	1823–1834	David Kirby.
1723–1739	Samuel Purdy.	1835–1837	John Theall.
1740–1743	John Thomas.	1838	David Kirby.
1744–1746	Samuel Purdy.	1839–1840	Willett Moseman.
1747	Samuel Tredwell.	1841	John Theall.
1749	Samuel Purdy.	1842–1845	James D. Halsted.
1750–1761	William Willett.	1846–1847	J. C. Roosevelt Brown.
1762–1763	Jonathan Brown.	1848	Dr. D. Jerome Sands.
1764	Timothy Wetmore.	1849	John S. Provoost.
1765–1767	John Thomas.	1850	William Horton.
1768	Timothy Wetmore.	1851–1853	Newberry D. Halsted.
1769–1770	John Thomas, jr.	1854	John S. Provoost.
1771–1772	Ebenezer Haviland.	1855–1859	John E. Marshall.
1783–1784	John Thomas.	1861	John W. Lounsberry.
1785–1786	Jesse Hunt.	1862–1864	James D. Halsted.
1788	Gilbert Brondige.	1865	Wilson D. Slawson.
1789–1795	Thomas Bowne.	1866–1868	Thomas K. Downing.
		1869–1870	Howard C. Cady.

TOWNSMEN.[1]

1671	Joseph Horton, Thomas Brown, John Brondig.
1683	Joseph Horton 'and others.'
1697	Hachaliah Brown, Thomas Merritt, John Frost, John Horton, Jonathan Hart.

[1] After 1711 these officers are called 'Trustees or Overseers.'

1699	Joseph Theall, Hachaliáh Brown, Thomas Merritt, sen., John Lyon, Samuel Lane.
1701	John Merritt, Andrew Coe, Joseph Budd, Robert Bloomer, Samuel Lane.
1702	Joseph Theall, George Lane, sen., Robert Bloomer, Samuel Kniffin, Samuel Lane.
1703–1711	Joseph Theall, Robert Bloomer, Samuel Lane.
1713–1718	Robert Bloomer, Thomas Merritt, jr., Daniel Purdy.
1728	Jonathan Brown, Andrew Merritt, William Fowler, Daniel Purdy, Joseph Kniffen, William Willett.
1729	Samuel Purdy, Robert Bloomer, jr., David Ogden, Benjamin Brown, John Thomas, Jonathan Haight, John Horton.

TOWN CLERKS.

1678–1693	John Brondig.	1827–1828	Josiah Bulkley.
1696	John Hoit.	1829–1832	Joseph H. Anderson.
1697–1736	Samuel Lane.	1833–1836	Horace B. Smith.
1737–1746	Samuel Purdy.	1838–1839	Joshua Lyon.
1747	Ebenezer Kniffen.	1840	William Provoost.
1748–1750	Samuel Purdy.	1841–1845	Jonathan J. Deall.
1751	Gilbert Bloomer.	1846	Edward Field.
1752	Samuel Purdy.	1847–1848	William Horton.
1753–1769	Ebenezer Kniffen.	1849–1852	Charles W. Field.
1770–1772	Dr. Eben. Haviland.	1853–1855	Eli Curtis.
1783–1786	John Thomas.	1856–1858	Charles D. Pixley.
1788–1793	John Merritt.	1859	Edward H. Purdy.
1794–1799	John Doughty.	1860–1862	H. M. Henderson.
1800–1801	Ezrahiah Wetmore.	1862–1864	Edwin Horton.
1802–1814	Philemon Halsted, jr.	1865–1866	J. M. McCarty.
1815–1824	Charles Field.	1867–1868	Ch. G. Pixley.
1825	William Bush.	1869	Edwin Horton.
1826	John Theall.	1870	Herman L. Marshall.

CONSTABLES.

1671	George Lane.	1703–1708	John Disbrow.
1678	Caleb Hiat.	1711–1713	Daniel Purdy. (Son of John.)
1681–1682	Timothy Knap.		
1684–1685	Thomas Merritt.	1714	Anthony Miller.
1696	Deliverance Brown.	1715	Robert Bloomer, jr.
1697	Robert Bloomer.	1716	Benjamin Brown.
1699	Caleb Hiat.	1717	Daniel Purdy. (Son of Francis.)
1701	Samuel Kniffen.		
1702	John Hoyt.	1718	Samuel Miller.

1719	Joseph Brondige, jr.		George S. Bartlett.
1720–1722	Abraham Miller.	1850	George S. Bartlett,
1723	Joseph Horton, jr.		Samuel Kelly,
1724–1725	Abraham Miller.		Charles Theall.
1726–1736	Thomas Fowler.	1851	William H. Guion,
1737	Francis Doughty.		William A. Purdy,
1738	Abraham Miller.		Birdsey Wakeley,
1739–1741	Joshua Brondige.		Samuel Sniffen.
1742–1743	Joseph Haight.	1852	William H. Guion,
1744–1749	Hachaliah Theall.		William A. Purdy,
1750	John Doughty.		Purdy Slater.
1751–1756	Benjamin Brown, jr.	1853	Purdy Slater,
1757	James Wetmore.		Coles T. Morrell.
1758–1761	Benjamin Brown.	1854	William H. Guion,
1762–1765	Gilbert Brondige.		Purdy Slater.
1766–1767	James Anderson.	1856	Ezra Kniffen,
1768–1773	John Doughty.		Naaman H. Turner.
1783	John Merritt.	1857	Ezra Kniffen,
1784–1787	William Brown.		Purdy Slater.
1788	John A. Hawkins.	1858	Samuel Bouton,
1789–1795	John Hawkins, jr.		John Shearer,
1796–1800	Ezrahiah Wetmore.		Purdy Slater,
1801	Philemon Halsted, jr.		William Slater.
1802–1803	Ezrahiah Wetmore.	1859	Isaac Covert,
1804–1820	John Hawkins.		John Shearer,
1821	Ezrahiah Wetmore.		Purdy Slater.
1822	Ezrahiah Wetmore,	1860	Purdy Slater,
	Henry Belden.		John Shearer,
1823	Ezrahiah Wetmore,		Ch. M'Intosh,
	George Hains.	1861	Purdy Slater,
1824	Ezrahiah Wetmore,		John Shearer,
	John Theall.		Ch. M'Intosh.
1825	Ezrahiah Wetmore,	1862	Purdy Slater,
	Daniel S. Merritt.		John Shearer,
1826	Alexander Ennis.		George Bailey.
1827–1832	Ezrahiah Wetmore.	1863	William M. Slater,
1833–1836	Sylvanus Merritt.		John Shearer,
1837	Sylvanus Van Sicklin.		George W. Lee,
1838–1840	William Bettys.		Alexander Worden.
1841–1843	Purdy Slater.	1864	Purdy Slater,
1844	George Provoost.		Robert Archer,
1845	William Bettys.		Matthew Brundage,
1846–1847	Vincent Slater.		Alexander Worden.
1848	Purdy Slater.	1865	Charles Merritt,
1849	William Bettys,		Purdy Slater,

	Richard Archer,		Purdy Slater,
	J. H. De Camp.		R. C. Singler.
1866	Samuel Hopps,	1868	W. Romer,
	Purdy Slater,		Purdy Slater,
	J. H. De Camp.		A. M. Perrin,
1867	John Hughes,		Michael Burns.

JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1663	John Budd.		Joseph Budd,
1678–1688	Joseph Horton.		Hachaliah Brown, jr.
1685–1710	Joseph Theale.	1769	John Thomas,
1693	Daniel Straing.		Hachaliah Brown, jr.,
1698–1716	Deliverance Brown.		Charles Theall,
1703–1715	Joseph Purdy.		Roger Lyon,
1705–1718	Caleb Heathcote.		Abraham Hatfield,
1710–1722	Joseph Budd.		Samuel Purdy.
1710–1717	Isaac Denham.	1773	William Anderson.
1720–1731	Jonathan Haight.	1793	Thomas Bowne,
1720–1753	Samuel Purdy.		Jonathan Bailey.
1726–1753	Caleb Hyatt.	1799	John Brown,
1728–1746	Benjamin Brown.		Isaac Sniffin,
1728	Charles Theall.		Samuel Marvin.
1734–1767	Daniel Purdy.	1812	Rivers Morrell.
1734–1752	Francis Doughty.	1821	Nehemiah Brown,
1734	Thomas Fowler.		David Munson.
1738–1775	John Thomas.	1830	John H. Smith,
1738–1745	Samuel Tredwell,		William T. Praul.
	Adam Seaman.	1831	Abram Guion,
1739	Samuel Thorn.		James W. Brown.
1739	Samuel Brown.	1832	Thomas W. Garniss,
1740–1748	John Lyon.		Horace B. Smith,
1740	George Lane.		David H. Mead.
1741–1745	John Budd.	1833	John H. Smith,
1743	John Bloomer.		Rivers Morrell,
1746–1769	Gilbert Bloomer.		David H. Mead,
1753	Jonathan Purdy,		Ralph Marshall.
	James Stevenson.	1834	John H. Smith,
1754	Lewis M'Donald.		Peter W. Edgel,
1755	Moses Owen,		David H. Mead,
	Abraham Guion,		James W. Brown.
	Hachaliah Brown.	1835	Jonathan H. Gidney,
1756–1769	Ebenezer Kniffen.		George W. Smith.
1757–1761	Elisha Hyatt.	1836	James W. Brown,
1765	Gabriel Lynch,		Monmouth Lyon.
	John Hyatt,	1837	Darius W. Todd,

	David H. Mead,		E. P. Morrell.
	Merritt Brown.	1861	A. Van Amringe.
1838	Peter W. Edgel,	1862	Ch. W. Field.
	Thomas Purdy,	1863	Joseph G. Fowler,
	Oliver F. Green.		J. Henry Gilbert.
1839	Darius W. Todd,	1864	Shubael R. Strang.
	Samuel Haviland,	1865	G. H. Haight.
	Josiah Bulkley.	1866	R. F. Brundage.
1860	Alexander Ennis,	1867	H. M. Henderson.
	E. Sours,	1868	S. R. Strang.
	A. Van Amringe,		

FARMERS OF THE EXCISE.

1710	The Justices.
1714	Sept. 4, Joseph Budd.
1716	Sept. 4, Joseph Budd.
1720	Nov. 19, Joseph Budd.
1737	Oct. 14, Ebenezer Heveland (and others).
1741	Nov. 3, James Wood.
1743	Dec. 2, Samuel Purdy.
1747	Oct. 31, Samuel Purdy.
1748	Nov. 12, Samuel Purdy.
1750	Oct. 12, Benjamin Brown, jr.,
1750	Oct. 12, Underhill Budd.
1752	Nov. 11, Benjamin Brown, jr., Underhill Budd.
1763	Dec. 13, John Thomas, jr.
1765	Dec. 23, John Thomas, jr.
1768	Feb. 3, John Thomas, jr.
1769	Dec. 30, John Thomas, jr.
1770	Dec. 22, John Thomas, jr.
1772	Feb. 26, John Thomas, jr.
1774	Feb. 8, John Thomas, jr.
1775	Jan. 31, John Thomas, jr.

INDEX OF DATES.

PAGE

1609, September 3. New Netherland discovered 3
1621, June 3. Charter of Dutch West India Company 3
1623. Settlement on Manhattan Island 3
1647, May 11. Peter Stuyvesant, fourth Dutch governor, arrives . . 3
1649, July 14. Wiequaeskeek — now Westchester County — bought by the Dutch 4
1650, Sept. 11. Conference between Stuyvesant and the English at Hartford 106
1660, January 3. Peter Disbrow treats with the Indians for the purchase of Peningo Neck 9
June 29. Disbrow, Coe, and Stedwell purchase Manussing Island . . 10
July ? Hastings settlement commenced 19
July ? John Richbell buys land — now Mamaroneck — from the Indians 153
November 8. License from Connecticut Government to John Budd for purchase of 'Apawquammis' 520
1661, May 22. Disbrow in behalf of the settlers purchases the land above the bounds of Hastings 11
November 8. John Budd purchases the tract Apawamis . . 12, 502
November 12. John Budd purchases the West Neck 14
1662, June 2. Present town of Harrison bought from the Indians by settlers of Rye 15
May 10. Royal Charter of Connecticut granted 24
July 26. Settlers of Manussing Island unite in a declaration of their purposes 23
Compact of the settlers 24
August 11. Compact confirmed by the purchasers 24
October 9. Royal Charter received at Hartford 24
Notice sent to Westchester 24
1663, January 26. Inhabitants of Hastings petition the General Court for 'some settled way of government' 25
John Budd sent as deputy to the Court 25
March 12. New Netherland conveyed to the Duke of York . . 107
April 28. Lands conveyed by purchasers to planters 26
October 8. The General Court appoints John Budd commissioner, and R. Vowles constable, for Hastings 88
October 13. Conference between the Dutch and English at Hartford . 107
1664, September 8. New Amsterdam surrendered to the English . . 28
Accessions to the Hastings colony 28
Settlement begun on the main-land 28
October 13. The General Court continues Lieutenant Budd as commissioner for Hastings and Rye 89
December 1. Delegates from Connecticut meet the commissioners of the Duke of York, and agree upon the boundary line, to be a line north-northwest from Mamaroneck River 109

PAGE

1665, May 11. The General Court orders that Hastings and Rye be conjoined 30
Peter Disbrow admitted as representative of the town of Rye . . 89
October 12. The General Court appoints persons to view the lands appertaining to Hastings and Rye 38
Richard Vowles deputy to the General Court 89
Rye to have 'a towne brand' 89
1666, April 29. John Budd treats with the Indians for the lands north of Apawamis (Harrison) 16
May 10. Lieutenant Budd deputy to the General Court . . . 89
Fairfield County erected: Rye within its bounds 89
1667, May 9. Joseph Horton to be Lieutenant to the train-band of Rye . 89
1668, October 2. Differences at Rye: the inhabitants petition the General Court relative to John Budd's proceedings 38
October 8. Two deputies — Budd and Vowles — at the General Court 89
Persons appointed 'to compose differences' 38
1669, May. Richard Vowles deputy to Hartford 90
John Coe and Marmaduke Smith at Rye 273
October. The people of Rye destitute of an orthodox minister. The General Court appoints persons to expostulate with them . . . 273
1670, May 12. John Banks and Peter Disbrow deputies 90
Division of lands on Wolf-pit Ridge 52
Death of John Budd, sen. 40, 404
October. The General Court orders the magistrates of Rye to take steps for settling a minister 274
October. Timothy Knap deputy to Hartford 90
November 17. The inhabitants appoint persons to endeavor to procure a minister 274
1671, May 11. Persons appointed to settle difficulties and aid in procuring a minister at Rye 40, 274
—— Philip Galpin's grievances 31
—— The bounds of Rye to extend northward twelve miles . . . 90
1672, May 9. Persons appointed to view the township of Rye, and lay out highways 138
Schedule of prices for letters, etc., established by Connecticut . . 71
December 10. *Monthly* post to Boston 72
1673, July 30. Dutch fleet in the bay of New York 45
July 31. The Dutch recover possession of New York 46
Mamaroneck submits to the Dutch 46
Rye 'being near,' is excused from sending troops for the protection of the colony 46
1673, October 21. Mr. John Banks sent to New York with a letter to Governor Colve 46
Mr. Banks 'detained under restraint' 46
November. Dutch vessels off the coast seen at Rye 46
December. Rye unites with Stamford and Greenwich, in supplicating the General Court at Boston for help 47
Lands yet unappropriated between Stratford and Mamaroneck River to be apportioned among the towns 90
Bounds between Greenwich and Rye settled by Connecticut . . 90
1674, May 14. Rev. Eliphalet Jones to preach once a fortnight at Rye . . 276
October 8. Persons appointed to endeavor to obtain and settle a minister at Rye 277
November 10. New York again surrendered by the Dutch 47
1675, May 17. Rev. Peter Prudden recommended to the people of Rye . . 277

PAGE

May 27. Parsonage lot provided for Mr. Prudden 277
June 20. King Philip's War begins 42
July 1. Rye with other plantations warned 43
September 1. Assaults upon Deerfield and Hadley 43
September 18. Fight at Bloody Brook, near Deerfield 43
October 5. Attack on Springfield 44
October 10. Warning of an intended attack 'as far as Greenwich' . . 44
December 19. Storming of Narraganset fort 44
Death of John Purdy! 44
Mr. Denham's losses 45, 278
1676, March 5. A house to be fortified at Rye for the safety of the own . 44
October 12. Lands at Rye es imated 91
1677, June 15. A house-lot provided for Mr. Denham 278
November 22. Rev. Thomas Denham admitted an inhabitant of Rye 278
1678. Division of lands on Barton's Neck 52
May 9. Lieutenant Horton commissioned 'to grant warrants and to marry persons' 91
June 21. Mr. Denham admitted as a proprietor 278
1679, March 5. 'Fifty poles of land' granted to Mr. Denham . . . 278
'The King's highway' establishe l 139
—— Grant to John Ogden, for a whar' at the Fishing Rock . . 78, 430
1680, September 4. Eauketaupacuson, or Hog-pen Ridge, bought from Lame Will the Indian 56
November 28. A *thorough* bargain to be made with the Indians for lands between Blind Brook and Byram River 57
1681. Fire at Rye — Peter Disbrow's 'great losse' 91, 409
October 8. Second purchase from Lame Will 57
King Street 'lately laid out' 55
1682, May 11. Connecticut complains in behalf of inhabitants of Rye, who claim to Hudson's River 91, 109
1683, April 25. Governor Dongan reaches New York 110
November 22. Quaroppas, or the White Plains, purchased from the Indians by the inhabitants of Rye 153
November 24. Boundary line between New York and Connecticut agreed upon 110
December 3. Connecticut government apprises the inhabitants of Rye of the cession of their town to New York 111
1684. Mr. Denham removes from Rye to Bedford 279
Rev. John Woodbridge, minister of Rye 280
March 12. Mr. Richbell complains that 'Rye men' claim his land cal ed the White Plains 154
March 17. Inhabitants of Rye summoned to show cause . . . 154
1685, May 14. Connecticut orders every town to take out a patent for its lands 93
June 4. Governor Dongan summons the inhabitants of Rye to show what title they have to their lands 112
1686, November 23. Rye appoints persons to treat with the governor (of Connecticut) for a patent 92
Proprietors of Peningo Neck apply for a patent 92
1688. Death of Mr. Denham 280
May 2. Death of Peter Disbrow 409
1689, June 25. France declares war against England 47
First mention of slaves in Rye 181
December 15. Bounty offered for the killing of wolves 65
1690, February 8. Burning of Schenectady 47

PAGE

April 2. Expedition of Albany; Jacob Pearce and others, of Rye . 48
April 22. Persons appointed to procure a minister, 'and if possible a schoolmaster' 173
1691, March 19. Governor Sloughter arrives in New York 200
Act enabling towns (N. Y.) to regulate roads 140
1692, October. Delegates from Rye at Hartford 93
November 11. Act appointing a Fair at Rye 211
1693, September 19. Act passed by the Assembly of New York, 'for settling a Ministry,' etc. 288
—— Southernmost part of Manussing Island conveyed 'by turf and twig' 132
1694, April 12. Bounds of the White Plains to be renewed 156
1695, February 28. First election of churchwardens and vestrymen at Rye . 290
1696, January 24. John Harrison purchases from the Indians a tract above Westchester Path 97
February. Harrison petitions the Council for a patent 98
June 25. Patent issued to Harrison and others 99, 524
—— Permission given for mill — probably 'Park's mill' — on Blind Brook 160
1697, January 19. Rye prays to be received back by Connecticut 93
January 21. Connecticut receives Rye and Bedford 127
January 22. Patent granted to Rye 93
February 19. Colonel Heathcote and 'the Ringleaders' 100
April 8. Election at Rye; Major Sellick's 'invasion' 115
—— Defection of Rye and Bedford announced 115
April 15. Governor Fletcher issues his proclamation, requiring the inhabitants to return 116
May. Correspondence between New York and Connecticut . . . 117
—— Rev. Nathanael Bowers, minister of Rye 281
September 20. Committee appointed to superintend the 'building of a meeting house' in Rye 282
—— Collectors appointed to gather the minister's salary 284
—— Death of John Brondig 62
1698, March 24. Joseph Horton chosen 'to keep a house of entertainment' . 148
April 2. Lord Bellomont, governor of New York, arrives . . . 117
April —. Slaves from the coast of Guinea landed by pirates 'with the long boat, neer about Rye' 184
December 29. A parsonage lot not exceeding forty acres to be laid out 295
1699, February 27. Highways to be laid out on Peningo Neck . . . 85
April 1. Road to the White Plains to be laid out 156, 511
Country road from Byram River to Mamaroneck River, to be laid out 140
June. Captain Kidd on Long Island Sound 185
1700, January 31. Free use of lands granted for ten years 59
February 14. The three purchases — White Plains, and Lame Will's two purchases — to be laid out 58, 156
March 1. Mr. Woodbridge's claim acknowledged 281
March 29. The King approves the agreement of 1683; Rye and Bedford included in New York 118
July 23. Mr. Bowers called to Greenwich 281
October 10. Connecticut releases Rye and Bedford 95
1701, March 21. Patent of Scarsdale, to Colonel Heathcote 155
May 24. Captain Kidd executed in London 185
August 29. Road, now Grace Church Street, to be laid out . . 54, 506

PAGE

September 29. Town meeting, relative to Harrison's claim, and arrearages of taxes 119
June 16. Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, incorporated 305
1702, May 3. Lord Cornbury arrives in New York 201
—— Tax for defence of frontiers 201
—— Tax for fortifying harbor of New York 201
May 23. Harrison assigns his interest in the Purchase 102
1703, February 21. Town meeting with reference to taxes 202
February. Town action warning trespassers 102
April 2. Town meeting with reference to taxes 202
Poll tax 203
—— Public road to Connecticut established 140
1704, May. Rev. Thomas Pritchard at Rye 306
December 7. Madam Knight at Rye 149
1705, March 5. Grant for mill at falls of Mamaroneck River 66
April 11. Trustees of public lands chosen by the town 67
July 31. Rev. George Muirson, rector at Rye 306
September 26. Town meeting; a church to be built 307
1706. School at Rye 174
February 18. Town meeting; tax for building a church 308
1708, October 12. Death of Mr. Muirson 309
December 18. Lord Lovelace arrives in New York 203
1709, May 5. Death of Lord Lovelace 203
—— Expedition against Canada 204
April 11. Division of Will's Purchases 59
October. Rev. Mr. Reynolds at Rye 310
1710. Governor Hunter arrives in New York 204
January. Rev. Christopher Bridge at Rye 310
October 17. Mr. Bridge inducted as rector 310
1711, January 29. School-house to be built at Rye 173
February 18. Second division of Will's Purchases 59
Division of Brush Ridge 61
Tax of 1*s.* on every chimney, and 2*s.* on every Negro or Indian slave 182
November 30. New divisions of lands on Peningo Neck 86
1712. Eighteen slaves in the town of Rye 181
'Negro plot' in New York; nineteen negroes executed 183
1713. Branch Ridge laid out 61
1714. Sunday-school at Rye 175
1715. Excise Bill 205
1717, May. Dispute concerning boundary between Rye and Greenwich . . 121
June 21. Samuel Odell petitions the governor of New York for a patent for Monussen [Manussing] Island 70, 429
1718, April 4. Border fray at Rye 120
October. Commissioners to settle the boundary line meet at Rye . 122
1719. Boundary commissioners appointed by Connecticut 122
New York passes 'a probationary act' 122
May 22. Death of Mr. Bridge 312
1720, February. Rev. Stephen Buckingham at Rye 321
June 20. Petition of certain inhabitants for a patent for lands between Blind Brook and Byram River 70, 515
July. Meeting of the inhabitants relative to a patent 70
—— Dispute relative to Manussing Island 70, 132, 429
July 7. Petition of Joseph Budd for a patent 41

PAGE

July 28. Patent granted to Joseph Budd 41, 520
August 11. Patent granted to the inhabitants of Rye for lands between Blind Brook and Byram River 70, 516
Division of land at the White Plains 157
September 17. Governor Burnet arrives 206
1721, February 28. Death of Colonel Caleb Heathcote 156
December 21. Petition for patent of the White Plains 157
1722, March 13. Patent granted for the White Plains 526
June 7. Rev. Robert Jenney, rector at Rye 313
September 24. Parsonage lands at Rye surveyed 296, 299
October 27. Death of Eleazar Gedney 198
1723. October. Connecticut appoints commissioners to settle the boundary 122
Death of Isaac Denham 150
Rev. John Walton at Rye 322
1724. Harrison's Purchase settled 104
1725, April 27. Boundary Commission meets at Rye 123
1726, May 19. Mr. Jenney removes to Hempstead 313
June 7. Rev. James Wetmore called to Rye 314
Mr. Wetmore inducted as rector 314
1727, May 11. Memorial of the Presbyterians of Rye and the White Plains, to the government of Connecticut, asking for help to build two churches 323
Their application refused 325
October 6. Renewed application 327
—— The General Court of Connecticut orders a collection throughout the colony for their assistance 326
Presbyterian Church built at the White Plains. 158
Presbyterian Church built at Rye 328
Friends' Meeting-house built in the Purchase 362
1728. Mr. Walton leaves Rye 328
Rev. Edmund Ward at Rye 328
1729, April 1. The town appoints a committee 'to meet Greenwich men concerning running the preamble line between Rye and Greenwich' . 123
May 15. Land given for the Presbyterian church 327
1731, May 14. Survey of boundary line completed; the 'Oblong' laid out 123
Death of Peter Brown 145
November 23. Closing up of the affairs of the Proprietors of Peningo Neck 87
1733. Bounds of Will's Purchase renewed 66
1736. Death of Samuel Lane 62
1739. Patent granted for ferry between Rye and Oyster Bay 78
1740, October 29. Rev. George Whitefield preaches at Rye 315
1741, May 11 to August 29. 'Negro Plot' in New York — one hundred and fifty-four negroes imprisoned; fourteen burned at the stake, eighteen hanged, seventy-one transported 183
1742, January 11. Friends' Monthly Meeting transferred to the 'Meeting House in Rye Woods' 363
December 30. A council of the Fairfield Eastern Association at Rye: Mr. Smith ordained 332
1743, February 20. Rev. John Smith at Rye 333
1745, March 25. Peter Jay's purchase from John Budd 209
April 13. Friends' Quarterly Meeting appointed to be held in the Purchase 364
December 12. Birth of John Jay 209, 482
1749, October 24. Trial concerning the Parsonage lot 297

PAGE

1753, April 3. 'Great destruction of our oysters in Byram river.' . . 161
1755. One hundred and seventeen slaves in the town of Rye 182
February 10. *Weekly* post to Boston 74
1758. Recruits from Rye, for the French and Indian War 213
1759. Recruits from Rye 213
County Courts removed from Westchester to the White Plains . . 158
1760, March 5. Petition of William Hooker Smith and others for lands near Lake Champlain 213
May 15. Death of Rev. James Wetmore 315, 495
1761, September 22. Court of Sessions meets at Rye 192
1762, July 1. Rev. Ebenezer Punderson at Rye 315
October 27. Presbytery of Dutchess County erected 335
1763, November 21. Mr. Punderson inducted as rector 315
1764, September 22. Death of Rev. Mr. Punderson 316
November 16. Petition of Rector and Inhabitants of the Parish of Rye in communion with the Church of England, to be incorporated . 316
December 19. Act of incorporation 316
Controversy relative to Captain's Island 376
1765, April 2. Town meeting with reference to inoculation 168
March 22. Passage of the Stamp Act 217
August 27. Rev. Ephraim Avery at Rye 316
September 9. Mr. Avery to be inducted as rector 317
1766, March 18. Stamp Act repealed 217
1767, June 29. Passage of Act imposing duties on tea, etc. 217
October 28. Non-importation agreement at Boston 217
1769, October 11. Rev. Ichabod Lewis ordained to be Dr. Smith's colleague 335
1770, April 1. Fire at Rye; Major Hachaliah Brown's house burned . . 207
1771, February 26. Death of Rev. John Smith of Rye 335
April. Fair to be held at Rye next October 211
November. Francis [Bishop] Asbury at Rye 354
1772, June 24. Stage coach to run between New York and Boston 'sets out for the first time' 77
1773, King Street Baptist Church constituted 366
December 16. Boston 'Tea-party' 218
1774, March 25. Act of Parliament closing the port of Boston . . . 218
July 6. Patriotic meeting in New York 219
August 2. Patriotic meeting in Harrison 220
August 10. Patriotic meeting at Rye 219
August 19. John Adams at 'Haviland's,' Rye 147
September 5. The Continental Congress meets in Philadelphia . . 222
September 24. Declaration of loyalty, by some inhabitants of Rye . 220
October 17. Disclaimer of the declaration 221
November 3. Timothy Wetmore's explanation 221
1775. The poor of the parish to be 'set at vandue' 163
March 11. Trial about 'disputed Horse Race' on Rye Flats . . . 212
April 19. Battle of Lexington 222
May 10. Second Continental Congress 222
—— Measures taken to raise an army 222
—— Four regiments to be raised by New York 222
—— Companies formed in Rye 223
May 18. Connecticut troops to be encamped near Greenwich . . 224
June 12. Connecticut troops reviewed near Greenwich . . . 224
June 26. Washington passes through Rye on his way to Boston . . 225
June 27. Connecticut troops pass through Rye 224

PAGE

September 29. Tory plots at Rye. Godfrey Hains arrested, but escapes 226
October 25. Plot to seize Judge Thomas at Rye Woods 226
December 15. British man-of-war off Mamaroneck 226
December 20. Godfrey Hains sails for Boston, with provisions for the British troops 227
December 23. The sloop 'stranded on the Jersey shore' . . . 227
1776, January 17. Cannon near King's Bridge spiked by tories from Rye and Mamaroneck 226
January 23. Godfrey Hains sent to Ulster County jail 227
March 17. Boston evacuated by the British 228
April 20. Isaac Gedney writes from prison at the White Plains . . 230
May 13. Death of Mrs. Avery 317
May. Committees of Safety for Rye and Harrison 228
July 12. The British fleet from Boston arrives at New York . . 229
July 16. One fourth of the militia of Westchester County called out 229
August. William Lounsbery, engaged in raising troops for General Howe, shot by a party of militia 228, 270
September 12. Action of Friends in Harrison on slavery . . . 187
September 14. Washington abandons the city of New York . . 232
September 21. American force posted at Mamaroneck 233
October 2. American force at Saw Pit 233
October 12. General Howe lands at Throgg's Neck 232
October 21. Washington retreats to the White Plains . . . 232
—— British troops near New Rochelle 232
—— Engagement on Nelson Hill, Mamaroneck 233
October 21. Major Rogers of Connecticut at Rye 233
October 23. American force posted at the head of King Street . . 257
October 26. American army at the White Plains 234
October 28. Battle of the White Plains 234
October 31. Washington falls back to the hills above the White Plains . 235
November 1. Affair near Horton's Pond 236
November 1. General Parsons at Saw Pit 243
—— A British force advances to Saw Pit 240
November 3. British troops pass through Rye 240
November 4. Court-house, etc., at White Plains burnt . . . 239
November 5. Death of Rev. Mr. Avery 240, 318
December 4. British fleet passes Rye, bound eastward . . . 244
December. Daily incursions of the Queen's Rangers in Westchester County 245
1777, January 3. Tory families at Rye required to remove 249
January 14. General Heath at Mr. Clapp's, King Street . . . 248
February 17. General Wooster still at Saw Pit 244
Inhabitants of Rye plundered 246
February. 'Grand forages' in Rye and vicinity 249
February. Four boats from Rye cross the Sound and carry off a market sloop 253
Indigent people from New York quartered on the inhabitants of Rye 250
March. Daily outrages committed by the Tories 251
March 22. Judge Thomas seized at his house in Rye Woods . . 252
April. Murder of Jonathan Kniffen's daughter at Rye . . . 252
May 2. Death of General Wooster 244
October 12. Adventure of a whale boat from Byram River . . . 254
Condition of the neutral ground 262
1778. Washington encamped at White Plains 247

PAGE

August. Friends' meeting-house in the Purchase used for an army hospital 364
October 7. Simcoe's Rangers make an incursion on King Street . . 256
November 13. Colonel Thomas Thomas captured at his house in 'Rye Woods' 256
1779, February 28. British force at Rye; skirmish, Saw Pit and Byram Bridge 258
General Putnam's adventure at Horseneck 259
May 5. Excursion of De Lancey's Refugees 259
June 4. American party surprised at Byram Bridge 259
June 16. Affair at Sherwood's Bridge 259
December 9. Three 'Friends' in Harrison disowned for not freeing their slaves 188
1780. February. Three hundred Continental troops at King Street; the advance guard at John Cromwell's 257
1781, June 28. Death of Dr. Ebenezer Haviland 264, 477
October 19. Surrender of Cornwallis 264
December 2. Affair on King Street, near Merritt's tavern 257
1782. Record of the sufferings of Friends 364
1783, April 1. First town meeting after the war 266
April and May. Departure of loyalists for New Brunswick and Nova Scotia 265
November 25. New York evacuated by the British 264
1784, May 4. Act enabling towns to choose commissioners of highways . 140
Settlement of Supervisors with late Vestry of Rye 164
April. Rev. Andrew Fowler officiates at Rye 337
——Friends' meeting-house in the Purchase used for a Court of Judicature 364
1785, April 27. Meeting of Episcopal congregation 337
September 26. Capt. Abr. Bush, of Rye, and four of his crew drowned 161
1787, May 24. Arrears for quitrent on lands in Rye held by patent from the crown, paid 266
September. Stage runs from New York to Rye 77
September 8. Rev. [Bishop] Richard C. Moore called to Rye . . 337
1788, February 22. Act relative to manumission of slaves 187
March 7. Act erecting the towns of Rye, Harrison, and White Plains within the former limits of Rye 266, 372
April 16. Contract for building Episcopal Church 338
October 1. Mr. Moore leaves Rye 338
November. Episcopal Church occupied 338
1789, October 15, 16. Washington at Haviland's inn, Rye . . 142, 147, 162
November 12, 13. Washington again at Rye 147
1790, December 15. Rev. David Foote called to Grace Church . . . 338
1791, May 4. Subscription ordered for finishing the church 339
1792, November 22. Land given for new Presbyterian Church at Rye . . 345
1793. Presbyterian Church dedicated, Dr. Lewis officiating 346
August 1. Death of Mr. Foote 339
December 5. Rev. John Sands called to Grace Church 339
1795, June 5. Presbyterian Church of Rye incorporated 346
1796, May 4. Mr. Sands resigns 339
June 7. Meeting of Episcopal congregation; name of church changed from Grace to Christ's Church 339
October 26. Rev. George Ogilvie called to Christ Church 340
1797, April 3. Death of Mr. Ogilvie 340
August 7. Rev. Samuel Haskell called to Christ Church . . . 340

PAGE

1798. One hundred and twenty-three slaves in Rye 187
Mr. Jared Peck at 'Saw Pit'. 378
1799, March 29. Act providing for the gradual abolition of slavery . . 187
1800, April 7. Act establishing Westchester Turnpike Road . . . 143
1801, April. Mr. Haskell resigns 340
October 18. Rev. Evan Rogers called to Christ Church . . . 341
1804, June 22. Trial of Joseph Parker 488
1805. Methodist Society organized at Rye 355
1809, January 25. Death of Rev. Evan Rogers 341
February 25. Rev. Samuel Haskell recalled 340
1811, October 8. Rev. Timothy Dwight, D. D., at Rye 347
1812. Act providing for common schools in the State of New York . . 178
June 18. War with Great Britain declared 379
1813, April 6. Town-meeting, action relative to common schools . . . 179
June 16. Notice of meeting at Saw Pit to consult on measures of defence 'in case of invasion' 379
1814. Division of town into school districts 179
1815, June 8. Rector of Christ Church, Rye, ceases to officiate at White Plains 341
1817. Act passed, declaring all slaves to be free on the fourth of July, 1827 . 187
1820. Fourteen slaves in Rye 187
1821, May 10. Mr. Ebenezer Clark removes to Rye 348, 499
1823, October 1. Rev. William Thompson, rector at Rye 341
1824, May 29. Death of General Thomas 373, 493
August 20. La Fayette at Rye and Saw Pit 148, 380
1827, July 4. Slavery ceases in New York 187
1828. Friends in Harrison ('Orthodox' and 'Hicksite') separate . . . 364
December 7. Presbyterian service commenced at Saw Pit . . . 367
—— Presbyterian congregation meet in the district school-house, Rye 348
December 14. Church reoccupied by the Presbyterian congregation . 348
1829. March 4. Presbyterian congregation reorganized 348
May 24. Rev. W. H. Whittemore, minister of Presbyterian Church . 349
October. Presbytery of Bedford constituted 349
1830, May 26. Presbyterian Church at Saw Pit commenced 367
August 26. Death of Rev. William Thompson 341
Rev. John Forbes, rector 342
December 19. Presbyterian Church at Saw Pit occupied . . . 368
1831. Methodist Episcopal Church, Port Chester, built 369
1832. Rev. W. M. Carmichael, rector of Episcopal Church 342
April. Rev. David Remington, minister of Presbyterian Church . . 349
Methodist Episcopal Church, Rye, built 357
1834, January 24. Death of Rev. David Remington 349
April. Rev. Thomas Payne, minister of Presbyterian Church . . 350
September 8. Rev. Peter S. Chauncey called to be rector . . . 342
1836, October 13. Rev. James R. Davenport ordained and installed pastor of Presbyterian Church, Rye 350
1837. Cemetery (now 'Union') commenced 199
'Saw Pit' becomes Port Chester 381
1838, October 9. Rev. Edward D. Bryan ordained and installed pastor of Presbyterian Church, Rye 350
1841, September 28. Corner-stone of Presbyterian Church, Rye (third edifice) laid 352, 500
1842, June 28. Presbyterian Church, Rye, dedicated 500

PAGE
1844, July 15. St. Peter's Church, Port Chester, consecrated 370
1847, March. New Haven Railroad commenced 375
September 14. Death of Mr. Ebenezer Clark 351
1849, January. New Haven Railroad completed 375
May 13. Rev. Edward C. Bull, rector of Christ Church, Rye . . 342
1850, January 24. Death of Rev. Elijah Woolsey, Rye 356
1852, July 25. Presbyterian congregations of Rye and Port Chester separate 368
August 4. Presbyterian Church of Port Chester organized . . . 368
1855, March 15. Christ Church, Rye (third edifice), consecrated . . . 342
May. Proposition of Connecticut to ascertain the boundary line . 124
1856, June 25. Commissioners to ascertain the boundary line meet . . . 124
1858, August 15. New Methodist Church, Port Chester, dedicated . . 369
1859, May 5. Rev. John C. White, rector of Christ Church, Rye . . . 343
September 13. Commissioners to ascertain the boundary line meet at Port Chester 125
1860, June 8. Commissioners of New York proceed alone to survey and mark the boundary line 126
1861, January 20. Death of Rev. Benjamin Griffen, Rye 358
April 29. Public meeting to respond to the President's call for 75,000 men 384
Union Defence Committee appointed 385
April 30. First company of volunteers leaves Rye, N. B. Bartram, captain 387
1864, November 27. Rev. Reese F. Alsop, rector of Christ Church . . 343
1866, December 21. Christ Church, Rye, destroyed by fire 343
1868, May 14. Port Chester incorporated as a village 381
1869, June 19. Christ Church (fourth edifice) consecrated 343
1870, November 29. Corner-stone of Presbyterian Church, Rye (fourth edifice), laid 352

INDEX OF PERSONS.

*** Names printed in *italics* will be found in their alphabetical order in 'Families of Rye.'

Abendroth, William P., 382, 385.
Abrahamson, John, 333.
Adams, John, 147, 176; Nathanael, 225.
Adee, George, 367; John, 220, 316; William, 370.
Affrey, John, 220.
Agnew, Gen., 240.
Akerly, 452.
Alison, Rev. F., 334.
Allaire, U., 223.
Allen, Lieut., 226.
Alleson, Dr. W., 166.
Alling, Samuel, 21–24, 26, 82.
Allyn, John, 112; Matthew, 326.
Alsop, Rev. R. F., 343.
Amherst, Gen., 400.
Anderson, 198; C. V., 32, 52, 180, 199, 208, 400, 401, 504; Isaac, 220, 221, 267; John, 331, 375–377; William, 327, 369; Rev. James, 331.
André, Major, 167.
Andrews, Rev. E., 357.
Andros, Governor, 43, 44, 47, 101.
Andrus, Rev. L., 355, 356.
Anne, Queen, 201.
Applebe, Thomas, 21–24, 26, 82.
Armour, S., 186.
Armstrong, William, 220.
Arnold, Rev. S., 355.
Asbury, Rev. F., 354.
Ascough, 452.
Ashley, B. F., 383.
Avery, Rev. Eph., 176, 240, 241, 316–318, 337; Mrs., 317, 318; T., 223.
Ayers, Dr., 166.

Backus, Major, 233, 244.
Bailey, Dr. N., 167.
Baird, Charles W., 352.
Baker, 452.
Bangs, Rev. H., 356.
Banks, John, 34, 38, 46, 83, 90, 92, 95.
Barclay, Rev. H., 312.
Bard, Dr., 169.
Barker, J., 199.
Barnes, 453.
Barrel, 453.
Barton, Roger, 53; Hannah M., 382.
Bartram, N. B., 387.
Basset, J., 46, 48; M., 324.
Bastow, Rev. J., 371.
Bates, Sarah, 165.
Bayard, Colonel, 98.
Bayly, 452.
Beal, T., 384, 389.
Beardsley, Rev. J., 316.
Beers, J. E., 383, 384.
Belcher, Dr. E., 171; E. R., 171.
Bell, D. B., 32; Rev. J., 354; J., 138.
Bellamy, Rev. J., 332, 333.
Bellomont, Lord, 98, 117, 184.
Benedict, Rev. Henry, 368, 369.
Bent, S. S., 382.
Berrian, Samuel U., 375.
Besly, 167.
Bidwell, Rev. W. H., 32, 135.
Bird, 40; Captain, 374; J., 193; H., 220.
Birdsall, 454.
Bishop, Rev. J., 273, 275; L., 374.
Blackstock, J., 370.
Blair, Rev. J., 334.
Blakeman, 453.
Bloodgood, 453.
Bloomer, 160; Gilbert, 78, 103, 160, 197, 298; Robert, 28, 33, 39, 56, 57, 59, 66, 69, 84, 85, 118, 121, 197, 219, 223, 324, 325, 327, 328.
Bolin, J., 520, 524.
Bolton, Rev. R., 23, 193, 198, 281, 282, 300, 303, 399, 434.

Bonaparte, Joseph, 374.
Bostwick, Rev. D., 334.
Bowen, Rev. J., 356.
Bowers, Rev. J., 281; N., 118, 130, 281, 282, 284, 294, 320.
Bowne, D., 269; J., 269; T., 269.
Bowness, Dr. W., 166.
Boyd, John, 34, 48, 83, 85.
Bradford, Mrs. A. W., 144.
Bradley, S. K., 249.
Brevoort, 411.
Brewer, Rev. Mr., 366.
Brewster, Dr., 268.
Bridge, J., see Pearce, J.; Rev. C., 155, 157, 192, 294, 295, 299, 309–313, 318, 320, 321, 361, 517, 518, 527, 528.
Bridges, Anne, 312; Dr., 312.
Brigg, I., 213.
Brondig, John, 21, 23–26, 34, 39, 43, 50, 51, 60, 62, 82–84, 90, 95, 139, 157, 173, 274, 290; Jonathan, 84; Joseph, 324, 327. See Brundige.
Brook, Lord, 272.
Brooks, 53; D., 199, 252; Dr., 255; J., 374.
Brown, 35, 211, 506.
—— Benjamin, 69, 70, 157, 298, 324, 327, 328, 513, 515–520, 526–528.
—— Deliverance, 50, 51, 54, 59, 60, 68, 83, 85, 93–95, 102, 118, 121, 155, 157, 291, 310.
—— Francis, 139, 151, 157.
—— Hachaliah, 28, 30, 33, 34, 56, 57, 59, 78, 79, 83, 85, 90, 94, 118, 155–157, 207, 282, 290, 291, 295, 324, 327, 328, 501, 503.
—— Isaac, 79, 220, 230.
—— Jonathan, 77, 79, 196, 298, 324, 327, 328, 503, 504, 514.
—— Peter, 34, 145, 157, 160, 300, 324, 327.
—— Samuel, 61, 69, 70, 78, 260, 298, 324, 327, 328, 515–520.
—— Thomas, 28, 30, 39, 43, 44, 83, 157, 179, 186, 220, 274, 324, 327, 328, 346, 503, 504.
Brown, David, 208; Rev. D., 354; Dr. G. C., 171; Gilbert, 186, 513; Goold, 375; Ebenezer, 220; John, 179, 186; Josiah, 230, 339; Nathan, 345–347; Nathanael, 197; Nehemiah, 186, 382; Nicholas, 77; Rev. P. R., 357; William, 220, 221.
Browne, Sir Anthony, 36.
Brundige (see Brondig), Abraham, 303, 324; David, 157; Ebenezer, 316; Ezekiel, 213; Gilbert, 220, 221, 256, 505; James, 256; Joseph, 505; Joshua, 183, 197; Robert, 28.
Brush, 454.
Bryan, Rev. Edward D., 350, 352, 368.
Bryant, Captain, 237.
Buckingham, Rev. S., 321, 322.
Buck, Rev. V., 357.
Budd, 198; Anne, 195; Daniel S., 34, 180; Elisha, 195, 316, 514; Gilbert, 224, 226, 264; James, 220.
—— John, 9, 12–17, 21, 25, 26, 29, 31, 33, 38–41, 68, 79, 82, 88, 89, 95, 97–99, 113, 209, 213, 520; Jonathan, 76, 220; Joseph, 41, 70, 98, 99, 120, 140, 155–157, 201, 203, 205, 209, 283, 310, 520–528.
Buflot, J., 221.
Bulkley, Gershom, 268, 269; Mrs., 76, 268, 398; Rev. P., 276.
Bull, Rev. Edward C., 342, 370; Rev. M. B., 355.
Bullard, Richard, 38, 513.
Bullock, 406, 513.
Bumpas, Deliverance, 183; Samuel, 69, 183; Thomas, 183.
Burchum, 454.
Burnet, Governor W., 206, 313.
Burns, 454.
Burr, H., 395; J., 40; Major J., 326; Rev. A., 334.
Burrell, J., 227.
Burtus, W., 75.
Bush, 506; Abraham, 75, 76, 84; Anne, 268; Gilbert, 268, 382; Justus, 84, 268, 328, 376; William, 186, 382; William L., 385; Rev. J., 354; Miss R., 144, 300, 301; Mrs., 381.
Bushnell, Rev. S., 355.
Buvelot, J., 220.
Byerley, T., 201, 203.
Byrne, Rev. Dr., 371.

Calvin, 175.
Campbell, Rev. J, 354.
Canfield, Rev. E., 355.
Carey, Colonel, 238.
Carhartt, Andrew, 220, 221; H., 252; John, 220, 221, 316; Jonathan, 328.
Carle, 455.
Carmichael, Rev. W. M., 342.

Carpenter, 31; A. P., 7, 179, 401, 506; Colonel, 243; Isaac, 346; Thomas, 103, 256; Zeno, 219; Rev. C., 355.
Case, Rev. B., 332.
Cavalear, Peter, 134.
Chamberlin, Rev. P., 357.
Chapman, Richard B., 513.
Chatterton, Michael, 104.
Chauncey, Rev. Peter S., 342, 370.
Cheeseman, S., 103.
Chichester, 178; Rev. E., 354.
Church, Dr. B., 226.
Church, 407.
Clapp, Benjamin, 120; Elias, 120; John, 120, 248, 361.
Clark, Ebenezer, 348, 349, 351, 352, 367, 499, 500.
Clark, Andrew, 183, 499; Cornelius, 223; George, 526; Joseph, 220; Rev. H., 354; J., 354.
Clason, S., 280.
Cleator, Joseph, 174, 175, 310.
Clere, George, 21, 22, 25.
Clinton, Gen. G., 236.
Close, Thomas, 14, 15; Dr. T., 171.
Cochran, Rev. S., 356.
Cockey, Dr. J. H. T., 171, 193.
Codling, Rev. R., 356.
Coe, Andrew, 157, 310; John, 9, 10, 14, 15, 21, 23–26, 31, 39, 78, 82, 83, 99, 272, 328; Jonathan, 269; R., 268, 269.
Coffel, 408.
Cogswell, Colonel, 243.
Colden, Lieut.-Governor, Cadwallader, 70, 98, 299, 317, 376, 526; Alexander, 74.
Cole, 458.
Coleman, Rev. J., 354.
Collier, Benj., 34, 92, 113, 115, 173, 202.
Collins, E. K., 233; Rev. W. F., 357, 358.
Collum [McCollum?], J., 220.
Colve, Governor, A., 46.
Con, D., 164.
Concklin, J., 40.
Cooke, S., 333.
Coon, 458.
Cornbury, Lord, 96, 200–203, 306.
Cornell, D., 104; G. L., 194, 208, 385.
Corning, Edward, 514; Jasper E., 34.
Cornwall, 458.
Cornwallis, Lord, 264.
Cosby, Governor, 298.
Cotant, Rev., 370.
Covert, Isaac, 157, 526–528.
Cox, Rev. Dr. S. H., 348.
Crampton, Samuel, 78, 459.
Crawford, Rev. J., 355.
Cromwell, Oliver, 459.
Cromwell, John, 251; 257.
Crooker, Moses, 186, 269; Wm., 220, 221.
Cue, 461, 504.
Cushman, Rev. D., 286.

Daniels, Thos., 120, 121, 213; Rev. B., 357.
Daton, Dr. D., 167.
Daugherty, Rev. G., 354.
Davenport, Rev. James R., 350, 368; Rev. John, 323, 326, 327.
Davies, President, 334.
Dawson, Henry B., 235.
Deall, 160; S., 179, 186.
De Lancey, Colonel James, 246, 252.
Delancey, John P., 143, 301.
Dellius, G., 98.
Delhingham, 462.
Demilt, 462.
Denham, Rev. Thomas, 34, 45, 131, 150, 278–280, 284–286, 294, 299, 301.
—— Isaac, 34, 60, 85, 86, 102, 150, 156, 157, 183, 184, 278, 280, 282, 285, 291, 295, 300, 301, 310, 312.
—— Josiah, 280; Hannah, 280; Nathanael, 280; Sarah, 280.
Dennis, Rev. D., 354.
De Peyster, A., 203–205.
Devaney, Dr., 165.
Deveau, Rev. F., 354.
Devinne, Rev. D., 356, 357.
De Voe, Col. Thomas F., 74.
Dewey, Rev. T., 354.
Dickens, Rev. J., 354; J., 213.
Dickerman, Capt. I., 326.
Dickinson, Rev. J., 330; Rev. R. W., D.D., 351.
Disbrow, Henry, 46, 157; John, 84, 128, 208, 310, 328; Peter, 9–12, 15, 19, 21, 23–26, 28, 34, 39, 50, 57, 82, 83, 89–92, 95, 97, 99, 128, 153, 157, 277, 279, 515; Thomas, 291.
Dixon, 462.
Dodge, 462.
Dongan, Governor, 97, 110, 112, 113, 154, 185, 200.
Doughty, Francis, 150, 303, 304, 360; D., 151, 500; Isaac, 303, 304, 340; John, 69, 150, 163, 164, 303, 346, 347.

Doutty, 462.
Dow, 462.
Dowling, Rev. Matthew, 371.
Downing, 32; Dr. Nathanael, 168.
Drake, Colonel, 223, 231.
Drumgold, 269.
Duer, W., 250.
Duffy, P., 382.
Dunmore, Governor, 211.
Dusenbery, 31; Gilbert, 223; Henry, 223, 327; Peter, 213; Wilsey, 223.
Dwight, Flint, 175; Rev. Timothy, D.D., 178, 209, 346, 347.

Eames, Rev. H., 355.
Edmonds, Rev. J. A., 370.
Edwards, President, 331, 333, 334.
Eells, Rev. J., 332.
Eisenhart, Christopher, 316.
Elsworth, 463.
Embree, 463.
Emery, Rev. N., 355.
Emmerick, Lieut.-Colonel, 259.
Ennis, Alexander, 268.
Erwin, D., 220.
Everard, Rev. T., 354.
Esmond, 463.
Eustace, 463.

Farrington, 463.
Fauconier, 463.
Feenas, 463.
Fenno, Lieut., 237.
Ferguson, Rev. A. C., 371.
Ferris, Rev. J., 356.
Field, Aaron, 256; Anthony, 103, 362; Charles, 179, 377; Robert, 103; Samuel, 104; Stephen, 251.
Finch, Rev. N., 366.
Fisher, Dr. G. J., 167; Rev. B., 354; Rev. S. U., 356, 357.
Fitch, T., 38, 40; Governor, 376.
Fitzgerald, Edward, 465.
Flamman, Cornelius, 182, 298.
Fleming, P., 228.
Fletcher, Governor, 96–100, 114–117, 184, 200, 282, 288, 524–526.
Flood, John, 270.
Florence, P., 220.
Foote, Rev. D., 338, 339.
Forbes, Rev. J. M., 342.
Ford, J., 338; Rev. C. B., 370.
Foreman, Solomon, 465.
Forster, C., 184.
Fowler, 31; John, 157; Solomon, 259; William, 103, 120; Rev. A., 337.
Fowls, 90. See Vowles.
Fox, G., 360, 363.
Franklin, Benjamin, 74; Henry, 103.
French, George, 466.
Frost, J., 132, 157, 284; W., 160.
Fulday, C., 164.
Fulton, R., 380.
Furman, G., 143.

Gage, General, 225.
Gale, G., 466.
Galpin, John, 157; Joseph, 57, 78, 157; Philip, 21, 25, 26, 30, 31, 48, 82, 83, 128, 157.
Gandal, John, 466.
Garabrant, F., 182.
Garnsey, 411.
Garrison, J., 158, 324.
Gedney, 198; Eleazar, 198; Daniel, 143; Isaac, 220, 230; James, 220; John, 230; Jonathan, 220; Jonathan H., 149; Joseph, 230; Joshua, 220; Solomon, 220; William, 143.
Gee, J., 57.
Genin, S. C., 135, 194, 407, 513.
George I., 516, 520; II., 328; III., 219, 220, 221, 229.
Gibson, Joseph, 466.
Gilbert, Rev. G. S., 358, 370.
Gilchrist, Thomas, 466; William, 466.
Glover, J., 84.
Gold, N., 38, 40, 112, 273.
Goodwin, C. T., 382.
Gorum, George, 466.
Gothard, Rev. W., 356, 357.
Graham, Augustus, 98; James, 291; Dr. John A., 168, 238; Dr. Robert, 168.
Graves, Samuel, 78.
Gray, H., 223.
Greacen, J., 32, 52, 208, 298, 398, 409.
Green, 120; John, 138.
Griffen, Rev. B., 358.
Griffin, J., 198.
Gue, J., 213.
Guion, John, 179, 186, 220, 316, 514; Peter, 212.
Gunn, A., 53.

Haddon, Bartholomew, 186; Thomas, 393
Haggerty, Rev. J., 354.

Haight, 198; Daniel, 172, 369; David, 210, 514, 524–526; John, 104, 324, 325, 505, 520–524; Joseph, 84, 213, 303; Jonathan, 164, 205, 324, 328, 505; Samuel, 99, 102, 103, 361, 524, 525.
Hains, Anne, 196; Bartholomew, 220, 230; Elijah, 220; Gilbert, 220; Godfrey, 161, 196, 225, 227; Stephen, 229, James, 220.
Hait, S., 324.
Hall, W., 220.
Halsted, 35, 211; A. M., 144, 300, 385; Elisha, 357, 369; Ezekiel, 76, 186, 196, 208, 223, 250, 298, 345–347, 355, 501, 502; James D., 302, 385; Newberry, 28, 194, 208; Philemon, 29, 180, 186, 208, 220, 357, 503; Underhill, 52, 135, 194, 208, 355; William B., 385.
Hanford, Rev. T., 273, 275.
Hare, Edward, 499; Nathanael, 213.
Harminson, F., 21–24.
Harris, George, 177.
Harrison, John, 97–103, 114, 119, 524, 525; Samuel, 103; Colonel, 240.
Hart, James, 186, 187, 220, 514; Jonathan, 290, 310; Monmouth, 78, 230, 324.
Haskell, Rev. S., 179.
Hatfield, Abr., 223; Joshua, 223; Peter, 157, 327, 526–528; Rev. W. F., 370; Rev. Dr., 430.
Haven, Alice B., 199.
Haviland, 31; Benjamin, 205; Ebenezer, 146, 147, 169, 211, 219, 224, 264, 476, 477, 478; James, 146; Tamar, 147, 162, 302, 337; Thomas, 144; Joseph, 230.
Hawkins, John, 220.
Hawkshurst, Daniel, 182.
Hays, 477.
Haywood, 477.
Heathcote, Col. C., 100, 101, 154–156, 174, 185, 274, 291, 305, 307, 309, 310, 392.
Hendrickson, J., 280; S., 280.
Heath, Major-General W., 223, 233–239, 248, 249, 257.
Hiat. See Hyat.
Hibbard, Rev. B., 355; E., 356.
Hicks, Elias, 364.
Hill, 477.
Hinchman, Dr. J., 166.
Hinckson, S., 280; R., 280.
Hitt, 477.
Hoadly, C. J., 376.
Hobby, H., 245; J., 245.
Hodge, Charles, D. D., 272.
Hoight, Abraham, 213; J., 295.
Hoit, Caleb, 526–528. See Hyat.
Hoit, John, 85, 129, 151, 155, 156, 157, 327; S., 128, 157, 526–528.
Hollingsworth, Rev. S., D.D., 371.
Hollis, Evans B., 178, 382.
Holly, John, 31, 38, 40, 89, 90, 138.
Holoday, P., 151.
Hooker, James, 332; Rev. Thomas, 332.
Hopping, 413.
Horsford, Lieut.-Colonel, 243.
Horton, Benjamin, 59, 157; Daniel, 223, 251; Caleb, 514; Caleb P., 223; Gilbert, 229, 230; Gill Budd, 239; David, 324, 327, 526–528; James, 219, 220, 229; John, 94, 95, 104, 155–157, 526–528; Jonathan, 78, 173, 282, 514; Joseph, 16, 33, 40, 43, 57–59, 66, 68, 69, 89–91, 94, 95, 98, 112, 131, 148–150, 153, 166, 274, 290, 291, 324; Leander, 269; Samuel, 324, 327; William, 103.
Hosier, 477.
Howe, General W., 232–235, 239, 240.
Howell, Thomas, 78, 328.
Hoyt, Rev. L., 357; W. B., 370. See Hoit.
Hubbs, 477.
Huddlestone, 175.
Hudson, Hendrick, 3.
Hudson, R., 21–24.
Hugeford, Dr. P., 167.
Hughes, H., 14.
Hunt, 253, 402; Alexander, 223; Esther, 505; James, 345; Josiah, 204; Samuel, 66, 157, 160, 527, 528; Rev. A., 354; J., 357.
Hunter, 374; Governor R., 121, 204; Rev. J. H., 350.
Huntington, Colonel, 243; Rev. E. B., 165.
Hurd, E., 74.
Huson, 477.
Husted, Rev. H., 357.
Hutchings, 477.
Hutchinson, Rev. S., 354.
Hyat, Caleb, 91, 104, 118, 156, 157, 324, 325, 327, 513, 526–528; John, 324; Nathan, 324.

Ingoldsby, Major, 203.
Ireland, Adam, 120.
Irving, Washington, 215.
Ives, J. M., 52, 402.
Izenhart, 316. See Eisenhart.

Jackson, J., 21, 22, 25; Lieutenant, 237.
Jacobs, 134; R., 303, 505.
Jagger, 478.
Jamison, D., 99, 100, 102, 524, 525; J., 220.
Janes, Bishop, 369.
Jay, 199; Anna Maricka, 186, 209, 339; Frederick, 228, 245; John, 199, 209, 373, 376; Dr. John C., 143, 177, 180, 391; Mrs. Mary, 186, 187, 210, 340, 514; Peter, 182, 209, 210, 316, 339, 373, 514; Rev. Peter A., 391.
Jee, 416.
Jeffrey, T., 157.
Jenkins, 416.
Jenney, Rev. R., 185, 192, 294, 296, 298–301, 309, 313, 314, 321, 322, 362, 504.
Jewett, Rev. W., 356.
Jones, Dr. John, 169; Rev. E., 273, 275, 276; Rev. John, 276; William, 14, 15.

Kelly, H., 178.
Kennedy, R., 160, 373.
Kent, Rev. Elisha, 335; Chief Justice James, 335.
Kibby, Rev. E., 354.
Kidd, Captain, 185.
Kimberly, Eleazar, 94, 101.
Kingsland, D. C., 34.
Kipp, Captain, 257.
Kirby, David, 193; Andrew, 160; Joseph, 139, 413, 416, 455; Mrs. Leah, 193.
Kirkham, Rev. O. C., 366.
Kissam, B., 376.
Knap, Benjamin, 324; Daniel, 324; Joshua, 58, 153; Moses, 157, 324, 327, 526–528; Timothy, 28, 33, 34, 39, 59, 83, 90–92, 94, 95, 137, 157, 277, 279, 290, 324, 327, 328.
Kniffen, 197; Andrew, 220; Benjamin, 78, 220; David, 78, 183, 213; Ebenezer, 78, 151, 298, 328; George, 28, 33, 52, 83, 84, 90, 157, 173, 183, 310, 328; John, 220; Jonathan, 197, 209, 220, 252, 253; Joseph, 84, 173, 298, 324, 327, 328; Nathan, 28, 328; Polly, 209, 252, 253; Roger, 220; Samuel, 28; Thomas, 220, 246; Israel, 324, 327.
Knight, Madam, 73, 141, 149, 150, 190, 191.
Knower, G. A., 499.
Knox, 175.
Knyphausen, General, 233.

La Count, F., 104.
La Fayette, 148, 380.
Lame Will. See Maramaking.
Lancaster, W., 21, 22, 25.
Lane, Daniel, 157, 324, 327, 526–528; George, 28, 33, 34, 39, 50, 59, 83, 94, 102, 156, 157, 290, 291, 310, 324, 327, 526–528; Hezekiah, 324; Jonathan, 324; Nathan, 324; Reuben, 213; Samuel, 62, 66, 160, 213, 291, 300, 324, 328, 505, 506; Solomon, 324.
Lary, D., 220.
Law, R., 30, 38, 40, 89.
Lawrence, W., 103.
Leete, Gov. W., 272, 360; Caleb, 336.
Lefever, Rev. J., 356; J. W., 357.
Leish, C., 328.
Lester, W., 348.
L'Estrange. See Strang.
Levy, A. G., 382.
Lewis, Rev. Ichabod, 335, 345; Rev. Isaac, D. D., 335, 345, 346; Rev. Val. A., 369.
Linch, Jonathan, 157, 324, 327, 526–528; Gabriel, 514.
Lincoln, General B., 248, 249.
Lincoln, President, 384.
Linds, S., 40.
Livingston, R. R., 380.
Lockwood, Jonathan, 90.
Loder, Benjamin, 384, 401, 403.
Loofborrow, Isaac, 345, 347.
Lossing, B. F., 259.
Lounsbery, J. W., 269, 385; Jonathan, 213; Richard, 128, 157; Dr. S. S., 171; Valentine, 213; William, 226–228, 270.
Lovall, Rev. F., 354.
Loveall, M., 47.
Lovelace, Governor, 72, 76, 203.
Lowe, J., 349.
Ludlow, Rev. H. G., 348.
Luther, 175.
Lyman, Rev., 367.
Lynch. See Linch.
Lyon, 87, 198; Andrew, 186, 220, 221, 253, 346; Abraham, 213; Gilbert, 228, 374, 377; John, 85, 156, 282, 285, 295, 328; Joseph, 66, 160, 195, 196, 310, 328, 514, 521; Samuel, 228, 267, 377; Sarah, 195; Sylvanus, 179; Thomas, 44, 78, 83, 157, 197, 298, 324, 327, 382; William, 75, 186, 187; Seth, 245; Rev. J., 355; Rev. Z., 355.

McCollum, John, 220, 230; T., 187; Dr. M., 171.
McDaniel, Colonel, 240.
McDonald, John, 225; Lewis, 228, 255; Dr. C., 170.
McDougall, General, 234, 237.
M'Intosh, Colonel, 243.
McLoughlin, Rev. T., 371.
Macy, Josiah, 210; J. H., 385.
Maffit, Rev. J. N., 356.
Malcolm, Colonel, 234, 237.
Mallory, Rev. C. T., 358, 370.
Mann, Rev. J., 368.
Maramaking, Lame or Limping Will, 11, 12, 56, 57, 134.
Marrener, P. W., 148.
Marselis, Ann, 499.
Marsh, W., 103.
Marshall, J. E., 385.
Martindale, Rev. S., 356.
Marven, Lewis, 198, 267; Mrs. M., 198, 267; Samuel, 267.
Mather, Rev. Cotton, 281.
Mathews, Dr. E. F., 172.
Mathews, William, 193, 352, 353, 499.
Mead, Benjamin, 5, 144, 179, 180, 199; David H., 34, 76, 160, 300, 302, 357, 374, 505, 506; Rev. N., 354, 359; Rev. S., 335.
Merritt, 61, 69, 173, 197, 198, 506; Andrew, 78, 220, 324, 328; Benjamin, 183; Benoni, 324, 327; Daniel, 104; Elisha, 213; Elizabeth, 382; Ezekiel, 213; Gilbert, 220, 221; John, 54, 83, 85, 94, 140, 157, 198, 310, 346; Jonathan, 213; Joseph, 213, 220, 324; Peter, 213; Roger, 220, 269; Robert, 220, 269, 345, 346; Samuel, 157, 230, 269; Thomas, 34, 56, 59, 83, 85, 93–95, 121, 156, 282, 284, 291, 310, 328, 506; Sylvanus, 269; the Misses, 247, 269, 381, 382; Shubael, 260, 261; Cornet, 259.
Miller, Abraham, 104, 220, 221; Anthony, 157, 223, 316, 527, 528; David, 369; Gilbert, 269; James, 223; John, 310; William, 228, 252.
Mills, Samuel, 120; Rev. Jedidiah, 332.
Minuse, 61.
Monroe, Peter J., 143.
Moore, Bishop, 337, 338.
Moore, Mrs., 269.
Morgan, John, 40; Jonas, 525.
Moriarty, Rev. P., 354.
Morrell, Rivers, 220; Samuel, 269.
Morris, Gilbert, 220; Colonel Lewis, 293, 309, 319.
Moseman, W., 268, 379, 380; Mrs., 144, 268.
Mosenell, Marcus, 228.
Mosher, Lieutenant, 257.
Mott, Gershom, 223; James, 182, 291, 362.
Muirson, Rev. George, 185, 191, 192, 299, 306–312, 318, 320, 361; Lieut., 259.
Mundy, Rev. E. F., 369.

Nanfan, Lieutenant-Governor, 103.
Neilson, Bloomer, 228.
Nelson, Nathanael, 341.
Nicholls, Wm., 99, 100, 102, 103, 524, 525.
Nicolls, Governor, 108.
Nicolson, Lieutenant-Governor, 200.
North, Rev. J. O., 370.

Oakley, Isaac, 251.
Ochampaugh, Rev. C., 357.
Odell, Isaac, 157; John, 84, 153; Samuel, 70, 84, 132, 518 [Lemuel Rogers]; William, 21, 23–26, 33, 50, 82–84, 157.
Ogden, David, 157, 526–528; John, 33, 40, ~~57~~, 78, 83, 91, 95, 295; Richard, 66, 85, 129, 134, 160, 173.
Ogilvie, Rev. George, 340.
Olmsted, Richard, 30, 31, 38, 40, 90.
Onderdonk, Bishop, 370.
O'Reilly, Rev. E. J., 371.
Orton, Joseph, 90, 95. See Horton.
Osborn, Rev. E., 357; D., 358.
Ostrander, Rev. D., 355, 357.

Paldin, Thomas, 213.
Palmer, Charles H., 388, 389, 390; Edward, 78; Robert, 78; M., 182; Sarah, 280; Rev. Solomon, 315; Sylvanus, 361.
Park, 35, 61, 160, 211; Charles, 103, 179, 506; Disbrow, 220; Jesse, 345, 347, 377; Phœbe, 345, 347; Roger, 28, 31, 70, 78, 103, 104, 208, 220; Sarah, 208.
Parker, Joseph, 488; Tamar, 355.
Parsons, A. W., 500; Jr., 391, 500; Ed. L., 500; John E., 500; W. H., 500.
Parsons, Brigadier-General S. H., 240, 241, 243, 248, 249, 257; Rev. Henry M., 425.
Patrick, R., 92.
Paulding, John, 167; Colonel, 237.
Payne, Rev. Thomas, 350, 368.
Pearce, Jacob, 33, 48, 58, 83, 139, 157, 181, 277, 300, 312; Daniel, 312; Mary, 300.

Pease, Rev. H. F., 357.
Peck, Charles, 374; Jared, 179, 378; Read, 371; Thomas, 144, 300; Rev. Isaac, 370, 371; Rev. P., 355; Rev. Joseph, 335; Hon. Jared V., 451.
Peet, Thomas, 74.
Pederick, B., 506.
Pell, Philip, 143; Thomas, 20.
Pelletier, F., 343.
Pelton, Rev. C. F., 357.
Penfield, Henry L., 148; Nathanael, 148, 301, 340.
Pennell, Rev. G. C., 371.
Perkins, Rev. J., 354.
Perry, Rev. L. P., 358.
Peyton, Wm. K., 246, 419.
Philipse, Adolph, 193; Frederick, 91, 96, 184.
Phœbus, Rev. W., 354.
Picket, Rev. W., 354.
Pillsbury, Rev. B., 358.
Pilmoor, Rev. J., 354.
Pine, James, 186.
Pollard, Major, 237.
Ponus, 133.
Porteus, Rev. W., 370.
Potter, Bishop, 343.
Prescott, Colonel, 243.
Prime, Rev. S. I., D. D., 349.
Pritchard, Rev. Thomas, 299, 306.
Provoost, Bishop, 338, 339.
Provoost, W. T., 186, 382.
Prudden, Rev. Peter, 277, 278.
Punderson, Rev. Eben. 300, 309, 315, 316, 318.
Purdy, 33, 198, 210, 211, 246; Caleb, 175, 196, 304, 316; Daniel, 66, 69, 70, 78, 310, 324, 328, 514–526; David, 104; Francis, 28, 78, 83, 85, 94; Hachaliah, 220; Henry, 187, 316; Isaac, 339; James, 29, 220; John, 44, 69, 83, 277, 328, 513, 515, 516; Joseph, 28, 34, 59, 60, 98, 104, 157, 220, 229, 230, 282, 290, 291, 316, 324, 328, 556–528; Josiah, 208, 209, 301, 303; Joshua, 210, 220, 230, 338, 339; Joshua P., 514; Jonathan, 229; Nathanael, 220; Obadiah, 104; Roger, 186, 220; Seth, 208, 220; Samuel, 66, 67, 78, 156, 175, 196, 304, 513; Sylvanus, 513, 514; Thomas, 291, 310, 328; William, 210.
Putnam, General I., 250, 258, 259.
Putney, Rev. R. C., 356, 357.
Quarters, Amos, 213.
Quintard, George W., 52, 136, 197, 209, 246, 418.
Quintard, Peter, 148.
Raikes, Robert, 175.
Rawls, John, 16.
Raymond, James, 228; Rev. E. S., 366, 371.
Redstone, Rev. H., 355.
Remington, Rev. David, 349, 350, 368; Rev. S., 356.
Revell, Thomas, 14.
Reynolds, Gideon, 194; Rev. Mr., 310.
Rice, 179; Rev. P., 356.
Richardson, Rev. M., 355.
Richbell, John, 153, 154, 397, 409, 525.
Ricker, Jeremiah, 213.
Rickey, Peter, 213; Thomas, 69, 183.
Roberts, Zachariah, 93.
Robeson, Thomas, 324.
Rock, Jacob, 213.
Rockwell, Dr. B., 170; Dr. W., 170; N., 170.
Rogers, Dr. David, 170, 196, 346; Dr. David, jr., 170; Dr. David L., 170; Dr. James, 170; Rev. Evan, 196, 304, 340; Martha, 196; Lieutenant-Colonel Robert, 233, 245; Major Zabdiel, 233, 243.
Roome, William, 182.
Roosevelt, Cornelius, 143; James, 328; John, 328.
Ross, Rev. William, 358.
Sacket, Captain, 257.
Saltonstall, Governor, 121.
Sandford, Rev. P. P., 356.
Sands, Dr. D. J., 53, 165, 169, 171; Dr. N. J., 171; Rev. J. J., 339.
Sanford, Dr. Clark, 169, 379; Henry, 170; John, 170; Josephus, 170.
Satterlee, S. K., 61, 385.
Sawyer, Thomas, 316; Rev. J., 555.
Saxton, Rev. Noah C., 348, 367; Rev. O., 370.
Say and Sele, Lord, 272.
Schuyler, General Philip, 243; Peter, 70, 515, 516, 520, 524.
Scott, General, 248, 249; John, 396.
Scureman, Jacob, 228.
Seabury, Rev. Samuel, 240, 317, 339.
Seaman, Isaac, 228; Silvanus, 245.
—— Rev. R., 356; Israel, 220, 221, 268, 269; Adam, 220, 221, 230, 268; Richard, 103.

Seely, Cornelius, 310.
Seldon, 256.
Selleck, Jonathan, 40, 115, 131, 151, 403.
Sellick, Rev. B., 357.
Seney, Rev. R., 356.
Seymour, Drake, 186.
Shanarock, 10, 11, 13–16, 99.
Shaw, Elizabeth, 174.
Sherwood, 61; Andrew, 324, 327; Caleb, 213; Isaac, 83, 157; Jonas, 157; Joseph, 31, 157, 324, 328; Nathanael, 129, 328; Nehemiah, 220; Silas, 213; Stephen, 28, 31, 39, 83, 279; Mrs. A., 209.
Shirly, C., 499.
Simcoe, Lieut.-Colonel, 256.
Sing, Rev. C. B., 357.
Slater, John, 220, 221; Henry, 220; Alva, 382.
Slaughter, Arnold, 213.
Slawson, 497.
Smith, Dr. Albert, 167; Arthur, 273; Rev. E., 355; E. L., 381; George W., 179, 383; Horace, 369; Rev. John, 104, 166, 167, 213, 330–335, 345–347; Rev. L., 354; Marmaduke, 273; Dr. Matson, 167; Rev. S. H., 370; Thomas, 104, 331; William, 34, 302; Hon. William, 200, 206; William H., 385, 505; William Hooker, M. D., 104, 166, 167, 213, 224; Rev. W. F., 370.
Smith, Lieut.-Colonel, 243.
Sneathing, Robert, 362, 363.
Sniffin, Caleb, 246; Jonathan, 52, 53, 246; Nathanael, 220; Samuel, 52; Rachel, 186.
Snuffene, George, 90. See Kniffen.
Sours, E., 368, 385.
Sparks, Rev. T., 357.
Spencer, Rev. I. S., D. D., 368.
Stanley, Dr. W. S., 171, 172.
Statham, 443.
Stebbins, Rev. George, 348, 367.
Stedwell. See Studwell.
Stevens, 137, 407; Jonas, 48.
Stevenson, John, 205.
Stewart, Rev. L., 371.
Stoakham, John, 57, 59, 157.
Strang, 120; Daniel, 28, 149, 150, 303, 504; Charlotte, 28; Henry, 78; Lavinia, 78.
Stringham, Peter, 166; Mary, 166.
Strong, Rev. B., 332.
Studwell, 61; Joseph, 85, 86, 186, 328; Thomas, 9, 10, 21, 23–26, 39, 82, 83, 99.
Sturges, 395.
Stuyvesant, Governor, 20, 106.
Summerfield, Rev. John, 370.
Sutherland, T. J., 382.
Sutton, John, 229; Joseph, 78; Thomas, 66, 120; William, 226, 229, 316.
Swain, Rev. M., 354.
Swords, E. J., 385.

Talbot, St. George, 302.
Talbot, Rev. S. K., 354.
Tatlon, Peter, 78.
Taylor, Alexander, 514; John, 213; Thomas, 213; Rev. G., 358; Mary, 395.
Telford, Archibald, 514.
Tennent, Rev. Charles, 196, 334; Rev. Gilbert, 330, 334.
Thatcher, Rev. W., 354.
Theall, 198, 210; Abraham, 144, 198; Charles, 210, 220; Ebenezer, 183, 324; Gilbert, 210, 220; Hannah, 183; Joseph, 94, 98, 102, 118, 131, 173, 210, 280, 282, 290, 291, 306, 310, 346; Thomas, 186, 187, 220.
Thomas, Cato, 213.
Thomas, John, 40, 103, 182, 210, 222, 225, 226, 245, 250, 252, 256, 316, 393; John, jr., 182, 211, 219, 228, 266; Thomas, 160, 224, 256, 257, 373, 380; Rev. J., 321.
Thomas, Rev. N. W., 355.
Thompson, Rev. W., 196, 341, 342, 367.
Thorne, Edward, 255; Stephen, 255; William, 103.
Throop, Lieut.-Colonel, 243.
Tilford, Archibald, 220.
Tilton, M. S., 361, 362.
Titus, George B., 385; Isaac, 223; James H., 31, 53, 193, 385.
Todd, Rev. Abraham, 332.
Tompkins, Noah, 385; Edward C., 390.
Toplady, Rev. A., 143.
Torner, Christian, 164.
Totten, Joseph, 354.
Townsend, Samuel, 228; Captain, 229.
Travis, Garret, 157; James, 157, 526–528; Jeremiah, 230; John, 324, 327; Robert, 324, 327; Philip, 48; Samuel, 151.
Treat, Major, 43, 44; Governor, 93, 94, 112.
Tredwell, Samuel, 223; Thomas, 103.
Trumbull, Dr. Benjamin, 191, 273, 274, 281.
Trumbull, Governor, 225, 230, 233, 234.

Tryon, Governor, 227, 228, 257.
Turner, John, 157, 324, 327, 526–528; Joseph, 228.
Tuttle, Dr. J. T., 52, 53.
Tyler, Colonel, 243.

Underhill, Humphrey, 66, 93–95, 98, 99, 130, 157, 182, 286, 295, 526–528.
Upjohn, R. M., 352.

Valentine, Isaac, 227.
Valleau, Rev. D., 354.
Van Amringe, 160; Augustus, 385.
Van Nostrand, Rev. A., 354.
Van Rensselaer, William P., 194; Kiliaen, 391.
Van Wagenen, G. H., 135, 295.
Van Wyck, Abraham, 328.
Veal, Arthur, 213.
Verrian, James, 223.
Vesey, Rev. William, 292, 312.
Vetch, Colonel, 204.
Vickers, Jonathan F., 172, 177, 269.
Vowles, Jonathan, 31, 33, 39, 54, 83, 90, 132; Richard, 21, 25, 26, 82, 83, 89, 90, 95.

Wainwright, Bishop, 342.
Wakeman, Rev., 273, 275.
Walters, Richard, 48, 157.
Walton, Abraham, 255; Rev. John, 158, 322–329.
Ward, Rev. E., 328–330; Rev. F., 354; Colonel, 243; Stephen, 248.
Wascot, 450.
Washburne, Rev. E., 356.
Washington, 142, 147, 148, 222, 224, 227, 229, 230, 232–238, 240, 243, 244, 247, 248, 251, 258.
Way, John, 103.
Webb, 53, 396; Nehemiah, 195, 196; Rev. Joseph, 195.
Weissenfels, de, Frederic, 79, 223.
Wenham, Thomas, 201.
Wentz, C. W., 125.
Wetmore, Abraham, 220; Ezrahiah, 87, 179, 180, 382; Rev. James, 78, 103, 146, 172, 174, 175, 185, 192, 210, 221, 296–300, 302, 303, 310, 314, 315, 317, 318, 327, 340, 363; James, 76, 151, 168, 175, 177, 210, 220; Timothy, 76, 146, 172, 175, 177, 210, 220–222.
White, Charles, 177; Rev. J. C., 343.
Whitefield, Rev. George, 314, 315, 330.
Whitman, Samuel, 325, 326.
Whittemore, Rev. Williams H., 348, 349, 367, 368, 499.
Wiggin, Augustus, 385.
Wight, Amherst, 172.
Will. See Lame Will.
Willett, Gilbert, 316; Marinus, 223; Colonel, 182; William, 514.
William III., King, 118, 524.
Williams, Joseph, 213; Walter, 104.
Willis, John, 220; Richard, 268.
Wills & Dudley, 342.
Willson, Dr. James, 171, 498.
Wilson, Thos. B., 61; Benjamin, 220; Ebenezer, 99, 100, 102, 103, 524, 525; John, 129; Nehemiah, 220; Joseph, 186, 220; Samuel, 78, 203; Thomas, 220; Rev. J., 354.
Winter, John, 139.
Winthrop, Governor, 72, 117.
Wolcot, Roger, 326.
Wood, 450.
Woodbridge, Rev. John, 118, 280, 281, 294, 299.
Woodhull, W., 39. See Odell.
Woolsey, Rev. Elijah, 356; Rev. Thomas, 354.
Wooster, Major-General David, 224, 225, 243–245, 249–251.
Worden, Dr., 166; Valentine, 166.
Wright, James, 295; Jotham, 147; Obadiah, 78; Thomas, 164.

Yeomans, Christopher, 157; Eliezur, 104; William, 157, 526–528.
Youngs, Christopher, 40.

GENERAL INDEX.

Absorption of home-lots, 35, 54.
Academies, 178.
Act for settling a ministry, 163, 282, 288–293, 305, 318, 320.
Adee Street, 269.
Advertisements, 75–79, 102, 146, 147, 150, 176, 182.
Amenia, N. Y., 498.
American army, position of, 215; withdraws from New York to the White Plains, 232.
American force at Greenwich, 246, 258; at King Street, 247, 248, 256, 257; at Rye, 233, 240; on Rye Neck, 250; at Saw Pit, 240, 243–247; near Rye Pond, 243, 248, 257, 459.
American Home Missionary Society, 350.
Amsterdam, N. Y., 497.
Ann's Hook, 20.
Apawamis, 6, 13, 16, 29, 31, 41, 99, 133, 134, 404, 412, 520. See Budd's Neck.
Apparel, of early settlers, 128.
Armonck, or Byram River, 134, 395.
Arms, 130.
Asia, man-of-war, in New York harbor, 227; off Mamaroneck, 226.
Assessment for taxes, 202.
Assessors, 62.
Associations, patriotic, 213.
Auction, paupers sold at, 163.
Avery's death, Mr., 240, 241, 318.
Awakening, the great, 330.

Baptist Church, King Street, 366; Port Chester, 371.
Barton's Neck, 52–54, 137, 396, 407, 416, 442.
Barry's Lane, 177.
Bayonet, repulse of a cavalry charge with the, 257.
Beach, Rye, 2, 183, 192–195, 294.
Beach Road, 474, 501, 502.
Beaver Meadow, or Stony Brook, 13, 14, 397.
Beaver Swamp, 137, 512, 419.
Bedford, N. Y., 17, 157, 166, 175, 279, 335; part of original territory of Rye, 131; of Rye Parish, 289, 305–307, 311, 314.
Bedford and Rye, 93, 111; summons to, 112, 113; revolt of, 113, 114; proclamations concerning, 116, 117; reannexed to Connecticut, 94, 127; restored to New York, 95, 118.
Bellamy, Dr., at Rye, 332.
'Biaram land,' the, 23.
Bills of credit, 204.
Bird's land, 137, 212.
Black Road, 514.
Blind Brook, or Mockquams, 2, 31, 56, 134, 135, 139, 149, 176, 179, 180, 266, 283, 298, 300–304, 337, 338, 340, 397, 400, 401, 404, 515, 516, 520, 521, 524, 525; farms along, 61; mill on, 66; branch of, 51, 56, 57, 67, 135, 421; falls of, 421.
Blind Brook Creek, 501.
Block Island, 230, 497, 498.
Bloomer's Hill, 137, 247, 270. See Kniffen's Hill.
Bloomer's Island, 137, 397.
Bloomer's mill, 166, 197, 397.
Border town, Rye a, 1, 2; inconveniences, 2, 271.
Border troubles, 119–122, 124, 458.
Boston, disturbances in, 218; closing of the port of, 218; 'tea-party,' 218; sympathy with people of, 218, 219; British army at, 226; evacuate, 227.
Boston Road, the, 138–144, 268, 300, 301, 396; appearance of, during the Revolution, 262, 263.
Boundary of New Netherland and Connecticut, dispute concerning, 105–107.

Boundary of New York and Connecticut, dispute concerning, 2, 91, 92, 95, 105–127; originated in ignorance of the country, 106, and conflicting terms of charters, 107, 108; agreement concerning, with the Dutch, 106; with the Duke of York's commissioners, 108, 109; extraordinary blunder concerning, 109; effect on people of Rye, 109, 110; new settlement of, 110, 111, 154; excluding Rye from Connecticut, 111, 112; partial survey of, 112; Connecticut insists on earlier construction of, 114; and claims Rye and Bedford, 114–118; local differences concerning, 119–122; new negotiations on, 122; settlement of, 123; uncertainty as to its location, 124; not a straight line, 125; still undetermined, 126.
Boundary of New York and Connecticut at Greenwich Bay, 107; at Mamaroneck River, 109, 114, 127, 153.
Boundary dispute in miniature, relative to Captain's Island, 375–377.
Boundaries of lands. See Marked Trees.
Bound Brook, 135.
Boyd's orchard, 339.
Branch Ridge, 61; allotments on, 86, 136, 442, 443.
Brand, town, 89.
Brander, the, 63, 89.
Brander's Book, 63, 89, 183.
Bread-and-butter Rock, 512.
Bridge, the stone, 141, 144, 150, 400, 419; near the fulling-mill, 505; Mamaroneck, 426.
Bridge's patent, 157, 294, 516, 518, 527.
Brief or license to collect money, 323.
Brighton, England, 143.
British army, position of, 215.
British fleet in New York harbor, 317.
British ships off Rye, 379.
British troops at Rye, first appearance of, 240; visits of, 245, 246, 252, 256–259.
Bronx River, 152, 155, 158, 234, 235, 372, 513, 527, 528.
Brown's Point, in Harrison, 103, 104, 459.
Brown's Point, Rye, 135, 401. See Peningo Neck.
Brush Ridge, 61, 136, 401, 409, 418.
Budd's Neck, or Apawamis, part of the town of Rye, 1; purchase of, 12; settlement of, 38–41; officers appointed for, 41; lands above, 98, 99, 132, 149, 157, 177, 199, 252, 253.
Bullard's Ridge, 407.
Bullock's meadow, 137, 407; landing, 194, 407; road to, 513.
Burying-ground. See Cemeteries.
Burying-hill, 28, 134, 192, 193.
Byram Bridge, 7, 246, 258, 259, 267, 379, 380; Cove, 380, 381; Point, 516; Ridge, 55, 136, 396; River, 66, 133–135, 139, 255, 259, 266, 375–378, 395, 396, 399, 516.

Cadborough Cliff, 37.
California patent, 157.
Canada, the French in, 47, 116; expedition against, 204.
Cannon spiked near King's Bridge, 226, 230, 270, 472.
Captain's Island, within the town of Rye, 372; boundary dispute about, 375–377.
Carmel, New York, 335.
Carriages, the first owned in Rye, 208.
Casualties, 91, 161, 207, 343, 453, 471.
Cattle driven off, 239, 245, 246.
Causeway Brook, 104, 136, 511, 512.
Cavalear's Rock, 134, 457.
Cedars, the, 136, 209, 328, 439; road to, 506.
Cemeteries, 195–199; *Public:* near Milton, 195, 196, 341, 401; near Christ Church, 198, 445; opposite Christ Church, 198, 303, 317, 318; Union, 137, 199; Roman Catholic, 7, 57, 137; Colored, 199; Presbyterian, at White Plains, 421, 467, 490. *Family:* Anderson, 198; Bloomer, 197; Brundige, 197; Budd, 198; Gedney, 198, 468; Haight, 198; Jay, 199, 479; Kniffen, 197; Lyon, 198; Merritt, 197, 198; Purdy, 198; Theall, 198; near Mamaroneck, 462.
Chatterton's Hill, 234–236, 467.
Chenango County, New York, 497.
Chests, 128, 129.
Chevalier. See Cavalear.
Chrestomathic Institute, 375.
Christ's Church, the name, when adopted, 342.
Church at Rye, earliest steps to build a, 282.
Church of England at Rye, founded, 305; rectors of, before the Revolution, 306–

319; incorporated, 316. See Parish Church, and Protestant Episcopal Church.
Churches of Rye and Port Chester, 271–371.
Churches of Westchester burned during the war, 337; of Rye, 265, 337, 345.
Church wardens. See Vestry.
Cincinnati, society of the, 224.
City Island, 231.
Clerk, the, 62, 421.
Cliff House, 452.
Clumps. See Islands.
Coe's land, 137, 407; ditch, 407; swamp, 416.
'Collation,' claim of British governors to the right of, 290.
Collector, the, 62; troubles of a, 417.
Colony line, the old, 154; lands east of, 60, 120, 121.
Commissioner of Justice, 68, 88, 89.
Commissioners to the General Court. See Deputies.
Committee of Safety, of New York, 230, 234, 270; of Westchester County, 168, 210, 225, 228, 229, 231, 250, 252, 268; of Rye, 228; of Harrison's Precinct, 223, 228; of New Jersey, 227.
Commons, the town, 32, 67.
Commons between Rye and Greenwich, 90, 121.
Common Schools, 178.
Confederacy of New England colonies, 43.
Congregationalists and Presbyterians of Connecticut, 272.
Congress, Continental, 226, 234; delegates to, 219, 222; provincial, of New York, 224, 225, 250.
Connecticut, charter of, 107; churches of, 272; laws of, 150, 173, 174; towns of, 88; collection throughout, 326, 327.
Connecticut, General Court of; address to Charles II., 22; letter of our planters to, 25; petitions to, 38, 39, 92; deputies to, 39, 95; patent from, 93; orders of, 24, 26, 30, 35, 38, 40, 41, 45, 88–95, 100, 118, 138, 139, 146, 501; relative to the ministry, 272–278.
Connecticut, Governor and Council of, remonstrate with New York in behalf of the people of Rye, 109, 110; write to selectmen of Rye, 112; correspondence of, with New York, about Rye and Bedford, 114–117; about the boundary, 122, 124; petition of the Presbyterians of Rye to, 323, 324; action of, 325, 328, 329.
Connecticut, legislature of, confers with that of New York, on the boundary, 124, 125; appoints commissioners, 125; confiscation of the property of loyalists, 249, 250, 264, 265, 268.
Connecticut, settlers of, expenses borne by, 17, 101; character of, 22; militia of, 43; sufferings of, in King Philip's War, 45; debt of, 45.
Connecticut, Rye a town of, 88–95; last town of, 96, 255.
Connecticut forces at Rye and Saw Pit, 233, 240, 243, 244, 248, 250.
Consociation, Fairfield, 336.
Constable of Hastings, 25; of Rye, 62, 89, 91, 164; of Greenwich, 458, 462.
Continental soldiers, return of, after the war, 265.
Convention of New York; at the White Plains, 229, 250.
Country road, 138–140, 501.
County rate, 91, 93.
Court, General. See Connecticut, General Court of.
Court, County, of Fairfield, 25, 68, 89, 274.
Court of Sessions at Westchester, 31, 32, 120, 154, 164, 174, 184, 192, 312, 418.
Court House, at Westchester, 206; the old, at White Plains, 158; burned, 239.
Courts removed to White Plains, 158.
Cow Boys and Skinners, 241, 242, 253, 260, 372, 460.
Cow Neck, Long Island, 255, 458.
Crompond (Yorktown), N. Y., 335.
Cromwell's Neck, 459.
Crooked Gutter, 135, 136.
Crosswicks, N. J., 322.
'Customes' of the town of Rye, 458.

Danbury, Conn., 245, 336.
Darien, Conn, 106.
Davenport's mill, 160, 450, 514.
Deall's mill, 160, 462, 514.
Debatable Ground, 2, 239, 372.
Debt, public, of the province of New York, 204, 216; of town, 386, 387, 417.
Declaration of rights, 222.
Defence of the town, 430.
Deerfield, Mass., attacked, 43, 44.
De Lancey's corps of refugees, 252, 257, 259.

Deputies to the General Court, 62, 71, 88, 95, 449 : exempted from taxation, 65 ; provision for expenses of, 89, 90 ; plantations to pay for horse-hire of, 90.
Deserter shot, 449.
Dick's Hollow, 431.
'Dissenters,' proportion of, in Westchester County, 289 ; at Rye, 306, 310, 311, 320, 321.
Dobbs' Ferry, 239, 249.
Doughty's, 148, 150, 151, 163, 462. See Old Fort.
Dr. Dwight's description of the Neutral Ground, 262, 263 ; of Rye, 347, 373, 379 ; of Saw Pit, 379.
Dragoons, troop of, at Rye, 115.
Drinking habits, 146, 150, 151, 163.
Drum, meetings called by beating the, 35, 311, 329.
Duke's trees, the, 123–125.
Dutch, the, in America, 3, 4, 8, 12–16, 19, 20, 24, 28, 45–47, 96, 105–107, 132, 396.
Dutchess County, New York, 498.

Ear-marks of cattle, 63, 419, 439.
East Chester, N. Y., 22, 157, 249, 257.
East Neck (Orienta), 154.
Eauketaupacuson, 56, 134. See Hog-pen Ridge.
Ecclesiastical lands, 294–304.
Education, how provided for by Connecticut, 173, 174 ; no public provision for in New York before the Revolution, 174 ; low state of, 174, 176 ; in Westchester County, 178. See Schools.
Eighteen Proprietors, the. See Proprietors.
Eighteen, purchase of the, 51, 401, 431.
Encroachments upon the town, 91.
Equivalent tract, ceded by Connecticut to New York, 110–112.
Estates at Rye, value of, in the seventeenth century, 64.
Evacuation of New York by the British army, 264.
Excise, commissioners of the, 205.
Excise on spirituous liquors, 148, 151, 205.
Expedition to Albany, 48, 396, 433, 443.

Fair at Rye, 211, 212.
Fairfield, Conn., 147, 195, 255, 274–276, 278, 395.
Fairfield County, Conn., constituted, 89 ; Rye a town in, 89, 100 ; bounds of towns in, settled, 90, 273.
Fairfield County Association, 327, 329, 330, 332, 333, 335, 336, 348.
Families, leading, a century ago, 208–211.
Farmers of Rye, confined in White Plains, 229 ; sufferings of, 240.
Farm-houses in olden times, 159, 162.
Farming in olden times, 161.
Farms at Rye, earliest, 53 ; a century ago, 162.
Fauconier's Purchase, 421, 426, 458, 463.
Fences, orders concerning, 65.
Fences, stone, when introduced, 162.
Fence-viewers, 62–65.
Ferriage, tariff of prices for, 79.
Ferry, between Rye and Matinecock Point, 452 ; Oyster Bay, 78, 79 ; proprietors of the, 78, 212, 489.
Field, the town, 31, 32 ; division of lands in, 51, 137, 208, 279, 313, 441 ; 'upper end of,' 409, 410, 411.
Field Fence, 31, 34, 51, 54, 450, 506, 507.
Field Gate, 32, 34.
Fire at Rye, 91, 207, 335, 337, 340, 343, 345, 400, 409 ; at the White Plains, 238, 239.
Fisheries at Rye, 160.
Fishing Rock, 78, 134, 430.
Flats, or Beach, the, 134, 501.
Flimwell Vent, England, 142.
Flushing, Long Island, 40, 103, 360.
Foraging parties, 239, 240, 249, 251 ; on the Sound, 253–256.
Fortification at Rye, 45. See Old Fort.
Fountain Street, Port Chester, 269.
Fox Island, 134, 135, 408, 431 ; road to, 507.
France, designs of, in America, 47, 116, 117.
Freeholders, admitted by the town, 65 ; not always proprietors, 82.
French and Indian War, 213, 216, 421.
French, the, attack Schenectady, 48.
Friends' meeting-house, 103, 257, 458, 459, 510.
Friends, Society of, 273 ; in Harrison, 103, 104, 182, 185, 187, 188, 212, 252, 360–365.
Frog's (Throg's) Neck, 231.
Frontiers, protection of, 201, 205, 206.
Fulling-mill, 505.

Funerals, liquor furnished at, 151, 163.
Furniture of houses in early times, 128, 151.

Galpin's Cove, 135, 194, 410.
Gates across the roads, 140, 502, 504, 505, 511, 514.
Glebe, the new, 298, 302, 303 ; road to, 505.
Glenville, 170, 258, 259, 379, 442.
Goose Island, 135.
Gospel, Society for the Propagation of the, 240, 294, 297, 300.
Governors of New York, provincial, character of, 200 ; contest of, with the people, 206 ; oppressive course of, in matters of religion, 290.
Grace Church, Rye, 309, 337–339. See Parish Church.
Grace Church Street, 2, 31, 32, 51, 52 ; laid out, 54, 136, 137, 144, 295, 442, 452, 457, 477, 506, 507.
Great Britain, colonial policy of, 216.
Great Neck (Larchmont), 154.
Great Stone by the Wading Place, 90, 93, 121, 124, 125, 132, 135.
Greenburg (Philipsburgh), 236; Upper, 349.
Greenfield, Conn., 346.
Greenwich Bay, boundary at, 107.
Greenwich, Conn., 139, 169, 171, 258, 273, 274, 276, 281, 282, 335, 345, 368, 497 ; first settlers of Rye from, 9, 10 ; dispute concerning boundary between Rye and, 120–123 ; dispute settled, 90, 106, 110, 111; Mr. Bowers called to, 118.
Greenwich, East, in Kent, England, 94.
Greenwich, second Congregational Church of, 259, 346.
Guilford, Conn., settlement of, 9, 32, 329, 332.
Guion's store, 467.
Gunn Brook, 53, 67, 136; Cove, 53, 399 ; Creek, 427 ; Plain, 396, 417, 442.
Gut or Creek, the, 134, 502, 504.

Hadley, Mass., attacked, 43.
Halifax, N. S., 265.
Hanover [Peekskill], N. Y., 335.
Hanover, house of, 219.
Harlem, 176, 371 ; railroad, 375.
Harrison, or the Purchase, 96–104; patent for, 97, 114; sale of lands in, 463; owned in common by patentees, 102, 472; early settlers in, 103, 146, 168, 181, 187, 188, 198, 210, 223, 257, 345, 370; patriotic meeting in, 220; committee of safety for, 223; officers elected in, 223.
Harrison, present town of, formerly a part of Rye, 2, 114 ; boundaries of, 6 ; bought by settlers of Rye, 15, 97 ; organized, 104, 160, 173, 372 ; roads in, 509–511.
Harrison Station, 141, 472, 514.
Harrison, 'Friends' of, 361.
Hart Island, 231.
Hart's Corners, 234.
Hartford, conferences of the Dutch and English at, 107.
Hartford, General Court of. See Connecticut.
'Haseco,' 136, 137, 407.
Hassock Meadow Brook, 52, 135.
Hassock Meadows, 51, 52, 136, 137, 270, 407, 427.
Hasting or Hastings, bounds of, 11, 515 ; village of 21, 30, 31, 55, 56 ; planters of, 21–26 ; differences in, 38 ; lands pertaining to, 38; deputies from, 88, 89 ; inhabitants of, appropriate land for parsonage, 294 ; merged with Rye, 30, 89, 395, 416, 501.
Hastings in Sussex, England, 21, 35, 36.
'Haunted house,' the, 270.
Haviland's Inn, 74, 142, 145–147, 162, 220. See Square House.
Haviland Island, 475.
Heathcote's Purchase, 101.
'Heathen' [Indians] in Rye, 311.
Hebron, Conn., 341.
Hempstead, L. I., 20, 103, 255, 290, 298, 313 ; harbor, 20, 254.
Hessians, force of, encamped near Mamaroneck, 233; on Kniffen's Hill, 235, 237, 242.
Highways. See Roads, Streets, and Highways.
Hog-pen Ridge, purchase of, 56 ; division of, 57, 136 ; farmers of, 267, 396, 399, 401, 417, 427, 442, 451, 477 ; road, 506.
Holland, possessions of, in America, 3, 106 ; surrendered, 28 ; recovered, 45, 46 ; finally relinquished, 47.
Home-lots, laid out on Manussing Island, 20 ; at Rye, 31, 32 ; new, 51 ; traces of, 34 ; absorption of, 35, 137 ; ministers', 298, 313.

Honge, or Blind Brook, 58, 133.
Horseneck, or Greenwich, 120, 141, 142, 147, 246, 258, 259, 345, 458.
Horseneck, on Budd's Neck, 411; Brook, 135; Creek, 514.
Horse-race, or Beach, 134.
Horse-race on the Beach, 212, 213.
Horse-rock, 457.
Horton's Dock, 80; Pond, 104, 234, 236, 459.
'House by the ferry,' 79, 134, 168.
Houses of early settlers, how built, 33; where built, 33, 420, 440; near together, 34, 54, 55; how furnished, 128, 129. See Farm-houses.
Hoyet's Inn, King's Bridge, 147.
Hudson's Ferry, 157.
Huguenots of Rye, 431, 444, 465, 479, 480.
Huntington, L. I., 20, 255, 276.
Hunt's mill, 477.

Independents or Congregationalists, 271.
Indian deeds, 10–16, 56–58, 63, 98, 99, 101, 152–154, 502; fields, 5; 'line,' 431; 'mortars,' 194; names, 133, 134, 136, 152, 153; paths, 4, 138 (see Westchester Path); purchases, 8–18, 51, 55–58, 97, 152–154, 515, 520; remains, 193, 194; slaves, 192, 311; 'stockings,' 128.
Indian villages near the Sound, 5, 193; near Rye Beach, 5, 194; on Manussing Island, 5, 194; near Rye Village, 191; on Lyon's Point, Port Chester, 268; near Bullock's Landing, 513.
Indians, early condition of, 189–191; numbers, 192; visits to Rye, 192, 193.
Indians, trade with the, 206.
Indians of Connecticut friendly, 42, 49; but distrusted, 44; how treated, 190, 191; of New York, 189; visits of, to the city, 192, 193; sufferings from, 410.
Induction of rectors by order of the governor, 306, 309, 312–315, 317, 322.
Innkeepers chosen by the town, 148.
Inns, 145–151.
Inoculation, 168, 169.
Intemperance, 150, 151.
Islands: Bar Rock, 2; Black Tom, 2; Bloomer's, 137; Captain's, 375–377; Fox, 135; Goose, 135; Hen, 14, 52; Humphrey's Rock, 3; Pine, 3, 14, 85, 135, 194; Scotch Caps, 14, 85, 135; Wrack Clump, 3.

Jamaica, L. I., 290, 297, 334.
Jay mansion, 299, 373; cemetery, 48, 479.
'Jenney's garden,' Mr., 301, 504.
Judith Point, 376.
Justice of the peace, 62, 67; powers of, 68; appointed, 68, 91, 94, 95; action of, 119, 212, 213.
Justices and Vestry, 150, 289–291.

Keithians, 361.
Kennedy's mill, 160.
Kersey, 128.
Killingworth, Conn., 328.
King Philip's War, 42–45, 54, 278, 285, 286.
King's Bridge, 147, 150, 462; spiking of
King's Chapel, Boston, 310.
King's [Columbia] College, 209.
cannon near, 226, 233, 234, 239, 246.
King Street laid out, 55; settlement along, 55; 136, 137, 166, 177, 212, 236, 247–249, 252, 256–258, 260, 269, 370, 378, 497, 498, 509–511.
King Street Square, 178.
Kirby Avenue, 193, 507.
Kirby's mill, 137, 160.
Kniffen's Cove, 32, 79, 135, 208, 503, 504; Hill, 137, 242, 246, 247, 270; land, 137, 417; Lane, 209, 410.

Labor, price of, 129.
Lakes Champlain and George, settlers near, from Rye, 213, 214.
Lame Will's Purchase, 56, 57, 61, 407, 408, 515; northern part of present town, 57, 70; second purchase, 58–60; bounds of, renewed, 65, 134, 156, 400, 427, 441, 448.
Land speculation in the province of New York, 96.
Lands at Rye, price given for, 16, 17, 57; owned in common, 96; distribution of, 50–61; tendered for sale to the town, 65, 441; valuation of, 91; free use of, 59; rough measurement of, 60; care of, 67; patent sought for, 69.
Lands, lavish grants of, in New York, 96–98.
Lands, unappropriated, in Fairfield Co., divided among the towns, 90.

Larchmont, 155.
Lawlessness during the Revolution, 260, 261; after, 265, 266.
Lawrence's tavern, Saw Pit, 268.
Lawyers of Rye and Port Chester, 171.
'Layers out' of lands, their duties, 60; report of, 86, 156.
'Lean-to,' 149, 150, 282.
Leather garments, 128.
Lebanon, Conn., 171.
Legacies, specimens of, 128.
Lewisboro', or South Salem, 170.
Lexington, battle of, 222.
Library, Mr. Denham's, 279.
Light-house on Captain's Island, 377.
List of Persons and Estates, 64, 65, 89.
Listers, 62.
Litchfield, Conn., 315.
Litigation, 114, 397, 403, 440; fondness of early settlers for, 68.
Limping Will, 441, 462. See Lame Will.
Lloyd's Neck, L. I., 254, 255.
Lobster catching, 161.
Locust Avenue, 505.
London Board of Trade, 184.
Long Island, Dutch villages on, 3, 46; English towns on, 20.
Long Island, loyalists of, 249, 253–255.
Long Island Sound, 1; operations on, during the Revolution, 230, 244, 246, 253–255.
Long Meadow, 527, 528.
Lot, lands drawn for by, 59.
Lottery at Rye, 146.
Lounsbery Farm, 422.
Lower going over, 66, 135, 160.
Loyalists, 245, 249, 264. See Tories.
Lyon's Dock, 135; Mill, 208, 304, 502, 514, 520, 521; Point, 53, 135, 137, 144, 197, 267, 268, 399, 427, 461; road across, 509.

Mails, 71–75.
Main Street, Port Chester, 268, 269.
Mamaroneck, 134, 148, 157, 170, 373; submits to the Dutch, 46, 396; part of Rye parish, 175, 289, 305, 306, 311; whaling sloop, belonging to, 161; tax upon slaves in, 393; poor of New York sent to, 250; troops posted at, 233; advance of British upon, 234; engagement at, 233; British force at, 235, 245, 247; man-of-war off, 226; loyalists of, 249, 264; Col. Heathcote at, 305; Society of Friends at, 361; Episcopal Church at, 370; stage from, to Williams' Bridge, 375; market boat from, burned, 379.
Mamaroneck River, 6; mills on, 66, 160; boundary line at, 109, 154; falls of, 66, 139, 140, 152, 154, 155, 198, 372, 477, 478.
Man Island, 465.
Manhattan Island, 3, 19.
Manussing, etymology of name, 133, 134.
Manussing Island, part of the town of Rye, 1; purchased, 10, 446, 449; settlement of, 19–26; area and position of, 19, 20; planters of, 21, 294; house-lots on, 395, 407, 441; removal from, 30, 31; a pound on, 31; roads to, 53, 54, 141, 501, 504, 507; controversy relative to, 70, 132, 429, 431, 475, 477; Indian remains on, 193, 194, 407, 415, 501, 516–519.
Map, of Rye, Webb's, 160; Erskine's, 141, 160; of Budd's Neck, 149; of the White Plains, 132, 157.
'Mariner,' 160.
Marked trees, bounds designated by, 6, 57, 157, 421, 431; renewed, 66, 156; 'the antient,' 70; disappearance of, 124; vestiges of, 6.
Market sloops, 161; first, 270; taken on the Sound, 253, 254, 379.
Markets and fairs, act for settling, 212.
Marriages performed by the magistrate, 26.
Marvin's tavern, Fairfield, 147.
Mathews' Memorial, 353.
Mattinecock Point, L. I., 452.
Meadow lots, 32, 51.
Medical profession, in the colonial period, 165.
'Meeting-house' to be built, 118, 306, 323.
'Meeting-house,' the, at White Plains, 158, 323, 414, 513; 'the old,' at Rye, 345.
Meetings, religious, in private houses, 34; in the town-house or parsonage, 306, 338.
Meetings, town, where held, 50.
Merritt's Point, 54, 137, 399, 427.
Merritt's tavern, incident near, 257.
Methodist Episcopal Church of Rye, 354–359; of Port Chester, 366, 369, 370.
Middle Patent, 312, 396.
Middle [Purchase] Street, 510.
Middletown, Conn., 314.
Milford, Conn., 161.

Militia, 130, 433 ; called out, 229, 231.
Mills, 159, 160 ; on Blind Brook Creek, 29, 33, 159, 404 ; on Blind Brook above the town, 66 ; on Mamaroneck River, 66, 160 ; on Byram River, 66, 160 ; Bloomer's, 160, 397, 508 ; Bowne's, 260 ; Peter Brown's, 160, 400, 505 ; Budd's, 404, 501 ; Deall's, 160, 514 ; Davenport's, 160, 397, 514 ; at Glenville, 379 ; Hunt's, 157, 160 ; Kennedy's, 160 ; Kirby's, 160 ; Lyon's, 502, 520, 521 ; Ogden's, 160, 268 ; Park's, 160, 398, 402 ; Phillips', 157 ; Dr. Sanford's, 170, 379 ; Seaman's, 268 ; Thomas's, 160 ; Underhill's, 160 ; Van Amringe's, 160, 514.
Mills, built by permission of the town, 66 ; regulations concerning, 66.
'Milstone' [Milton] Landing, 501.
Milton, Rye, 195, 258, 295.
Milton Road, 438, 502, 503.
Mines at Rye, 477.
Ministers of the Gospel, exempt from taxation, 65 ; salary of, 130.
Minister's rate, 274.
Ministers called by vestrymen and churchwardens, 289.
Ministry, care of the founders of Connecticut to provide a, 272 ; Rye without a, 272 ; orders relative to the, 272–277 ; first supported in Connecticut by voluntary contributions, 283 ; afterward by taxation, 284 ; how provided for in New York, 187–293.
Moaquanes, or Mockquams, 515.
Mockquams, 5, 10, 99, 134, 520. See Blind Brook.
Mohegan villages, 5 ; at Rye, 193, 268.
Monmouth, battle of, 247.
Montauk Point, 231.
Morals, state of, 151.
Mosquito Cove, L. I., 255, 452.
Murder of Jonathan Kniffen's daughter, 209, 252, 253, 419 ; of John Flood's daughter, 270 ; Shubael Merritt's, 260, 261.

Names and places at Rye, 133–137.
Names of New England towns, upon what principle chosen, 21.
Narraganset, 310.
Negro insurrections, 183.
Negro Point, 135.
Negroes, instruction of, 185, 186, 188.
Nelson Hill, engagement on, 283.
Neutral Ground, the, 215, 216, 245, 251, 260–263, 336, 337.
New Amsterdam, 3 ; surrender of, 108.
Newark, N. J., 333.
New Brunswick, departure of loyalists for, 264, 265.
New Canaan, Conn., 106.
New Castle, 167, 362, 371, 397.
New Haven, magistrates of, 273.
New Haven Railroad, 375.
New London, Conn., 322.
New Milford, Conn., 264.
New Netherland, 3, 28, 105, 108, 153.
New Rochelle, 167, 209, 212, 228, 231–233, 248–250, 258, 261, 354, 355.
Newtown, L. I., 273.
Newspapers :
'New York Gazette,' 74, 246, 252, 253.
'New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury,' 74, 76.
'New York Gazette or Weekly Post Boy,' 74, 76, 161.
'New York Weekly Journal,' 75, 76.
Rivington's 'New York Gazette,' 220, 221.
Newspapers of Port Chester, 382, 383.
New Windsor, N. Y., 250.
New York city, defence of, 201, 203.
New York, provincial Assembly of, denounces the defection of Rye and Bedford, 115, 116 ; acts of, 140, 211, 212, 282.
New York, legislature of, constitutes the towns of Rye, Harrison, and White Plains, 372 ; appoints commissioners to ascertain the boundary line, 124, 125 ; recognizes the line ascertained, 126.
Non-importation agreements, 217, 218, 220.
North Castle, part of original town of Rye, 17 ; boundary between, and Rye, 57 ; army at, 239, 248, 257 ; Whitefield Patent in, 449 ; Middle Patent in, 312, 396 ; religious services at, 314 ; Society of Friends in, 362, 363, 372, 378, 421, 497.
Northfield, Mass., abandoned, 43.
North Haven, Conn., 314.
North Street, or White Plains Road, 51, 141, 156, 511, 512.
Norwalk, Conn., 106, 141, 149, 241, 275, 321, 340.

Norwich, Conn., Indian plains at, 32; proprietary system at, 87.
Notabilities of Rye, a century ago, 208–211.
Nova Scotia, departure of loyalists for, 264, 265.

Oblong, the, 111, 112. See Equivalent Tract.
Occupations, 159–162, 450, 471.
Ogden's Dock, 134, 430.
Old Colony line, 154.
Old Fort, 34, 44, 45, 48, 49, 139, 150, 399.
'Old Stone End,' 269.
Old Town, 29, 33, 278, 501.
Orienta, 155.
Orphans, rights of, secured, 86; care of, 164.
Oyster Bay, L. I., 20, 103, 212, 255, 376, 410, 426, 456.
Oyster fishery at Rye, 160, 161.
Oyster Pond, now Orient, L. I., 224, 225.
Oyster-shells, heaps of, 33.
Ox-pasture Neck, 135.

Packet vessels from Rye to New York, 80.
Palisades, towns inclosed with, 45.
'Pan-handle,' the, 106.
Panthers, bounty for killing, 92.
Parish of Rye, 104, 164, 175, 287–293, 305, 307, 311, 314–317.
Parish and town of Rye, difference between, 308.
Parish Church of Rye, designation of, 306; building of, 307, 308, 309; built by the town, 307; site of, 309, 310–318; claimed by the Presbyterians, 321.
Parish clerk, 341.
Park Academy, 34, 209, 426.
Park's mill, 10, 136, 197, 427, 444.
Parliament, British, representation in, 216, 219; enactments of, requiring assent of colonial assemblies, 216, 217, 219; oppressive enactments of, 216–221.
Parsonage house, built, 277; religious services in, 338; burnt, 340.
Parsonage lands, 118, 275, 277, 279; surveyed, 296, 299, 300; Parson's or Parsonage Point, 135, 294–296; alienated, 294, 313; lot in the Town Field, 295, 296, 449, 450; lawsuit regarding, 296; recovered by the Presbyterians, 297; home-lot or 'old parsonage,' 34, 118, 144, 176, 277, 279, 301–304, 318.
Parsonage Point, Indian remains on, 193.
Patent of Budd's Neck, 520–524; of Harrison's, 524–526; of the White Plains, 157, 526–530.
Patent of Rye, from Connecticut, 82, 92–94; from New York, 515–520; proceedings relative to, 69, 70, 266; 515.
Patent to Clapp and others, 458, 466.
Patents, income of the government from the granting of, 101.
Patents, royal, 515–530.
Patriotic families in Rye, 211.
Peck's land, 457.
Peekskill, N. Y., 167, 335; army at, 248.
Penfield House, 34, 145–148, 160, 380. See Square House.
Peningo, 10, 133, 134.
Peningo Neck, 1, 2, 400; first purchase on, 9, 51–55, 515; second, 11, 55–61; 102, 135, 153, 180; Indian remains on, 193, 194, 247, 266, 302.
Peningo Path, 502.
Pewter, 128.
Philippi, N. Y., 336.
Philipsburg, 184.
Philipse Patent (Southeast), 335.
Phillips' mill, 157.
Physicians of Rye and Port Chester, 165–172.
Pine Island, 135.
Piracy, 184, 185.
Plains, the, at Rye, 32, 304, 395, 409, 411.
Plantation. See Town.
Planters of the town, their character, 22, 23; declaration of their purposes, 23; compact of, 23, 24; *bonâ fide* settlers, 96.
Pockeotessen, or Pockcotessewake—Stony Brook, 12, 13, 99, 134, 520.
Poll tax, 203.
'Polly and Ann,' sloop, 227.
Poningo, 133. See Peningo.
Poor of New York, quartered on the inhabitants of Rye and other places, 250.
Poor, provision for the, 162–164.
Population of Rye, 64, 373, 375; of Port Chester, 381.
Port Chester, village of, 2, 136, 137, 252, 378–383; name taken, 381; incorporated, 381; meeting of boundary commissioners at, 125, 126; churches of, 366–371. See Saw Pit.
Post, communication by, 44, 71–75.
Post-office at Rye, 374.

Post-road. See Boston Road.
'Pounders,' 62, 104.
Preamble line, 121.
Precincts, of Rye Parish, 104; of Westchester County, 289.
Presbyterian Church of Rye, beginnings of, 271–275; early ministry of, 276–286; parsonage lands of, 294–300; consolidation of, 322; size of, 320, 321, 329; ministers of, before the Revolution, 321–335; church edifice built, 328; burned, 335.
—— Since the Revolution, 345; congregation gathered, 345; incorporation of, 346; church rebuilt, 345; ministers of, 348–352; Mr. Clark's services to, 351–352; third church edifice, 352, 500; fourth, 352, 353; location of, 465.
Presbyterian Church in New York, 331; at the White Plains, 158; of Port Chester, 367–369.
Presbyterian settlers of Connecticut, 272.
Presbyterian 'Society' of Rye and the White Plains, 327, 328, 371.
Presbyterians of Rye and the White Plains, their memorial to the government of Connecticut, 323, 324, 413; their correspondence with the Trustees of Yale College, 325, 327.
Presbytery of Bedford, 349, 350, 368; of Dutchess County, 334–336; of Hudson, 336; of New Brunswick, 335; of New York, 334, 335, 348, 349; of Philadelphia, 322.
Princeton, attack on, 248.
Proclamation of Governor Fletcher, to Rye and Bedford, 116, 117.
Proprietary system, 35, 81, 82, 86, 87; rights, 81; sale of, 82, 84, 415.
Proprietors, the Eighteen, of Peningo Neck, 32, 81–87, 173, 174, 283, 396, 397; original number, 82; possessions, 83; increase, 83; lists, 82, 83; grants, 85; allotments, 86; lay out lots at Saw Pit, 267; admit Mr. Denham, 278; Mr. Bridge, 312; call Mr. Buckingham, 321; ask for patent, 92; dissolved, 87.
Protestant Episcopal Church of Rye. See Church of England, and Parish Church.
—— Since the Revolution, 337; congregation gathered, 337; delegates to convention chosen, 337; church rebuilt, 338, 339; name changed, from Grace to Christ's Church, 340; incorporation of, 339; rectors of, 337–343; third church edifice, 342; fourth, 343, 344.
Protestant Episcopal Churches:
St. Andrew's, Richmond, Staten Island, 338.
St. Peter's, Port Chester, 370, 371.
St. Stephen's, New York, 338.
St. Thomas', Mamaroneck, 342, 370.
Provincial government of New York, abuses under, 200–203.
Provincial governors, 200–206, 227, 288–291, 297, 298, 305, 306, 313, 314; character of, 200.
Provisions, cost of, 129, 130.
Provoost estate, 53, 134, 488.
Pulpit Plain, 52, 85, 86, 136, 328, 329, 437.
Punishments, 69, 183, 452.
Purchase Avenue (Port Chester), 178, 209, 269, 508; Road, 236, 300, 509.
Puritans, many of them Presbyterians, 272.
Putnam's ride, 259; Hill, 380.

Quacks, numbers of, in colonial times, 165.
Quakers, 273, 306, 311, 312, 321, 458. See Friends, Society of.
Quaroppus, or the White Plains, 51, 134, 152.
Queen's Rangers, the, 254, 256; recruits for, in Westchester County, 228, 270.
Quitrents, 266, 377.

Raccoon Ridge, 136.
Rahonaness, — Greenwich? 10, 515.
Rates, minister's, 118, 458.
Rattlesnake Brook, 135.
Receipt Book, the New, 201, 206.
Records, Town, 62, 63, 85, 266, 327.
Records, Vestry. See Vestry.
Recruits for the British army, 228, 270.
Rectors of Grace Church, Rye, character of, 318, 319; burial-place of, 198, 318. See Church of England, and Protestant Episcopal Church.
Rectory grounds, 34, 303, 304, 340.
Rectory Street, 301, 444, 504.
Refugees, loyalist, 242; departure of, after the war, 264, 265. See Tories.
Regent Street, 127, 144, 178, 209, 246, 253, 260, 267, 419.
Revenue laws, rigorous enforcement of, by the British, 217.

Revolution, the American, 215–266; causes leading to, 206, 216–218; education of the people for, 214; local history of, worth recording, 215, 216; sufferings of the people of this region during, 215, 216, 225, 239, 240, 245, 249, 250, 252, 253, 256, 259–263; outrages committed during, 225, 240, 241, 460; incidents during, at Rye, 225, 240, 242, 243, 245–247, 252, 253, 256–258, 260, 261, 460, 471; close of, 264; effects of, 264, 265, 337, 345.
Reynolds' Cove, 135.
Richbell's Patent, 153, 525; Neck, 397.
Richmond, Staten Island, 338.
Richmond County, N. Y., 289.
Ridge Road, 7, 53, 136, 137, 246, 397, 398, 402, 444.
Road, Boston. See Boston Road.
Roads laid out in Rye, 138–140, 156; early condition of, 92, 141, 142; commissioners of, 140; regulation of, 140. See Streets and Highways.
Rodman's Neck, 231.
Roman Catholic Church, Port Chester, 371; cemetery, 371.
Romney marsh, 37.
Rope-walks, 159.
Row-galleys, 230, 254. See Whale-boats.
Rye, derivation of the name, 37.
Rye Ferry, 37, 79, 134, 168, 212; road to, 507.
Rye Flats, 183. See Beach.
Ryegate, England, 143.
'Rye men,' 154.
Rye Neck, dock at, 79; school on, 177; a school district, 180; Alice Haven's home on, 199; roads on, 513.
Rye Neck, guard on, 231, 244; American force on, 247, 250, 258.
Rye Neck, tories of, 226.
Rye Pond, 97, 98, 447, 457, 463, 467, 510, 524; tract between Byram River and, 458, 466; American force stationed near, 243, 248, 257.
Rye Port, 375, 381.
Rye Woods, 210, 226, 252, 256, 362, 363, 373.
Rye, town of, its shape, 1; position, 2; extent, 2; aspect 2; purchase of, 8–16; original area of, 17; constituted, 30, 89; remotest plantation of Connecticut, 271; bounds of, 57, 66, 70; extended, 90; supposed to reach the Hudson River, 91, 109, 110, 153, 154; included within county limits, 89; ceded to New York, 92; resumed by Connecticut, 93, 94, 114, 127; restored to New York, 95, 102; patent of, from Connecticut, 93; patent of, exclusive of Budd's Neck, from the Crown, 70, 515; patents of, 515, 530; reduced by act of legislature to its present limits, 266, 372; population of, 43, 173; from 1665 to 1699, 64; in 1710 (including the parish), 320; in 1798, 373; in 1810, 373; in 1820, 373; in 1841, 375; in 1870, 375.
Rye, American force at, 233, 240. See American force. British troops at. See British troops.
Rye, churches of, 271–371; families of, early settlers — 1660 to 1700 — and their descendants, 395–450; later inhabitants — 1700 to 1800 — and their descendants, 451–499.
Rye, soldiers from. See Soldiers.
Rye, village of, laid out, 31; early appearance of, 33; differences in, 38; lands pertaining to, 38.
Rye, inhabitants of, their petition relative to Budd, 38, 39; for help against the Dutch, 47; settle near the Hudson, 109; their petition relative to Philipse, 91, 109, 110; they have no patent from the Crown, 97; are summoned to prove their title to lands, 97, 112, 113; their defection from New York, 92, 102, 113–118; they apply to be received by Connecticut, 93, 114; received, 93, 94, 114, 127; Col. Heathcote's interview with, 100, 101; they are remanded to New York, 95, 102; they complain of Harrison, 102; their petition for indulgence in the collection of taxes, 118, 119; their claim to lands above Mamaroneck, 153; petition relative to a fair, 211; manners and customs of, 128–132; religious character of, 22, 271, 272; perplexities of, upon the outbreak of the Revolution, 218, 220; patriotic meeting of, 219; 'loyal' declaration of, 220; counter declarations of, 221; address of a patriot to, 221, 222; military companies raised by, 223; removal of well-affected, 251; sufferings of, see Revolution.

Rye in Connecticut, 88–95, 100, 140, 246, 252, 255.
Rye, Sussex, Eng., settlers from, 30, 399; account of, 35–37; condition of roads in, 142, 143.

Sabbath-breaking, 151.
Saint Mary's Lake. See Horton's Pond.
Salem, N. Y., 335.
Salt, 'a church full of,' 233.
Salt meadows, 20.
Salt-works destroyed at Greenwich, Conn., 258.
'Sandford's Bark,' 170.
Sand's Point, L. I., 254, 255.
Saw-log Swamp, 137.
Saw Pit, village of, now Port Chester, 347, 403; settlement of, 267; first mention of, 137; origin of name, 267; lots laid out at, 267; Indian wigwams near, 268; landing, 267; market sloops from, 161, 267; old residents of, 267–270; old houses of, 267–270; taverns of, 267–269; schools of, 178, 269; school district of, 180; physicians of, 170, 171; lawyer of, 172; number of houses in, a century ago, 267; American force at, 240, 243–247; engagement at, 258; murders near, 260, 270; hanging a tory at, 245; roads in the vicinity of, 508, 509; new road through, 144, 268; religious destitution of, 366; moral condition of, 366; religious services at, 341, 342, 349, 366, 367; churches of, 366–371; later history of, 378–381; growth of, 378; Mr. Jared Peck at, 378, 379; mills of, 268, 379; Dr. Dwight's description of, 379; Lafayette at, 380; steamboats from, 380, 381; change of name, 381. See Port Chester.
Scarsdale, 155, 305, 310, 372.
Schenectady, N. Y., burning of, 48.
Schepens, 396.
Schools at Rye, 173–180, 375; efforts to establish, 173; public provision for, in Connecticut, 173; none in New York, 174; how maintained, 174; character of, 174, 176; the Society's, 174, 175; where held, 176; George Harris's, 177; Mr. Avery's, 176; on Rye Neck, 177; at Saw Pit, 177; on Regent Street, 177; Mr. Samuel U. Berrian's, 375.
School districts, 179, 180.
School-house 'near the church,' 67, 86, 168, 348.
Schoolmasters at Rye, 151, 173–178, 375.
School system, common, 178, 179.
Scotch Caps, 135; Neck, 135; Point, 452.
Seaman's tavern, 245, 269.
Sedge lands, 475.
Selectmen, 62, 67, 111, 112.
Seminary, Female, 437.
Serge, 128.
Servitude, persons sold into, 453.
Setauket, L. I., 255, 396.
Sheep masters, 62, 67, 104.
Sheep pasture laid out, 67, 86; regulations concerning, 66, 67.
Sheepscott, Me., 280, 285, 286.
Shepherd, 67.
Sherwood's Bridge, 258, 259, 442.
Shipwreck, 161.
Sign-post, 'near the church,' 67.
Skinners, 241, 242, 372.
Slavery, African, introduced by the Dutch, 181; extent of, in New England, 181; first mention of, at Rye, 181; illustrations of, 181–186; Friends' testimony against, 187, 188; abolition of, 186–188.
Slaves, census of, 181, 182, 187, 320, 373; names of, 181–184, 186; moral and religious condition of, 185, 186; manumission of, 186, 187; importation of, 184; tax on, 182, 393; valuation of, 202.
Slaves, Indian, 182, 192, 311.
Slave-trade, 181, 184, 185.
Sloops, sailing from Kniffen's Cove, 79; from Milton, 80; from Rye Neck, 80, 161; from Saw Pit, 80, 161, 374.
Small-pox, inoculation for the, 168, 169.
Smithtown, L. I., 255.
Sniffen's Hill, 137, 270. See Kniffen's Hill.
Soubriquets, 435, 438.
Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, 174, 175, 177, 185, 191, 294, 302, 305–315, 317–321.
Soldiers from Rye:
In King Philip's War, 43, 44.
In Expedition of 1690, 48.
In French and Indian War, 213, 214.
In Revolution, 223.
In War for the Union, 384, 387–391.
Somers, N. Y., 497.
Sons of Liberty, 218.

Sound. See Long Island Sound.
Southbury, Conn., 348.
Southold, L. I., 273, 403.
Spelling, defective, 61, 168, 169.
Square House, 47, 142, 145–148, 210, 264, 374.
Stage-coach, the first, between New York and Boston, 76, 77, 212.
Stage-coach between Rye and New York, 78, 145; between Mamaroneck and Williams' Bridge, 375.
Stage-house. See Square House; Wright's tavern, etc.
Stamford, Conn., 26, 93, 106, 107, 121, 131, 139, 142, 147, 165, 182, 255, 258, 275, 278, 280, 379, 399.
Stamford Road, 139.
Stamp Act, 217; repeal of, 217.
Steamboat landing, 134, 442.
Steamboats touching at Rye, 374; at Byram Cove, 380, 381.
Steep Hollow, 52, 86, 136, 246.
Steep Rock, 194.
Stills, 435.
Stocks, the, at Rye, 69, 131, 183.
Stone walls, when introduced, 162.
Stony Brook, 135, 137, 153, 160, 414, 440.
Store, 'the bigg,' 450.
Strang's tavern, 71, 139, 148–150, 444.
Street, village, 31, 33.
Streets and highways, records of, 501–515.
Sun, 'sign of the,' in Rye, 150, 462.
Sunday-school, early, at Rye, 175.
Sunday-school buildings, 343, 352, 353.
Summerfield Church, 370.
Supervisor of the town, 62, 69.
Supervisors, board of, for Westchester County, 104, 146, 163.
Surrender of Cornwallis, 264.
Sussex, England, settlers from, 30; dialect of, 137; roads in, 142, 143.
Swamps, Great, 57, 137, 246, 417; Long, division of, 51, 137; valued by first settlers, 51, 52; names of, 137, 407; disappearance of, 52, 53, 137.
'Swamp Mortar Rock,' 194.
Synod of New York, 333–335; New York and Philadelphia, 335.

Taffy's Plain, 136, 465.
Tarrytown, American force at, 248, 249.
Taverns, regulated by the town, 66, 150, 151.
Taverns at Saw Pit, 267–269.
Tax for the support of the ministry, 283, 284.
Taxation for support of the Church of England, resisted, 322.
'Taxation without representation,' 216, 219.
Taxes, at Rye, under Connecticut, 65, 90; who exempt from, 65; under New York, remissness in paying, 114; alleged reason for revolt, 116, 117, 200; petition concerning, 119; 121, 216; collector imprisoned for failure to gather, 417.
Taxes and imposts, under New York, 200–206.
Tea, bill of Parliament imposing duties on, 217, 218; agreement not to import, 217, 218, 220.
Teamsters, from Rye, in the American army, 251, 460.
Theall's Hill, 374.
Thomas, seizure of Judge, 252, 455; plot for, 226.
Throg's Neck, L. I., 231, 232, 246.
Timothy's Swamp, 137.
Toby's Hole, 261, 505.
Tom Jeffer's Hill, 136, 173, 416.
Tompkins Avenue, 143.
Tories of Rye, 176, 216, 222; plots of, 225–227; rejoicings of, on the arrival of the King's troops, 240; sufferings of, 240–242, 253, 471; required to 'go below,' 249; 250, 370; outrages by, 251, 460; 268, 317, 318, 437.
Town clerk, 62.
Town house, or parsonage, 85, 118, 285, 306.
Town, lands owned by the, 63.
Town meetings, 62; transactions of, 63–67; where held, 67; how conducted, 67; 118, 119, 161, 168, 169, 202; action of, regarding the ministry, 274, 277, 278, 280–286; building the church, 282, 307, 308; the parsonage house, 282, 283, 308; the parsonage lands, 286, 295, 301, 302; interrupted during the war, 265; resumed, 265.
Town Neck Point, 516.
Town offices, 62.
Town plot, 418, 465.
Towns of Connecticut, their number, 88; their functions, 88.
Towns of New York, their functions, 140.

Trades in Rye, 159.
Traffic in wood and cattle, 50, 159.
Train-band of Rye, 89, 130–132.
Training ground, 50, 115, 131.
Trees, 304, 340.
Trinity Church, New York, donation from, 342.
Trinity churchyard, 252.
Troops, British, quartered on the people, 247.
Trustees of public lands, 67, 303.
Turf and twig, investiture by, 132.
Turnpike company, 143, 144, 268, 300, 301; road, see Boston Road.

Ulster County, N. Y., tories from Rye in jail of, 227; poor of New York sent to, 250.
Union Cemetery, 137, 199, 512.
Union Defence Committee, 385–387.
Union, war for the, 384–391.
'Upper party' and 'lower party,' 242.

Vagrants, treatment of, 163, 164.
Van Amringe's mill, 160, 462, 514.
Van Sicklin's tavern. See Old Fort.
Vendue, public, 146, 163.
Vestry-book, 151, 165, 166, 310.
Vestry of Rye, 69, 150, 163, 287–293, 300, 304, 305, 310–314, 316, 478.
Vestry of the city of New York, 250, 291, 292; of Christ Church, Rye, 302–304, 340–342; of Grace Church, Rye, 337–339.
Vestrymen and church wardens, chosen by the freeholders, 289.
Vines, profusion of, in early times, 4.
Vineyard farm, 4, 130, 448.

Wading-place, 6, 7, 516.
Wainwright's Point, 135.
Walles' Ridge, 136.
Wallingford, Conn., 169, 264.
Wall Street Church, New York, 331.
Wampum, described, 16; used as money, 17.
Ward's house, East Chester, 248, 257.
Warehouse, 135, 208.
Ware's Cove [Warehouse Cove?] 135, 194.
Warren County, N. Y., settlers of, from Westchester County, 214.
Washington at Rye, 142, 147, 162, 225.
Webb's tavern, Stamford, 147.
Westchester County, constituted, 4; area of, 4; under the Dutch rule, 4; large manorial estates in, 96; fairs in, 212; settlers from, near Canada, 213, 214; inhabitants of, generally unfriendly to the cause of liberty, 226; expected to coöperate with the British army, 228, 232, 233; enemies to America travelling through, 228; militia of, 228; not to be relied on, 234; sufferings in, 215, 216, 225, 239, 240, 245–247, 249–251, 256, 259–263.
Westchester light-horse, 246.
Westchester Path, Old, 6, 7, 13, 15, 16, 23, 24, 31, 97, 99, 138, 395, 401, 419, 428, 430, 440, 468, 501, 502, 514, 515.
Westchester, town of, 6, 8, 24–26, 107, 120, 139, 158, 212, 233, 371, 393, 396.
West India Company, Dutch, 3, 96.
Whaling sloop from Mamaroneck, 161.
Wharf at the Fishing Rock, 78.
Whipper, public, at Rye, 69, 183, 452.
Whipping-post, 69.
Whitefield, George, at Rye, 314, 315.
Whitefield Patent, 449.
White Plains, the, town of, formerly part of Rye, 2; purchase of, 152, 153; proprietors of, 83, 157; patent of, 526–530; disputes concerning, 153–156; surveyed and divided, 58, 156, 157; settlement of, 157, 158; early settlers of, 174, 398, 428, 448, 449; church at, 158, 411; courts removed to, 158; court house, 103, 168, 466; school at, 175; slaves in, 181, 187; 198, 210, 212; American army retreats to, 232; battle of the, 223, 225, 234–239, 257; royal forces near, 240; American, 243, 244, 246, 247, 248, 249; robbery at, 251; 280, 301; Mr. Wetmore officiates at, 314; Presbyterian Church of, 323–329; Dr. Smith's residence at, 334, 335; Episcopal services at, after the war, 337; a distinct congregation formed, 341; 345; the town of, constituted, 372.
White Plains Road, 51, 141, 156.
Wigwams on Lyon's Point, 268.
Wilderness, Westchester County a, 4, 5, 18, 464; outside the Field Fence, 34; perils of the, 42–49; occupations of the, 50–61.
Willett Street, 509.

Williams' Bridge, 375.
Will of Rev. Thomas Denham, 280; of Francis Brown, 403; of John Budd, 404.
'Will's two Purchases.' See Lame Will's Purchase.
Wilton, Conn., 106.
Windsor, Conn., 395.
'Winter Fever,' the, 170.
Witchcraft, 410.
Wolf-pits, 65, 86.
Wolf-pit Ridge or Plain, 52, 54, 59, 65, 136, 437; Hill, White Plains, 467.
Wolves, bounty for killing, 65, 92.
Woodbury, Conn., 395.
Wood Creek, 204.
Worship, public, in early times, 279.
Wright's tavern, 450.

Yale College, ministers of Rye graduates of, 314, 317, 322, 328, 329, 332, 340, 348.
Yale College, trustees of, their action relative to the Presbyterians of Rye and the White Plains, 325–327.
Yeomen, 159.
York, Duke of, patent to the, 108; commissioners of the, 108, 109.
Yorktown, N. Y., 335.
Yorkville, N. Y., 342.
Young's tavern, 236.
Ypres Castle, 36.

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 014 224 331 3